

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN BOOKSTACKS

The person charging this material is responsible for its return to the library from which it was withdrawn on or before the **Latest Date** stamped below.

Theft, mutilation, and underlining of books are reasons for disciplinary action and may result in dismissal from the University.

To renew call Telephone Center, 333-8400

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2017 with funding from University of Illinois Urbana-Champaign Alternates A

SHAKESPEARIAN GRAMMAR



Α

SHAKESPEARIAN GRAMMAR

AN ATTEMPT TO ILLUSTRATE SOME OF THE DIFFERENCES BETWEEN ELIZABETHAN AND MODERN ENGLISH

For the Use of Schools

E. A. ABBOTT, D.D.

HEAD MASTER OF THE CITY OF LONDON SCHOOL

Hondon
MACMILLAN AND CO.

AND NEW YORK

1894

The Right of Translation and Reproduction is Reserved

RICHARD CLAY AND SONS LIMITED LONDON AND BUNGAY.

First Edition printed July, 1869. Reprinted October, 1869.
February and June (Second Edition), 1870 Reprinted 1871, 1872, 1873, 1874, 1875, 1876, 1877, 1878, 1879, 1881, 1883, 1884, 1886, 1888, 1891, 1894.

822,33 EDA-1 WAYARRIY OF THE 1894

CONTENTS.

2			
	CONTENTS.		
-	t.		
B	PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION		PAGE
	PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION		xxi
	Introduction		I
	INTRODUCTION		5
	GRAMMAR.		
	Adjectives used as adverbs		PAR.
			I
	compounded		2
	in -ful, -less, -ble, and -ive, both actively and passively a signifying effect used to signify cause	ised	-
	singular used as nouns		4
	comparative, -er, more	•	5
	in -er, after -ing, -ed, -id, -ain, -st, -ect	•	6
	superlative, -est used for very		7 8
	in -est after -eut -ing -ed act	•	
	,, used incorrectly for the comparative		9
	comparative and superlative, pleonastically used	•	11
	All, both, each, every, other	•	12
	possessive transposed	•	13
	, used incorrectly for the comparative comparative and superlative, pleonastically used	itin	13
	meaning	14	-16
	More, most, used for greater, greatest		17
	One		18
	Right used for true	,	19
	3 Self		20
	7		21
	formed from nouns, adverbs, &c., without change .		22

1099129

YR/RBILL THE WAYNERSHAM CONTENTS.

				PAP.
Anverbs with and without -ly				23
with prefix a				24
derived from the possessive inflection				25
After; again; all; almost			26	-29
Along; anon; anything; away; back			30	-33
Besides; briefly; by; chance; even; ever			34	-39
Far; forth; hence; hither			40	-4I
Happily; here; hitherto; home; how; howsoe	ver		42	-47
Last; moreabove; moreover			48	-50
Much; never; none; not				
Nothing; off; once; only; over			55	-58
Presently; round; severally; since			59	-62
So inserted; omitted; = "also;" = "then"			63	-66
"So for such a"				
Something; sometimes; still; than; then			68-	-7I
To-fore; too; what, when; whilst; why; yet			72	-76
used as nouns and adjectives				77
after the verb is				78
ARTICLE. An connected with one				79
An and one, pronunciation of				80
A used for "one," "any"				8 1
A and the omitted in archaic poetry				82
,, ,, after "as," "like," "than"				83
A omitted before nouns signifying a class or a n				
A inserted after adjectives used as adverbs .		•		85
A omitted after "what," "such," &c				86
A inserted before numeral adjectives and many				87
An-other				88
The omitted before nouns defined by other noun	ıs			89
,, after prepositions				90
The inserted in "at the first," &c				91
The used to denote notoriety, &c				92
The before verbals				93

CONTENTS.

7	he with com	narative	es .											PAR.	
	NCTIONS.	*													
	nd emphati														
	-	in ansv												97	
	,,	after e	xclan	natio	ns									98	
	"	in que	stions	· .										99	,
A	nd used for	"also"	' by '	Wick	liffe	Э.								100)
A	nd or an a	pparently	y used	l for	if									IOI	i
	,, W	ith the s	ubju	nctiv	е.									102	2
-A	nd if								4					103	3
.A	n't were .													102	1
-A	Ind if used	for "eve	en if'	' and	1 "	if i	nde	ed'	,					10	5
	ls contracte													106	5
.A	s apparent	ly for "	as if"											10	7
	as that for a														
. 1.	as used for	"that	after	" so	".									10	9
. £.	as parenthe	tical =	"for	so "										11	0
	,,		"as	regai	rds	whi	ch,	" &	C.					II	I
.L	as for "wh	ich".			• 6						۰	٠		11	2
	1s, meaning													11	3
1	4s with defi	nitions o	of tim	е .								٧	,	II	4
1	As with "se	eem," pa	rticip	eles,	&с.				ø		4	i		11	5
1	4s a conjun	ctional s	uffix							¢				II	6
. 1	Because								٠		6	0		11	7
- i	But, meanir	ng and d	leriva	tion	of .						e			11	8
	But in Earl	y Englis	h.											11	9
	But with th														
. 4	<i>But</i> , transit	ion of m	eanin	g							٥			. 12	2 1
4	But meanin	g prever	ntion							٠	٠			. 12	22
4	But taking	the plac	e of t	he si	ubje	ect .					,			. 12	23
44	But with co	ntingen	cy ex	press	sed	or i	mp.	lied						. 12	24
	But someti	mes amb	oiguoi	ıs						,				. 12	25
	But after a														

	But for "than"	ofter	12.00	ativ.		om.	2021	+127	20						PAR
	But passes from														
	is omitted						,					0			
	But varies in its														
	But only; mere														
	Or; or ever .														
	Since for "when	ı," "a	go '	,						,					132
	So = "provide														
	Where for "wh	ereas "								. ,	,				134
	Whereas for "w														
	Whether: "or														
	While														
PRE	POSITIONS. Lo														
	more restricted i	n mear	ning	noi	w t	han	in	Eliz	zab	etha	n:	aut	hor	S	139
	A-; after; agai	nst.											14	0-	142
	At used for a-;														
	By, original and	derive	ed r	near	ning	gs									145
	By = "as a co														
	For, original me	aning	of												147
	For = "instead	of," "	'as	bei	ng '	,									148
	For="as regard														
	For, transition is	nto a c	onj	unct	ior	١.					Ĭ,				151
	For to, origin of														152
	For, variable use	e of.			,										153
	For = "to prev														
	For after "am"														
	Forth a preposit														
	From out									e					157
	From without a	verb o	f m	otio	n				,						158
	In with verbs of	motio	n		•										159
	In for "on".														
	,, "during"	,													
	,, "in the c	ase of,	33 66	abo	ut	"									162

		PAR
In where we use "at"		
In with the verbal		. 164
Of, original meaning		165
Of with verbs of ablation		. 166
Of applied to past time = "from"		167
Of = "as a consequence of" where we use "by,"		
"at," &c		168
Of in adjurations, &c		
Of preceding the agent		
Of with verbs of construction, &c. sometimes n	neans	;
"instead of"		
Of for "in;" appositional genitive		
Of = "as regards"		173
Of = "concerning;" "about"		
Of used locally for "on"		175
Of used temporally for "during"		176
Of after partitive, French-derived, and formerly impers		
verbs		
Of after verbals		
Of redundant		
On metaphorically used		180
		181
" possessively		182
Out a preposition		183
Till for "to"		
To, radical meaning "motion to;" hence "in addition		
To "with a view to"		186
To "motion to the side of," "against," "towards,"	"in	
comparison with," "up to"		
To with verbs of rest = "near"		188
,, adjectives of obedience, &c		
To = "equivalent to," "for"		189
To; "I would to God;" "to-night"		

CONTENTS.

x

								PAR
l	Upon used metaphorically; adverbially	•	•		•		191,	192
i	With for "by;" for other prepositions	•	•				193,	194
	", "like;" withal						195,	196
	Without for "outside of"							
1	Preposition omitted after verbs of me							
	hearing				198	, I	98a,	199
	,, ., after other verbs	;	bef	fore	i	nd	irect	
	ob ject							
	,, ,, in adverbial phras	ses		. ,				202
]	Prepositions transposed							203
ě	Upon. "It stands me upon"							204
PEON	NOUNS, PERSONAL. Anomalies, explar	nati	on	of.	, ,			205
1	He for him			, ,			206,	207
1	Him for he; I for me						208,	209
	Me for I ; she for her \dots							
:	Thee for thou; after "to be"						212,	213
:	Them for they; us for we						214,	215
	anomalies of, between a conjunction an							
	where the pronouns are separated	froi	n t	he	wo	rd	s on	
	which they depend			, ,				216
	His for 's							217
	His, her, your, &c., antecedents of relat							
(Our, your, &c., used for "of us," "of	you	." .					219
4	Me, thee, him, &c., used as datives							220
	Your, colloquial use of							221
	Our used with vocatives							
	Him, her, &c., for "himself," "herself	"						223
	He and she for "man" and "woman".							
	Pronoun for pronominal adjective							225
	It quasi-redundant with verbs							
	It emphatic as antecedent							
	Its post-Shakespearian							
	Her for its in Shakespeare and Milton .							

					PAR.
	"Me rather had;" "I were better;" "I am sorr	ow	5)		230
	Thou between intimate friends, but not from son to	fatl	ier		231
	Thou from master to servant, you a mark of anger				232
	Thou an insult, except to friends and inferiors .		ç		233
	Thou in direct appeals, you in dependent clauses				234
	Thou, apparent exceptions				235
	Ye and you; difference between				236
	My, mine; thy, thine; difference between				237
	Mine, hers, used for my, her				238
	Yours; "this of yours"				239
	transposed				240
	Thou omitted				24 I
	Pronoun redundant after a conjunctional clause .				242
	,, in other cases				243
PRO	NOUNS, RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE.				
	Relative omitted				244
	,, ,, "They in France"				245
	,, ,, and attracted				246
	Relative with plural antecedent often takes singula	r v	erb	;	
	and with antecedent in the second person, tak	es	ver	b	
	in the third				247
	Relative with supplementary pronoun; origin of .				248
	Supplementary pronoun; when used				249
	Which that				250
	Who; transition from interrogative to relative mea				251
	What; semi-transition, how checked				252
	What for "why;" "whatever;" "who;" "an				-255
	What for "of what a nature?"				256
	Who, "as who should say"				257
	Who, that, and which, difference between				258
	,, ,, Shakespearian use of				259
	That refers to an essential characteristic				
	That after nouns used vocatively				261

							PAR.
	That, when separated from antecedent.					٠,	262
	Who, for "and he," "for he," &c						263
	Who personifies irrational antecedents.						264
	Which interchanged with who and that.						265
	Which less definite than who						266
	The-that; that-which		,				267
	Which more definite than that		4				268
	Which with repeated antecedent						269
	The which						
	Which parenthetically for "which thing"						271
	Which for "as to which"						272
	Which, anomalies of						273
	Who for whom						274
REL	ATIVAL CONSTRUCTIONS. "So-as:"						, 276
	"That-that;" "that (as) to;" "su	ch-	-70	hic.	h ''	277	, 278
	"Such-that;" "such-where"						279
	"That—as;" "so(as)"					280	, 281
	"So-(that);" "(so)-that"						
	That for "because," "when," &c						284
	That omitted, then inserted	,			c		285
	That, "whatsoever that"						286
	That, a conjunctional affix						287
	That in 287, origin of						288
	As, a conjunctional affix						289
VER	BS, FORMS OF :-						
	TRANSITIVE, mostly formed from adjective	ves	an	d n	our	ıs	290
	,, formed from intransitive ve	rbs					291
	Advantages of this licence						292
	Transitive verbs rarely used intransitively						293
	Passive, formation of						294
	Passive, use of, with verbs of motion, &c.						295
	Reflexive			e			296
	Impersonal						297

CONTENTS.		kiii
BRBS, AUXILIARY. Be, subjunctive and quasi-subjunctive		PAR. 298
Be in questions and dependent sentences		299
Be in the plural and for euphony		
Were, subjunctive use of		
Were after "while" and "until"		302
Do, did, original use of		303
Do, did, Shakespearian use of	٠	304
Do omitted before not	٠	305
,, and inserted		306
May, can; original and subsequent meaning		-
May, antiquity of		
May in doubtful statements		_
May with a negative		
May for the subjunctive in the sense of purpose		311
Might = "could"		312
May, might, used optatively		313
Must = "is to;" original use of		
Shall, original meaning.		
Will assumed the meaning of futurity with the second as		
third persons		
Shall assumed the meaning of compulsion with the second		
and third persons		
Shall, "I shall" from inferiors		
Will, "I will" not used by Shakespeare for "I shall"		
Will, with second person ironical or imperative		320
Will with third person, difficult passages		-
Should denotes contingent futurity		
Should = "ought;" "was to"	23.	324
Should in questions and dependent sentences		
Should after a past tense where shall would follow		
present		
Should, "should have," Shakespearian use of		
Should denoting the statement of another than the speak		

										PAR.
Would for "will,	" "wish,"	'"re	quire	**						329
Would = "was	wont to".							12		330
Would not used f	or "shoul	d"								331
VERBS, INFLECTIONS	OF :									
Indicative, third	person plu	ral in	-612						,	332
Third person plu	ral present	in <i>-e</i> .	ς.							333
, ,,	,,	in -t	h.							334
Inflection in -s pr	receding a p	olural	subj	ect						335
,, w	ith two sin	gular	nour	is as	su	bje	ct			336
Apparent cases o	f the infle	ction i	n -s							337
s final misprinted										
Past indicative fo	rms in -11 .									339
Second person sin										
Past indicative -t	for ·ted .				2	٠				341
ParticiplesEd	omitted a	fter d	and	t, &	c.					342
,, -e11	dropped.									343
	egular form									
Participial prefix	y			۰		•				345
Verbs, Moods of:-										
INDICATIVE: sin										
	verbs m	eanin	g"a	s ye	t,"	&c				346
,, sir	nple past			-		-				
,,	"since,									
	ture for sul									
Infinitive: to										
	mitted and									
	were best									
	mitted afte									
Noun and infiniti	ve used as	subje	ct or	obj	ect					354
Infinitive used as	a noun .									355
,, ,, in	definitely.									356
,, ,, at	the beginn	ning o	f a se	ente	nce					357
For to										258

CONTENTS.	XV
	PAR.
-	359
	, 360
*	. 351
., auxiliary forms	. 362
,, replaced by indicative after "if," &c., where	Э
no doubt is expressed	. 363
,, used optatively or imperatively	. 364
,, optative use, advantage of	365
,, complete past	. 366
,, used indefinitely after relative	. 367
,, in a subordinate sentence	. 368
,, after verbs of command	. 369
,, irregular sequence of tenses	. 370
Conditional sentences, irregularities	. 371
PARTICIPLES AND VERBALS:	
Participles active, confusion in	372
Participial verbal	. 373
Participles passive, confusion in	. 374
,, ,, -ed for -able	. 375
Participles with nominative absolute	. 376
,, expressing a condition	. 377
,, without noun or pronoun	. 378
,, pronoun implied from pronominal adjective	• 379
,, adjective instead of participle	. 380
Participle implied	. 381
ELLIPSES. Where the ellipsis can be easily supplied from th	е
context	. 382
in conjunctional sentences: after and	. 383
after as, but, ere, if	4-387
after like, or, since, than, though	8-391
after till, too	
in relative sentences	

. . 395

in antithetical sentences

	PAR.
	396
of adverbial and possessive inflection in conjunctional	
sentences	39 7
of superlative inflection in conjunctional sentences	398
of nominative	399
	400
,, in the first or second person	401
,, explained	402
of it is, there is, is	403
of it, there	404
after will, is, &c	405
ERREGULARITIES. Double negative	406
	407
	408
Confusion of two constructions with superlative	109
,, ,, ,, with whom	410
Other confusions of two constructions	111
Confusion of proximity	112
	113
	114
	115
	116
Noun absolute	
Foreign idioms 4	
,, adjectives	19
Transpositions of adjectival phrases	
,, of adverbs	-
Adverbs at the beginning of the sentence	
	22
,, in noun clauses	
of prepositions	
,, after an emphatic word or expression 4	
often relative	26
e, after relative	

		C	ON'	TEN	TS.						xvii
											PAR.
Other trans	position	s .									427
COMPOUND WO	ords. I	Iybri	ids		•						428
Adverbial	compour	nds									429
Noun comp	pounds										430
Preposition	compou	ınds									431
Verb com	pounds						•.				432
Participial	nouns								-		433
Phrase com	pounds										434
Anomalous	compou	nds									435
PREFIXES. A	!- ; all-to	- ; at	- ; b	e- ; d	is-					436-	-439
En-; for-;	in- and	<i>un-</i>								440-	-442
Suffixeser	; -en ; -1	ve;	-ble ;	; -less	•					443-	-446
-ly; -ment	: -ness ;	-y								447-	
General lic	ence of										451
		P	RO	SOD	Y.						
The ordinary v				٠	٠	•	•	٠	٠	•	452
The "pause-ac					٠	•	•	•	•	•	453
Emphatic accen	ts .		٠	•	*	•	•			4	453a
The "pause-ex	tra-syllab					•			٠	-	454
,,	,,			arely	a m	onos	syllal	ole e	xce	ot in	
Henry VII				•					•		455
Unaccented mo								•	•	•	456
Accented mono								•	•		457
	syllabic									. 4	457a
Two "pause-ex						•			•		458
WRITTEN CON											
Elizabetha											459
Prefixes dr											460
Other writ											461
CONTRACTIONS											462
R softens	or destro	ys a	follo	owing	you	wel		•	٠		463

			PAR						
	R softens or destroys a preceding vowel		464						
	Er, el, le final dropped		465						
	Th and v dropped between two vowels		466						
	I unaccented in a polysyllable dropped								
	Any vowel unaccented in a polysyllable may be dropped	ed .	468						
	Polysyllabic names with but one accent		469						
	Power, prowess, being, knowing, monosyllables		470						
	-es or -s dropped after s, se, ce, ge		471						
	-ed dropped after d and t		472						
	-est dropped in superlatives after dentals and liquids		473						
VAI	RIABLE SYLLABLES. Ed final, mute and sonant in								
	same line		474						
	Words prolonged by emphasis		475						
	,, shortened by want of emphasis		476						
LENGTHENING OF WORDS. R and l after a consonant intro-									
	duce an additional syllable, e.g. "Eng(e)land"		477						
	A preceded by a vowel lengthens pronunciation		478						
	I and e pronounced before vowels		479						
	Monosyllabic feet in Chaucer		479a						
	,, ,, ending in r or re		480						
	Monosyllables, when prolonged		481						
	,, ,, exclamations		482						
	" ,, prolonged by emphasis or antithesis.		483						
	,, ,, diphthongs and long vowels		484						
	., ,, containing a vowel followed by r .		485						
	,, ,, other instances of prolongation		486						
	E final pronounced		487						
	E of French origin, pronounced		488						
	E final in French names pronounced		489						
	Words in which the accent is nearer the end than with	us.	490						
	Iséd final in polysyllables		491						
	Words in which the accent is nearer the beginning	than	1						
	with us		492						

			co.	N7	El	V <i>7</i>	S.								X1X
															PAR.
Alexandi	rines, very	rar	е.												493
Apparen	t Alexand	rine	s, t	wo	fina	al e	xtr	a s	ylla	ble	s.				494
,,	,,		tw	o sy	lla	.ble	sir	th	e m	idd	le o	f a	ver	se	495
,,	,,		ex	plai	ine	d b	y c	ont	rac	tior	ıs				496
,,	,,			em			•			dro	pp	ed			497
,,	,,			ubt						•	•	•	•		498
23	,,			e d		che	d f	oot		•				•	499
Trimeter	couplet i		_			٠		•	•	•	•	•	٠	•	500
,,	"	n ot			es	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	•	٠	•		501
,,	"	he c			•	٠	•	٠	٠	٠	•		•	•	502
,,		ppa			•	•	•	•	٠	٠	•	٠	٠	•	503
											504				
,,	,,		her							٠				٠	505
,,	,,		here						k i	n tl	ie l	ine	٠	٠	506
,,	,,		nang	_			•		٠	٠	•	٠	•	•	507
,,	,,		nang						n	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	508
,,	,,		nun			f cl	aus	es	•	٠	٠	٠	٠		509
,,	,,		par	ent	•	•	•	٠	٠	•	٠	٠	٠	٠	510
Short lines, v		uce	l.	٠	•	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	•	٠	٠		511
Interjectional			٠		٠		٠	٠	٠	٠			٠	٠	512
The amphibio			٠					٠	•	٠	•	•	•	•	513
A verse conti		e of	int	errı	ıpt:	ion	s.	•	٠			•	٠	•	514
Rhyme, when		•	•	•	•	٠	٠	٠	٠	•	٠		•	٠	515
Prose, when	used	٠	٠	٠	•	٠	•	•	•	٠	•	•		5	15a
SIMILE AND	METADII	ΩĐ													PAGE
DIMILE AND	MEIAIN	OK	•	•	•	•	•	•	,	•	•	•	•	•	430
Notes and	Question	21	•	•	•	•	·	e	•	•			•		440
INDEX TO T	не Quot	ATI	ons	٠			7	r				•			453
VERBAL IND	EX					,				,	•			,	501



PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION.

The success which has attended the First and Second Editions of the "SHAKESPERIAN GRAMMAR," and the demand for a Third Edition within a year of the publication of the First, has encouraged the Author to endeavour to make the work somewhat more useful, and to render it, as far as possible, a complete book of reference for all difficulties of Shakesperian syntax or prosody. For this purpose the whole of Shakespeare has been re-read, and an attempt has been made to include within this Edition the explanation of every idiomatic difficulty (where the text is not confessedly corrupt) that comes within the province of a grammar as distinct from a glossary.

The great object being to make a useful book of reference for students, and especially for classes in schools, several Plays have been indexed so fully that with the aid of a glossary and historical notes the references will serve for a complete commentary. These Plays are, As you Like It, Coriolanus, Hamlet, Henry V., Julius Cæsar, Lear, Macbeth, Merchant of Venice, Midsummer Night's Dream, Richard II., Richard III., Tempest, Twelfth Night. It is hoped that these copious indexes will meet a want, by giving some definite work to be prepared by the class, whether as a holiday task or in the work of the term. The want of some such distinct work, to give thoroughness and definiteness

to an English lesson, has been felt by many teachers of experience. A complete table of the contents of each paragraph has been prefixed, together with a Verbal Index at the end. The indexes may be of use to students of a more advanced stage, and perhaps may occasionally be found useful to the general reader of Shakespeare.

A second perusal of Shakespeare, with a special reference to idiom and prosody, has brought to light several laws which regulate many apparent irregularities. The interesting distinction between thou and you (Pars. 231-235), for example, has not hitherto attracted the attention of readers, or, as far as I am aware, of commentators on Shakespeare. The use of the relative with plural antecedent and singular verb (Par. 246); the prevalence of the third person plural in -s (Par. 333), which does not appear in modern editions of Shakespeare; the "confusion of proximity" (Par. 412); the distinction between an adjective before and after a noun; these and many other points which were at first either briefly or not at all discussed, have increased the present to more than thrice the size of the original book. I propose now to stereotype this edition, so that no further changes need be anticipated.

It may be thought that the amplification of the Prosody is unnecessary, at all events, for the purpose of a school-book. My own experience, however, leads me to think that the Prosody of Shakespeare has peculiar interest for boys, and that some training in it is absolutely necessary if they are to read Shakespeare *critically*. The additions which have been made to this part of the book have sprung naturally out of the lessons in English which I have been in the habit of giving; and as they are the results of practical experience, I am confident they will be found useful for school

purposes.* A conjectural character, more apparent however than real, has perhaps been given to this part of the book from the necessity that I felt of setting down every difficult verse of Shakespeare where the text was not acknowledged as corrupt, or where the difficulty was more than slight. Practically, I think, it will be found that the rules of the Prosody will be found to solve most of the difficulties that will present themselves to boys—at least, in the thirteen Plays above mentioned.

Besides obligations mentioned in the First Edition, I must acknowledge the great assistance I have received from MATZNER'S Englische Grammatik (3 vols., Berlin, 1865), whose enormous collection of examples deserves notice. I am indebted to the same author for some points illustrating the connection between Early and Elizabethan English. Here, however, I have received ample assistance from Mr. F. J. Furnivall, Mr. R. Morris, and others, whose kindness I am glad to have an opportunity of mentioning. In particular, I must here acknowledge my very great obligation to the Rev. W. W. Skeat, late Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge, whose excellent edition of William of Palerne (Early English Text Society, 1867), and whose Maso-Gothic Dictionary (Asher, London, 1866), have been of great service to me. Mr. Skeat also revised the whole of the proof-sheets, and many of his suggestions are incorporated in the present work. I may add here, that in discussing the difference between "thou" and "you" (231-5), and the "monosyllabic foct" (480-6), I was not aware that I had been anticipated by Mr. Skeat, who has illustrated the former point (with reference to Early English) in William of Palerne, p. xlii.,

^{*} The somewhat grotesque name of "amphibious verse" (Par. 513) sprang in this way from class-teaching. I have retained it, as answering its purpose, by communicating its meaning readily and impressively.

and the latter in his Essay on the Metres of Chaucer (vol. i., Aldine Edition, London, 1866). The copious Index to Layamon, edited by Sir Frederick Madden, has also been of great service. I trust that, though care has been taken to avoid any unnecessary parade of Anglo-Saxon, or Early English, that might interfere with the distinct object of the work, the information on these points will be found trustworthy and useful. The Prosody has been revised throughout by Mr. A. J. Ellis, whose work on Early English Pronunciation is well known. Mr. Ellis's method of scansion and notation is not in all respects the same as my own, but I have made several modifications in consequence of his suggestive criticisms.

I have now only to express my hope that this little book may do something to forward the development of English instruction in English schools. Taking the very lowest ground, I believe that an intelligent study of English is the shortest and safest way to attain to an intelligent and successful study of Latin and Greek, and that it is idle to expect a boy to grapple with a sentence of Plato or Thucydides if he cannot master a passage of Shakespeare or a couplet of Pope. Looking, therefore, at the study of English from the old point of view adopted by those who advocate a purely classical instruction, I am emphatically of opinion that it is a positive gain to classical studies to deduct from them an hour or two every week for the study of English. But I need scarcely say that the time seems not far off when every English boy who continues his studies to the age of fifteen will study English for the sake of English; and where English is studied Shakespeare is not likely to be forgotten.

E. A. A.

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION

THE object of this work is to furnish students of Shakespeare and Bacon with a short systematic account of some points of difference between Elizabethan syntax and our own. The words of these authors present but little difficulty. They can be understood from glossaries, and, even without such aid, a little reflection and attention to the context will generally enable us to hit the meaning. But the differences of idiom are more perplexing. They are more frequent than mere verbal difficulties, and they are less obvious and noticeable. But it need hardly be said, that if we allow ourselves to fancy we are studying Shakespeare critically, when we have not noticed and cannot explain the simplest Shakespearian idiom, we are in danger of seriously lowering our standard of accurate study, and so far from training we are untraining our understanding. Nor is it enough to enumerate unusual idioms without explaining them. Such is not the course we pursue in Latin and Greek, and our native tongue should either not be studied critically at all, or be studied as thoroughly as the languages of antiquity.*

The difficulty which the author has experienced in teaching pupils to read Shakespearian verse correctly, and to analyse a metaphorical expression, has induced him to add a few pages on Shakespeare's prosody and on the use of

simile and metaphor.

^{*} Of course it is possible to study Shakespeare with great advantage, and yet without any reference to textual criticism. Only, it should be distinctly under stood in such cases that textual criticism is not attempted.

A very important question in the study of English is, what should be the amount and nature of the assistance given to students in the shape of notes. It is clear that the mere getting up and reproducing a commentator's opinions, though the process may fill a boy with useful information, can in no sense be called a training. In the Notes and Questions at the end of this volume I have tried to give no more help than is absolutely necessary. The questions may be of use as a holiday-task, or in showing the student how to work the Grammar. They have been for the most part answered by a class of boys from fourteen to sixteen years old, and some by boys much younger.

In some of the sections of the Prosody I must acknowledge my obligations to Mr. W. S. Walker's work on Shakespeare's Versification.* Other obligations are acknowledged in the course of the work; but the great mass of the examples have been collected in the course of several years' close study of Shakespeare and contemporaneous authors. I am aware that there will be found both inaccuracies and incompleteness in this attempt to apply the rules of classical scholarship to the criticism of Elizabethan English, but it is perhaps from a number of such imperfect contributions that there will at last arise a perfect English Grammar.

REFERENCES.

The following works are referred to by the pages .--

Ascham's Scholemaster . (Mayor) . London, 1863. The Advancement of Learning . Oxford, 1640. Bacon's Essays . . . (Wright) . London, 1868. Ben Jonson's Works . . (Gifford) . London, 1838. North's Plutarch London, 1656. Florio's Montaigne London, 1603.

^{*} In correcting the proof-sheets I have gained much from consulting Mr Walker's "Criticisms on Shakespeare."

Wager, Heywood, Ingelend, &c., and sometimes Beaumont and Fletcher, are quoted from "The Songs of the Dramatists," J. W. Parker, 1855.

WORKS REFERRED TO BY ABBREVIATIONS.

Some of the plays of Shakespeare are indicated by the tritials of the titles, as follow:

All's Well that Ends Well. A.W.... A. and C. . . Antony and Cleopatra.

A. Y. L. . . . As You Like It. C. of E. . . . Comedy of Errors.

Iulius Cæsar. 7. C.

L. L. L. . . . Love's Labour Lost.

M. for M. . . . Measure for Measure. M. of V. . . .Merchant of Venice.

M. W. of W. . . Merry Wives of Windsor. M. N. D. . . . Midsummer Night's Dream.

M. Ado . . . Much Ado about Nothing.

P. of T. . . . Pericles of Tyre. R. and J. . . Romeo and Juliet.

T. of Sh. Taming of the Shrew.

T. of A. . . .Timon of Athens.

T. A. . . . Titus Andronicus. Tr. and Cr. . . Troilus and Cressida.

T. N. Twelfth Night.
T. G. of V. . . . Two Gentlemen of Verona.

W. T. Winter's Tale.

'The quotations are from the Globe edition unless other wise specified.)

Asch. Ascham's Scholemaster.

B. E. Bacon's Essays.

B. and F. . . . Beaumont and Fletcher

B. J. . . . Ben Jonson

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION.

B. J	E. in &c.	Every Man in his Humour.
**	E. out &c.	 Every Man out of his Humour
		Cynthia's Revels.
,,	Sil. Wom.	Silent Woman.
	Sejan	
		Sad Shepherd.
L. C.		Lover's Complaint.
N. P		North's Plutarch.
P. P.		Passionate Pilgrim.
R. of	L	Rape of Lucrece.
		Shakespeare's Sonnets.
V. an	ıd A	Venus and Adonis.

Numbers in parentheses thus (81) refer to the paragraphs of the Grammar.

INTRODUCTION

ELIZABETHAN English, on a superficial view, appears to present this great point of difference from the English of modern times, that in the former any irregularities whatever, whether in the formation of words or in the combination of words into sentences, are allowable. In the first place, almost any part of speech can be used as any other part of speech. An adverb can be used as a verb, "They askance their eyes" (R. of L.); as a noun, "the backward and abysm of time" (Sonn.); or as an adjective, "a seldom pleasure" (Sonn.). Any noun, adjective, or neuter verb can be used as an active verb. You can "happy" your friend, "malice" or "foot" your enemy, or "fall" an axe on his neck. An adjective can be used as an adverb; and you can speak and act "easy," "free." "excellent:" or as a noun, and you can talk of "fair" instead of "beauty," and "a pale" instead of "a paleness." Even the pronouns are not exempt from these metamorphoses. A "he" is used for a man, and a lady is described by a gentleman as "the fairest she he has yet beheld." Spenser asks us to

"Come down and learne the little what That Thomalin can sayne."—Calend. Jul. v. 31 (Nares).

And Heywood, after dividing human dirers into three classes thus-

[&]quot;Some with small fare they be not pleased, Some with much fare they be diseased, Some with mean fare be scant appeared,"

adds with truly Elizabethan freedom-

"But of all *somes* none is displeased
To be welcome." *

In the second place, every variety of apparent grammatical inaccuracy meets us. He for him, him for he; spoke and took, for spoken and taken; plural nominatives with singular verbs; relatives omitted where they are now considered necessary; unnecessary antecedents inserted; shall for will, should for would, would for wish; to omitted after "I ought," inserted after "I durst;" double negatives; double comparatives ("more better," &c.) and superlatives; such followed by which, that by as, as used for as if; that for so that; and lastly, some verbs apparently with two nominatives, and others without any nominative at all. To this long list of irregularities it may be added that many words, and particularly prepositions and the infinitives of verbs, are used in a different sense from the modern. Thus—

"To fright you thus methinks I am too savage,"—
Mach. iv. 2. 70.

does not mean "I am too savage to fright you." "Received of the most pious Edward" (170) does not mean "from Edward," but "by Edward;" and when Shakespeare says that "the rich" will not every hour survey his treasure, "for blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure," he does not mean "for the sake of," but "for fear of" blunting pleasure.

On a more careful examination, however, these apparently disorderly and inexplicable anomalies will arrange themselves under certain heads. It must be remembered that the Elizabethan was a transitional period in the history of the English language. On the one hand, there was the influx of new discoveries and new thoughts requiring as their equivalent the coinage of new words (especially words expressive of abstract ideas); on the other hand, the revival of classical studies and the popularity of translations from Latin and Greek authors

^{*} Compare "More by all mores."-T. N. v. 1. 139.

suggested Latin and Greek words (but principally Latin) as the readiest and most malleable metal, or rather as so many ready-made coins requiring only a slight national stamp to prepare them for the proposed augmentation of the currency of the language. Moreover, the long and rounded periods of the ancients commended themselves to the ear of the Elizabethan authors. In the attempt to conform English to the Latin frame, the constructive power of the former language was severely strained.

The necessity of avoiding ambiguity and the difficulty of connecting the end of a long sentence with the beginning, gave rise to some irregularities, to the redundant pronoun (242), the redundant 'that' (285), and the irregular 'to' (416). But, for the most part, the influence of the classical lan-

guages was confined to single words, and to the rhythm of the sentence. The syntax was mostly English both in its origin and its development, and several constructions that are now called anomalous (such as the double negative [406] and the double comparative [409]) have, and had from the earliest period, an independent existence in English, and are merely the natural results of a spirit which preferred clearness and vigour of expression to logical symmetry. Many of the anomalies above mentioned may be traced back to some peculiarities of Early English, modified by the transitional Elizabethan period. Above all, it must be remembered that Early English was far richer than Elizabethan English in inflections. As far as English inflections are concerned the Elizabethan period was destructive rather than constructive. Naturally, therefore, while inflections were being discarded, all sorts of tentative experiments were made: some inflections were discarded that we have restored, others retained that we have discarded. Again, sometimes where inflections were retained the sense of their meaning and power had been lost, and at other times the memory of inflections that were no longer visibly expressed in writing still influenced the manner of expression. Thus Ben Jonson writes :-

"The persons plural keep the termination of the first person singular. In former times, till about the reign of King Henry VIII. they were wont to be formed by adding en thus:—Loven, sayen, complainen. But now (whatsoever is the cause) it is quite grown out of use, and that other so generally prevailed that I dare not presume to set this on foot again."

He appears to be aware of the Midland plural in en (332) which is found only very rarely in Spenser and in Pericles of Tyre, but not of the Northern plural in es (333), which is very frequently found in Shakespeare, and which presents the apparent anomaly of a plural noun combined with a singular verb. And the same author does not seem to be aware of the existence of the subjunctive mood in English. He ignores it in his "Etymology of a Verb," and, in the chapter on "Syntax of a Verb with a Noun," writes as follows:—

"Nouns signifying a multitude, though they be of the singular number, require a verb plural:

" 'And wise men rehearsen in sentence,

Where folk be drunken there is no resistance.'"—Lydgate, lib.ii.

And he continues thus:—"This exception is in other nouns also very common, especially when the verb is joined to an adverb or conjunction: 'It is preposterous to execute a man before he have been condemned." It would appear hence that the dramatist was ignorant of the force of the inflection of the subjunctive, though he frequently uses it. Among the results of inflectional changes we may set down the following anomalies:—

I. Inflections discarded but their power retained. Hence (a) "spoke" (343) for "spoken," "rid" for "ridden."*
(b) "You ought not walk" for "You ought not walken" (the old infinitive). (c) The new infinitive (357) "to walk" used in its new meaning and also sometimes retaining its old gerundive signification.† (d) To "glad" (act.), to "mad"

^{*} It should, however, he stated that the *n* is often dropped in Early English † Morris, "Specimens of Early English," p. xxxiii. Inf. "loven." Gerund.

[&]quot;to lovene."

(act.), &c. (290) for to "gladden," "madden," &c. (e) The adverbial e (1) being discarded, an adjective appears to be used as an adverb: "He raged more fierce," &c. (f) "Other" is used for "other(e)," pl. "other men," &c. (g) The ellipsis of the pronoun (399) as a nominative may also be in part thus explained.

II. Inflections retained with their old power.

- (a) The subjunctive inflection frequently used to express a condition—"Go not my horse," for "If my horse go not." Hence (b) as with the subj. appears to be used for as if, and for and if, but (in the sense of except) for except if, &c. (c) The plural in en; very rarely. (d) The plural in es or s; far more commonly. (e) His used as the old genitive of he for of him. Me, him, &c. used to represent other cases beside the objective and the modern dative: "I am appointed him to murder you."
- III. Inflections retained but their power diminished or lost.
- (a) Thus 'he' for 'him,' 'him' for 'he;' 'I' for 'me,' 'me' for 'I,' &c. (b) In the same way the s which was the sign of the possessive case had so far lost its meaning that, though frequently retained, it was sometimes replaced (in mistake) by his and her.

IV. Other anomalies may be explained by reference to the derivations of words and the idioms of Early English.

Hence can be explained (a) so followed by as; (b) such followed by which (found in E. E. sometimes in the form whuch or wuch; (c) that followed by as; (d) who followed by he; (e) the which put for which; (f) shall for will, should for would, and would for wish.

The four above-mentioned causes are not sufficient to explain all the anomalies of Elizabethan style. There are several redundancies, and still more ellipses, which can only be explained as follows.

V. (a) Clearness was preferred to grammatical correctness, and (b) brevity both to correctness and clearness. Hence it was common to place words in the order in which

they came uppermost in the mind without much regard to syntax, and the result was a forcible and perfectly unambiguous but ungrammatical sentence, such as:

- (a) "The prince that feeds great natures they will sway him."
 B. J. Sejanus
- (b) As instances of brevity:—
 - "Be guilty of my death since of my crime."-R. of L.
 - "It cost more to get than to lose in a day."-B. J. Poetaster.

VI. One great cause of the difference between Elizabethan and Victorian English is, that the latter has introduced or developed what may be called the *division of labour*. A few examples will illustrate this.

The Elizabethan subjunctive (see VERBS, SUBJUNCTIVE) could be used (1) optatively, or (2) to express a condition or (3) a consequence of a condition, (4) or to signify purpose after "that." Now, all these different meanings are expressed by different auxiliaries—"would that !" "should he come," "he would find," "that he may see,"—and the subjunctive inflection is restricted to a few phrases with "if." "To walk" is now either (1) a noun, or (2) denotes a purpose, "in order to walk." In Elizabethan English, "to walk" might also denote "by walking," "as regards walking," "for walking;" a licence now discarded, except in one or two common phrases, such as "I am happy to say," &c. Similarly, Shakespeare could write " of vantage" for " from vantage-ground," " of charity" for "for charity's sake," "of mine honour" for "on my honour," "of purpose" for "on purpose," "of the city's cost" for "at the city's cost," "of his body" for "as regards his life," "made peace of enmity" for "peace instead of enmity," "we shall find a shrewd contriver of him" for "in him," "did I never speak of all that time" for "during all that time." Similarly "by" has been despoiled of many of its powers, which have been divided among "near," "in accordance with," "by reason of," "owing to." "But" has been forced to cede some of its provinces to "unless" and "except." Lastly, "that," in Early English the only relative, had been already, before the Elizabethan times, supplanted in many idioms by "who" and "which;" but it still retained its meanings of "because," "inasmuch as," and "when;" sometimes under the forms "for that," "in that;" sometimes without the prepositions. These it has now lost, except in a few colloquial phrases.

As a rule, then, the tendency of the English language has been to divide the labour of expression as far as possible by diminishing the task assigned to overburdened words and imposing it upon others. There are, of course, exceptions to this rule—notably "who" and "which;" but this has been the general tendency. And in most cases it will be found that the Victorian idiom is clearer but less terse than the corresponding Elizabethan idiom which it has supplanted.

VII. The character of Elizabethan English is impressed upon its pronunciation, as well as upon its idioms and words. As a rule their pronunciation seems to have been more rapid than ours. Probably the greater influence of spoken as compared with written English, sanctioned many contractions which would now be judged intolerable if for the first time introduced. (See 461.) This, however, does not explain the singular variation of accent upon the same words in the same author. Why should "exile," "aspect," "confessor," and many other words, be accented now on the first, now on the second syllable? The answer is, that during the unsettled Elizabethan period the foreign influence was contending with varying success against the native rules of English pronunciation. The English rule, as given by Ben Jonson, is definite enough. "In dissyllabic simple nouns" (by which it is to be supposed he means un-compounded), "the accent is on the first, as 'bélief,' 'hónour,' &c." But he goes on to say, that "all verbs coming from the Latin, either of the supine or otherwise, hold the accent as it is found in the first person present of those Latin verbs." Hence a continual strife over every noun derived from Latin participles: the English language claiming the new comer as her naturalized subject, bound by English laws; the Latin, on the

other hand, asserting a partial jurisdiction over her emigrants. Hence accéss and áccess, precépt and précept, contráct (noun) and cóntract, instinct and instinct, relâpse and rélapse. The same battle raged over other Latin words not derived from participles: commérce and cómmerce, obdúrate and óbdurate, sepúlchre and sépulchre, contráry and cóntrary, authórize and aúthorize, perséver and persevére, cónfessor and conféssor. The battle terminated in a thoroughly English manner. An arbitrary compromise has been effected between the combatants. Respéct, relâpse, succéss, sépulchre, were appropriated by the English. But while the contest was pending, and prisoners being taken and retaken on either side, we must not be surprised at finding the same word ranged now under native, now under foreign colours.

VIII. Words then used literally are now used metaphorically, and vice versâ.

The effect of this is most apparent in the altered use of prepositions. For instance, "by," originally meaning "near," has supplanted "of" in the metaphorical sense of agency, as it may in its turn be supplanted by "with" or some other preposition. This is discussed more fully under the head of prepositions (138). Here a few illustrations will be given from other words. It is not easy to discover a defined law regulating changes of metaphor. There is no reason why we should not, with Beaumont and Fletcher, talk of living at a "deep † rate" as well as a "high rate." But it will be found with respect to many words derived from Latin and Greek, that the Elizabethans used them literally and generally; we, metaphorically and particularly. Thus "metaphysical" was used by Shakespeare in the broader meaning of "supernatural;" and "fantastical" could be applied even to a murder, in the wide sense of "imagined." So "exorbitant" was "out of the path," "uncommon," now only

^{*} Collapse is accented on the last syllable in most dictionaries.

[&]quot;How brave lives he that keeps a fool, although the rate be deeper,"
But he that is his own fool, sir, does live a great deal cheaver."

applied to that which is uncommonly "expensive." extravagant ("The extravagant and erring spirit," Hamlet, i. 1) has been restricted to "wandering beyond the bounds of economy." "To aggravate" now means, except when applied to disease, "to add to the mental burdens of any one," hence "to vex;" but in *Sonn*. 146 we find "to aggravate thy store" in the literal sense of "to add to the weight of" or "increase." So "journall" meant "diurnal" or "daily;" now it is restricted to a "daily" newspaper or memoir. The fact is that, in the influx of Greek and Latin words into the English language, many were introduced to express ideas that either could be, or were already, expressed in the existing vocabulary. Thus we do not require "metaphysical" to express that which is supernatural, nor "fantastical" to express that which is imagined; "exorbitant" is unnecessary in the sense of "uncommon;" extravagant" (though it has a special force in "the extravagant and erring spirit," Hamlet, i. 1) is not in most cases so obvious as "wandering;" "increase" is simpler than "aggravate," and "daily" more English than "diurnal." Similarly "speculation" is unnecessary to express the power of seeing, "advertised" useless in the sense of "warned" or "informed" (Lear, iv. 6. 214), "vulgar" in the sense of common. Such words, once introduced into the language, finding the broader room which they had been intended to fill already occupied, were forced to take narrower meanings. They did this, for the most part, by confining themselves to one out of many meanings which they had formerly represented, or by adopting metaphorical and philosophical instead of literal and material significations; and as the sense of their derivation and original meaning became weaker, the transition became easier. This is not merely true of words derived from Latin and Greek. "Travail," for example, finding itself supplanted in its original sense by "work" or "labour," has narrowed itself to a special meaning: the same is true of "beef," " pork," &c.

On the other hand, some Latin and Greek words that

express technicalities have, as the sense of their exact meaning was weakened, gradually become more loosely and generally used. Thus, "influence" means now more than the mere influence of the stars on men; "triumph," "preposterous," "pomp," "civil," "ovation," and "decimate," have lost much of their technical meaning. Of these words it may be said, that Shakespeare uses them more literally and particularly than we do. Thus, "triumph" is used for a show at a festival; "civil" is used for peaceful; "preposterous ass" (T. of Sh. iii. I. 9) is applied to a man who put music before philosophy; "decimation" (T. of A. v. I. 31) is used in its technical sense for "a tithed death."

One cause that has affected the meaning of Latin-derived words has been the preference with which they have been selected in order to express depreciation. This has narrowed some words to an unfavourable signification which they did not originally possess. Thus, "impertinent" in Elizabethan authors meant "not to the point;" "officious" could then mean "obliging," and a clever person could be described as "an admirable conceited fellow" (W. T. iv. 4. 203).

A classical termination (446) may sometimes be treated as active or as passive. Hence "plausibly" is used for "with applause" actively.

"The Romans plausibly did give consent."-R. of L.

"A very inconsiderate (inconsiderable) handful of English."
N. P. Appendix 31.

Thus, on the one hand, we have "fluxive eyes" (eyes flowing with tears: L. C. 8), and on the other the more common passive sense, as "the inexpressive she" (the woman whose praises cannot be expressed).

With respect to words of English or French origin, it is more difficult to establish any rule. All that can be said is that the Elizabethan, as well as the Victorian meaning, may be traced to the derivation of the word. Why, for instance, should not Ben Jonson write—

[&]quot;Frost fearing myrtle shall impale my head."-Poetast. i. I.

i.e. "take in within its pale, surround," as justifiably as we use the word in its modern sense of "transfixing?" Why should not sirens "train" (draw or decoy—trahere) their victims to destruction, as well as educators "train" their pupils onward on the path of knowledge? We talk of "a world of trouble" to signify an infinity; why should not Bacon (E. 38) talk of "a globe of precepts?" Owing to the deficiency of their vocabulary, and their habit of combining prepositions with verbs, to make distinct words almost like the Germans, the Elizabethans used to employ many common English words, such as "pass," "hold," "take," in many various significations. Thus we find "take" in the sense of (1) "bewitch;" (2) "interrupt" ("You take him too quickly, Marcius," B. J. Poetast.); (3) "consider" ("The whole court Marcius," B. J. Poetast.); (3) "consider" ("The whole court shall take itself abused," B. J. Cy.'s Rev. v. 1); (4) "understand" ("You'll take him presently," E. out &-c. i. 1); and (5) "resort to" ("He was driven by foule weather to take a poor man's cottage," N. P. 597). With prepositions the word has many more meanings. "Take out"="copy;" "take in "e" subdue;" "take up" = "borrow;" "take in with" (Bacon)="side with;" "take up"="pull up" of a horse. And these meanings are additional to the many other meanings which the word still retains. To enter further into the subject of the formation and meaning of words is not the purpose of this treatise. The glossaries of Nares and Halli-well supply the materials for a detailed study of the subject. One remark may be of use to the student before referring him to the following pages. The enumeration of the points of difference between Shakespearian and modern English may seem to have been a mere list of irregularities and proofs of the inferiority of the former to the latter. And it is true that the former period presents the English language in a transitional and undeveloped condition, rejecting and inventing much that the verdict of posterity has retained and discarded. It was an age of experiments, and the experiments were not always successful. While we have accepted copious, ingenious, disloyal, we have rejected as useless copy (in the sense

INTRODUCTION.

of "plenty"), ingin, and disnoble. But for freedom, for brevity and for vigour, Elizabethan is superior to modern English. Many of the words employed by Shakespeare and his contemporaries were the recent inventions of the age; hence they were used with a freshness and exactness to which we are strangers.* Again, the spoken English so far predominated over the grammatical English that it materially influenced the rhythm of the verse (see Prosody), the construction of the sentence, and even sometimes (460) the spelling of words. Hence sprung an artless and unlaboured harmony which seems the natural heritage of Elizabethan poets, whereas such harmony as is attained by modern authors frequently betrays a painful excess of art. Lastly, the use of some few still remaining inflections (the subjunctive in particular), the lingering sense of many other inflections that had passed away leaving behind something of the old versatility and audacity in the arrangement of the sentence, the stern subordination of grammar to terseness and clearness, and the consequent directness and naturalness of expression, all conspire to give a liveliness and wakefulness to Shakespearian English which are wanting in the grammatical monotony of the present day. We may perhaps claim some superiority in completeness and perspicuity for modern English, but if we were to appeal on this ground to the shade of Shakespeare in the words of Antonio in the Tempest,-

"Do you not hear us speak?"

we might fairly be crushed with the reply of Sebastian-

"I do; and surely It is a sleepy language."

^{*} Exceptions are "eternal" used for "infernal" (O. iv. 2, 130; J. C. i. 2. 160; Hamlet, i. 5. 21); "triple" for "third" (A. W. ii. 1. 111); "temporary" for "temporal" (M. for M. v. 1. 145); "important" for "importunate" (Lear, iv. 4. 26); "expiate" for "expired" (Rich. III. iii. 3. 23); "colleagued" (Hamlet, i. 2. 21) for "co-leagued;" "importing" (ib. 23) for "importuning." The Folio has "Pluto's" for "Plutus" (J. C. iv. 3. 102).

GRAMMAR.

ADJECTIVES.

1. Adjectives are freely used as Adverbs.

In Early English, many adverbs were formed from adjectives by adding e (dative) to the positive degree: as bright, adj.; brighte, adv. In time the e was dropped, but the adverbial use was kept. Hence, from a false analogy, many adjectives (such as excellent) which could never form adverbs in e, were used as adverbs. We still say col loquially, "come quick;" "the moon shines bright," &c. But Shakespeare could say:

- "Which the false man does easy."-Mach. ii. 3. 143.
- "Some will dear abide it."-J. C. iii. 2. 119.
- "Thou didst it excellent."-T. of Sh. i. 1. 89.
- "Which else should free have wrought."-Mach. ii. 1. 19.
- "Raged more fierce."-Rich. II. ii. I. 173.
- "Grow not instant old."-Ham. i. 5. 94.
- "Tis noble spoken."-A. and C. ii. 2. 99.
- "Did I expose myself pure for his love."—T. N. v. 1. 86.
- " Equal ravenous as he is subtle."—Hen. VIII. i. 1. 159.

We find the two forms of the adverb side by side in:

"She was new lodged and newly deified."-L. C. 84.

The position of the article shows that mere is an adverb in:

- "Ay, surely, mere the truth."-A. W. iii. 5. 58.
- 30 "It shall safe be kept."—Cymb. i. 6. 209.
 - "Heaven and our Lady gracious has it pleas'd."

1 Hen. VI. i. 2 74

"(I know) when the blood burns how prodigal the soul Lends the tongue vows."—Hamlet, i. 3. 116.

Such transpositions as "our lady gracious," (ac.j.) where "gracious" is a mere epithet, are not common in Shakespeare. (See 419.) In

"My lady sweet, arise,"-Cymb. ii. 3. 29.

"My-lady" is more like one word than "our lady," and is also an appellative. In appellations such transpositions are allowed, (See 13.)

Sometimes the two forms occur together:

- "And she will speak most bitterly and strange."

 M. for M. v. 1, 36.
- 2. Adjectives compounded. Hence two adjectives were freely combined together, the first being a kind of adverb qualifying the second. Thus:
 - "I am too sudden-bold."-L. L. Li. ii. 1. 107.

"Fertile-fresh."-M. W. of W. v. 5. 72.

"More active-valiant or more valiant-young,"

I Hen. IV. v. 1, 90,

"Daring-hardy."-Rich. II. i. 3. 43.

"Honourable-dangerous."—7. C. i. 3. 124. See ib. v. 1. 60.

"He lies crafty-sick."-2 Hen. IV. Prol. 37.

- "I am too childish-foolish for this world."—R. III. i. 3, 142.
- "You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord."—R. III. iii. 1. 44.
- "That fools should be so deep-contemplative."—A. Y. ii. 7. 31.

"Glouc. Methinks the ground is even.

Edg. Horrible-steep."—Lear, iv. 6. 3.

In the last example it is hard to decide whether the two adjectives are compounded, or (which is much more probable) "horrible" is a separate word used as in (1) for "horribly," as in T. N. iii. 4. 196. In the West of England "terrible" is still used in this adverbial sense.

There are some passages which are only fully intelligible when this combination is remembered:

"A strange tongue makes my cause more strange-suspicious."

Hen. VIII. iii. 1. 45.

Erase the usual comma after "strange."

"Here is a silly-stately style indexd."—I Hen. VI. iv. 7. 72. Perhaps "He only in a general-honest thought."—J. C v. 5. 71.

3. Adjectives, especially those ending in ful, less, ble, and we, have both an active and a passive meaning; just as we still say, a fearful (pass.) coward," and "a fearful (act.) danger."

"To throw away the dearest thing he owed, As 'twere a careless trifle."—Macbeth, i. 4. 11.

"Such kelpless harmes yt's better hidden keep."—Spen. F. Q. i. 5. 42.
"Even as poor birds deceived with painted grapes.

Like those poor birds that helpless berries saw."

V. and A. 604; Rich. III. i. 2. 13.

"Upon the sightless couriers of the air."—Macbeth, i. 7. 23.

"How dare thy joints forget

To pay their awful duty to our presence?"—Rich. II. iii. 3. 76.

"Terrible" is "frightened" in Lear, i. 2. 32; "dreadful," "awe-struck," Hamlet, i. 2. 207; "thankful" is "thankworthy," P. of T. v. I. 285. So "unmeritable" (act. Rich. III. iii. 7. 155; J. C. iv. I. 12); "medicinable" (act. Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 44); "sensible" (pass. Macb. ii. I. 36; Hamlet, i. I. 57); "insuppressive" (pass. J. C. ii. I. 134); "plausive" (pass. Hamlet, i. 4. 30); "uncomprehensive" (pass. Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 198); "respective" (act. R. and J. iii. I. 128; pass. T. G. of V. iv. 4. 200); "unexpressive" (pass. A. V. L. iii. 2. 10); "comfortable" (act. Lear, i. 4. 328); "deceivable" (act. R. II. ii. 3, 84; T. N. iv. 3, 21).

"Probable," "contemptible," and "artificial," are active in-

"The least of all these signs were *probable*."—2 *Hen.VI*. iii. 2. 178.

"Tis very probable that the man will scorn it, for he hath a very *contemptible* spirit."—*M. Ado*, ii. 3. 188.

"We, Hermia, like two artificial gods

Have with our needles created both one flower."

M. N. D. iii. 2. 204.

Hence even "The intrenchant air."-Macbeth, v. 8. 9.

"Unprizable" (T. N. v. 1. 58) means "not able to be made a prize of, captured."

"Effect" (Rich. III. i. 2. 120) seems used for "effecter" or

"agent" if the text is correct.

4. Adjectives signifying effect were often used to signify the cause. This is a difference of thought. We still say "pale death," "gaunt famine," where the personification is obvious; but we do not say-

"Oppress'd with two weak evils, age and hunger."

A. Y. L. ii. 7, 132

"Like as a sort of hungry dogs ymet
Doe fall together, stryving each to get
The greatest portion of the *greedie* pray."

SPENS. F. Q. vi. 11. 17.

"And barren rage of death's eternal cold."—Sonn. 13.

Nor should we say of the Caduceus-

"His sleepy yerde in hond he bare upright."—CHAUC. C. T. 1390.
Compare also "Sixth part of each!

A trembling contribution !"-Hen, VIII. i. 2. 95.

Here "trembling" is used for "fear-inspiring."

So other Elizabethan authors (Walker): "idle agues," "rotten showers," "barren curses."

5. Adjectives are frequently used for Nouns, even in the singular.

"A sudden pale usurps her cheek."—V. and A.

"Every Roman's private (privacy or private interest)."
B. J. Sejan. iii. 1.

"'Twas caviare to the general."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 458.

"Truth lies open to all. It is no man's several."—B. J. Disc. 742 b. "Before these bastard signs of fair (beauty) were born."—Sonn. 68. So "fair befal," Rich. II. ii. 1. 129; Rich. III. i. 3, 282. But

see 297. "Till fortune, tired with doing bad,

Threw him ashore to give him glad."—P. of T. ii. Gower, 37. "That termless (indescribable) hand

Whose bare outbragg'd the web it seem'd to wear."—L. C. 95.
"In few" = "in short."—Hamlet, i. 3, 126; Temp, i. 2, 144

"Small (little) have continual plodders ever won."

Small (little) have continual plodders ever won."

L. L. i. 1. 86.

"By small and small."—Rich. II. iii. 7. 198; Rich. III. i. 3.111.

"Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your true."

M. for M. ii. 4. 170.

"I'll make division of my present (money) with you."

T. N. iii. 4. 380.

If the text were correct, the following would be an instance of an adjective inflected like a noun:

"Have added feathers to the learned's wing."—Sonn. 78. But probably the right reading is "learned'st."

- "Wont," the noun (Hamlet, i. 4. 6), is a corruption from "woned," from the verb "wonye" E. E., "wunian" A.-S., "to dwell." Compare \$\frac{\eta}{\theta}\text{os}.
- 6. Adjectives comparative. The inflection er instead of more is found before "than."
 - "Sir, your company is fairer than honest."-M. for M. iv. 3. 185.

The comparative "more wonderful" seems to be used, as in Latin, for "more wonderful than usual," if the following line is to be attributed to Cicero as in the editions:

"Why, saw you anything more wonderful?"-J. C. i. 3. 14.

In Hamlet iv. 7. 49, "my sudden and more strange return," means "sudden, and even more strange than sudden."

- 7. The comparative inflection-er was sometimes used even when the positive ended in-ing,-ed,-id,-ain,-st,-ect. These terminations (perhaps because they assimilate the adjective to a participle by their sound) generally now take "more."
- "Horrider," Cymb. iv. 2. 331; "curster," T. of Sh. iii. 2. 156; "perfecter," Coriol. ii. 1. 91; "certainer," M. Ado, v. 3. 62.
- 8. Superlative. The superlative inflection est, like the Latin superlative, is sometimes used to signify "very," with little or no idea of excess.
 - "A little ere the mightiest Julius fell."-Hamlet, i. I. 114.
- "My mutest conscience" (Cymb. i. 6. 116) may perhaps mean "the mutest part or corner of my conscience," like "summus mons."
- 9. The superlative inflection est is found after-ent,-ing,-ed,-ect. Thus, "violentest" (Coriol. iv. 6. 73); "cursedst" (M. of V. ii. 1. 46); "lyingest" (T. of Sh. i. 2. 25); "persectest," (Macb. i. 5. 2).

This use of -est and -er (see 7) is a remnant of the indiscriminate application of these inflections to all adjectives which is found in Early English. Thus, in *Piers Plowman*, we have "avarousere" (B. i. 189), "merveillousest" (B. viii. 68).

10. The superlative was sometimes used (as it is still, but with recognized incorrectness) where only two objects are compared.

"Between two dogs which hath the deeper mouth, Between two blades which bears the better temper, Between two horses which doth bear him best, Between two girls which has the merriest eye,"

1 Hen. VI. ii. 4. 15

"Not to bestow my youngest daughter
Before I have a husband for the elder."—T. of Sh. i. I. 50.

"Of two usuries, the merriest was put down, and the worser allowed."—M. for M. iii. 2. 7.

Here it seems used for variety to avoid the repetition of the comparative.

- 11. Comparative and superlative doubled.—The inflections .cr and .est, which represent the comparative and superlative degrees of adjectives, though retained, yet lost some of their force, and sometimes received the addition of more, most, for the purpose of greater emphasis.
 - "A more larger list of sceptres."—A. and C. iii. 6. 76.
 - " More elder."-M. of V. iv. 1. 251.
 - " More better." Temp. i. 2. 19.
 - "More nearer."—Hamlet, ii. 1. 11.
 - "Thy most worst."—W. T. iii. 2. 180.
 - " More braver." Temp. i. 2. 439.
 - "With the most boldest."-J. C. iii. 1. 121.
 - "Most unkindest."-J. C. iii. 2. 187.
 - "To some more fitter place."—M. for M. ii. 2. 16.

"I would have been much more a fresher man."

Tr. and Cr. v. 6. 21.

Ben Jonson speaks of this as "a certain kind of English atticism, imitating the manner of the *most ancientest and finest* Grecians."—B. J. 786. But there is no ground for thinking that this idiom was the result of imitating Greek. We find Bottom saying:

"The more better assurance."-M. N. D. iii. 1. 4.

Note the anomaly: "Less happier lands."-R. II. ii. 1. 49.

12. The Adjectives all, each, both, every, other, are sometimes interchanged and used as Pronouns in a manner different from modern usage.

All for any:

"They were slaine without all mercie,"—HOLINSHED.
"Without all bail,"—Sonn. 74.

"Without all reason."-ASCH. 48.

(Comp. in Latin "sine omni, &c.") Heb. vii. 7: Wickliffe, "withouten ony agenseiyinge;" Rheims, Geneva, and A. V. "without all contradiction."

This construction, which is common in Ascham and Andrewes, is probably a Latinism in those authors. It may be, however, that in "things without all remedy," Mach. iii. 2. 11, "without" is used in the sense of "outside," "beyond." See Without (197).

All for every:

"Good order in all thyng."-Asch. 62.

"And all thing unbecoming."-Macb. iii. 1. 14.

We still use "all" for "all men." But Ascham (p. 54) wrote: "Ill commonlie have over much wit," and (p. 65) "Infinite shall be made cold by your example, that were never hurt by reading of bookes." This is perhaps an attempt to introduce a Latin idiom. Shakespeare, however, writes:

"What ever have been thought on."-Coriol. i. 2. 4.

Each for "all" or "each one of:"

"At each his needless heavings."- W. T. ii. 3. 35.

So every (i.e. "ever-ich," "ever-each"):

"Of every these happen'd accidents." - Temp. v. 1. 249.

And "none:" "None our parts."-A. and C. i. 3. 36.

Each for "both:"

"And each though enemies to either's reign Do in consent shake hands to torture me."—Sonn. 28.

"Each in her sleep themselves so beautify."—R. of L. 404.
"Tell me

In peace what *each* of them by the other *lose*."—*Coriol*.iii. 2. 44 This confusion is even now a common mistake. Compare

"How pale each worshipful and rev'rend guest Rise from a Clergy or a City feast."—Pope, Imit. Hor. ii. 75

Each for "each other:"

"But being both from me, both to each friend."—Sonn. 144. (i.e. both friends each to the other.)

Both seems put for "each," or either used for "each other," in "They are both in either's powers."—Temp. i. 2. 450.

There may, however, be an ellipsis of each after both:

"They are both (each) in either's powers."

Compare "A thousand groans.....

Came (one) on another's neck."-Sonn. 131.

It is natural to conjecture that this is a misprint for "one or other's." But compare

"I think there is not half a kiss to choose Who loves another best."—W. T. iv. 4. 176. (See 88)

Every one, Other, Neither, are used as plural pronouns:

"And every one to rest themselves betake."—R. of L. "Every one of these considerations, syr, move me."—ASCH. Dedic-

"Everything
In readiness for Hymenæus stand."—T. A. i. 1. 325.

"Smooth every passion

That in the nature of their lord rebel."—Lear, ii. 2. 82.

"Every" is a pronoun in

"If every of your wishes had a womb."

A. and C. i. 2. 38; A. Y. L. v. 4. 178.

"Thersites' body is as good as Ajax' When neither are alive."—Cymb. iv. 2. 252.

" Other have authoritie." - ASCH. 46.

"And therefore is the glorious planet Sol In noble eminence enthron'd and spher'd Amidst the *other*."—Tr. and C. i. 3. 89.

Other is also used as a singular pronoun (even when not preceded by "each"):*

"Every time gentler than other."-J. C. i. 2. 231.

"With greedy force each other doth assail."—SPENS. F. Q. i. 5. 6.

i e. "each doth assail the other."—Rich. II. i. 1. 22.

"We learn no other but the confident tyrant Keeps still in Dunsinane."—Macb. v. 4, 8.

"He hopes it is no other

But, for your health and your digestion's sake, An after-dinner's breath."—Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 120.

'If you think other." - Othello, iv. 2. 13.

"Franse no other."—A. W. iii. 6. 27.

[•] It is used as a singular adjective, without the article, in Cymb. iii. 4 144:
"You think of other place."

In the two last passages "other" may be used adverbially for "otherwise," as in *Macbeth*, i. 7. 77, which may explain

"They can be meek that have no other cause."—C. of E. ii. 1. 33. 1.e. "no cause otherwise than for meekness."

The use of all(e) and other(e) as plural pronouns is consistent with ancient usage. It was as correct as "omnes" and "alii" in Latin, as "alle" and "andere" in German. Our modern "others said" is only justified by a custom which might have compelled us to say "manys" or "alls said," and which has induced us to say "our betters," though not (with Heywood) "our biggers." The plural use of neither, "not both," depends on the plural use of either for "both," which is still retained in "on either side," used for "on both sides." This is justified by the original meaning of ei-ther, i.e. "every one of two," just as whe-ther means "which of two." "Either" in O.E. is found for "both." Similarly we say "none were taken" instead of "none (no one) was taken." We still retain the use of other as a pronoun without the in such phrases as "they saw each other," for "they saw each the other." Many is also used as a noun. (See 5.) Hence we have:

"In many's looks."-Sonn. 93.

Beside the adjective "mani," "moni" (many), there was also in Early English the noun "manie" or "meine" (multitude, from Fr. "maisgnée," Lat. "minores natu"). But it is doubtful whether this influenced the use just mentioned.

- 13. The possessive Adjectives, when unemphatic, are sometimes transposed, being really combined with nouns (like the French monsieur, milord).
 - "Dear my lord."—J. C. ii. 1. 255.
 - "Good my brother."-Hamlet, i. 3. 46.
 - "Sweet my mother."-R. and J. iii. 5. 200.
 - "Oh! poor our sex."-Tr. and Cr. v. 2. 109.
 - "Art thou that my lord Elijah?"-I Kings xviii. 7.
 - "Come, our queen."-Cymb. ii. 3. 68.

So probably, vocatively:

- "Tongue-tied our queen speak thou."-W. T. i. 2. 27.
- Compare "Come on, our queen."-Rich. II. i. 2. 222.
 - "Good my knave."-L. L. L. iii. 1. 153

"Good my friends."-Coriol. v. 2. 8.

"Good your highness, patience."-A. and C. ii. 5. 106.

"Good my girl."-I Hen. VI. v. 4. 25.

Hence, by analogy, even

"Good my mouse of virtue."-T. N. i. 5. 69.

The emphatic nature of this appellative "good" is illustrated by

"Good now, sit down."-Hamlet, i. 1. 70:

where the noun is omitted. So W. T. v. 1. 19; Tempest, i. 1. 16. "Gunnow" (good now) is still an appellative in Dorsetshire.

Sometimes, but very rarely, the possessive adjective used vocatively is allowed to stand first in the sentence:

"Our very loving sister, well be met."-Lear, v. 1. 20.

It is possible that this use of "my," "our," &c. may be in part explained from their derivation, since they were originally not adjectives, but the possessive cases of pronouns. Thus, "sweet my mother," = "sweet mother of me," or "sweet mother mine."

Similar vocatives are

"The last of all the Romans, fare thee well."-7. C. v. 3. 99.

"The jewels of our father, with wash'd eyes, Cordelia leaves you."—Lear, i. 1. 271.

So Folio, "Take that, ihe likeness of this railer here." 3 Hen. VI. v. 5. 38 (Globe "thou").

14. The Adjectives just, mere, proper, and very were sometimes used as in Latin.

Just = exact. "A just seven-night."—M. Ado, ii. 1. 375.
"A just pound."—M. of V. iv. 1. 327.

Whereas we retain this sense only in the adverbial use, "just a week." Compare "justum iter."

15. Mere = "unmixed with anything else:" hence, by inference, "intact," "complete."

"The *mere* perdition of the Turkish fleet."—O. ii. 2. 3.
i.e. the "complete destruction."

"Strangely-visited people,
The mere despair of surgery."—Macbeth, iv. 3. 132.

i.e. "the utter despair." So Rich. III. iii. 7. 263.

The word now means "unmixed," and therefore, by inference,

"nothing but," "bare," "insignificant." But, in accordance with its original meaning, "not merely," in Bacon, is used for "not entirely." So Hamlet, i. 2. 137.

- 16. Proper = "peculiar," "own."
 - "Their proper selves."-Temp. iii. 3. 60.
- "With my proper hand."—Cymb. iv. 2. 97; T. N. v. 1. 327. i.e. "with my own hand," as in French. So J. C. i. 2. 41, v. 3. 96.

Very = "true." "My very friends."-M. of V. iii. 2. 226.

- 17. More (mo-re) and most (mo-st) (comp. E. E. ma or mo; mar or mor; maest, mast, or most) are frequently used as the comparative and superlative of the adjective "great." [Moe, or mo, as a comparative (Rich. II. ii. 1. 239; Rich. III. iv. 4. 199), is contracted from more or mo-er. Compare "bet" for "bett-er," "leng" for "leng-er," and "streng" for "streng-er," in O. E. See also "sith," 62.]
 - "At our more leisure."-M. for M. i. 3. 49.
 - "A more requital."-K. 7. ii. 1. 34.
 - "With most gladness."-A. and C. ii. 2. 169.
 - "Our most quiet" (our very great quiet) .- 2 Hen. IV. iv. 1.71.
 - "So grace and mercy at your most need help you."

Hamlet, i. 5. 180.

Hence we understand:

"Not fearing death nor shrinking for distress,

But always resolute in *most* extremes."—I *Hen. VI.* iv. 1. 38. i.e. not "in the majority of extremities," as it would mean with us, but "in the *greatest* extremes."

Hence:

- "More (instead of greater) and less came in with cap and knee."

 I Hen. IV. iv. 3, 68,
- "And more and less do flock to follow him."

 2 Hen. IV, i. 1. 209.
 - "Both *more* and less have given him the revolt."

Macbeth, v. 4. 12.

That "less" refers here to rank, and not to number, is illustrated by "What great ones do the less will prattle of."—T. N. i. 2. 33.

So Chaucer:

"The grete giftes to the most and leste."—C. T. 2227.

- 18. One is used for "above all," or "alone," i.e. "all-one," in Elizabethan English with superlatives.
 - "He is one the truest manner'd."-Cymb. i. 6. 164.
 - "One the wisest prince."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 49.
 - "Have I spake one the least word."-Ib. 153.

But in Early English one is thus used without a superlative:

- "He one is to be praised."
- "I had no brother but him one."
- "He was king one."

(Here Mr. Morris conjectures that the O. E. "ane" stands for A.-S. dative "an-um.")

So in Latin "justissimus unus;" and in Greek $\mu \delta vos$ is similarly used. So "alone" = "above all things."

- "That must needs be sport alone."-M. N. D. iii. 2. 119.
- "I am alone the villain of the earth."—A. and C. iv. 6. 30.
 "So full of shapes is fancy

That it alone is high fantastical."—T. N. i. 1. 15.

None. See 53.

19. Right (which is now seldom used as an adjective, except with the definite article, as the opposite of "the wrong," e.g. "the right way," not "a right way"), was used by Shakespeare, with the indefinite article, to mean "real," "down-right."

"I am a right maid for my cowardice."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 302. Compare A. and C. iv. 12. 28, "a right gipsy." It means "true" in "A right description of our sport, my lord."—L. L. L. v. 2. 522.

20. Self (se = swa [so]; ·lf. = Germ. leib, "body:" Wedgewood, however, suggests the reciprocal pronoun, Lat. se, Germ. sich, and he quotes, "Et il ses cors ira," i.e. "and he him self will go," Old French, and still retained in Creole patois) was still used in its old adjectival meaning "same," especially in "one self," i.e. "one and the same," and "that self." Compare the German "selbe."

[&]quot;That self chain."-C. of E. v. 1. 10.

[&]quot;That self mould."-Rich. II. i. 2. 23.

[&]quot; One self king." - T. N. i. 1. 39.

Compare 3 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 11; A. and C. v. 1. 21; M. of V. i. 1. 148.

Hence we can trace the use of *himself*, &c. The early English did not always use "self," except for emphasis; their use was often the same as our modern poetic use:

"They sat them down upon the yellow sand."—TENNYSON.

In order to define the *him*, and to identify it with the previous *he*, the word *self* (meaning "the same," "the aforesaid") was added: "He bends himself." Thyself and myself are for thee-self, me-self. "One self king" may be illustrated by "one same house."—MONTAIGNE, 228. We also find the adjectival use of "self" retained in

"The territories of Attica selfe."-N. P. 175.

"The city selfe of Athens."-N. P. 183.

"Itself" is generally, if not always, written in the Folio "it selfe." There is a difficulty, however, in such a phrase as "I myself saw it." Why do we not find "I-self," "he-self," in such cases? Why, even in A.-S., do we find the rule that, when self agrees with the subject of the sentence, the pronoun has to be repeated in the dative before self: "he (him) self did it," but when the noun is in an oblique case self is declined like any other adjective, and agrees with its noun: "he hine seolfne band," i.e. "he bound himself?" The fact is, that in the second case "self" is an ordinary adjective used as an adjective: "he bound the same or aforesaid him." But in the former case "himself" is often an abridgment of a prepositional expression used as an adverb: "he did it by himself," "of himself," "for himself," and, being a quasi-adverb, does not receive the adjectival inflection.* It follows that "my," "thy," in "myself" and "thyself," are not pronominal adjectives, but represent inflected cases of the pronouns. Thus "ourself" for "ourselves" is strictly in accordance with the A.-S. usage in

"We will ourself in person to this war,"—Rich. II. i. 4. 42. though of course Shakespeare only uses it for "myself" in the mouth of a dignified personage. Similarly in Piers Plowman (B. viii. 62) we have "myn one" (= "of me one," i.e. "of me alone" [see One]) used for "by myself," and "him one" (William of Palerne, 17) for "by himself;" and here "myn" is the genitive of "I," and "him"

^{*} Myself seems used for our "by myself" in "I had as lief have been myself alone."—A. Y. L. iii. 2, 269.

the dative of "he," and "one" is an adjective. This is also illustrated by the Scottish "my lane," i.e. "my, or by me, alone." Hence, instead of "ourselves" we have in Wickliffe, 2 Cor. x. 2, "but we mesuren us in us silf and comparisownen us silf to us," and, a line above, "hem silf" for "themselves."

Very early, however, the notion became prevalent that the inflected pronoun was a pronominal adjective, and that "self" was a noun. Hence we find in Chaucer, "myself hath been the whip," "and to prove their selfes" in Berners' Froissart; and in Shakespeare, Temp. i. 2. 132, "thy crying self." Hence the modern "ourselves," "yourselves."

The use of "self" as a noun is common in Shakespeare: "Tarquin's self," Coriol. ii. 2. 98; "my woeful self," L. C. 143. Hence the reading of the Folio may be correct in the first of the following lines:

"Even so myself bewails good Gloucester's case, With sad unhelpful tears and with dimm'd eyes Look after him."—2 Hen. VI. iii. I. 217.

But the change to the first person is more in accordance with Shake-speare's usage, as:

"This love of theirs myself have often seen."

T. G. of V. iii. 1. 23.

Sc T. G. iii. 1. 147; ib. iv. 2. 110.

So "himself" is used as a pronoun, without "he," in

"Direct not him whose way himself will choose."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 29.

"Self-born arms" (Rich. II. ii. 3, 80) seems to mean "divided against themselves," "civil war."

21. Some, being frequently used with numeral adjectives qualifying nouns of time, as "some sixteen months" (T. G. of V. iv. 1. 21), is also found, by association, with a singular noun of time.

"Some hour before you took me."-T. N. ii. 1. 22.

"I would detain you here some month or two."-M. of V. iii. 2. 9.

"Some day or two."-R. III. iii. 1. 64.

It would seem that in such expressions "some" has acquired an adverbial usage, as in the provincialisms, "It is some late," "Five mile or some" (MÄTZNER, ii. 253). Compare

[&]quot;I think 'tis now some seven o'clock."- T. of Sh. iv. 3 189.

"Sum" is, however, found in Early English and Anglo-Saxon in the sense of "a certain." Compare A.-S. "Sum jungling hym fyligde," Mark xiv. 51. So Wickliffe, where A. V. has "A certain young man followed him." "Other-some" (M.N.D. i. 1. 226), see p. 6.

22. The licence of converting one part of speech into another may be illustrated by the following words used as adjectives:

"The fine point of seldom (rare) pleasure." - Sonn. 52.

"Each under (inferior) eye." - Sonn. 7.

"This beneath (lower) world."-T. of A. i. 1. 44.

' The orb below

As hush (silent) as death."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 508.

See also still, below (22).

"Most felt (palpable) and open this."-B. J. Sejan. i. 2.

"Most laid (plotted) impudence."—B. J. Fox.

As still with us, any noun could be prefixed to another with the force of an adjective: "water-drops," "water-thieves," "water-fly," &c.

This licence, however, was sometimes used where we should prefer the genitive or an adjective. Thus, "the region kites" (Hamlet, ii. 2. 607,) for "the kites of the region;" and "the region cloud," Sonn. 33. So perhaps, "a moment leisure," Hamlet, i. 3. 133. We say "heart's ease," but Shakespeare, Hen. V. ii. 2. 27, says "heart-grief;" "heart-blood," Rich. II. i. I. 172, &c.; "faction-traitors," ib. ii. 2. 57. Again, a word like "music" is not commonly used by us as a prefix unless the suffix is habitually connected with "music:" thus "music-book," "music-master," &c., but not "music" for "musical" as in

"The honey of his music vows."—Hamlet, iii. I. 164.

Compare "venom mud," R. of L. 561; "venom clamours," C. of E. v. i. 69, for "venomous;" "venom sound," Rich. II. ii. 1. 19; "venom tooth," Rich. III. i. 3. 291.

This licence is very frequent with proper names.

"Here in Philippi fields."—J. C. v. 5. 19.

"Draw them to Tiber banks."-7. C. i. 1. 63.

"There is no world without Verona walls."—R. and J. iii. 3. 17.

"Within rich Pisa walls."-T. of Sh. ii. 1. 369.

"To the Cyprus wars."—O. i. 1. 151.

"Turkey cushions."-T. of Sh. ii. 1. 355, as we still say.

- "From Leonati seat."-Cymb. v. 4. 60.
- " Venice gold."-T. of Sh. ii. 1. 366.

The reason for this licence is to be found in an increasing dislike and disuse of the inflection in 's. Thus we find, "sake" frequently preceded in I Hen. IV. by an uninflected noun: "for recreation sake," I Hen. IV. i. 2. 174; ib. ii. I. 80; ib. v. I. 65; "for fashion sake," A. V. L. iii. 2. 271.

ADVERBS.

- 23. It is characteristic of the unsettled nature of the Elizabethan language that, while (see 1) adjectives were freely used as adverbs without the termination *ly*, on the other hand *ly* was occasionally added to words from which we have rejected it. Thus: "fastly." (L. C. 9); "youngly" (Coriol. ii. 3. 244).
- 24. Adverbs with prefix a: (1) Before nouns. In these adverbs the a-represents some preposition, as "in," "on," "of," &c. contracted by rapidity of pronunciation. As might be expected, the contraction is mostly found in the prepositional phrases that are in most common use, and therefore most likely to be rapidly pronunced. Thus (Coriol. iii. 1. 261-2) Menenius says: "I would they were in Tiber," while the Patrician, "I would they were a-bed." Here a-means "in," as in the following:

"3d Fisherman. Master, I marvel how the fishes live in the sea.

1st Fisherman. Why, as men do a-land."—P. of T. ii. 1. 31.

A- is also used where we should now use "at." Compare, however, O. E. "on work."

"Sets him new a-work."—Hamlet, ii. 2.510; Lear iii. 5. 8.

So R. of L. 1496. And compare Hamlet, ii. 1. 58, "There (he) was a gaming," with

"When he is drunk, asleep, or in his rage At gaming."—Hamlet, iii. 3. 91.

Sometimes "of" and "a-" are interchanged. Compare "a-kin" and "of kind," "of burst" and "a-thirst," "of buve" and "a-thove." Most frequently, however, "a-" represents our modern "on" or "in." Compare "a-live and "on live."

"Bite the holy cords a-twain."—Lear, ii. 2. 80; L. C. 6.

Compare "That his spere brast a-five," i.e. "burst in five pieces." (HALLIWELL.) So

- "A-front."-I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 222. "A-fire."-Temp. i. 2. 212.
- "Look up a-height" (perhaps).-Lear, iv. 6. 58.
- "Beaten the maids a-row."—C. of E. v. 1. 170.
- "And keep in a-door."-Lear, i. 4. 138.

Thus, probably, we must explain

"Thy angel becomes a fear."—A. and C. ii. 3. 22.

i.e. "a-fear." The word "a-fere" is found in A.-S. in the sense of "fearful" (Mätzner, i. 394). And in the expressions "What a plague?" (I Hen. IV. i. 2. 51,) "What a devil?" (I Hen. IV. ii. 2. 39.) "A God's name" (Rich. II. ii. I. 251,) and the like, we must suppose a to mean "in," "on," or "of." There is some difficulty in

"I love a ballad in print a life" (so Folio, Globe, "o' life").

W. T. iv. 4. 264.

It might be considered as a kind of oath, "on my life." Nares explains it "as my life," but the passages which he quotes could be equally well explained on the supposition that a is a preposition. The expression "all amort" in I Hen. VI. iii. 2. 124, and T. of Sh. iv. 3. 36, is said to be an English corruption of "à la mort."

"To heal the sick, to cheer the alamort."—NARES.

The a (E. E. an or on) in these adverbial words sometimes for euphony retains the n:

"And each particular hair to stand an end."—Ham. i. 4. 19.*

So *Hamlet*, iii. 4. 122, *Rich. III*. i. 3. 304; and compare "an hungry," "an hungred" below, where the an is shown not to be the article. So

"A slave that still an end turns me to shame,"—T. G. of V. iv. 4. 67. where "an end" (like "run on head" (Homilies), i.e. "run a-head") signifies motion "on to the end."

These adverbial forms were extremely common in earlier English, even where the nouns were of French origin. Thus we find: "a grief," "a-fyn" for "en-fin," "a-bone" excellently, "a-cas" by chance. Indeed the corruption of en- into a- in Old French itself

^{*} Compare "Shall stand a tip-toe."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 42.

is very common, and we still retain from this source "a-round" for "en rond" and "a-front" for "en front."

(2) Before adjectives and participles, used as nouns.

When an adjective may easily be used as a noun, it is intelligible that it may be preceded by a.. Compare "a-height," quoted above, with our modern "on high," and with

"One heaved a-high to be hurled down below."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 86.

It is easy also to understand a-before verbal nouns and before adjactives used as nouns, where it represents on:

"I would have him nine years a-killing."—O. iv. 1. 188.

i.e. "on, or in the act of killing." So

"Whither were you a-going?"—Hen. VIII. i. 3. 50.

i.e. "in the act of going."

"The slave that was a-hanging there."-Lear, v. 3. 274.

"Tom's a-cold."-Lear, iii. 4. 59.

i.e. "a-kale," E. E. "in a chill."

Some remarkable instances of this form are subjoined, in which nouns are probably concealed.

"I made her weep a-good."—T. G. of V. iv. 4. 170.

i.e. "in good earnest;" but "good" may be a noun. Compare "a-bone" above.

"The secret mischiefs that I set abroach."—R. III. i. 3. 325; R. and 7. i. I. 111.

where a is prefixed to "broach," now used only as a verb. "On broach" and "abroach" are found in E. E. Compare

"O'er which his melancholy sits on brood."

Hamlet, iii. 1. 173

Compare "That sets them all agape."—MILTON, P. L. v.; which is to be explained by the existence of an old noun, "gape."

(3) As the prefix of participles and adjectives.

In this case a- represents a corruption of the A.-S. intensive of. Thus from E. E. "offeren," we have "afered" or "afeared;" from A.-S. "of-gán," "a-gone." The of before a vowel or h is sometimes changed into on or an. See On, 182. And indeed the prefixes an-, on-, of-, a-, were all nearly convertible. Hence "of-hungred" appears not only as "afingred," but also "an-hungered," as in St. Matthew xxv. 44, A. V.: "When saw we thee an hungered

or athirst?" It would be a natural mistake to treat an here as the article: but compare

"They were an hungry,"-Coriol. i. 1. 209.

where the plural "they" renders it impossible to suppose that an is the article.

Perhaps, by analogy, a- is also sometimes placed before adjectives that are formed from verbs. It can scarcely be said that weary is a noun in

"For Cassius is a-weary of the world."

J. C. iv. 3. 95; 1 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 88.

Rather "a-weary," like "of-walked," means "of-weary," i.e. "tired out,"

25. Adverbs ending in "s" formed from the possessive inflection of Nouns. Some adverbs thus formed are still in common use, such as "needs" = "of necessity."

"Needs must I like it well."-Rich. II. iii. 2. 4.

"There must be *needs* a like proportion."—M. of V. iii. 4. 14. But we find also in Shakespeare:

"He would have tickled you other gates than he did."

T. N. v. 1. 198.

i.e. "in another gate or fashion."

In this way (compare "sideways," "lengthways," &c.) we must probably explain

"Come a little nearer this ways."—M. W. of W. ii. 2. 50.

And "Come thy ways."-T. N. ii. 5. 1.

Compare also the expression in our Prayer-book:

"Any ways afflicted, or distressed."

Others explain this as a corruption of "wise."

"Days" is similarly used:

"Tis but early days."—Tr. and Cr. iv. 5. 12.

i.e. "in the day," as the Germans use "morgens." Compare "now-a-days," and N. P. 179, "at noondaies."

A similar explanation might suggest itself for

"Is Warwick friends with Margaret?"

3 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 115; A. and C. ii. 5. 44.

But "I am friends" is not found in E. E., and therefore probably it is simply a confusion of two constructions, "I am friend to him" and "we are friends."

26. After was used ad-rbially of time

"If you know

That I do fawn on men, and hug them hard. And after scandal them."—9. C. i. 2. 76.

Now we use afterwards in this sense, using after rarely as an adverb and only with verbs of motion, to signify an interval of space, as "he followed after."

27. The use of the following adverbs should be noted:

Again (radical meaning "opposite") is now only used in the local sense of returning, as in "He came back again, home again," &c.; and metaphorically only in the sense of repeating, as in "Again we find many other instances," &c. It is used by Shakespeare metaphorically in the sense of "on the other hand." Thus—

"Have you

Ere now denied the asker, and now again (on the other hand) Of him that did not ask but mock, bestow

Your sued-for tongues?"—Coriol. ii. 3. 214.

"Where (whereas) Nicias did turne the Athenians from their purpose, Alcibiades againe (on the other hand) had a further reach," &c. -N. P. 172. So Rich. II. ii. 9. 27.

It is also used *literally* for "back again." "Haste you again." A. IV. ii. 2. 73, does not mean "haste a second time," but "hasten back."

Again is used for "again and again," i.e. repeatedly (a previous action being naturally implied by again), and hence intensively almost like "amain."

"For wooing here until I sweat(ed) again."-M. of V. iii. 2. 205.

* Weeping again the king my father's wreck."

Tempest, i. 2. 390.

For omission of -ed in "sweat" (common in E. E.), see 341.

28. All (altogether) used adverbially:

"I will dispossess her all."-T. of A. 1. I. 139.

"For us to levy power is all unpossible."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 126.

In compounds all is freely thus used, "All-worthy lord;" "all-watched night;" "her all-disgraced friend," A. and C. iii. 12. 22. Sometimes it seems to mean "by all persons," as in "all-shunned." So, "this all-hating world," Rich. II. v. 5. 66, does not mean "Lating all," but "hating (me) universally."

All used intensively was frequently p efixed to other adverbs of degree, as "so."

"What occasion of import

Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife?"

T. of Sh. iii. 1. 105.

The connection of all and "so" is perpetuated in the modern "also." Still more commonly is all prefixed to "too."

"In thy heart-blood, though being all too base To stain the temper of my knightly sword."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 28.

"Our argument.

Is all too heavy to admit much talk."—2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 24.

So Cymb. v. 5. 169; T. G. of V. iii. 1. 162; Sonn. 18, 61, 86; R. of L. 44, 1686.

There are two passages in Shakespeare where all-to requires explanation:

- "It was not she that called him all to nought."—V. and A. 993. "The very principals (principal posts of the house) did seem to rend And all to topple."-P. of T. iii. 2. 17.
- (I) In the first passage all-to is probably an intensive form of "to," which in Early English (see Too, below) had of itself an intensive meaning. Originally "to" belonged to the verb. Thus "to-breke" meant "break in pieces." - When "all" was added, as in "all to-breke," it at first had no connection with "to," but intensified "to-breke." But "to" and "too" are written indifferently for one another by Elizabethan and earlier writers, and hence sprang a corrupt use of "all-to," caused probably by the frequent connection of all and too illustrated above. It means here "altogether."
- (2) In the second passage some (a) connect "to-topple," believing that here and in M. W. of W. iv. 4. 57, "to-pinch," "to" is an intensive prefix, as in Early English. But neither of the two passages necessitates the supposition that Shakespeare used this archaism. (See M. W. of W. iv. 4. 5 below, To omitted and inserted, 350.) We can, therefore, either (b) write "all-to" (as in the Globe), and treat it as meaning "altogether," or (c) suppose that "all" means "quite," and that "to topple," like "to rend," depends upon "seem." This last is the more obvious and probable construction.

^{*} Or, adopting this construction, we may take all to mean "the whole house," 'The principals did seem to rend, and the whole house to topple."

From this use of "all too" or "all to," closely connected in the sense of "altogether," it was corruptly employed as an intensive prefix, more especially before verbs beginning with be-: "all-to-bequalify," B. J.; "all-to-bekist," ib.; and later. "he all-to be-Gullivers me," SWIFT; "all-to-be-traytor'd," NARES.

29. Almost, used for mostly, generally:

"Neither is it *almost* seen that very beautiful persons are of great virtue."—B. E. 163.

Our modern meaning *nearly* is traceable to the fact that anything is *nearly* done when the *most* of it is done.

Almost (see also Transpositions) frequently follows the word which it qualifies.

"I swoon almost with lear."-M. N. D. ii. 3. 154.

"As like almost to Claudio as himself." -M. for M. v. 1. 494.

Hence in negative sentences we find "not-almost" where we should use "almost not," or, in one word, "scarcely," "hardly."

"You cannot reason (almost) with a man."—Rich. III. ii. 2. 39. The Globe omits the parenthesis of the Folio.

"And yet his trespass, in our common reason,

Is not almost a fault... to incur a private check."—0. iii. 3. 66. i.e. "is not (I may almost say) fault enough to," &c. or "is searcely fault enough to," &c. So

"I have not breath'd almost since I did see it."-C. of E. v. 1. 181.

It was natural for the Elizabethans to dislike putting the qualifyting "almost" before the word qualified by it. But there was an ambiguity in their idiom. "Not almost-a-fault" would mean "not approaching to a fault;" "not-almost a fault," "very nearly not a fault." We have, therefore, done well in avoiding the ambiguity by disusing "almost" in negative sentences. The same ambiguity and peculiarity attaches to interrogative, comparative, and other conjunctional sentences.

"Would you imagine or almost believe?"—Rich. III. iii. 5. 35. t.e. "Would you suppose without evidence, or (I may almost say) believe upon evidence?" &c.

"Our aim, which was
To take in many towns ere almost Rome
Should know we were afoot."—Coriol. i. 2. 24.

Alone, see One, 18.

30. Along is frequently joined to "with" and transposed, as:

"With him is Gratiano gone along."-M. of V. ii. 8. 2.

Hence the "with me" being omitted, "along" is often used fo. "along with me."

"Demetrius and Egeus, go along, I must employ you in some business."—M. N. D. i. 1. 123.

Note, that here, as in *T. of Sh.* iv. 5. 9; 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 1. 191; 0. i. 1. 180; "go" is used where we should say "come." The word is used simply to express the motion of walking by WICKLIFFE: *Acts* xiv. 8. Montaigne, *Florio*, 230.

Sometimes the verb of motion is omitted, as in

"Will you along (with us)?"-Coriol. ii. 3. 157.

"Let's along" is still a common Americanism.

Sometimes the ellipsis refers to the third person.

"Go you along (with him)."—A. and C. v. 1. 69.

Perhaps we ought (to the advantage of the rhythm) to place a comma after along, in

"Therefore have I entreated him along,

With us to watch the minutes of this night."—Ham. i. 1. 26.

30 a. Anon. The derivative meaning of anon (an-ane) is "at one instant," or "in an instant," and this is its ordinary use. But in

"Still and anon."-K. 7. iv. 1. 47.

"Which ever and anon he gave his nose."

1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 38.

anon seems to mean "the moment after," a previous moment being implied by "still," "ever." Compare our "now and then."

31. Anything, like Any ways, is adverbially used:

"Do you think they can take any pleasure in it, or be anything delighted?"—MONTAIGNE, 31.

"Any ways afflicted, or distressed."-Prayer-book.

"Ways" is, perhaps, genitive. See 25.

32. Away.

"She could never away with me."—2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 213.
i.e. "she could not endure me." A verb of motion is probably

omitted. Compare our "I cannot get on with him," "put up with him," and the provincial "I cannot do with him."

"I could not do withal."-M. of V. iii. 2. 72.

So "she could never away with me" = "she could not go on her way," i.e. "get on with me." For the omission of the verb of motion compare

"Will you along !"-Coriol. ii. 3. 157.

33. Back, for "backward."

"Goes to and back lackeying the varying tide."

A. and C. i. 4. 46.

Where we should say "to and fro."

34. Besides = "by the side of the main question," i.e. "in other respects," "for the rest."

"This Timæus was a man not so well knowne as he, but besides (for the rest) a wise man and very hardy."—N. P. 174.

Similarly besides is used as a preposition in the sense "out of."

"How fell you besides your five wits?"—T. N. iv. 2. 92.

35. Briefly = "a short time ago," instead of (as with us) "in a short space of time."

"Briefly we heard their drums.
How couldst thou . . . bring thy news so late?"

Coriol. i. 6. 16.

Similarly we use the Saxon equivalent "shortly" to signify futurity.

36. By (original meaning "near the side." Hence "by and by" = "very near," which can be used either of time or, as in Early English, also of place) is used for "aside," "on one side," "away," in the phrase

"Stand by, or I shall gall you."—K. J. iv. 3. 94.

Whereas, on the other hand, "to stand by a person" means "to stand near any one."

37. Chance appears to be used as an adverb:

"How chance thou art returned so soon?"—C. of E. i. 2. 42

But the order of the words "thou art," indicates that Shakespeare treated chance as a verb. "How may it chance or chances that," as *Hamlet*, ii. 2. 343, "How *chances* it they travel?" Compare—

"How chance the roses there do fade so fast?"

M. N. D. i. 1. 129.

So Tr. and Cr. iii. 1. 151; 2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 20; Rich. III. iv. 2. 103; M. W. of W. v. 5. 231; P. of T. iv. 1. 23.

Compare, however, also-

"If case some one of you would fly from us."—3 Hen. VI. v. 4. 34. where "case" is for the Old French "per-case."

This use of chance as an apparent adverb is illustrated by

"Perchance his boast of Lucrece' sovereignty
Suggested this proud issue of a king:
Perchance that envy of so rich a thing
Braving compare, disdainfully did sting."—R. of L. 39.

Here "perchance" seems used first as an adverb, then as a verb, "it may chance that." So Shakespeare, perhaps, used *chance* as an adverb, but unconsciously retained the order of words which shows that, strictly speaking, it is to be considered as a verb.

38. Even. "Even now" with us is applied to an action that has been going on for some long time and still continues, the emphasis being laid on "now." In Shakespeare the emphasis is often to be laid on "even," and "even now" means "exactly or only now," i.e. "scarcely longer ago than the present:" hence "but now."

"There was an old fat woman even now with me."

M. W. of W. iv. 5. 26.

Often "but even now" is used in this sense: M. of V. i. 1. 35. On the other hand, both "even now" and "but now" can signify "just at this moment," as in

"But now I was the lord Of this fair mansion; . . . and even now, but now, This house, these servants, and this same myself Are yours."—M. of V. iii. 2. 171.

We use "just now" for the Shakespearian "even now," laying the emphasis on "just," Even is used for "even now," in the sense of "at this moment," in

"A certain convocation of politic worms are even at him."

Hamlet, iv. 3, 22,

So "even when" means "just when" in

"(Roses) die, even when they to perfection grow."

T. N. ii. 4. 42.

39. Ever (at every time) freq.:

"For slander's mark was ever yet the fair."-Sonn. 70.

The latter use is still retained in poetry. But in prose we confine "ever" (like the Latin "unquam") to negative, comparative, and interrogative sentences.

Ever seems contrary to modern usage in

"Would I might

But ever see that man."—Temp. i. 2. 168.

"But," however, implies a kind of negative, and "ever" means "at any time."

- 40. Far, used metaphorically for "very."
- "But far unfit to be a sovereign."—3 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 92. So 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 286.
- 41. Forth, hence, and hither are used without verbs of motion (motion being implied):
 - "I have no mind of feasting forth to-night."-M. of V. ii. 2.37.

"Her husband will be forth."-M. W. of W. ii. 2. 278.

"By praising him here who doth hence remain."—Sonn. 39. "From thence the sauce to meat is ceremony."—Mach. iii. 4. 36.

"Methinks I hear hither your husband's drum."—Coriol. i. 3. 32.

"Prepare thee hence for France."-Rich. II. v. 1. 31.

Forth, "to the end:"

"To hear this matter forth."-M. for M. v. I. 255.

Forth, as a preposition: see Prepositions.

42. Happily, which now means "by *good* hap," was sometimes used for "haply," *i.e.* "by hap," just as "success" was sometimes "good," at other times "ill."

"Hamlet. That great baby you see there is not yet out of his swaddling-clouts.

Ros. Happily he's the second time come to them."—Hamlet, ii 2, 402.

"And these our ships, you happily may think, Are like the Trojan horse (which) was stuffed within With bloody veins."—P. of T. i. 4. 29. "Though I may fear
Her will recoiling to her better judgment
May fall to match you with her country forms,
And happily repent."—Othello, iii. 3. 238.

It means "gladly" in Macbeth, i. 3. 89.

- 43. Here is used very freely in compounds: "they here approach" (Mach. iv. 3. 133); "here-remain" (ib. 148). Perhaps here may be considered as much an adjective, when thus used, as "then" in "our then dictator" (Coriol. ii. 2. 93). So in Greek.
- 44. Hitherto, which is now used of time, is used by Shake-speare of space:

"England from Trent and Severn hitherto."

I Hen. IV. iii. 1. 74.

45. Home. We still say "to come home," "to strike home," using the word adverbially with verbs of motion, but not

"I cannot speak him home," i.e. completely.

Coriol. ii. 2. 107.

"Satisfy me home."—Cymb. iii. 5. 83.

"(Your son) lack'd the sense to know her estimation home."

A. W. v. 3. 4.

"That trusted home
"That trusted home
Might yet enkindle you unto the crown."—Macbeth, i. 3, 121.

46. How (adverbial derivative from hwa = hwu, O. E.) used for "however:"

"I never yet saw man

How wise, how noble, young, how rarely featured,
But she would spell him backward."—M. Ado, iii. 1. 60.

"Or whether his fall enraged him or how 'twas."

Coriol. i. 3. 69.

How is perhaps used for "as" in V. and A. 815:

"Look, how a bright star shooteth from the sky, So glides he in the night from Venus' eye."

This, which is the punctuation of the Globe, is perhaps correct, and illustrated by

"Look, as the fair and fiery-pointed sun Rushing from forth a cloud bereaves our sight, Even so," &c.—R. of L. 372.

So V. and A. 67; M. of V. iii. 2. 127.

Similarly, GASCOIGNE (Mätzner) has:

" How many men, so many minds."

- 47. Howsoe'er for "howsoe'er it be," "in any case" "Howsoe'er, my brother hath done well."—Cymb. iv. 2. 116
 So However. See 403.
- 48. Last. Such phrases as "at the last," "at the first," are common, but not

"The last (time) that e'er I took her leave at court."

A. W. v. 3. 79.

Merely, completely. See Adjectives, Mere, 15.

More, Most. See Adjectives, 18.

- 49. Moreabove = "moreover."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 126.
- 50. Moreover precedes "that," like our "beside that."

 "Moreover that we much did long to see you."

Hamlet, i. 2. 2.

- 51. Much, More, is frequently used as an ordinary adjective, after a pronominal adjective, like the Scotch *mickle*, and the E. E. *muchel*.* (So in A.-S.)
 - "Thy much goodness."—M. for M. v. 1. 534.

'Yet so much (great) is my poverty of spirit."

Rich. III. iii. 7. 159.

Much was frequently used as an adverb even with positive adjectives "I am much ill."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 4. 111.

So Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 115; F. C. iv. 3. 255.

"Our too much memorable shame."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 53. So Rick. II. ii. 2. 1.

More is frequently used as a noun and adverb in juxtaposition.

"The slave's report is seconded and more

More fearful is deliver'd."—Coriol. iv. 6. 63. Comp. K. 7. iv. 2. 42.

"More than that tongue that more hath more express'd."—Sonn. 23.

"If there be more, more woeful, hold it in."—Lear, v. 3. 202.

We sometimes say "the many" (see 12), but not "the most," it the sense of "most men." Heywood, however, writes—

"Yes, since the most censures, believes and saith By an implicit faith."—Commendatory Verses on B. J.

^{*} Compare "A noble peer of mickle trust and power. "-MILTON, Comus

Needs. See 25.

52. Never is used where we now more commonly use "ever' in phrases as:

"And creep time ne'er so slow,

Vet it shall come for me to do thee good."—K. J. iii. 3. 31. So I Hen. VI. v. 3. 98; Rich. II. v. 1. 64.

There is probably here a confusion of two constructions, (I) "And though time creep so slow as it never crept before," and (2) "And though time never crept so slow as in the case I am supposing." These two are combined into, "And though time creep—(how shall I describe it? though it crept) never so slow." Construction (2) is illustrated by

" Never so weary, never so in woe,

I can no further crawl, no further go."--M. N. D. iii. 2. 442.

Here, strictly speaking, the ellipsis is "I have been," or "having been;" "I have never been so weary." But it is easy to see that "never so weary" being habitually used in this sense, Hermia might say, "I am never-so-weary," or still more easily, "though I were never-so-weary."

In such phrases as "never the nearer," never seems to mean "nought." So Wickliffe, John xix. 21:

"But how he now seeth we wite nere," i.e. "we know not."

53. None seems to be the emphatic form of "no," like "mine" of "my" in the modern idiom:

"Satisfaction (there) can be *none* but by pangs of death."

T. N. iii. 4. 261.

For we could not say "there can be *none* satisfaction." This emphatic use of the pronoun at the end of a sentence is found very early. *None* seems loosely used for "not at all," like "nothing" (55), "no-whit," *i.e.* "not." And this may, perhaps, explain:

"None a stranger there So merry and so gamesome."—Cymb. i. 6. 59.

Here either *none* means "not," "ne'er," or a comma must be placed after *none*: "none, being a stranger," which is a very harsh construction.

The adverbial use of "none" may be traced to Early English and Anglo-Saxon. Under the form "nan," i.e. "ne-an" (compare

German "nein"), we find "nan more," and also "none longer," "whether he wolde or noon" (CHAUCER, Mätzner). "Nan" was used as an adverbial accusative for "by no means" even in A.-S. (Mätzner, iii. 131.) In Rich. II. v. 2. 99, "He shall be none," the meaning is, "he shall not be one of their number." "None" is still used by us for "nothing," followed by a partitive genitive, "I had none of it;" and this explains the Elizabethan phrase

"She will none of me."-T. N. i. 3. 113.

i.e. "She desires to have (321) nothing from, as regards to do with, ne." So

"You can say none of this."-I. N. v. I. 342.

54. Not is apparently put for "not only" in the two following passages:

"Speak fair; you may salve so Not what is dangerous present, but the loss Of what is past."—Coriol. iii. 2. 71.

"For what he has

Given hostile strokes, and that *not* in the presence Of dreaded justice, but on the ministers That do distribute it."—*Coriol.* iii. 3. 97.

55. Nothing, like "no-way," "naught," "not," (A.-S. náht, i.e. "no whit,") is often used adverbially.

"And that would set my teeth nothing on edge."

1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 133.

"I fear nothing, what can be said against me."

Ilen. VIII. v. 1. 126.

where "what" is not put for "which."

56. Off (away from the point):

"That's off: that's off. I would you had rather been silent."

Coriol. ii. 2. 64.

"I boast her off."-Temp. iv. 1. 9.

To be off=to take off one's hat:

"I will practise the insinuating nod and be off to them most counterfeitly."—Coriol. ii. 3. 107.*

57. Once ("once for all," "above all"):

"Once, if he require our voices, we ought not to deny him."

Coriol. ii. 3. 1.

Stands off" is used for "stands out, i.e. in relief."-Hen. V. ii. 2, 103.

"'Tis once thou lovest,

And I will fit thee with the remedy."—M. Ado, i. 1. 320.

Hence "positively."

"Nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite, once you must be looked to,"—M. Ado, v. i. 212.

"Nay, an you begin to rail on society, once I am sworn not to give regard to you."—*Timon*, i. 2. 251.

The Folio and Globe place the comma after once

Once is sometimes omitted:

"This is (once) for all."-Hamlet, i. 3. 131.

Once sometimes "in a word:"

"Once this—your long experience of her wisdom, Her sober virtue, years, and modesty, Plead on her part some cause to you unknown."

C. of E. iii. 1. 90.

At once is found in this or a similar sense:

"My lords, at once; the cause why we are met Is to determine of the coronation,"—Rich, III, iii. 4. 1

"My lords, at once; the care you have of us Is worthy praise."—2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 66.

Once seems to mean "at some time (future)" in

"I thank thee, and I pray thee, once to-night
Give my sweet Nan this ring."—M. W. of W. iii. 4. 103.
But the word may be taken as above.

58. Only, i.e. on(e)/y, is used as an adjective. See But (130), and Transpositions (420).

"The only (mere) breath."—SPENS. F. Q. i. 7. 13.

"It was for her love and only pleasure."—INGELEND.

"By her only aspect she turned men into stones."—BACON, Adv. of L. 274.

We have lost this adjectival use of only, except in the sense of "single," in such phrases as "an only child."

Only, like "alone" (18), is used nearly in the sense of "above all," "surpassing."

'Oph. You are merry, my lord. Ham. Who? I?

Ham. Who? I? Oph. Ay, my lord.

Ham. O God, your only jig-maker."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 131.

"Your worm is your only emperor for diet."-Ib. iv 3. 22.

58 a. Over means "over again" in

"Trebles thee o'er."—Tempest, ii. 1. 221.

i.e. "repeats thy former self thrice." Compare

"I would be trebled twenty times myself."-M. of V. iii. 2. 154.

- 59. Presently = "at the present time," "at once," instead of, as now, "soon, but not at once."
 - "Desd. Yes, but not yet to die.
 Othello. O yes, presently."—Othello, v. 2. 52.
 So Rich. II. iii. 1. 3; 2. 179.
- 60. Round, used adverbially in the sense of "straightforwardly." "Round," like "square" with us, from its connection with "regular," "symmetrical," and "complete," was used to signify "plain and honest." Hence

"I went round to work."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 139. means just the opposite of "circuitously."

61. Severally ("sever," Lat. separo), used for "separately." So

"When severally we hear them rendered."—J. C. iii. 2. 10.

And "Contemplation doth withdraw our soule from us, and severally employ it from the body."—MONTAIGNE, 30.

Thus, "a several plot" (Sonn. 137) is a "separate" or "private plot" opposed to "a common."

62. Since (A.-S. sith = "time," also adv. * "later;" "sith-than" = "after that") adverbially for "ago."

"I told your lordship a year since."-M. Ado, ii. 2. 13.

This must be explained by an ellipsis:

"I told your lordship (it is) a year since (I told you)."

Compare a transitional use of "since" between an adverb and conjunction in "Waverley; or, 'tis Sixty Years since." Omit "'tis," and since becomes an adverb.

So since is used for "since then," like our "ever since" in

'And since, methinks, I would not (do not wish to) grow so fast."—Rich. III. ii. 4. 14.

Since, when used adverbially as well as conjunctionally, fre* Sith for sither, like "mo" for "mo-er." (See 17.)

quently takes the verb in the simple past where we use the complete present:

"I did not see him since."—A. and C. i. 3. 1.

This is in accordance with an original meaning of the word, "later," ("sith.") We should still say, "I never saw him after that;" and since has the meaning of "after."

We also find the present after "since," to denote an action that is and has been going on since a certain time. (So in Latin with "jampridem.")

"My desires e'er since pursue me."-T. N. i. 1. 23.

See Conjunctions, 132.

63. So (original meaning "in that way") is frequently inserted in replies where we should omit it:

" Trib. Repair to the Capitol.

Peop. We will so."-Coriol. ii. 3. 62.

"T. Fortitude doth consist, &c.

D. It doth so indeed, sir."-B. J. Sil. Wom. iv. 2.

Here so means "as you direct, assert." "As" is, by derivation, only an emphatic form of so. See 106.

64. So is sometimes omitted after "I think," "if," &c.

"G. What, in metre?

Luc. In any proportion or language.

G. I think, or in any religion." -M. for M. i. 2. 24.

"Will the time serve to tell? I do not think (so)."

Coriol. i. 6. 46

"Haply you shall not see me more; or if, A mangled shadow."—A. and C. iv. 2. 27.

"Not like a corse; or if, not to be buried."—W. T. iv. 4. 131.

"Do not plunge thyself too far in anger, lest thou hasten thy trial, which if, Lord have mercy on thee for a hen."—A. W. ii. 3. 223.

Compare

"What though; yet I live like a poor gentleman M. U. "
M. W. of W. i. 1. 287; Hen. V. ii. 1. 9; A. Y. L. iii. 3. 51.
"O, if it prove,

Tempests are kind and salt waves fresh in love."

T. N. iii. 4. 418.

65. So is put for the more emphatic form, al-so.

"Demetrius, thou dost over-ween in all, And so in this, to bear me down with braves."

T. A. ii. 1. 30.

"It is a cold and heat that does outgo All sense of winters and of summers so."-B. J. Sad Sh. ii. I.

Ant. So to most noble Cæsar."-7. C. ii. 2. 117.

"Mad in pursuit, and in possession so."-Sonn. 129.

"Good morrow, Antony.

Se approaches "also" in

"Cousin, farewell; and, uncle, bid him so."

Rich. II. i. 3. 247.

So that; so as. (See Pronouns, Relative, 275, 276.)

66. So (like the Greek οθτω δή) is often used where we should use "then." "In this way" naturally leads to "thus," "on this," "thereupon," "then."

"And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt So he dissolved."-M. N. D. i. 1. 245.

So is, therefore, sometimes more emphatic than with us, as in (arrange thus, not as Globe)—

> Olivia. To one of your receiving enough is shown: A cypress, not a bosom, hides (Fol.) my heart- (pauses) So (i.e. after this confession) let me hear you speak. I pity you." Vio. T. N. iii. 1. 133.

So in conditional clauses. See Conjunctions, 133.

67. So was often, and correctly, used (where we use the adverbial "such" or "so" with "a") before an adjective, c.g. "so great faith" where we say "such great faith," "so long time" where we say "so long a time." We seem to feel that "so" (being an adverb, and therefore more liable to transposition than the adjective "such") requires to be attached to the word which it qualifies, either (1) by introducing the article which necessarily links together the words thus: "sogreat a-loss;" or else (2) by placing "so" in a position where its effect is equally unmistakeable: "a-loss so-great."

When the noun is in the plural we cannot use the former method; we are, therefore, driven to the latter, and instead of saying

"So hard termes."-N. P. 176.

we say "terms so hard."

"In so profound abysm I throw all care."—. Sonn. 112.

"My particular grief

Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature."—O. i. 3. 55.

" And I will call him to so strict account."-I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 149.

"With so full soul."-Temp. iii. 1. 44.

"Of so quick condition."—M. for M. i. 1. 54.

But note that in these instances the "so" follows a preposition. After prepositions the article (see Article, 90) is frequently omitted. Shakespeare could have written

"My grief is of nature so floodgate," &c.

"I will call him to account so strict that," &c.

Our modern usage was already introduced side by side with the other as early as Wickliffe. Compare

"So long time."-St. John xiv. 9.

with "So long a time."—Hebrews iv. 7.

68. Something used adverbially, like "somewhat."

"A white head and something a round belly."

2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 212.

We should say "a somewhat round," placing the adverb between the article and the adjective so as to show unmistakeably that the adverb qualifies the adjective. "Something" may possibly be so taken (though "somehow" would make better sense) in

"This something-settled matter in his breast."-Ham. iii. 1. 181

68 a. Sometimes, like "sometime," is used by Shakespeare for "formerly" in

"Thy sometimes brother's wife."-Rich. II. i. 2. 54.

So probably

"Sometimes from her eyes

I did receive fair speechless messages."—M. of V. i. 1. 163. Compare "olim" in Latin.

69. Still used for constantly, in accordance with the derivation of the word, "quiet," "unmoved." It is now used only in the sense of "even now," "even then." The connection between "during all time up to the present" and "even at the present" is natural, and both meanings are easily derived from the radical meaning, "without moving from its place." Comp. the different meanings of dum, donec, "as, &c.

"Thou still hast been the author of good tidings."

Hamlet, ii. 2. 42.

"But this thy countenance still lock'd in steel I never saw till now."—T. and C. iv. 5. 195.

i.e. "because it was constantly lock'd in steel."

And this is the best, though not the most obvious, interpretation of

"But still the house affairs would draw her hence."

Othello, i. 3, 147.

It is used as an adjective for *constant* (though some suggest "silent") in

"But I of thee will wrest an alphabet,
And by still practice learn to know the meaning."

T. A. iii. 2. 44.

This interpretation is corroborated by

"But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame,
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys."

Rich. III. iv. 3, 229.

70. Than is used for then:

"And their ranks began To break upon the galled shore and than Retire again."—R. of L. 456.

Then for than, freq. in North's *Plutarch*, Ascham, &c.

In O. E. the commonest forms are "thanne" = then; "then" = than.

Then and than (like tum and tam, quum and quam in Latin) are closely connected, and, indeed, mere varieties of the same word. They were originally inflections of the demonstrative, and meant "at that (time)," "in that (way)." As "that" is used as a relative, "than" has the signification of "in the way in which" (quam), just as then (71) is used for "at the time at which" (quum). It is usual to explain "He is taller than I" thus: "He is taller; then I am tall." This explanation does not so well explain "He is not taller than I." On the whole, it is more in analogy with the German als, Latin quam, Greek "i, to explain it thus: "In the way in which I am tall he is taller." The close connection between "in that way," "at that time," "in that place," &c., is illustrated by the use of there for thereupon, or then.

[&]quot;Even there resolved my reason into tears."—L. C. 42.

71. Then apparently used for "when." So in E. E. See That, 284.

"And more more strong, then lesser is my fear, I shall endue you with; meantime but ask," &c.

K. J. iv. 2. 42.

72. To-fore, which was as common in E. E. as "be-fore" and "a-fore." is found in

"O would thou wert as thou to-fore hast been."

T. A. iii. 2. 294.

73. Too, which is only an emphatic form of "to" (compare $\pi \rho \delta s$ in Greek, used adverbially), is often spelt "to" by Elizabethan writers (Sonn. 38, 86); and conversely, "too" is found for "to" (Sonn. 56, 135).

Too seems used, like the E. E. "to," for "excessively" in Spenser. Shepheard's Calendar. May:

"Thilke same kidde (as I can well devise)
Was too very foolish and unwise."

Perhaps, also, in

"Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate."—C. of E. i. 2. 2. though the meaning may be "the goods of you also."

"Tempt him not so too far."-A. and C. i. 3. 11.

And there is, perhaps, an allusion to the E. E. meaning in "too-too," which is often found in Elizabethan English.

Too is often used in the phrase, "I am too blame" (Folio)

"I am much too blame."

O. iii. 3. 211, 282; M. of V. v. 1. 166; Rich. III. ii. 2. 13.

This is so common in other Elizabethan authors, that it seems to require more explanation than the confusion between "to" and "too" mentioned above. Perhaps "blame" was considered an adjective, as in

"In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-blame."

I Hen. IV. iii. 1. 177.

and "too" may have been, as in E. E., used for "excessively."

Too seems used for "very much," or "too much," in

"Tell him that gave me this (wound), who lov'd him too, IHe struck my soul and not my body through."

B. and F. F. Sh. iii. I.

The context will hardly admit of the interpretation, "Me who also lov'd him."

The transition from the meaning of progressive motion to that of "increasingly" or "excessively," and from "excessively" to the modern "to excess," is too natural to require more than mention.

73 a. What, when. What and when are often used as exclamations of impatience:

- "What, Lucius, ho!"-J. C. ii. 1. 1.
- "When, Lucius, when?"-Ib. 5.

Some ellipsis is to be supplied, "What (is the matter)?" "When (are you coming)?" So in

"Gaunt. Throw down, my son, the duke of Norfolk's gage. K. Rich. And, Norfolk, throw down his. Gaunt. When, Harry, when?"—Rich. II. i. 1. 162.

See also What, 253.

74. Whilst. "The while" is often used in accordance with the derivation of the word for "(in) the (mean) time." The inflected forms whiles and whilest are generally used as conjunctions. But we have

"If you'll go fetch him We'll say our song the robilst."—Cymb. iv. 2. 254.

75. Why (instrumental case of E.E. hzva, "who"), used after "for," instead of "wherefore." Like the Latin "quid enim?" it came after a time to mean "for indeed." as

"And send the hearers weeping to their beds; For why, the senseless brands will sympathise."

Rich. II. v. 1. 40.

i.e. "wherefore? (because) the senseless," &c. The provincialism "whyfore" still exists. "For" does not correspond to "enim," but is a preposition by derivation. Later writers, however, and possibly Shakespeare, may have used "for" in "for why" as a conjunction. Some, however, maintain that the comma should be removed after "for why," and that "for why" (like \(\delta\rho\theta\rho\t

A distinction seems drawn between "why" and "for what" in

"Why, or for what these nobles were committed Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady."—Rich, III. ii. 4. 48.

Why, perhaps, refers to the past cause, for what to the future object.

" Ant. S. Shall I tell you why?

Drom. S. Ay, sir, and wherefore; for they say every why hath a wherefore."—C. of E. ii. 2. 43-45.

f.e. "every deed said to be done owing to a certain cause is really done for a certain object."

Compare

"Say, why is this? Wherefore? What shall we do?"

Hamlet, i. 4. 57.

"Why" and "how" are both derivatives of the relative, and are sometimes interchanged in A.-S. "Why" seems to have been the ablative of instrument, and "how" the adverbial derivative of manner, from "who."

76. Yet (up to this time) is only used now after a negative, "not yet," "never yet," &c. Then it was also used before a negative.

"For (as) yet his honour never heard a play."—T. of Sh. Ind. 1. 96.
"Yet I have not seen

So likely an ambassador of love."—M. of V. ii. q. 92.

"Yet (up to this time) they are not joined."—A. and C. iv. 12. 1.

"I will make one of her women lawyer to me, for I yet not understand the case myself."—Cymb. ii. 3. 80.

The following is a remarkable passage:

Hel. You, Diana,

Under my poor instructions yet (still) must suffer

Something in my behalf.

Diana. Let death and honesty

Go with your impositions, I am yours

Upon your will to suffer.

Hel. Yet (i.e. for the present) I pray you; But with the word the time will bring on summer," &c.

A. W. iv. 4. 30.

i.e. "a little longer I entreat your patience, but," &c.

Yet is also used in this sense without a distinct negative:

" Solan. What news on the Rialto?

Salar. Why yet it lives there uncheck'd that Antonio," &c.
M. of V. iii. 1. 1.

77. The adverbs backward and inward are used as nouns.

"In the dark backward and abysm of time." -- Temp. i. 2. 50.

"I was an inward of his."-M. for M. iii. 2. 138

So "Thou losest here a better where to find."-Lear, 1, 1, 264

"Nor can there be that deity in my nature Of here-and-everywhere."—T. N. v. 1. 235.

i.e. "the divine attribute of ubiquity."

Then, as with us, was used as an adjective.

"Our then dictator." - Coriol, ii. 2. 93.

So "Good sometime queen."—Rich. II. v. 1. 37.

"Our here approach:"-Mach. iv. 3. 133. See Compounds.

- 78. Adverbs after "is." We still say "that is well;" but, perhaps, no other adverb (except "soon") is now thus used. Shakespeare, however, has
 - "That's verily." Tempest, ii. 1. 321.
 - "That's worthily." -- Coriol. iv. I. 53.
 - "Lucius' banishment was wrongfully."-T. A. iv. 4. 16.

Some verb, as "said" or "done," is easily understood. "In harbour" has the force of a verb in

"Safely in harbour Is the king's ship."—Tempest, i. 2. 226.

ARTICLES.

- 79. An, A, (Early Eng. An, Ane, On, One, a, o,) our indefinite Article, is now distinguished from our Numeral "one." In Early English, as in modern French and German, there was no such distinction. Hence, even in Elizabethan English, a (since it still represented, or had only recently ceased to represent, "one") was more emphatic than with us, a fact which will explain its omission where we insert it, and its insertion where we should use some more emphatic word, "some," "any," "one," &c.
- 80. An and one, pronunciation of. The connection between "an" and "one" appears more obvious when it is remembered that "one" was probably pronounced by Shakespeare, not as now "won," but "un." This is made probable by the constant elision of "the" before "one" in "th' one" as in "th' other:" compare "th' one" in
 - "Th' one sweetly flatters, t' other feareth harm."-R. of L. 172.

^{*} The verb "hear" may be supplied from the context.

So Rich. II. v. 2. 18. Ben Jonson (783) mentions as authorized contractions, "y'once" for "ye once" along with "y'utter." Compare also the pun in T. G. of V. ii. 1. 3:

"Speed. Sir, your glove.

Val. Not mine; my gloves are on.

Speed. Why, then, this may be yours, for this is but one."

This will explain the rhyme:

"So thanks to all at once and to each one Whom we invite to see us crowned at Scone."

Macbeth, v. 8, 74-5.

In the dialect of the North of England and of Scotland, the "w" is still not sounded.

"An" was always used in A.-S. and mostly in E.E. before consonants as well as vowels: "ane kinges . . . dohter" (STRATMANN). I have not found an instance in Shakespeare of "an" before an ordinary consonant, but it occurs before "w":

"Have an wish but for't."-P. of T. iv. 4. 2.

81. A was used for one in such expressions as "He came with never a friend," &c.

"He and his physicians are of a mind."—A. W. i. 3. 244.

"'Fore God, they are both in a tale."-M. Ado, iv. 2. 33.

"An two men ride of a horse one must ride behind."

Ib. iii. 5. 44.

"For in a night the best part of my power Were in the Washes . . . devoured."-K. 7. v. 7. 64. So "The Images were found in a night all hacked and hewed." N. P. 172.

"We still have slept together.

Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together." A. Y. L. i. 3. 76.

"Myself and a sister both born in an hour."—T.N. ii. 1. 20.

"You, or any living man, may be drunk at a time, man." Othello, ii. 3. 319. i.e. "at one time," "for once."

"These foils have all a length."—Hamlet, v. 2. 277.

We find "one" and "a" interchanged in

"Hear me one word:

Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word." Coriol. iii. I. 216

"But shall we wear these honours for a day? Or shall they last?"-Rich. III. iv. 2. 5.

We never use the possessive inflection of the unemphatic one as an antecedent; but Shakespeare writes:

"For taking one's part that is out of favour."—Lear, i. 4. 111. We also find in Early English:

"Thre persones in a Godhede."—Halliwell.

where a is for one. Compare Scotch "ae" for "one."

It seems used for "any," i.e. ane-y, or one-y, in

"There's not a one of them."—Mach. iii. 4. 131.

"Ne'er a one to be found."—B. J. E. in &c. iii. 2.

So Cymb. i. 1. 24.

And emphatically for "some," "a certain," in

"There is a thing within my bosom tells me."

2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 183.

- 'I should impart a thing to you from his majesty."

 **Flamlet*, v. 2. 92.
- "Shall I tell you a thing?"—L. L. L. v. 1. 152.
- "I told you a thing yesterday."—Tr. and Cr. i. 2. 185.

"And I came to acquaint you with a matter."

A. Y. L. i. 1. 129

- 82. A and The omitted in archaic poetry. In the infancy of thought nouns are regarded as names, denoting not classes but individuals. Hence the absence of any article before nouns. Besides, as the articles interfere with the metre, and often supply what may be well left to the imagination, there was additional reason for omitting them. Hence Spenser, the archaic poet, writes
 - "Fayre Una-whom salvage nation does adore."

F. Q. i. 6. Title.

- "And seizing cruell clawes on trembling brest."—Ib. i. 3. 19.
- "Faire virgin, to redeem her deare, brings Arthure to the fight."—Ib. i. 8. Title.
- "From raging spoil of lawlesse victors will."-Ib. i. 3. 43.
- "With thrilling point of deadly yron brand."—Ib. i. 3. 42.

Shakespeare rarely indulges in this archaism except to ridicule it:

"Whereat with blade, with bloody blameful blade, He bravely broached his boiling bloody breast; And Thisby, tarrying in mulberry shade,

His dagger drew and died."—M. N. D. v. 1. 147. Somewhat similar is

"In glorious Christian field."-Rich. II. iv. 1. 93.

"When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar."

M. N. D. v. 1. 224.

"Ah! Richard with the eyes of (my or the) heavy mind."
Rich. II. ii. 4. 18.

"So, longest way shall have the longest moans."

Ib. v. 1. 90.

In antitheses, as

"And with no less nobility of love Than that which dearest father bears his son,"

Hamlet, i. 2. 111.

the omission of *the* is intelligible, since the whole class is expressed. But it appears not uncommon to omit the article before superlatives:

"Best safety lies in fear."-Hamlet, i. 3. 41.

This is, perhaps, explained by the double meaning of the superlative, which means not only "the best of the class," but also "very good." See 8.

83. A and The are also sometimes omitted after as, like, and than in comparative sentences:

"As falcon to the lure away she flies."—V. and A. 1027.

"The why is plain as way to parish church."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 52.

"More tuneable than lark to shepherd's ear."

M. N. D. i. r. 184

M. N. D. i. 1. 184.

This is, however, common both in early and modern English. In such sentences the whole class is expressed, and therefore the article omitted. It might be asked, however, why "the lure" on this hypothesis? The is put for its. So in E. E. (MÄTZNER, iii. 195) "ase hound doth (chase) the hare," i.e. "its prey the hare."

A is still omitted by us in adverbial compounds, such as "snail-like," "clerk-like," &c. Then it was omitted as being unnecessarily emphatic in such expressions as:

"Creeping like snail."-A. Y. L. ii. 7. 146.

"Sighing like furnace."-Ib. 148.

"And like unletter'd clerk." - Sonn. 85.

"Like snail" is an adverb in process of formation. It is intermediate between "like a snail" and "snail-like,"

84. A being more emphatic than with us, was sometimes omitted where the noun stands for the class, and might almost be replaced by the corresponding adjective. "If ever I were traitor," Rich. II. i. 3 201 = traitorous. Similarly.

"And having now shown himself open *enemy* to Alcibiades."
N. P. 176.

So, though we find "never a master" in the sense of "not one master," yet where the "never" is emphasized and has its proper meaning, "at no time," the a is omitted:

"Those eyes which never shed remorseful tear."

Rich. III. i. 2. 156.

"In war was never lion rag'd so fierce."—Rich. II. ii. 1. 173.

"Never master had a page so kind."—Cymb. v. 5. 85.

"Was ever king that joy'd an earthly throne."

2 Hen. VI. iv. 9. 1.

"'Twas never merry world since," &c.—T. N. iii. I. 109.

On the other hand, in contrast to the example first quoted, when the "never" is omitted and an is emphatic, almost like one, it is inserted:

"My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear."

Rich. III. i. 2. 165.

A is also omitted before collective nouns, such as "plenty," "abundance," &c., and therefore before "great number" in

"Belike you slew great number of his people."—T. N. iii. 3. 29.

85. A inserted after some adjectives used as adverbs:

"It was upon this fashion bequeathed me by will but poor a thousand pounds,"—A. Y. L. i. 1. 2.

This usage is found in the earlier text of LAYAMON (A.D. 1200): "Long a time (longe ane stunde)," ii. 290, &c., where the adjective appears merely to be emphasized, and not used adverbially. In the later text the adjective is placed, here and in other passages, in its ordinary position. The adjectives "each," "such," "which," (used for "of what kind,") and "many" were especially often thus used. "At ich a mel" = "at each meal," Piers Plough. Crede. 109. (So in Scotch "ilka.") "Whiche a wife was Alceste," CHAUCER, C. T. 11754 = "what a wife." "On moni are (later text, mani ane) wisen," LAYAMON, i. 24; "monianes cunnes," ib. 39; "of many a kind (l. t. of manian erthe)," "of many an earth."

The last-quoted passages render untenable the theory (Archbishop Trench, English Pass and Present) which explains "many a man" as a corruption of "many of men." In these passages, s.g. "moni anes cunnes" ("of many a race"), the article or numeral

adjective "an" is declined like an adjective, while "moni" is not. The inference is, that "moni" is used adverbially. In the same way the Germans say "mancher (adj.) mann," but "manch (adv.) ein mann," "ein solcher (adj.) mann," but "solch (adv.) ein mann." In A.-S. the idiom was "many man," not "many a man." The termination in y, causing "many" to be considered as adverbially used, may not perhaps account for the introduction of the a into E. E., but it may account for its retention in Elizabethan and modern English. Nor can it escape notice that most of the adjectives which take a after them end in ch, or lie ("like"), an adverbial termination. So beside the adjectives enumerated above, "thellich" (modern Dorsetshire, "thilk" or "thick"), "the like," answering to "whilk" ("which"), is followed by a. A in the following example is a preposition meaning on or in:

"Ful ofte [a day he swelde and seyde alas!"

CHAUCER, Knightes Tale, 498.

It is perhaps some such feeling, that "many" means "often," which justifies the separation of "many" and "a" in the following:

"I have in vain said many

A prayer upon her grave."—W. T. v. 3. 144.

Perhaps in this way (as an adjective used adverbially) we must explain (compare "none (adj.) inheritance," Acts vii. 5):

"Exceeding pleasant; none (adv.) a stranger there So merry and so gamesome."—Cymb. i. 6. 59.

like "ne'er a stranger," unless after "none" we supply "who was."

A is pleonastically used in

"I would not spend another such a night."-R. III. i. 4. 5.

In "What poor an instrument" (A. and C. v. 2. 236), "what" is used for "how."

86. A was sometimes omitted after "what," in the sense of "what kind of."

"Cassius, what night is this?"—J. C. i. 3. 42.

(A has been unnecessarily inserted by some commentators.)

"I'll tell the world

Aloud what man thou art."-M. for M. ii. 4. 153.

" jove knows what man thou mightst have made."

Cymb. iv. 2. 207

"What dreadful noise of waters in mine ears."

Rich. III. i. 4. 22

"What case stand I in?" (W. T. i. 2. 352) = In what a position am I?

"What thing it is that I never Did see man die!"—Cymb. iv. 4. 35.

We omit the article after "what" before nouns signifying a collective class, saying "what wickedness!" but "what a crime!" "what fruit!" but "what an apple!" Hence the distinction in the following: "What a merit were it in death to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life that it will let this man live!"—M. for M. iii. 1. 240.

A is omitted after "such:"

"Showers of blood, The which, how far off from the mind of Bolingbroke It is *such* crimson tempest should bedrench," &c.

Rich. II. iii. 3. 46.

Here "such" probably means "the aforesaid," referring to the "showers of blood."

After "such" in this sense the indefinite article is still omitted; naturally, since "such" is used in a defining sense.

A is omitted after "many" in "Many time and oft" (2 Hen. VI. ii. I. 93). Here "many-time," like "some-time," "often-times," "many-times" (MONTAIGNE, Introduction), seems used as one word adverbially.

A is omitted before "little," where we commonly place it in the sense of "some:"

"O, do not swear;
Hold (a) little faith, though thou hast too much fear."
T. N. v. 1. 174.

It is perhaps caused by the antithesis which assimilates the use of "little" to the use of "much." "In (a) little time" (V. and A. 132) is to be explained as a prepositional phrase approximating to an adverb: see 89.

87. A was frequently inserted before a numeral adjective, for the purpose of indicating that the objects enumerated are regarded collectively as one. We still say "a score," "a fo(u)rt(een)-night." But we also find:

"An eight days after these sayings."-Luke ix. 28.

"A two shilling or so."-B. J. E. in &c. i. 4 ad fin. "Tis now a nineteen years agone at least."—B. J. Case is altered. Also in E. E. :

"An five mile."-HALLIWELL.

This usage is not common in Shakespeare, except after "one."

"But one seven years." - Coriol. iv. 1. 55.

The a is omitted in

"But this our purpose now is twelve-month old."

I Hen. IV. i. I. 28.

Compare " This three mile." - Macbeth, v. 5. 37.

The a in "a many men," "a few men," is perhaps thus to be explained. Compare "This nineteen years" (M. for M. i. 3. 21), with "This many summers" (Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 360). So

"A many merry men."-A. Y. L. i. 1. 121.

"A many thousand warlike French."-K. 7. iv. 2. 199.

So IIen. V. iv. 1. 127; iv. 3. 95. And still more curiously:

"But many a many foot of land the worse."-K. J. i. 1. 183.

Some explain "a many" by reference to the old noun "many," "a many men," for "a many (of) men." And the word is thus used:

"A many of our bodies."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 95.

"O thou fond many, with what loud applause Didst thou beat heaven."—2 Hen. IV. i. 3. 91.

"In many's looks." - Sonn. 93.

So perhaps A. W. iv. 5. 55. Add "their meiny," Lear, ii. 4. 35.

Nor can it be denied that in E. E. "of" is often omitted in such phrases as "many manner (of) men," "a pair (of) gloves," &c. just as in German we have "diese Art Mensch." But we also say "a few men" (an expression that occurs as early as Robert of Brunne), and "few" scems to have been an adjective.

It is probable that both the constructions above-mentioned are required to explain this use of a. Thus "a hundred men" is for "a hundred (of) men," but in "a twelvemonth," "a fortnight," "twelve" and "fourteen" are not regarded as simple nouns, but as compound nouns used adjectively. Compare the double use of " mile," "millia," in Latin.

88. An-other. A is apparently put for the in

"There is not half a kiss to choose who loves an other best."

W. T. iv. 4. 176.

This is, however, in accordance with our common idiom: "they love one an other," which ought strictly to be either "they love, the one the other," or "they love, one other." The latter form is still retained in "they love each other;" but as in "one other" there is great ambiguity, it was avoided by the insertion of a second "one" or "an," thus, "they love one an-other." This is illustrated by Matt. xxiv. 10 (Tyndale): "And shall betraye one another and shall hate one the other;" whereas Wickliffe has, "ech other." So I Cor. xii. 25: Wickliffe, "ech for other;" the rest "for one another." "One another" is now treated almost like a single noun in prepositional phrases, such as, "We speak to one another." But Shakespeare retains a trace of the original idiom in

- "What we speak one to an other."—A. W. iv. I. 20.
- 89. The was frequently omitted before a noun already defined by another noun, especially in prepositional phrases.
 - "In number of our friends."-J. C. iii. 1. 216.
 - "Since death of my dearest mother."—Cymb. iv. 2. 190.
 - "At heel of that defy him."—A. and C. ii. 2. 160.
 - "In absence of thy friend."-T. G. of V. i. 1. 59.
 - "To sternage of their navy."—Hen. V. iii. Prol. 18.
 - "To relief of lazars."—Ib. i. 1. 15.
 - "For honour of our land."-Ib. iii. 5. 22.
 - "Thy beauty's form in table of my heart." Sonn. 24.
 - "Some beauty peep'd through lattice of sear'd age."
 - "Forage in blood of French nobility."—Hen. V. i. 2. 110.
 - "In cradle of the rude imperious surge." -2 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 20.
 - "Proving from world's minority their right."-R. of L.
 - "On most part of their fleet." Othello, ii. 1. 24.

So 1 Hen. VI. i. 2. 79; 2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 36, 79; Rich. II. i. 3. 136. We could say "in season," but not

"We at (the right) time of (the) year Do wound the bark."—Rich. II. iii. 4. 57.

So even in Pope:

"Alas, young man, your days can ne'er be long; In flower of age you perish for a song."

POPE, Imit. Hor. i. 102.

- 90. The is also omitted after prepositions in adverbial phrases.
 - " At door." W. T. iv. 4. 352; T. of Sh. iv. 125
 - " At palace." W. T. iv. 4. 731.
 - " At height."—Hamlet, i. 4. 21.
 - " Ere I went to wars."-M. Ado, i. I. 307.
 - " To cabin." Tempest, i. 1. 18.
 - "The grace 'fore meat and the thanks at end.'

 Coriol. iv. 7. 4.
 - "You were in presence then."—Rich. II. iv. 1. 62.
- i.e. "in the presence-chamber."
 - "And milk comes frozen home in pail."—L. L. L. v. 2. 925.
 - "With spectacles on nose and pouch on side."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 159.

- "This day was viewed in open as his queen."

 Hen, VIII. iii. 2, 405.
- "He foam'd at mouth."-J. C. i. 2. 256.
- "Sticks me at heart."-A. Y. L. i. 2. 254.
- "Exeunt in manner as they entered."- Hen. VIII. ii.4. 24
- "Than pard or cat-o'-mountain." Tempest, iv. 1. 262.

And with adjectives:

- " In humblest manner." Tempest. ii. 4. 144.
- "In first rank."-Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 161.

"In pail" is as justifiable as "in bed," except that the former, not being so common as the latter, has not the same claim to the adverbial brevity which dispensed with the article. Both are adverbial phrases, one of which has been accepted, the other rejected. Thus in

"Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace."—Sonn. 33.

"to-west" is as much an adverb as "west-ward."

Sometimes a possessive adjective is thus omitted:

"Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees."—Tr. and Cr. v. 3. 53. So in E. E. "a-knee."

Compare our "I have at hand."

Perhaps this may explain the omission of "the" after "at" in

"We are familiar at first."-Cymb. i. 4. 112.

where "at first" is not opposed to "afterwards" (as it is with us), but means "at the first," or rather "from the first," "at once."

The omission of "the" in

"On one and other side Trojan and Greek Sets all on hazard."—Tr. and Cr. i. 1. 21.

is in accordance with our idiom, "one another" and "each other."

On the other hand, where "the" is emphatic, meaning "that" or "the right," it is sometimes inserted before "one."

"Morocco. How shall I know if I do choose the right?"

Portia. The one of them contains my picture, prince."

M. of V. ii. 7. 11.

- 91. The was inserted in a few phrases which had not, though they now have, become adverbial. "At the length" (N. P. 592), "At the first," "At the last," &c.
 - "There in the full convive we."—Tr. and Cr. iv. 5. 272.

"In the favour of the Athenians."-N. P. 177.

92. The used to denote notoriety, &c. Any word when referred to as being defined and well known may of course be preceded by the article. Thus we frequently speak of "the air." Bacon (E. 231) however wrote, "The matter (the substance called matter) is in a perpetual flux."

The is sometimes used (compare Latin "ille") for "the celebrated," "the one above all others," occasionally with "alone," as

"I am *alone the* villain of the earth."—A. and C. iv. 6, 30. Or with a superlative:

"He was the wretched'st thing when he was young."

Rich. III. ii. 4. 18.

"The last (prayer) is for my men: they are the poorest;
But poverty could never draw 'em from me."

Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 148.

But also without these:

"Am I the man yet?"-A. Y. L. iii. 3. 3.

"Smacks it not something of the policy?"—K. J. ii. 1. 396.
"For their dear causes

Would to the bleeding and the grim alarm Excite the mortified man."—Macbeth, v. 2. 4.

The ellipsis to be supplied is added in

"Are you the courtiers and the travell'd gallants?

The spritcly fellows that the people talk of?"

B. and F. Elder Brother, iv. I.

The seems to mean "the same as ever" in

"Live you the marble-breasted tyrant still."— T. N. v. 1. 127.

It is not often that "the" is used in this sense before English proper names. In

"The Douglas and the Percy both together."

I Hen. IV. v. 1. 116.

the second the may be caused by the first, which, of course, is still used, "the Bruce," "the Douglas," being frequent, and explicable as referring to the chief of the Douglases and Bruces. But we also have

"To leave the Talbot and to follow us."—I Hen. VI. iii. 3. 20, 31. and so in Early English "the Brute," "the Herod."

The is seldom used, like the article in French, for the possessive adjective:

'The king is angry: see, he bites the lip."

Rich. III. iv. 2. 27.

The word "better" is used as a noun, and opposed to "the worse," (compare the French proverb, "le mieux est l'ennemi du bien,") in

"Bad news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better."

Rich. III. ii. 3. 4.

"Death," the ender of life, seems more liable to retain the mark of notoriety than "life." Hence

"Where they feared the death, they have borne life away."

Hen. V. iv. 1. 81; Rich. III. i. 2. 179; ii. 3. 55

So "Dar'd to the combat."—Hamlet, i. 1. 84.

i.e. "the combat that ends all dispute." French influence is perceptible in these two last instances, and in

"To shake the head."-M. of V. iii. 2. 15.

The which (see Relative), 270.

93. The frequently precedes a verbal that is followed by an object:

"Whose state so many had the managing."—Hen. V. Epilog.

"You need not fear the having any of these lords."

M. of V. i. 2. 109.

"The seeing these effects will be Both noisome and infectious."—Cymb. i. 5. 25.

"P. Pray, sir, in what?

D. In the delaying death."—M. for M. iv. 2. 172.

"Nothing in his life
Became him like the leaving it."—Mach. i. 4. 8.

* The locking up the spirits."—Cymb. i. 5. 41.

So Lear, iv. 4. 9; Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 347; M. for M. iii. 2. 128; M. of V. iv. 1. 309; M. Ado, ii. 2. 53; O. iii. 4. 22; T. N. i. 5. 84.

The question naturally arises, are these verbals, "locking," &c. nouns? and, if so, why are they not followed by "of,"-e.g. "the locking of the spirits"? Or are they parts of verbs? and in that case, why are they preceded by the article? The fact that a verb in E. E. had an abstract noun in -ing (A.-S. -ung)-e.g. "slaeten," to hunt; "slaeting," hunting-renders it a priori probable that these words in -ing are nouns. Very early, however, the termination -ng was confused with, and finally supplanted, the present participle termination in -nde. Thus in the earlier text of Layamon (iii, 72) we have "heo riden singinge," i.e. "they rode singing;" and in the later text the proper participial form "singende." An additional element of confusion was introduced by the gerundial inflection enne, e.g. "singenne," used after the preposition "to." As early as the twelfth century "to singenne" (Morris, E. E. Specimens, p. 53) became "to singende," and hence (by the corruption above mentioned) "to singinge." Hence, when Layamon writes that the king went out "an-slaeting" (ii. 88), or "a-slatinge" (iii, 168), it is not easy to prove that the verbal noun is here used: for the form may represent the corruption of the gerund used with the preposition "an" instead of with "to." And as early as Layamon we find the infinitive "to kumen" side by side with the present participle "to comende" (i. 49); and the gerund "cumene" side by side with the verbal "coming" (iii. 231); and the noun "tiding(s)" spelt in the earlier text "tidind" or "tidinde," the present participle (i. 59). The conclusion is, that although "locking" is a noun, and therefore preceded by "the," yet it is so far confused with the gerund as to be allowed the privilege of governing a direct object. The "of" was omitted partly for shortness, as well as owing to the confusion shove mentioned.

It is easy to trace a process of abridgment from

[&]quot;For the repealing of my banish'd brother,"-J. C. iii. 1. 51.

to (2" "Punish my life for (89) tainting of my love,"

N. v. 1. 141.

down to our modern (3) "for tainting my love." And hence the E. E. (William of Palerne, edit. Skeat), "for drede of descuverynge of that was do," l. 1024, "of kastyng of lokes," l. 942, are abbreviated in modern English into "disclosing that which was done" and "casting looks." This abbreviation is also remarkably illustrated by Bacon in his third Essay. He first uses the abbreviated form, and then, with a verbal noun that could not so easily have a verbal force, he adopts the full form: "Concerning the Means of procuring Unity. Men must beware that in the Procuring or Muniting of Religious Unity, they do not dissolve and deface the Laws of Charity." It is perhaps this feeling that the verbal was an ordinary noun, which allows Shakespeare to make an adjective qualify it even though of is omitted after it.

"He shall have old turning the key."-Macbeth, ii. 3. 2.

The substantival use of the verbal with "the" before it and "of" after it seems to have been regarded as colloquial. Shake-speare puts into the mouth of Touchstone:

"I renember the kissing of her batlet and . . . the woring of a peascod instead of her."—A. Y. L. ii. 4. 49-51.

"Did these bones cost no more (in) the breeding?"

Hamlet, v. 1. 100.

94. The (in Early Eng. thi, thy) is used as the ablative of the demonstrative and relative, with comparatives to signify the measure of excess or defect.

This use is still retained. "The sooner the better," i.e. "By how much the sooner by so much the better." (Lat. "quo citius, eo melius.")

It is sometimes stated that "the better" is used by Shakespeare for "better," &c.: but it will often, perhaps always, be found that the has a certain force.

"The good conceit I hold of thee Makes me the better to confer with thee."—T. G. of V. iii. 2. 19.

" The rather

For that I saw."-Macb. iv. 3. 184.

In both passages "the" means "on that account." In

"Go not my horse the better

I must become a borrower of the night,"—Mach. in. 1. 25. Banquo is perhaps regarding his horse as racing against night, and

"the better" means "the better of the two." The following passage has been quoted by commentators on the passage just quoted, to show that "the" is redundant. "And hee that hit it (the quintain) full, if he rid not the faster, had a sound blow in his neck, with a bag full of sand hanged on the other end."—Stowe's Survey of London, 1603. But the rider is perhaps here described as endeavouring to anticipate the blow of the quintain by being "the faster" of the two. Or more probably, "the faster" may mean the faster because he had struck the quintain, which, if struck, used to swing round and strike the striker on the back, unless he rode the ("on that account") faster. In either case it is unscholar-like to say that the is redundant.

CONJUNCTIONS.

95. And (in old Swedish an [Wedgewood] is used for "and," "if," and "even") emphatically used for "also," "even," "and that too." We still use "and that" to give emphasis and call attention to an additional circumstance, e.g. "He was condemned, and that unheard." This construction is most common in participial phrases. The "that" is logically unnecessary, and is omitted sometimes by Shakespeare,

"Suffer us to famish and their storehouses crammed with grain." -- Coriol. i. 1. 82.

"And shall the figure of God's majesty
Be judged by subject and inferior breath,
And he himself not present?"—Rich. II. iv. 1. 129.

"When I have most need to employ a friend, And most assured that he is a friend, Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile Be he unto me."—Rich. III. ii. 1. 37.

In the last two passages an ellipsis of "be" or "to be" might be understood, but scarcely in the following:

"So may he ever do and ever flourish When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name Banish'd the kingdom."—Hen. VIII. iv. 2, 126. "The friends thou hast, and their adoption tried, Grapple them to the soul with hoops of steel."

Hamlet, i. 3. 62.

Compare 3 Hen. VI. i. 2. 47; Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 51.

So perhaps *Hamlet*, iii. 3. 62; *T. N.* i. 1. 38; and in the following irregular sentence:

"But a man that were to sleep your sleep, and a hangman to help him to bed, I think he (redundant pronoun: see 243) would change places with his officer."—Cymb. v. 4. 179.

i.e. "and that too a hangman being ready to help him to bed."

96. And. This use, though most frequent with participles, is also found without them:

"Here comes a spirit of his, and to torment me."

Temp. ii. 2. 15.

"He that has and a little tiny wit."—Lear, iii. 2. 74.

i.e. "a little and that a very little." So

"When that I was and a little tiny boy."—T. N. v. 1. 398.

97. And is frequently found in answers in the sense of "you are right and" or "yes and," the "yes" being implied.* Hence the "and," introducing a statement in exact conformity with a previous statement, comes almost to mean "exactly." It is frequently found before "so."

"Hamlet. Will the king hear this piece of work?
Pol. (Yes) And the queen too."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 53.

"Cass. This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit. Brut. And so it is."—J. C. i. 2. 307.

e.e. "you are right, and so it is;" or "just so," "even so."

"Pompey. I'll try you on the shore.

Antony. And shall, sir."—A. and C. ii. 7, 134.

i.e. "You say well, and you shall," or "So you shall," "that you shall," emphatically.

"Sir M. And there's . . . a head of noble gentlemen. Archbishop. And so there is."—I Hen. IV. iv. 4. 27.

"Parolles. After them, and take a more dilated farewell.

Bertram. And I will do so."—A. W. ii. 1. 60.

i.e. "that is just what I will do."

"Mayor. But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens
With all your just proceedings in this cause.
Glouc. And to that end we wish'd your lordship here."
Rich. III. iii. 4, 67.

i.e. "To that very end," "even to that end."

^{*} So yáo in Greck.

- 98. And is often found in this emphatic sense after statements implied by ejaculations, such as "faith," "sooth," "alas," &c. Thus
 - "Catesby. Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest.

 Hastings. Good faith (it is so), and when I met this holy man
 Those men you talk of came into my mind."

 Prick III iii a 117

Rich. III. iii. 2. 117.

"Faith, and so we should." -- I Hen. IV. iv. I. 52. This use is found in A.-S.

99. "And" emphatic in questions. When a question is being asked, "and," thus used, does not express emphatic assent, but emphatic interrogation:

"Alas! and would you take the letter of her?"—A. W. iii. 4. 1. i.e. "is it so indeed, and further would you actually &c.?" So

"And wilt thou learn of me?"-Rich. III. iv. 4. 269.

i.e. "do you indeed wish to learn of me?"

Hence Ben Jonson, who quotes Chaucer:

"What, quoth she, and be ye wood?"

adds that

"And, in the beginning of a sentence, serveth for admiration."—B. J. 789.

It is common in ballads, and very nearly redundant: *

"The Perse owt of Northumberlande,

And a vow to God made he."—Percy (MÄTZNER).

(Mr. Furnivall suggests "an avow," the original form of the word "vow.")

100. "And" for "also" in Early English. We find "and" often used for "also," "both," &c., and standing at the beginning of a sentence in earlier English. Wickliffe has, 2 Cor. xi. 21, 22:

"In what thing ony man dare, and I dare. Thei ben ebreus, and I."

"And" is used for "even" or "also" in Acts xiv. 15:

"And we ben deedli men like you."

In "I almost die for food, and let me have it," A. Y. L. ii. 7. 104.

"I pray you" may perhaps be understood after and, implied in the imperative "let."

* These instances are said by Mr. Skeat to be corrupt.

101 And or an (= if). (The modern and is often spelt an in E. E.) This particle has been derived from an, the imperative of unnan, to grant. This plausible but false derivation was originated by Horne Tooke, and has been adopted by the editor of the Cambridge Shakespeare. But the word is often written and in Early English (Stratmann), as well as in Elizabethan authors *

"For and I shulde rekene every vice

Which that she hath ywiss, I were to nice."—CHAUC. Squire's Prol. "Alcibiades bade the carter drive over, and he durst."—N.P. 166.

"They will set an house on fire and it were but to roast their eggs."—B. E. 89.

"What knowledge should we have of ancient things past and history were not?"—Lord Berners, quoted by B. J. 789.

102. "And" with the subjunctive. The true explanation appears to be that the hypothesis, the if, is expressed not by the and, but by the subjunctive, and that and merely means with the addition of, plus, just as but means leaving out, or minus.

The hypothesis is expressed by the simple subjunctive thus:

"Go not my horse the better I must become a borrower of the night."—Mach, iii. 1. 25.

This sentence with and would become, "I must become a borrower of the night and my horse go not the better," i.e. "with, or on, the supposition that my horse go not the better." Similarly in the contrary sense, "but my horse go the better," would mean "without or excepting the supposition that my horse, &c." Thus Chaucer, Pardonere's Tale, 275:

"It is no curtesye
To speke unto an old man vilonye
But he trespas."

So also Mandeville (Prologue):

"Such fruyt, though the which every man is saved, but it be his owne defaute."

103. And if. Latterly the subjunctive, falling into disuse, was felt to be too weak unaided to express the hypothesis; and the same tendency which introduced "more better," "most unkindest," &c., superseded and by and if, an if, and if. There is nothing remarkable in the change of and into an. And, even in its ordinary sense, is often written an in Early English. (See Halliwell.)

^{*} So almost always in the Folio. See Index to Plays.

Ana or an is generally found before a personal pronoun, or "if," or "though;" rarely thus:

"And * should the empress know."-T. A. ii. 1. 69.

In the Elizabethan times the indicative is often used for the subjunctive.

The following is a curious passage:-

"O. Will it please you to enter the house, gentlemen?

D. And your favour, lady." —B. J. Sil. Wom. iii. 2. med. Apparently, "And your favour (be with us)," i.e. "if you please."

104. An't were was wrongly said by Horne Tooke to be put for "as if it were."

"Cress. O! he smiles valiantly.

Pand. Does he not?

Cress. O yes; and * 'twere a cloud in autumn."

Tr. and Cr. i. 2. 139.

"He will weep you an't were a man born in April."

Ib. i. 2. 189

"I will roar you and *'twere any nightingale."—M. N. D. i. 2. 86.

"'A made a fairer end and went away, and * it had been a Christom child."—Hen. V. ii. 3. 10.

Some ellipsis is probably to be understood. "I will roar you, and if it were a nightingale (I would still roar better)."

The same construction is found in E. E.

"Ye answer and ye were twenty yere olde."

Cov. Myst. p. 80 (Mätzner).

It is illustrated by the use of "ac," "atque," after "similis," "pariter," &c. thus:

"(Homo) qui prosperis rebus æque ac tu ipse (gauderes) gauderet."—CIC. De Amicitia, vi. I.

i.e. "a man who would rejoice at your prosperity, and you yourself (would rejoice as much and no more)." "You answer in such and such a way, and were you twenty years old you would answer similarly."

105. And if represents both "even if" and "if indeed" (i.ω both καὶ εὶ and εὶ καί).

And if is used emphatically for "even if" in

"It dies and * if it had a thousand lives."—I Hen. VI. v. 4. 75 So 1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 125.

"What and * if

His sorrows have so overwhelm'd his wits."—Tit. And. iv. 4, 10.

"He seems to be of great authority, give him gold. And though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold."—W. T. iv. 4 831.

On the other hand, and if seems to mean "if indeed" in the following passages: -

" Percy. Seize it if thou darest.

Aum. And * if I do not, may my hands rot off!"

Rich. II. iv. 1. 49.

"Oh father!

And if you be my father, think upon

Don John my husband."—MIDDLETON and ROWLEY (Walker).

"Prince. I fear no uncles dead (419).

Nor none that live, I hope. Glou. Prince. And * if they live, I hope I need not fear,

Rich. III. iii. 2. 148,

where the Prince is referring to his maternal uncles who have been imprisoned by Richard, and he says, "if indeed they live I need not fear."

Thus probably we must explain:

"O full of danger is the duke of Gloucester!

And the queen's sons and brothers haught and proud;

And were they to be ruled, and not to rule,

This sickly land might solace as before."—Rich. III. ii. 3. 29. Here, at first sight, "but" seems required instead of "and." But

"and were they" means "if indeed they were."

It is not easy to determine whether and though is used for "even though" or for "though indeed" in the following-

"I have now

(And though perhaps it may appear a trifle) Serious employment for thee."—MASSINGER (Walker).

In all these passages an or and may be resolved into its proper meaning by supplying an ellipsis. Thus in the passage from Rich. II. iv. 1. 49, "And if I do not," &c. means, "I will seize it, and, if I do not seize it, may my hands rot off."

106. Ast (A.-S. "eall-szea," with the sense "just as") is a contraction of al(l)-so. In Early English we find "so soon so he came." The al(l) emphasized the so, "al(l)-so soon al(l)-so he

So Folio.

came." Hence through different contractions, alse, als, ase, we get our modern as. (Comp. the German als.) The dropping of the l is very natural if alse was pronounced like "half." The broad pronunciation of as may throw light upon the pun in

"Sir And. And your horse now would make him an ass. Mar. Ass I doubt not."—T. N. ii. 3, 185.

It follows that as originally meant both our modern so, "in that way," and our modern as, "in which way." The meaning of so is still retained in the phrases "as soon as" and "I thought as much," &c., but generally as has its second meaning, viz. "in which way."

107. As, like "an" (102), appears to be (though it is not) used by Shakespeare for as if. As above (102), the "if" is implied in the subjunctive.

"To throw away the dearest thing he owed As 'twere a careless trifle."—Mach. i. 4. 11. So v. 5. 13.

i.e. "in the way in which (he would throw it away) were it a careless trifle." Often the subjunctive is not represented by any inflection:

"One cried, 'God bless us,' and 'Amen' the other,

As they had seen me with these hangman's hands."

Macheth, ii. 2. 28; Rich. III. iii. 5. 63.

Sometimes the as is not followed by a finite verb:

"As gentle and as jocund as (if I were going) to jest, Go I to fight."—Rich. II. i. 3. 95.

108. As, like "who," "whon," "which" (see below, Relative), is occasionally followed by the supplementary "that."

"Who fair him 'quited as that courteous was."

Spens, F. O. i. 1. 30.

109. As for "that" after "so." ("In which way;" "As the result of which.") This is a consequence of the original connection of as with "so."

"You shall be so received

As you shall deem yourself lodged in my heart."

L. L. L. ii. 1. 174.

"Catesby . . . finds the testy gentleman so hot

As he will lose his head ere give consent."

Rich. /// iii 4. 41.

After " such :"

"Yet such deceit as thou that dost beguile Art juster far."—Sonn.

This occurs less commonly without the antecedent so:

"My lord, I warrant you we'll play our part As he shall think by our true diligence

He is no less than what we say he is."—T. of Sh. Ind. i. 68.

This points out an important difference between the Elizabethan and modern uses of as. We almost always apply it, like "because" (117), to the past and the present; Shakespeare often uses it of the future, in the sense of "according as."

"And, sister, as the winds give benefit
And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,
But let me hear from you."—Hamlet, i. 3. 2.

Here a modern reader would at first naturally suppose as to mean "since" or "because;" but the context shows that it means "according as."

110. As, in its demonstrative meaning of so, is occasionally found parenthetically = "for so."

"This Jacob from our holy Abraham was (As * his wise mother wrought in his behalf) The third possessor."—M. of V. i. 3. 73.

"Who dares receive it other—
As we shall make our griefs and clamours roar
Upon his death?"—Mach. i. 7. 78.

i.e "so did his mother work;" "so will we make our griefs roar."

"The fixure of her eye has motion in 't,

As we are mock'd with art."—W. T. v. 3. 68.

There seems some confusion in the difficult passage

"Speak truly, on thy knighthood and thy oath, As so defend thee heaven and thy valour."

Rich. II. i. 3. 15.

In the similar line 34 as is omitted. This would lead us to conjecture "and." But perhaps the marshal was beginning to say "speak truly as may heaven defend thee," but diverged into the more ordinary "so," which was the customary mode of invocation. In that case the meaning will be "as thou wouldst desire the fulfilment of thy prayer, 'so help me heaven.'"

^{*} Comp. οἶον ἐξαρτύεται γάμον γαμεῖν.—Æsch. Prom. Vinct. 508.

So in

"Duke. If this be so (as, yet, the glass seems true) I shall have share in this most happy wreck."

T. N. v. 1. 272

The Duke has called the appearance of the twins "a natural perspective that is and is not" (ib. 224), i.e. a glass that produces an optical delusion of two persons instead of one. He now says: "it they are two, brother and sister (and indeed, spite of my incredulity, the perspective or glass seems to be no delusion), then I shall," &c. The curious introduction of the "wreck" suggests that the glass called up the thought of the "pilot's glass." (M. for M. ii. 1. 168.)

An ellipsis must be supplied in

"Had I but time (which I have not)—as this fell sergeant,

Is strict in his arrest."—Hamlet, v. 2. 347.

111. As = "as regards which," "though," "for," was sometimes used parenthetically in a sense oscillating between the relative "which," "as regards which," and the conjunction "for," "though," "since." It is used as a relative in

"But say or he or we, (as neither have [pl. see 12, Neither],) Received that sum."—L. L. L. ii. 1. 133.

As is used in a transitional manner for "as regards which" or "for indeed," in

"Though I die for it, as no less is threatened me."

"When I was young, as, yet, I am not old." Lear, iii. 3. 19.

I Hen. VI. 3. 4. 17.

"If you will patch a quarrel As matter whole you've not to make it with."

A. and C. ii, ii. 53.

Here in the second example, "When I was young as I yet, or still, am," would have retained the relatival signification of as, but the addition of "not old" obliges us to give to as the meaning not of "which," but "as regards which" or "for." So in

"She dving, as it must be so maintained."

M. Ado, iv. 1. 216.

112. As, owing to its relatival signification, is sometimes loosely used for "which." This is still usual with us, but rarely except when preceded by "such" or "the same."

- " That gentleness as I was wont to have."—7 C. i 2. 33.
- "Under these hard conditions as this time Is like to lay upon us."—J. C. i. 2. 174.

This is still common in provincial language. See 280.

As is used for "where" in

- "Here as I point my sword the sun arises."—J. C. ii. 1. 106.
- 113. As is frequently used (without such) to signify "namely:"
 - "And that which should accompany old age, As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends."

Macb. v. 3. 25.

"Tired with all these for restful death I cry, As to behold desert a beggar born And needy nothing trimm'd in jollity And, &c."—Sonn. 66.

So C. of E. i. 2. 98; Hen. VIII. iv. 1. 88; M. of V. iii. 2. 109.

"Two Cliffords, as the father and the son."

3 Hen. VI. v. 7. 7.

So A. Y. L. ii. 1. 6; Rich. II. ii. 1. 18; and Hamlet, i. 1. 117, where however a line has probably dropped out between 116 and 117.

114. As is apparently used redundantly with definitions of time (as &s is used in Greek with respect to motion). It is said by Halliwell to be an Eastern Counties' phrase:

"This is my birth-day, as this very day Was Cassius born."—J. C. v. 1. 72.

"One Lucio as then the messenger."-M. for M. v. 1. 74.

The as in the first example may be intended to qualify the statement that Cassius was born on "this very day," which is not literally true, as meaning "as I may say." Here, and in our Collect for Christmas Day, "as at this time to be born," as seems appropriate to an anniversary. In the second example the meaning of "as then" is not so clear; perhaps it means "as far as regards that occasion." Compare

"Yet God at last To Satan, first in sin, his doom applied,

Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best."

MILTON, P. L. x. 173.

where "as then" seems to mean "for the present." So "as yet" means "as far as regards time up to the present time." So in

German "uls dann" means "then," and "als" is applied to other temporal adverbs.

As in E. E. was often prefixed to dates:

"As in the year of grace," &c.

"As now" is often used in Chaucer and earlier writers for "as regards now," "for the present:"

"But al that thing I must as now forbere."

CHAUC. Knighte's Tale, 27.

In "Meantime I writ to Romeo

That he should hither come as this dire night,"

R. and J. v. 3. 247.

as perhaps means "as (he did come)."

115. As was used almost but not quite redundantly after "seem" (as it is still, after "regard," "represent"):

"To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead."

A. Y. L. iv. 3. 119.

and even after "am:"

"I am but as a guiltless messenger."—A. Y. L. iv. 3. 12. "I am here in the character of." &c.

As is also used nearly redundantly before participles to denote a cause, "inasmuch as:"

"If he be now return'd As checking at his voyage."—Hamlet, iv. 7. 63.

- 116. As, like "that" (see 287), is used as a conjunctional suffix: sometimes being superfluously added to words that are already conjunctions. In the case of "when as," "where as," it may be explained from a desire to give a relative meaning to words interrogative by nature:
 - "(I am) one that was a woeful looker-on
 When as the noble duke of York was slain."
 3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 46; i. 2. 75.

So "Whereas."—2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 58, for "where."

117. Because ("for this reason that") refers to the future instead of, as with us, to the past, in

"The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands
And would not dash me with their rugged sides,
Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,
Might in thy palace perish (act. 291), Margaret."

2 Hen. VI, iii. 2. 100

i.e. "in order that the flinty heart might have the privilege of destroving me."

118. But (E. E. and modern northern English "bout") is in Old Saxon "bi-utan," where "bi" is our modern "by," and "utan" means "without." Thus but is a contraction for "by-out," and is formed exactly like "with-out," Hence but means excepted or excepting. This use of out in compounds may be illustrated by " outstep (except) the king be miserable." *

"It was full of scorpyones and cocadrilles *out-takene* in the fore-said monethes," *

"Alle that y have y grant the, out-take my wyfe." *

The two latter passages illustrate the difficulty of determining whether but is used as a passive participle with nominative absolute, or as an active participle with the objective case. In the same way we find "excepted" and "except" placed (a) after a noun or pronoun, apparently as passive participles, and (b) before, as prepositions Thus-

(a) "Only you excepted."—M. Ado, i. 1. 126. "Richard except."-Rich. III. v. 3. 242.

Then, on the other hand,-

"Always excepted my dear Claudio."-M. Ado, iii. 1. 93.

"Except immortal Cæsar."-J. C. i. 2. 60.

(For the confusion between "except" and "excepted" compare "deject" for "dejected," &c. See below, 342.)

The absence of inflections, however, in the above instances leaves us uncertain whether "except" is a preposition or participle. But "save" seems to be used for "saved" and "he" to be the nominative absolute in

"All the conspirators save only he." †-7. C. v. 5. 69.

So "Save thou."—Sonn. 109.
"Nor never none

Shall mistress be of it save I alone."—T. N. iii. 1. 172.

"What stays had I but they."-Rich. III. ii. 2. 76, iv. 4. 34; Cymb. ii. 3. 153; Macbeth, iii. 1. 54; R. and J. i. 2. 14.

On the other hand, Shakespeare does not agree with modern usage in the inflections of the pronouns (see 206-216).

^{*} Halliwell's Dictionary.

[†] Similarly "sauf" was used in French in agreement with a noun placed in the nominative absolute.

- 119. But is almost always used in Layamon for "unless" or "without" (prep.), or "without" (adv.) in the sense of "outside." Thus (i. 159): "that a queen should be king in this land and their sons be buten," (l. t. boute), i.e. "without (the land)." So (i. 215) "buten laeve," i.e. "without leave." It occurs adversatively in (i. 353) a passage which illustrates the transition, "If thou wilt receive his reconciliation, it will be well; but, he will never deliver Evelin to thee." Here but is the preposition "without," used adverbially as "otherwise."
- 120. But, in all its uses, may be explained from the meaning of "out-take" or except. It is sometimes used (like and, see above) to except or "out-take" a whole clause, the verb being occasionally in the subjunctive.
 - "And, but thou love me, let them find me here."

 R. and J. ii. 2. 76.

i.e. "except or without thou love me."

"And, but I be deceived, Signior Baptista may remember me."—T. of Sh. iv. 2. 2.

Compare I Hen. VI. iii. 1. 34: "Except I be provoked."

So "Not without the prince be willing."—M. Ado, iii. 3. 86.

We now use "unless" in this sense, and by a comparison of Wickliffe with Tyndale and Cranmer it will be seen that *but* was already often superseded by "except."

But with the subjunctive is, however, more common in Early than in Elizabethan English. Sometimes without the subjunctive—

"And, but she spoke it dying, I would not Believe her lips."—Cymb. v. 5. 41.

"And, but he's something stain'd With grief that's beauty's canker, thou might'st call him A goodly person."—Tempest, i. 2. 414.

"The common executioner Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck But first begs pardon."—A. Y. L. iii. 5. 6.

"And, but infirmity hath something seized His wish'd ability, he had himself The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his Measured, to look upon you."—W. T. v. 1. 141.

121. But. Transition of meaning. These last passages blustrate the transition of but from except to "on the contrary,"

"by way of prevention." The transition is natural, inasmuch as an exception may well be called contrary to the rule. The first passage is a blending of two constructions: "if she had not spoken it dying I would not believe," and "I would not believe, but she spoke it dying." Similarly: "Except infirmity had seized—he had (would have) measured," and "He had (would have) measured, but (by way of prevention) infirmity hath seized."

The different usages of but arise, (1) from its variations between the meaning of "except," "unless," and the adversative meaning "on the other hand;" (2) from the fact that the negative before but, in the sense of "except," is sometimes omitted and at other times inserted. Thus "but ten came" may mean "ten however came," or "(none) but ten, i.e. only ten, came." But is now much more confined than it was, to its adversative meaning. We still say "it never rains but it pours" (where the subject is introduced, we might say, "I did not know but you had come," "You shall not persuade me but you knew," &c.; but this use is colloquial, and limited to a few common verbs. We should scarcely write

"I never saw but Humphrey duke of Gloucester Did bear him like a noble gentleman,"—2 Hen, VI, i. 1.183.

122. "But" signifying prevention. The following passages illustrate the "preventive" meaning of but:

"Have you no countermand for Claudio yet But he must die to-morrow?"—M. for M. iv. 2. 95.

i.e. "to prevent that he must die." If "but" were the ordinary adversative, it would be "but must he die?"

"That song to-night
Will not go from my mind: I have much to do
But (to prevent myself) to go hang my head all at one side
And sing it, like poor Barbara."—Othello, iv. 3. 32.

"Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night?"—T. N. ii. 3. 95.

i.e. "to prevent you from gabbling," or, as Shakespeare could write, "to gabble." See 349.

After verbs of "denying" and "doubting" which convey a notion of hindrance, but is often thus used:

"I doubt not but to ride as fast as York."—Rich. II. ii. 5. 2.

So I Hen, IV, ii, 2, 14:

"It must not be denied but I am a plain dealing villain."

M. Ado, i. 3. 32.

"There must be no denial to prevent my being supposed a plaindealing villain." In the last passage, however, but is used transitionally, almost as an adversative. Compare

"It cannot be but I am pigeon-livered,"—Hamlet, ii. 2. 605. which approximates to "It cannot be (that I am otherwise than a coward)," i.e. "it cannot be that I am courageous; on the contrary (but adversative), I am pigeon-liver'd."

The variable nature of *but* is illustrated by the fact that "believe not *but*," and "doubt not *but*," are used in the same signification:

"We doubt not but every rub is smoothed."—Hen. V. ii. 2. 187. i.e. "we have no doubt of a nature to prevent our believing that," &c. So Rich. II. v. 2. 115. But, on the other hand,

"I'll not believe but they ascend the sky."—Rich. III. i. 3. 287. i.e. "I'll not believe anything except (or 'otherwise than') that they ascend."

In the first of these passages but is semi-adversative.

"She is not so divine But with as humble lowliness of mind She is content to be at your command."—I Hen. VI. v. 5. 18.

2.e. "not so divine as to prevent that she should be content."

"But" and "but that" are still thus used.

123. But (in phrases like "there is no man but hates me," where a subject immediately precedes but) often expels the subject from the following relative clause. This perhaps arose in part from a reluctance to repeat a subject which was already emphatically expressed. See 244. For the same reason the relative is omitted in such expressions as

"There is no creature loves me."-Rich. III. v. 3. 200.

In such cases we still sometimes omit the subject, but perhaps not often where but is separated from the preceding subject, as in

"There is no vice so simple but assumes Some mark of virtue in its outward parts."

M. of V. iii. 2. 21.

On the other hand, this omission is not found in the earliest stages

of the language (Mätzner, iii. p. 469), and thus we find the subject frequently retained in Shakespeare:

"I found no man but he was true to me." - 7. C. v. 5. 35.

"There's ne'er a villain dwelling in all Denmark But he's an arrant knave."—Hamlet, i. 5. 124.

Less frequently but expels the object in the relative clause:

"No jocund health that Denmark drinks to-day
But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell."

Hamlet, i. 2. 126.

124. But meaning except may apply to an expressed contingency, as (1)

"God defend but I should still be so."—I Hen. IV. iv. 3. 38.

i.e. "God forbid everything except (I should, &c.)"

"But being charged we will be still by land."

A. and C. iv. 11. 1.

i.e. "Excepting the supposition of our being charged."

(2) Sometimes the contingency is merely implied.

" I should sin

To think but (except I should think) nobly of my grandmother."

Temp. i. 2. 119.

"Her head's declined and death will seize her, but Your comfort makes her rescue."—A. and C. iii. 11. 48.

i.e. "only your comfort."

The last passage illustrates the connection between but meaning only, and but used adversatively.

125. But thus varying between an adversative and an exceptional force causes many ambiguities. Thus:

'Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate On you and yours, *but* with all duteous love Doth cherish you and yours, God punish me."

Rich. III. ii. 1. 33.

Here but means "without," or "instead of, cherishing you."

"You salute not at the court but you kiss your hands."

A. Y. L. iii. 2. 50.

i.e. "without kissing your hands."

126. But is not adversative, but means "if not," after "beshrew me," &c.:

"Beshrew my soul but I do love," &c.—K. J. v. 4. 50. So 3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 150.

"The Gods rebuke me but it is tidings

To wash the eyes of kings."—A. and C.v. 1. 27; ib. v. ii. 103.

Thus we explain:

"I'll plead for you myself but you shall have him."

T. of Sh. ii. 1. 15.

i.e. "I'll plead for you myself if you shall not have him otherwise;" but it must be admitted that the above construction may be confused with "I may have to plead for you myself, but (adversative) in any case you shall have him." So

"I should woo hard but be your groom,"—Cymb. iii. 6. 70. is, perhaps, a confusion between "if I could not be your groom

otherwise" and "but in any case I would be your groom." In the last example, however, it is possible that there is an additional contusion arising from the phrase: "It would go hard with me but."

127. But in the sense of except frequently follows negative comparatives, where we should use than.

"No more but instruments."—M. for M. v. 1. 237.

Here two constructions are blended, "Nothing except instruments" and "only instruments; no more." So—

"No more dreadfully but as a drunken sleep."

M. for M. iv. 2. 150.

"The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd, But like a man he died."—Macbeth, v. 8. 42.

"I think it be no other but even so."—Hamlet, i. I. 108.

" No more but that."-A. W. iii. 7. 30.

"With no worse nor better guard but with a knave."

Othello, i. 1. 126.

"Thou knowest no less but all."-T. N. i. 4. 13.

Sometimes but follows an adjective qualified by the negative with "so."

"Not so dull but she can learn."—M. of V. iii. 2. 164.

So Chaucer:

"I nam but dede,"-Knighte's Tale.

where, omitting the negative n, we should say "I am but dead."

- 128. But passes naturally from "except" to "only," when the negative is omitted. ("No-but" or "nobbut" is still used provincially for "only.") Thus:
 - "No more but that,"-A. W. iii. 7. 30.

becomes "but that."

"Glouc. What, and wouldst climb a tree? Simple. But that in all my life."—2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 99.

i.e. "no more but that one tree," or "only that one tree."

"Cleo. Antony will be himself.

Ant. But stirr'd by Cleopatra."—A. and C. i. 1. 43.

i.e. "not except stirr'd," "only if stirr'd."

"But sea-room, and (if Fol.) the brine and billow kiss the moon, I care not."—P. of T. iii. 1. 45.

"Where Brutus may but find it."-7. C. i. 3. 144.

i.e. "Where Brutus can (do nothing) but find it," i.e., as we say, "cannot but find it." Possibly, however, but (see 129) may be transposed, and the meaning may be "Brutus only," i.e. "Brutus alone may find it."

"He that shall speak for her is afar off guilty But that he speaks."—W. T. ii. 1. 105.

i.e. "simply in that he speaks," "merely for speaking."

The effect of the negative on but is illustrated by

"But on this day let seamen fear no wreck."—K. J. iii. 1. 92.

Here, at first, but might seem to mean "only," but the subsequent negative gives it the force of "except."

But perhaps means "only" in

"He boasts himself

To have a worthy feeding: but I have it Upon his own report, and I believe it."—W. T. iv. 4. 169.

i.e. "I have it merely on his own report, and I believe it too."

There is, perhaps, a studied ambiguity in the reply of Hamlet:

"Guild. What should we say, my lord?

Hamlet. Anything but to the purpose."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 287.

The ellipsis of the negative explains "neither" in the following difficult passage:

"To divide him inventorily would dizzy the arithmetic of memory and yet but yaw neither (i.e. do nothing but lag clumsily behind neither) in respect of his quick sail."—Hamlet, v. 2. 120.

"Neither" for our "either" is in Shakespeare's manner, after a negative expressed or implied.

But means "setting aside" in

"What would my lord, but that (which) he may not have, Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable."—T. N. v. 1. 104.

Such instances as this, where but follows not a negative but a superlative, are rare:

"Pistol. Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men in this realm.

Silent. By're lady, I think 'a be, but goodman Puff of Barson." 2 Hen. IV. v. 3. 93.

But seems used for "but now" in

"No wink, sir, all this night, Nor yesterday: but (but now) slumbers."—B. J. Fox, i. 1.

- 129. But (like excepted and except) varies in its position. Similarly "only" varies with us: we can say either "one only" or "only one."
 - "This very morning but."—B. J. Sad Sh. ii. 2.

i.e. " only this morning."

- "Where one but goes abreast."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 155. for "but one" or "one only."
- "But in these fields of late."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 188. for "but of late."
 - "A summer's day will seem an hour but short." V. and A.

"Betwixt them both but was a little stride."

SPENS. F. Q. ii. 7. 24.

- "And when you saw his chariot but appear."—J. C. i. t. 48. e.e. "his chariot merely" or "but his chariot."
 - "Your oaths are words and poor conditions but unseal'd."

 A. W. iv. 2. 30.

i.e. "merely unsealed agreements."

130. The same forgetfulness of the original meaning of words which led to "more better," &c., led also to the redundant use of but in "but only," "merely but," "but even," &c.

"Merely but art."-L. C. 25.

"He only lived but till he was a man."-Macbeth, v. 8. 40.

"My lord, your son had only but the corpse."

2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 192.

"Even but now" for "but now."

M. of V. v. 1. 272; A. Y. L. ii. 7. 3.

"But a very prey to woe."—Rich. III. iv. 4. 106.

In the bestowing of his daughter, thought But even of gentlemen of Rome."—B. J. Sejan. iii. 2

Probably like "merely but."

So "Even just."—Hen. V. ii. 3. 12.

"But now," like "even now" (38), is capable of different meanings: "a moment ago" and "at the present moment."

"But now I was the lord
Of this fair mansion, and even now, but now
This house, these servants, and this same myself
Are yours,"—M. of V. iii. 2. 171.

For. See 151.

131. Or (before). Or in this sense is a corruption of A.-S. ar (Eng. ere), which is found in Early English in the forms er, air, ar, ear, or, eror.

"Or (before) he have construed."—ASCH. 95.

As this meaning of or died out, it seems to have been combined with ere for the sake of emphasis. Thus:

"Dying or ere they sicken."—Macbeth, iv. 3, 173;

K. J. v. 6, 44; Temp. v. 1, 103.

We find in E. E. "erst er," "bifore er," "before or" (Mätzner, iii. 451).

Another explanation might be given. Ere has been conjectured to be a corruption of e'er, ever, and "or ever" an emphatic form like "whenever," "wherever." "Ever" is written "ere" in Sonn. 93, 133. And compare "Or ever your pots be made hot with thorns."—Ps. lviii.

Against the latter explanation is the fact that "ever" is much more common than "ere." It is much more likely that "ever" should be substituted for "ere" than "ere" for "ever." For Or . . . or, see 136.

132. Since* seems used for when in-

"Beseech you, sir,
Remember since you owed no more to time
Than I do now."—W. T. v. 1. 219.

"Remember the time past when you," &c.

"We know the time since he was mild and affable."

2 Hen. VI. i i. 1. 9.

"Thou rememberest Since once I sat upon a promontory."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 149.
"This fellow I remember

Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son."

T. of Sh. Ind. i. 84.

So 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 206.

This meaning of *since* arises from the omission of "it is" in such phrases as "it is long *since* I saw you," when condensed into "long *since*, I saw you." Thus *since* acquires the meaning of "ago," "in past time," adverbially, and hence is used conjunctively for "when, long ago."

Since (like the adverb) is found connected with a simple present where we use the complete present (so in Latin):

"Since the youth of the count was to-day with my lady, she is much out of quiet."—T. N. ii. 3. 144.

More remarkable is the use of the simple past for the complete present:

"I was not angry since I came to France Until this instant."—Hen. V. iv. 7. 58.

Note

"Whip him . . . So saucy with the hand of she here,—what's her name? Since she was Cleopatra."—A. and C. iii. 13. 99.

Perhaps the meaning is "Whip him for being saucy with this woman, since (though she is not now worthy of the name) she once was (emphatical) Cleopatra." Else. "What is her new name since she ceased to be Cleopatra?" If since, in the sense of "ago," could be used absolutely for "once," a third interpretation would be possible: "What's her name? Once she was Cleopatra."

^{*} The old form sith occurs several times in Shakespeare, and mostly in the metaphorical meaning "because." Sith in Hamlet, ii. 2. 12, is an exception Sith in A.-S. meant "late," "later;" "sith-than," "after that." Sithence (Chaucer, "sethens," "sins") is found twice in Shakespeare.

133. So is used with the future and the subjunctive to denote provided that."

"I am content so thou wilt have it so."-R. and F. iii. 5. 18.

"So it be new, there's no respect how vile."—Rich, II, ii, 1, 25.

So seems to mean "in this way," "on these terms," and the full construction is "be it (if it be) so that." "Be it" is inserted in

"Be it so (that) she will not. ' -M. N. D. i. 1. 39.

"That" is inserted in Chaucer, Piers Ploughman, &c.

"(Be it) So that ye be not wrath."—CHAUCER, C. T. 7830. means "provided you will not be angry." So

"Poor queen! So that thy state might be no worse I would my skill were subject to thy curse."

Rich. II. iii. 4. 102.

So, thus meaning "on condition that," is sometimes used where the context implies the addition of "even."

" Messenger. Should I lie, madam?

Cleopatra. O, I would thou didst So (even if) half my Egypt were submerged."—A. and C. ii, 5, 94.

Sometimes the subjunctive inflection is neglected and "so as" is used for "so that."

"So as thou livest in peace, die free from strife."

Rich. II. v. 5. 27.

We must distinguish the conditional "so heaven help me" from the optative "so defend thee heaven" (Rich. II. i. 3. 34), where the order of the words indicates that "be it... that" cannot be understood. Here so means "on the condition of my speaking the truth," and is not connected with defend. Compare Rich. III. ii. 1. 11, 16. See also 275–283.

That. See Relative.

That omitted before the subjunctive. See 311.

134. Where is frequently used metaphorically as we now use whereas.

"It (the belly) did remain
I' the midst o' the body idle and unactive
... where the other instruments

Did see and hear, devise," &c.—Coriol. i. 1. 102.

for "whereas the other instruments did," &c. Comp. Coriol. i. 10. 13. So Lear, i. 2. 89; Rich. II. iii. 2. 185.

135. Whereas, on the other hand, is used for where in

"Unto St. Alban's

Whereas the king and queen do mean to hawk.'

2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 58,

"They back returned to the princely place;
Whereas . . . a knight . . . they new arrived find."

SPENS. F. Q. i. 4. 38.

So "where-that."—Hen. V. v. Prologue, 17. Probably both "as" and "that" were added to give a relative meaning to the (originally) interrogative adverb where. See 287.

136. Whether is sometimes used after "or" where we should omit one of the two:

"Or whether doth my mind, being crown'd with you,
Drink up the monarch's plague, this flattery?
Or whether shall I say mine eye saith true," &c.—Sonn. 114.
"Move those eyes?

Or whether riding on the balls of mine Seem they in motion?"—M. of V. iii. 2. 18.

"Or whether his fall enraged him, or how it was."

Coriol, i. 3, 69.

The first example is perhaps analogous to the use of "or...or," as in

"Why the law Salique which they have in France Or should or should not bar us in our claim."

Hen. V. i. 2. 12; T. N. iv. 1. 65.

There is, perhaps, a disposition to revert to the old idiom in which the two particles were similar: "other... other." (The contraction of "other" into "or" is illustrated by "whe'r" for "whether" in O.E. and the Elizabethan dramatists.) Perhaps, also, additional emphasis is sought by combining two particles. We find "whether... or whether?" to express direct questions in Anglo-Saxon. In the second example a previous "whether" is implied in the words "move those eyes?"

137. While (originally a noun meaning "time"). Hence "a-while," "(for) a time;" "the while," "(in) the (mean) time;" "while-om" ("om" being a dative plural inflexion used adverbially), "at a (former) time;" "while-ere" (Temp. iii. 2. 127), "a time before," i.e. "formerly."

So whiles (genitive of while) means "of, or during, the time."

The earliest use of while is still retained in the modern phrase "all the while that he was speaking." "The while that," from a very early period, is used in the condensed form "the while," or "uhile that" or while; and whiles was similarly used as a conjunction.

While now means only "during the time when," but in Elizabethan English both while and whiles meant also "up to the time when." (Compare a similar use of "dum" in Latin and Eus in Greek.)

"We will keep ourself

Till supper-time alone. While (till) then, God be with you."

Macbeth, iii. 1. 43.

"I'll trust you while your father's dead."

Massinger (Nares).

"He shall conceal it

Whiles you are willing it shall come to note."—T. N. iv. 3. 28. "Let the trumpets sound

While we return these dukes what we decree.

[A long flourish.

Draw near, &c."-Rich. II. i. 3. 122.

PREPOSITIONS.

138. Prepositions primarily represent local relations; secondarily and metaphorically, agency, cause, &c. A preposition (as after, see below) may be used metaphorically in one age and literally in the next, or vice verså. This gives rise to many changes in the meaning of prepositions.

The shades of different meaning which suggest the use of different

prepositions are sometimes almost indistinguishable.

We say, "a canal is full of water." There is no reason why we should not also say "full with water," as a garden is "fair with flowers." Again, "a canal is filled with water," the verb in modern English preferring with to signify instrumentality, but "filled of water" is conceivable; and, as a matter of fact, Shakespeare does write "furnished of, provided of, supplied of," for with. Lastly the water may be regarded as an agent, and then we say, "the canal is filled by the water." But an action may be regarded as "of" the agent, as well as "by" the agent, and "of" is frequently thus used in the A. V. of the Bible and in Elizabethan authors, as well as

in E. E. For these reasons the use of prepositions, depending upon the fashion of metaphor in different ages, is very variable. It would be hard to explain why we still say, "I live on bread," but not "Or have we eaten on the insane root?" (Macb. i. 3. 84); as hard as to explain why we talk of a "high" price or rate, while Beaumont and Fletcher speak of a "deeper rate."

139. Prepositions: modern tendency to restrict their meaning.

One general rule may be laid down, that the meanings of the prepositions are more restricted now than in the Elizabethan autitors: partly because some of the prepositions have been pressed into the ranks of the conjunctions, e.g. "for," "but," "after;" partly because, as the language has developed, new prepositional ideas having sprung up and requiring new prepositional words to express them, the number of prepositions has increased, while the scope of each has decreased. Thus many of the meanings of "by" have been divided among "near," "in accordance with," "by reason of," "owing to;" "but" has divided some of its provinces among "unless," "except;" "for" has been in many cases supplanted by "because of," "as regards;" "in" by "during."

140. A. Ben Jonson in his Grammar, p. 785, writes thus:—"A hath also the force of governing before a noun—'And the Protector had layd to her for manner's sake that she was a council with the Lord Hastings to destroy him.'—Sir T. MORE."

"Forty and six years was this temple a building." St. John ii. 20.

The present text is in, but Cranmer and Tyndale had "a."

This a, which still exists in alive, afoot, asleep, &c. is a contraction of A.-S. on or the less common form an. We find in Early English "on live," "on foot," "on hunting," "on sleep;" "a morrow and eke an eve," for "by morning and also by evening;" "a land and a water," Piers Pl. (where some MSS. have on), "a (for in) God's name," "an end" for "on the (at the) end."

In the Folio we sometimes find a where we write o':

"What is 't a clocke?"—Rich. III. v. 3. 47.

See Adverbs, 24

141. After ("following," Latin "secundum," hence "according to").

"Say, you chose him,

More after our commandment than as guided By your own true affections."—Coriol. ii. 3. 238.

'After my seeming."-2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 128.

Compare "Neither reward us after our iniquities," in our Prayer-book,

After is now used only of space or time, except in "after the pattern, example, &c.," where the sense requires the metaphorical meaning.

142. Against used metaphorically to express time. This is now restricted to colloquial language:

"I'll charm his eyes against she do appear."—M.N.D. iii. 2. 99. i.e. "against the time that she do appear." Any preposition, as "for," "in," can thus be converted into a conjunction by affixing "that," and the "that" is frequently omitted.

"Against (the time that) my love shall be as I am now."—Sonn. 63.

"'Gainst that season comes."—Hamlet, i. 1. 158.

"As against the doom."—Ib. iii. 4. 50.

i.e. "as though expecting doom's-day."

143. At. The use of a mentioned in 140 was becoming unintelligible and vulgar in Shakespeare's time, and he generally uses at instead. The article is generally omitted in the following and similar adverbial forms.

"All greeting that a king at friend can send his brother."

W. T. v. I. 140.

"The wind at help."—Hamlet, iv. 3. 46.

"At shore."—MONTAIGNE. "At door."—W. T. iv. 4. 352.

"(A ship) that lay at rode."-N. P. 177.

"As true a dog as ever fought at head."-T. A. v. 1. 102.

"Bring me but out at gate."—Coriol. iv. 1. 47.

"At point."—Coriol. v. 4. 64; Cymb. iii. 6. 17.
But "When they were fallen at a point for rendering up the hold."

HOLINSHED. Duncane.

The at of price generally requires an adjective or article, as well as a noun, after it, except in "at all." We have, however,

"If my love thou hold'st at aught,"—Hamlet, iv. 3. 60 i.e. "at a whit"

In Early English at does not seem to have been thus extensively used. It then was mostly used (Stratmann) in the sense of "at the hands of" $(\pi\rho\delta s$ with gen.): "I ask at, take leave at, learn at a person," &c.

At is used like "near" with a verb of motion where we should use "up to:"

"I will delve one yard below their mines, And blow them at the moon."—Hamlet, iii. 4. 209.

In "Follow him at foot,"—Ib. iv. 3. 56. at is not "on" but "near," as in "at his heels,"

- 144. At, when thus used in adverbial expressions, now rejects adjectives and genitives as interfering with adverbial brevity. Thus we can say "at freedom," but not
 - "At honest freedom."-Cymb. iii. 3. 71.
 - "At ample view."-T. N. i. 1. 27.
 - "At a mournful war."—Sonn. 46.
 - "At heart's ease."—J. C. i. 2. 207.

We say "at loose," but not

"Time . . . often at his very loose decides

That which long process could not arbitrate,"—L. L. L. v. 2. 752. where "loose" means "loosing" or "parting."

So we say "aside," but not

"To hang my head all at one side."—Othello, iv. 3. 22.

We say "at the word," but, with the indefinite article, "in a word," not

"No, at a word, madam."-Coriol. i. 3. 122.

It is, perhaps, on account of this frequent use of at in terse adverbial phrases that it prefers monosyllables to dissyllables. Thus we have "at night" and "at noon," and sometimes "at eve" and "at morn," but rarely "at evening" or "at morning," except where "at morning" is conjoined with "at night," as in

"At morning and at night."-M. of V. iii. 2. 279.

London was not so large as it now is when Shakespeare wrote "Inquire at London."—Rich, II. v. 3, 51.

- 145. By (original meaning "near"). Hence our "to come by a thing," i.e. "to come near" or "attain."
 - "(How) cam'st thou by this ill tidings?"-Rich. II. iii. 4. 80,
 - "I'll come by (i.e. acquire) Naples."-Temp, ii. 1. 202.

By is used in a manner approaching its original meaning in

"Fed his flocks

By (on) the fat plains of fruitful Thessaly."

B. and F. Fair Sh. i. I.

"At a fair vestal throned by the west."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 58. So Wickliffe: "By (on) everi Saboth," Acts xiii. 27. Somewhat similar is our present colloquial "by this" of time; an expression which is found in

"Of the poor suppliant who by this I know Is here attending."—A. W. v. 3. 134; Lear, iv. 6. 45.

This is illustrated by the play on "by your favour," where favour means also "complexion," "face," in

Hath stay'd upon some favour that it loves, Hath it not, boy?

Viola. A little, by your favour."—T. N. ii. 4. 26.

Compare also the puns in T. N. iii. 1. 2-10.

Hence "about," "concerning."

"How say you by the French lord?"—M. of V. i. 2. 60.

"Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I charge you,
By him and by this woman here what know you?"

A. W. v. 3. 237.

a. endi-

"I would not have him know so much by me."

L. L. L. iv. 3. 150.

"I know nothing by myself," I Cor. iv. 4 (no harm about myself).

"Many may be meant by (to refer to) the fool multitude."

M. of V. ii. 9. 25.

Compare B. J. Poetast. v. 1:

"Lupus. Is not that eagle meant by Cæsar, ha?....
Cæsar. Who was it, Lupus, that inform'd you first
This should be meant by us?"

Hence from near came the meaning like, according to.

"It lies you on to speak

Not by your cwn instruction, nor by the matter
Which your own heart prompts you."—Coriol. iii. 2.58.

"And him by oath they duly honoured."—R. of L. 410.

s.e. "according to their oath."

"Not friended by his wish, to your high person His will is most malignant."—Hen. VIII. i. 2. 140

s.e. "in accordance with his wish," "to his heart's content.

"If my brother wrought by my pity it should not be so."

M. for M. iii. 2 224

"I will believe you by the syllable
Of what you shall deliver."—P. of T. v. 1. 170.

So, where we say "to the sound of:"

"Sound all the lofty instruments of war, And by that music let us all embrace."

By seems to mean "near," hence "with," in

"(My daughter) hath his solicitings, As they fell out by time, by means and place, All given to mine ear."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 127.

Perhaps we may thus explain:

"I'll trust by leisure him that mocks me once."—T. A. i. 1. 301 i.e. "in accordance with, to suit, my leisure."

The use of by in

"The people . . . by numbers swarm to us,"
3 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 2.
is the same as in

"By ones, by twos, by threes." - Coriol. ii. 3. 47.

By, in the sense of "near," like our "about" (Acts xiii. 21, Wick. "by fourti yeeris," the rest "about"), Greek κατά, was used from the first in rough distributive measurements in E. E.: "He smote to the ground by three, by four," "by nine and ten," "by one and one." So

"I play the torturer by small and small
To lengthen out the worst that must be said."

Rich. II. iii. 2. 189.

i.e. "in lengthening out by little and little." Hence, perhaps, from "by one by one" sprang our shorter form, "one by one," "little by little;" though it is possible that "one by one" means "one next to or after one."

By is used as a noun in the expression "on the by" (as one passes by).—B. J. 746.

We still use by as an adverb after "close," "hard," &c., but we should scarcely say,

"I stole into a neighbour thicket by."-L. L. L. v. 2. 94.

146. By ("near," "following close after," hence "as a consequence of").

"The bishop of York,

Fell Warwick's brother, and, by that, our foe."

3 Hen. VI. iv. 4. 12.

"Lest, by a multitude

The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out."

Rich. III. ii. 2. 124.

"So the remembrance of my former love

Is by a newer object quite forgotten."—R. and J. ii. 4. 194.

"Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 52.

Hence sometimes it seems to be (but is not) used instrumentally with adjectives which appear to be (but are not) used as passive verbs.

By does not mean "by means of," but "as a consequence of," in

"An eagle sharp by fast."—V. and A. 55.

"Oh how much more does beauty beauteous seem

By that sweet ornament which truth doth give."-Sonn.

"Laer. Where is my father?

King. Oueen. Dead!

But not by him."

Hamlet, iv. 5. 128.

147. For (original meaning "before," "in front of"). A man who stands in front of another in battle may either stand as his friend for him or as his foe against him. Hence two meanings of for, the former the more common.*

148. (I.) For, meaning "in front of," is connected with "instead of," "in the place of," "as being."

"Or for the lawrell he may gain a scorne."

B. J. on Shakespeare

i.e. "instead of the laurel."

"See what now thou art, For happy wife, a most distressed widow,

For joyful mother, one that wails the name, For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 98.

"Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen."—Ib. i. 3. 202.

Between this and the following meanings we may place

"Learn now, for all."—Cymb. ii. 3. 111.

"This is for all."—Hamlet, i. 3. 131.

2.c. "once instead of, or in the place of, all."

* Comp. ἀντί, which in composition denotes against, and at other times instead of, for.

"I abjure

The taints and blames I laid upon myself

For (as being) strangers to my nature."—Macbeth, iv. 3. 125 "Conscience . . . is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing."—Rich. III. i. 4. 146.

"How often have I sat crown'd with fresh flowers For summer's queen!"—B. and F. Fair Sh. i. 1.

Hence for is nearly redundant in

"Let the forfeit

Be nominated for an equal pound."—M. of V. i. 3. 150.

There is a play on the word in

"On went he for a search, and away went I for (packed up in a basket and treated like) old clothes."—M. W. of W. iii. 5. 100.

"Three dukes of Somerset three-fold renown'd For hardy and undoubted champions."—3 Hen. VI. v. 7. 6.

(Where probably hardy means Fr. hardi, "bold;" and "undoubted" means "not frightened," "doubt" like "fear" being used for "frighten.")

Perhaps for comes under this head in

"What is he for a fool that betroths himself to unquietness."

M. Ado, i. 3. 49

i.e. "What is he, as being a fool." It is more intelligible when the order is changed: "For a fool, what is he," i.e. "considered as a fool—it being granted that he is a fool—what kind of fool is he?" So "What is he for a vicar?"—B. J. Sil. Wom. iii. 1. med. So in German "was für ein?"

149. For is hence loosely used in the sense "as regards."

"It was young counsel for the persons and violent counsel for the matter."—B. E. 75.

Very commonly this for stands first, before an emphatic subject or object, which is intended to stand in a prominent and emphatic position:

"For your desire to know what is between us,
O'er-master it as you may."—Hamlet, i. 5.139; 2. 112.
"Now, for the taking of Sicily, the Athenians did marvellously

covet it."—N. P. 171.

"For your intent,

It is most retrograde to our desires."

Hamtet, i. 2. 112; Rich. II. v. 3. 137.

"For a certain term," "for seven days, a day" (or even "for the day" where one day is meant), is still customary, but not

"Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night,
And for the day confined to fast in fires."—Hamlet, i. 4. 11.

150. For, from meaning "in front of," came naturally to mean "in behalf of," "for the sake of," "because of,"

"Yet I must not (kill Banquo openly), For certain friends that are both his and mine."

Macbeth, iii. 1. 120.

i.e. "because of certain friends."

This use was much more common than with us. When we refer to the past we generally use "because of," reserving for the future. Compare, on the other hand:

"O be not proud, nor brag not of thy might,
For mastering her that foil'd the God of fight."

V. and A. 114.

"He gave it out that he must depart for certain news."
N. P. 179.

"No way to that, for weakness, which she enter'd."

I Hen. VI. iii. 2. 25.

i.e. "no way can be compared for weakness with that," &c.

"Of divers humours one must be chiefly predominant, but it is not with so full an advantage but, for the volubilitie and supplenes of the mind, the weaker may by occasion reobtaine the place again."—MONTAIGNE, 116.

For is similarly used with an ellipse of "I lay a wager" in

"Now, for my life, she's wandering to the Tower."

Rich. III. iv. 1. 3.

151. For, in the sense of "because of," is found not only governing a noun, but also governing a clause:

"You may not so extenuate his offence .

For I have had such faults."—M. for M. ii. 1. 28.

i.e. "because I have had such faults."

"('Tis ungrateful) to be thus opposite with heaven,
For (because) it requires the royal debt it lent you."

Rich. III. ii. 2. 95.

So Othello, i. 3. 269; Cymb. iv. 2. 129. And parenthetically ver frequently:

"The canker-blossoms have as deep a dye As the perfumed tincture of the roses, But for their virtue only is their shew, They live unwoo'd, and unrespected fade."-Sonn. 54.

"Oh, it is as lawful. For we would give much, to use violent thefts."

1.e. to rob, "because we wish to be generous."

With the future, for meant "in order that."

"And, for the time shall not seem tedious, I'll tell thee what befel me."—3 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 10

The desire of clearness and emphasis led to the addition of because.

"But for because it liketh well our eyes."-N. P. Pref.

"And for because the world is populous."—Rich. II. v. 5. 3.

Comp. "but only," "more better," &c.

For, when thus followed by a verb, like after, before; &c. ("after he came," "before he went"), is called a conjunction. It is often, like other prepositions (287) thus used, followed by "that," Coriol. iii. 3. 93, &c. The two uses occur together in the following passage, which well illustrates the transition of for:

"I hate him for he is a Christian, But more for that...he lends," &c.—M. of V. i. 3. 43.

152. For to, which is now never joined with the infinitive except by a vulgarism, was very common in E. E. and A.-S., and is not uncommon in the Elizabethan writers. It probably owes its origin to the fact that the prepositional meaning of "to" was gradually weakened as it came to be considered nothing but the sign of the infinitive. Hence for was added to give the notion of motion or purpose. Similarly in Danish and Swedish (Mätzner, ii. p. 54) "for at" is used. Both in E. E. and in Elizabethan writers the for is sometimes added to the latter of two infinitives as being, by a longer interval, disconnected from the finite verb, and therefore requiring an additional connecting particle:

> "First, honour'd Virgin, to behold thy face Where all good dwells that is; next for to try," &c. B. and F. Fair Sh. v. I.

For the same reason:

"Let your highness Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour Than for to think that I would sink it here."-A. W. v. 3. 181

1.9 malian

2, to regard

5.2411 200

From the earliest period "for to," like "to," is found used without any notion of purpose, simply as the sign of the infinitive. So in Shakespeare:

"Forbid the sea for to obey the moon." - W. T. i. 2. 427.

The following passage illustrates the 153. For, variable. variableness of for:

" Princes have but their titles for (to represent) their glories, An outward honour for (as the reward of) an inward toil, And for (for the sake of gaining) unfelt (unsubstantial) imagi-9,13 seams

They often feel a world of restless cares."-Rich. III. i. 4. 78-80. 47 0 proceed

154. (II.) For (in opposition to): hence "to prevent."

"And over that an habergeon for percing of his herte." CHAUCER, Sire Thopas, 13790.

"Love. Is there an officer there?

Off. Yes, two or three for failing."-B. J. Alch. v. 3.

"The which he will not every hour survey

For blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure."—Sonn. 52.

"We'll have a bib for spoiling of thy doublet."

B. and F. (Nares).

So it is said of Procrustes, that if his victim was too long for the bed. "he cut off his legs for catching cold."-Euphues (Malone).

It can be proved that Sir T. North regarded for as meaning "in spite of," since he translates "Mais, nonobstant toutes ces raisons," by "But, for all these reasons," (N. P. 172); where the context also shows beyond dispute that for has this meaning. On the other hand, in

"All out of work and cold for action,"-Hen. V. i. 2. 114.

for seems to mean "for want of," unless "out of work and cold" can be treated as equivalent to "eager," which would naturally be followed by for.

For is found in E. E. in this sense, but perhaps always with the emphatic "all."

For in this sense is sometimes used as a conjunction:

"For all he be a Roman."—Cymb. v. 4. 209.

i.e. "Despite that he be a Roman."

For may either mean "against" or (149) "for what concerns" to "I warrant him for drowning."-Temp. i. 1. 49.

We still retain the use of for in the sense of in spite of, as in "for all your plots I will succeed." Such phrases, however, frequently contain a negative, in which case it is difficult to ascertain whether for means because of or in spite of.

"My father is not dead for all your saying."

Macbeth, iv. 2. 36

"(The stars) will not take their flight

For all the morning light."—MILTON, Hymn on the Nativity.

It is a question how to punctuate

"To fall off

From their Creator and transgress his will For one restraint lords of the world besides."

MILTON, P. L. i. 32.

If a comma be placed after "will," and not after "restraint," then "besides" should be treated as though it were "except" or "but:" "Lords of the world but for one restraint."

155. For is sometimes ready for, fit for. (See 405.)

"He is for no gallants' company without them."

B. J. E. in &c. i. 1. "Your store is not for idle markets."—T. N. iii. 3. 46.

Compare our "I am for (going to) Paris."

Some ellipsis, as "I pray," must be understood in

"(I pray) God for his mercy."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 98; v. 2. 75.

156. Forth is used as a preposition (from):

"Steal forth thy father's house."-M. N. D. i. 1. 164.

"Loosed them forth their brazen caves."

2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 89, and I Hen. VI. i. 2. 54

Sometimes with "of" or "from:"

"That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France."
3 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 157.

So Rich. II. iii. 2. 204-5; Temp. v. 1. 160. The "of" in itself implies motion from. (See 165.)

"From forth the streets of Pomfret."—K. J. iv. 2. 148. So Rich. II. ii. 1. 106.

Forth, being thus joined with prepositions less emphatic than itself, gradually assumed a prepositional meaning, displacing the prepositions. Forth is not found as a preposition in E. E. See also Prepositions omitted.

- 157. From is sometimes joined with out, to signify outward motion, where we use out of.
 - "In purchasing the semblance of my soul

From out the state of hellish cruelty."-M. of V. iii. 4. 20.

- "From out the fiery portal of the East."-Rich. II. iii. 3 64.
- 158. From is frequently used in the sense of "apart from," "away from," without a verb of motion.
 - ceremony."-Macbeth, iii. 4. 36. "I am best pleased to be from such a deed."-K. J. iv. 1. 86. 1. 0 we from
 - "Which is from (out of) my remembrance." Temp. i. I. 65. (2. Away from
 - "They run themselves from breath."-B. J. Cy.'s Rev. i. I.
 - "Clean from the purpose."—J. C. i. 3. 35.
 - "This discourse is from the subject."—B. and F. Eld. B. v. I.
 - "This is from my commission."—T. N. i. 5. 208.
 - "Anything so overdone is from the purpose of playing." Hamlet, iii. 2. 22.
 - "This is from the present."—A. and C. ii. 6. 30.

Hence "differently from:"

- "Words him a great deal from the matter."—Cymb, i. 4. 16. i.e. "describes him in a manner departing from the truth."
 - "This label on my bosom whose containing

Is so from sense in hardness."—Cymb. v. 5. 431.

"Write from it, if you can, in hand and phrase." T. N. v. 1. 340.

"For he is superstitious grown of late Quite from the main opinion he held once."—7. C. ii. I. 196.

"So from himself impiety hath wrought."—R. of L.

"To be so odd and from all fashions."—M. Ado, iii. 1. 72. "Particular addition from the bill

That writes them all alike."—Macbeth, iii. 1. 100.

This explains the play on the word in

- "Queen. That thou dost love thy daughter from thy soul." Rich. III. iv. 4. 258.
- "I wish you all the joy that you can wish,

For I am sure you can wish none from me." M. of V. iii. 2. 192.

i.e. "none differently from me," "none which I do not wish you." This is probably the correct interpretation of the last passage. So Othello, i. I. 132.

urn of "From thence (i.e. away from home) the sauce to meat is marra.

3. Vigreent grow

"If aught possess thee from me."—C. of E. ii. 2. 180. Also "apart from:"

"Nay, that's my own from any nymph in the court." B. J. Cv.'s Rev. ii. 1

"From thee to die were torture more than death." 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2, 401.

159. In like the kindred preposition on (Chaucer uses "in a hill" for "on a hill"), was used with verbs of motion as well as rest, We still say "he fell in love," "his conduct came in question."

> "He fell in a kind of familiar friendship with Socrates." N. P. 192.

"Duncane fell in fained communion with Sueno."

"In so profound abysm I throw all care."—Sonn. 112.

"Cast yourself in wonder."-7. C. i. 3. 60.

"Sounds of music creep in our ears."-M. of V. v. 1.56.

"They who brought me in my master's hate."

Rich. III. iii. 2, 56.

"But first I'll turn yon fellow in his grave." Ib. i. 2. 262; 3. 88.

"And throw them in the entrails of a wolf."—Ib. iv. 3. 23.

"If ever ve came in hell."-UDALL.

In (for "into") with "enter," Rich. II. ii. 3. 160; Rich. III. v. 3. 227.

Into is conversely sometimes found with verbs of rest implying "Is all my armour laid into my tent?"-Rich. III. v. 5.51.

"Confin'd into this rock." - Tempest, i. 2. 361.

"To appear into the world."-MONTAIGNE, 224.

And earlier "Hid into three measures of meal."-WICKLIFFE, Luke xiii. 21.

160. In for on:

"What in your own part (side) can you say to this?" Othello, i. 3, 74.

So in the phrase "in the neck," where we should say "on the neck" or "on the heels."

> "Soon after that depriv'd him of his life And, in the neck of that, task'd the whole state." 1 Hen. IV. iv. 3. 92.

The same phrase occurs Sonn. 131; MONTAIGNE, 17; N. P. 172. "In pain of your dislike."—2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 257.

161. In for "during" or "at." In has now almost lost its metaphorical use applied to time. As early as the sixteenth century "In the day of Sabbath" (WICKLIFFE, Acts xiii. 14) was replaced by "on." It is still retained where the proper meaning of "in," "in the limits of," is implied, as with plurals, "Once in ten days" or "for once in my life," or "he does more in one day than others in two." Thus A. V. Gen. viii. 4, "In the seventh month, on the eighteenth day." We also find frequently in the A. V. "In the day of the Lord, in the day when," &c. "in the day of judgment." This may in part be due to a desire to retain the more archaic idiom, as being more solemn and appropriate; but perhaps the local meaning of in may be here recognized. We still say "in this calamity, crisis," &c. where we mean "entangled in, surrounded by the perils of this calamity;" and some such meaning may attach to "in" when we say "In the day of tribulation, vengeance," &c. Occasionally, however, we find "at the day of judgment" (Matt. xi. 22), as also in Shakespeare in the only passage where this phrase occurs. Shakespeare frequently uses in for "at" or "during."

"How! the duke in council In this time of the night."—Othello, i. 2. 93.

" In night."-V. and A. 720.

" In all which time."-Rich. III. i. 3. 127.

" In such a night as this."—M. of V. v. 1. 1, 6, 9.

"This is, sir, a doubt

In such a time as this, nothing becoming you."

Cymb. iv. 4. 15.

"Nay, we will slink away in supper-time."-M. of V. ii. 4. 1.

162. In metaphorically used for "in the case of," "about," &c.

"Triumph in so false a foe."—R. of L.

"In second voice we'll not be satisfied."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 149.

" Almost all

Repent in their election."-Coriol. ii. 3. 263.

"Our fears in Banquo stick deep."-Mach. iii. 1. 49.

"(We) wear our health but sickly in his life

Which in his death were perfect."-Ib. iii. 1. 107.

We say "in my own person" or "by myself," not

"Which in myself I boldly will defend."-Rich. II. i. 1. 145

"But I bethink me what a weary way

In Ross and Willoughby ... will be found."—Ib. ii. 3. 10.

s.e. "in the case of Ross," equivalent to "by Ross."

In is used metaphorically where we should say "in the thought of" in

"Strengthen your patience in our last night's speech." Hamlet, v. I. 317.

163. In. We still say "it lies in your power." But we find also-

"And the offender's life lies in the mercy Of the duke only,"-M. of V. iv. 1. 355.

where we now should use at. This example illustrates the apparently capricious change in the use of prepositions.

We should now use at instead of in and of, in

"In night and on the court and guard of safety."

Othello, ii. 3. 216.

"What! in a town of war." *-- Ib. 213.

"In-round" (O. Fr. "en rond") is used for the more modern "a-round" in

"They compassed him in round among themselves."-N. P. 192. But probably "round" is for "around." Compare "compassed him in."-A. V. 2 Chron. xxi. 9.

164. In is used with a verbal to signify "in the act of" or "while."

"He raves in saying nothing."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 247.

" When you cast

Your stinking greasy caps in hooting at Coriolanus' exile."—Coriol. iv. 6. 131.

"Mine eyes, the outward watch

Whereto my finger like a dial's point

Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears."-Rich. II. v. 5. 54. "The fire that mounts the liquor till't run o'er,

In seeming to augment it, wastes it."—Hen. VI.II. i. 1. 145.

"And may ye both be suddenly surprised

By bloody hands in sleeping on your beds."—I Hen. VI. v. 3. 41.

* But "towns of war," Hen. V. ii. 4. 7, means "garrisoned towns," and so probably here, like our "man of war"

" As patches set upon a little breach Discredit more in hiding of the fault."—K. J. iv. 2. 32.

It is probable, as the last example suggests, that these verbals are was of the nouns after which "of" is sometimes expressed. Hence "in sleeping" may simply be another form of "a-sleeping." But the in making the brings out, more strongly than the a-, the time in which, or while, you was a the action is being performed. It is also probable that the influence of the French idiom, "en disant ces mots," tended to mislead English authors into the belief that in was superfluous, and that the 2 9m for One verbals thus used were present participles. (See also 93.) In is used thus with a noun:

"Wept like two children in (during) their deaths' sad stories." Rich. III. iv. 3. 8.

"(These blazes) giving more light than heat, extinct in both, Even in their promise, while it is a-making."

Hamlet, i. 3. 119.

165. Of (original meaning "off" or "from"). Comp. dπό; "ab," Mœso-Gothic "af."

In Early English of is used for "from," "out of," "off," as in "He lighted of his steed, arose of the dead," "The leaves fall of the tree." This strong meaning of motion was afterwards assigned to "off" (which is merely an emphatic form of of), and hence of retained only a slight meaning of motion, which frequently merged into causality, neighbourhood, possession, &c.

Off is, perhaps, simply of in

"Over-done or come tardy off." *- Hamlet, iii. 2. 28.

t.e. "fallen short of." Compare ὑστερεῖν. Otherwise "come off" is a passive participle, 295.

Of retains its original meaning in

"Overhear this speech Of vantage."-Hamlet, iii. 3. 33.

i.e. "from the vantage-ground of concealment."

"Therefore of all hands must we be forsworn."

L. L. L. iv. 3. 219.

i.e. "from all sides," "to which ever side one looks;" hence "in any case."

"Being regarded of all hands by the Grecians."-N. P. 176

* Compare "Too late of our intents."-Rich. III. iii. 5. 69.

me mer una 4. In the coase ? obout. 5. While in ite and of.

So our modern "off hand," applied to a deed coming from the hand, and not from the head. Hence "of hand" is used where we use "on" (175) in

"Turn of no hand."-M. of V. ii. 2. 45.

Of also retains this meaning with some local adjectives and adverbs, such as "north of," "south of," "within fifteen hundred paces of" (Hen. V. iii. 7. 136). We could say "the advantage of," but not "You should not have the eminence of him."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 266.

'There is a testril of (from) me too."-T. N. ii. 3. 34.

- 166. Of used for "out of," "from," with verbs that signify, either literally or metaphorically, depriving, delivering, &c.
 - "We'll deliver you of your great danger." Coriol. v. 6. 15.
 - "I may be delivered of these woes."-K. J. iii. 4. 55.

This use of of is still retained in the phrase "to be delivered of a child."

- "Heaven make thee free of it."-Hamlet, v. 2. 342.
- "To help him of his blindness."—T. G. of V. iv. 2. 45.
- "Unfurnish me of reason."—W. T. v. I. 123.
- "Take of me my daughter."-M. Ado, ii. 1. 311.
- "Rid the house of her."—T. Sh. i. 1. 150.
- "Scour me this famous realm of enemies."-B. and F.
- "That Lepidus of the triumvirate Should be deposed."—A. and C. iii. 6. 28.
- "His cocks do win the battle still of mine."—A. and C. ii. 3.36.
- "Get goal for goal of youth."-A. and C. iv. 8. 22.
- "I discharge thee of thy prisoner."—M. Ado, v. 1. 327.

In virtue of this meaning, of is frequently placed after forth and out, to signify motion.

Hence, metaphorically,

"He could not justify himself of the unjust accusations."—N. P. 173.

Of is also used with verbs and adjectives implying motion from, such as "fail," "want," &c. Hence—

"But since you come too late of our intents."-Rich. III. iii. 5. 69.

167. Of thus applied to time means "from." So still "of late."
"I took him of a child up."—B. J. E. in &c. ii. I.

i.e. "from a child, when a mere child." So in E. E. "of youth."

4: Of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries."

Acts viii. 11

"Being of so young days brought up with him."

Hamlet, ii. 2. 11.

168. Of, meaning "from," passes naturally into the meaning resulting from," "as a consequence of."

" Of force."-M. of V. iv. 1. 421; I Hen. IV. iii, 2. 120.

" Of no right,"-I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 100.

"Bold of your worthiness."-L. L. L. ii. 1. 28.

"We were dead of sleep."—Temp. v. 1. 230.

"And of that natural luck

He beats thee 'gainst the odds."-A. and C. ii. 3. 26.

Hence "What shall become of this?" M. Ado, iv. 1. 211; T. N ii. 1. 37, means "what will be the consequence of this?" So "by means of:"

"And thus do we of wisdom and of reach
By indirection find direction out,"—Hamlet, ii. 1. 64.

While by is used of external agencies, of is used of internal motives, thus:

"Comest thou hither by chance, or of devotion?"

2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 88.

"The king of his own royal disposition."—Rich. III. i. 3. 63. "Of purpose to obscure my noble birth."—I Hen. VI. v. 4. 22.

"Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?"

2 Hen. VI. v. 1. 16.

Sometimes "out of" is thus used:

"But thou hast forced me, Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman."

Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 431.

Of, "as a result of," is used as a result for "with the aid of," "with," or "at."

"That . . . she be sent over of the King of England's cost."

2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 61.

"Of the city's cost, the conduit shall run nothing but claret wine."

1b, iv, 6, 3.

Hence the modern phrase "To die of hunger."

169. Of hence is used in appeals and adjurations to signify "out of."

[&]quot; Of charity, what kin are you to me?"-T. N. v. 1. 237.

Hence, the sense of "out of" being lost, = "for the sake of," "by."

"Speak of all loves."-M. N. D. ii. 2. 154.

This explains

"Let it not enter in your mind, of love."—M. of V. ii. 9. 42. Similar is the use of of in protestations:

"Leon. We'll have dancing afterwards.

Ben. First, of my word."—T. N. v. 4. 123.

"A proper man, of mine honour."-2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 103.

170. Of meaning "from" is placed before an agent (from whom the action is regarded as proceeding) where we use "by,"

"Received of (welcomed by) the most pious Edward."

Macb. iii. 6. 27.

"Like stars ashamed of day."-V. and A.

i.e. "shamed by day."

Of is frequently thus used with "long," "long," or "along." —LAYAMON. "Along of" = "from alongside of" $(\pi \alpha \rho d)$ with gen.).

"The good old man would fain that all were well So 'twere not 'long of him."—3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 32.

"'Long all of Somerset."-I Hen. VI. iv. 3. 46, 33.

"I am so wrapt and throwly lapt of jolly good ale and old."—STILL.

- 171. Of is hence used not merely of the agent but also of the instrument. This is most common with verbs of construction, and of filling; because in construction and filling the result is not merely effected with the instrument, but proceeds out of it. We still retain of with verbs of construction and adjectives of fulness; but the Elizabethans retained of with verbs of fulness also.
 - "Supplied of kernes and gallow-glasses."—Macb. i. 2. 13.
 - "I am provided of a torch-bearer."-M. of V. ii. 2. 24.
 - "You are not satisfied of these events."-Ib. v. 1. 297.
 - "Mettle—where of thy proud child arrogant man is puffed."

 T. of A. iv. 3. 180.
 - "Mixt partly of Mischief and partly of Remedy."-B. E. 114

Hence "Flies
Whose woven wings the summer dyes

Of many colours."—B. and F. Fair Sh. v. 1.

Of with verbs of construction from "out of" sometimes assumes the meaning of "instead of."

"Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate."—Rich. III. ii. 1. 50. And with "become:"

"(Henry) is of a king become a banish'd man."—3 Hen. VI. iii. 3. 25.

172. Of is hence used metaphorically with verbs of construction, as in the modern

"They make an ass of me."-T. N. v. 1. 19.

But of is also thus found without verbs of construction, as .

'Apem. Or thou shalt find—

mon. A fool of thee. Depart."

T. of A. iv. 3. 232.

"E'en such a husband

Hast thou of me as she is for a wife."—M. of V. iii. 5. 89. "We should have found a bloody day of this."—I Hen. VI. iv. 7. 34.

"We shall find of him

A shrewd contriver."—J. C. ii. 1. 157.

"We lost a jewel of her."-A. W. v. 3. 1.

"You have a nurse of me."-P. of T. iv. 1. 25.

"You shall find of the king, sir, a father."—A. W. i. 1. 7. i.e. "in the king."

173. Of is hence applied not merely to the agent and the instrument, but to any influencing circumstance, in the sense of "as regards," "what comes from."

"Fantasy,

Which is as thin of substance as the air."—R. and J. i. 4. 99. "Roses are fast flowers of their smells."—B. E. 188.

"A valiant man of his hands."—N. P. 614.

"But of his cheere did seem too solemn-sad."—SPEN. F. Q. i. I.

Under this head perhaps come:

"Niggard of question; but of our demands Most free in his reply."—Hamlet, iii. 1. 13.

"Of his own body he was ill, and gave

The clergy ill example."—Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 43.

"That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant And damnable ungrateful."—W. T. iii. 2. 187.

i.e. "as regards a fool," "in the matter of folly."

This may almost be called a locative case, and may illustrate the

Latin idiom "versus animi." It is common in E. E. We still say, in accordance with this idiom, "swift of foot," "ready of wit," &c.

174. Of passes easily from meaning "as regards" to "concerning," "about."

"Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope The like of him."—T. N. i. 2. 21.

"You make me study of that."-Temp. ii. 1. 81.

"'Tis pity of him."-M. for M. ii. 3. 42; A. and C. i. 4. 71.

"'Twere pity of my life."—M. N. D. iii. 1. 44.

"I wonder of there being together."—Ib. iv. 1. 128.

"Wise of (informed of) the payment day."—B. E. "He shall never more

Be fear'd of doing harm."—Lear, ii. 2. 113.

"The same will, I hope, happen to me, of death."

MONTAIGNE, 36.

i.e. "with respect to death."

"I humbly do desire your grace of pardon."

M. of V. iv. 1. 402.

"I shall desire you of more acquaintance."

M. N. D. iii. I. 183; A. Y. L. v. 4. 56.

For this use of "desire" compare A. V. St. Yohn xii. 21, "they desired him saying," where Wickliffe has "preieden," "prayed."

"I humbly do beseech you of your pardon,"—O. iii. 3. 212.

"The dauphin whom of succours we entreated."

Hen V iii. 3. 45.

"Yet of your royal presence I'll adventure The borrow of a week."—W. T. i. 2. 38.

"We'll mannerly demand thee of thy story."—Cymb. iii. 6.92.

"Enquire of him."-Rich. II. iii. 2. 186.

i.e. "about him."

"Discern of the coming on of years."-B. E. 105.

"Having determined of the Volsces and," &c .- Coriol. ii. 2.41.

"I'll venture so much of my hawk or hound."

T. of Sh. v. 2. 72.

"Since of your lives you set So slight a valuation."—Cymb. iv. 4. 48.

In "No more can you distinguish of a man Than of his outward show,"—Rich, III. iii, 1. 9, 10.

the meaning seems to be, "you can make no distinctions about men more than," i.e. "except, about their appearances." So

"Since my soul could of men distinguish."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 69 In the following passages we should now use "for:"—

"France whereof England hath been an overmatch."—B. E. 113.

"I have no mind of feasting."-M. of V. ii. 5. 37.

"In change of him."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 27.

"Of this my privacy I have strong reasons."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 190.

"In haste whereof, most heartily I pray
Your highness to assign our trial day."—Rich. II. i. 1. 150.

As we say "what will become of (about) me!" so

"What will betide of me."-Rich. III. i. 3. 6.

We say "power over us," not

"The sovereign power you have of us."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 27.

"I have an eye on him," not

"Nay, then, I have an eye of you."-Ib. 301.

175. Of signifying proximity of any kind is sometimes used *locally* in the sense of "on." The connection between of and on is illustrated by M. of V. ii. 2, where old Gobbo says: "Thou hast got more haire on thy chin than Dobbin my philhorse has on his taile;" and young Gobbo retorts, "I am sure he had more haire of his taile than I have of my face."

"Gra. My master riding behind my mistress— Cart. Both of one horse."—T. of Sh. iv. 1. 71.

Of is sometimes used metaphorically for "on."

Compare "A plague of all cowards!"—I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 127. with "A plague upon this howling."—Temp. i. 1. 39.

"Who but to-day hammer'd of this design."—W. T. ii. 2. 49.

"I go of message."—2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 113.

A message may be regarded as a motive from which, or as an object towards which, an action proceeds, and hence either of or "on" may be used.

Compare "He came of an errand."—M. W. of W. i. 4. 80.

with "I will go on the slightest errand."—M. Ado, ii. I. 272.

"Sweet mistress, what your name is else I know not, Nor by what wonder you do hit of mine."—C. of E. iii. 2. 30.

Add also— "And now again

Of him that did not ask, but mock, bestow Your sued-for tongues."—Coriol. ii. 3. 215.

"I will bestow some precepts of this virgin."

A. W. iii. 5. 103; T. N. iii. 4. 2

"Trustyng of (comp. "depending on") the continuance."

ASCH. Ded.

176. Of, signifying "coming from," "belonging to," when used with time, signifies "during."

"These fifteen years: by my fay a goodly nap!

But did I never speak of all that time?"-T. of Sh. Ind. 2. 84.

- "There sleeps Titania sometime of the night."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 253. i.e. "sometimes during the night."
 - "My custom always of the afternoon."—Hamlet, i. 5. 60.
 - "And not be seen to wink of all the day."-L. L. i. 1. 43.
 - "Of the present." Tempest, i. 1. 24.

So often "Of a sudden."

- 177. Of is sometimes used to separate an object from the direct action of a verb: (a) when the verb is used partitively, as "eat of," "taste of," &c.; (b) when the verb is of French origin, used with "de," as "doubt," "despair," "accuse," "repent," "arrest," "appeal," "accept," "allow;" (c) when the verb is not always or often used as a transitive verb, as "hope" or "like," especially in the case of verbs once used impersonally.
 - (a) "King. How fares our cousin Hamlet?

 Hamlet. Excellent, i' faith: of the chameleon's dish."

 Hamlet, iii, 2, 98,
 - (b) "To appeal each other of high treason,"—Rich. II. i. 1. 27. "Of capital treason we arrest you here,"—Ib, iv. 1. 151.

(c) "So then you hope of pardon from Lord Angelo?"

M. for M. iii. 1. 1.

"I will hope of better deeds to-morrow."—A. and C. i. 1. 62.

The of after "to like" is perhaps a result of the old impersonal use of the verb, "me liketh," "him liketh," which might seem to disqualify the verb from taking a direct object. Similarly "it repents me of" becomes "I repent of;" "I complain myself of becomes "I complain of." So in E. E. "it marvels me of" becomes "I marvel of," Hence—

"It was a lordling's daughter that liked of her master."

P. P. 212.

"Thou dislikest of virtue for the name."—A. W. ii. 3. 131.

"I am a husband if you like of me,"-M. Ado, v. 4, 59. So L. L. L. i. 1. 107; iv. 3. 158; Rich. III. iv. 4. 354.

"To like of nought that would be understood."

BEAUMONT on B. I.

178. Of naturally followed a verbal noun. In many cases we should call the verbal noun a participle, and the of has become unintelligible to us. Thus we cannot now easily see why Shakespeare should write-

"Dick the shepherd blows his nail."-L. L. V. 2. 923. and on the other hand-

"The shepherd blowing of his nails."-3 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 3. But in the latter sentence blowing was regarded as a noun, the prepositional "a," "in," or "on" being omitted.

"The shepherd was a-blowing of his nails."

In the following instances we should now be inclined to treat the verbal as a present participle because there is no preposition before it:

- "Here stood he (a-)mumbling of wicked charms."—Lear, ii. 1. 41.
- "We took him (a-)setting of boys' copies."—2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 96.
- "And then I swore thee, (a-)saving of thy life."—7. C. v. 3. 38.
- "Here was he merry (a-)hearing of a song."-A. Y. L. ii. 7. 4.

where "hear of" does not mean, as with us, "hear about." So Lear, v. 3. 204. In all the above cases the verbal means "in the act of."

In most cases, however, a preposition is inserted, and thus the substantival use of the verbal is made evident. Thus:

"So find we profit by losing of our prayers."—A, and C, ii. 1. 8.

"Your voice for crowning of the king."

Rich, III. iii, 4. 29; Hamlet, i. 5. 175; Lear, i. 3. 1. "With halloing and singing of anthems."-2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 213.

"What, threat you me with telling of the king?"

Rich. III. i. 3. 113.

" About relieving of the sentinels."-I Hen. VI. ii. 1. 70; iii. 4. 29.

If it be asked why "the" is not inserted before the verbal,e.g. "about the relieving of the sentinels,"—the answer is that relieving is already defined, and in such cases the article is generally omitted by Shakespeare. (See 89.)

When the object comes before the verbal, of must be omitted:

" Ophelia. Hamlet . . . shaking of mine arm And thrice his head thus waving."—Hamlet, ii. 1. 92.

The reason is obvious. We can say "in shaking of mine arm," but not "in his head thus waving."

Compare C. of E.v. 1. 153; A. Y. L. ii. 4. 44, iv. 3. 10; W. T. iii. 3. 69; 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 166; R. and F. v. 1. 40.

39; 1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 166; R. and J. v. 1. 40.
"Yet the mother, if the house hold of our lady."—ASCH. 40.

"Hold," by itself, would mean "actually hold" (capiat). "Hold of" means "be of such a nature as to hold" (capax sit), "holding of."

17.01 is sometimes redundant before relatives and relatival words in dependent sentences, mostly after verbs intransitive.

2. with with " "Make choice of which your highness will see first."

M. N. D. v. 1. 43.

"What it should be . . . I cannot dream of."

4. Humbling from of how unnatural and bemadding sorrow
5. In applicate + The king hath cause to plain."—Lear, iii. 2. 38.

The king nath cause to plain. — Lear, III. 2. 58.

adjusting soft He desires to know of you of whence you are,"

P. of T. ii. 3. 80.

where, however, "whence" is, perhaps, loosely used for "what where, and of strictly used for "from."

The redundant and appositional of, which we still use after "town," "city," "valley," &c., is used after "river" (as sometimes

8. Instablishment with The river of Cydnus."—A. and C. ii. 2. 192.

7.4 perfect of 180. On, upon (interchanged in E. E. with "an"), represents influencing juxtaposition of any kind, metaphorical or otherwise. It was in the preposition "an" which is used as an an analysis adverbial prefix (see 141); and as late as Ascham we find—

I fall on weeping."—Asch. iii. 4.

wild leta by, on Once set on ringing, with his own weight goes."—R. of L. 1494.

12 & Compare also our a-head with

"Hereupon the people ran on-head in tumult together."—N. P. 191
"Why runnest thou thus on head?"—Homily on Matrimony.

Head from the contact of work.

14. April werbar some.

The metaphorical uses of this preposition have now been mostly divided among of, in, and at, &c. We still, however, retain the phrase, "on this," "on hearing this," &c. where on is "at the time of," or "immediately after." But we could not say—

"Here comes (333) the townsmen on (in) procession."
2 Hen. VI. ii, 1. 68.

"Read on (in) this book."—Hamlet, iii. I. 44. So Mon-TAIGNE, 227: "To read on some book."

"Blushing on (at) her."-R. of L. st. 453.

"On (at) a moderate pace."—T. N. ii. 2. 3.

"The common people being set on a broile."—N. P. 190. (Comp. our "set on fire.")

"Horses on ('in' or 'of') a white foam."-N. P. 186.

"On (of) the sudden."-Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 96.

"And live to be revenged on ('for' or 'about') her death."

R. of L. 1778.

"Be not jealous on (of) me."—J. C. i. 2. 71.

"Fond on her."-M. N. D. ii. 1. 266.

"Nod on (at) him." - J. C. i. 2. 118.

"Command upon me."-Macbeth, iii. 1. 17.

On, like "upon," is used metaphorically for "in consequence of" in

"Lest more mischance

On plots and errors happen."—Hamlet, v. 2. 406;

for "in dependence on" in

"I stay here on my bond."—M. of V. iv. 1. 242.

In "She's wandering to the tower
On pure heart's love to greet the tender princes,"

Rich. III. iv. 1. 4.

there is a confusion between "on an errand of love" and "out of heart's love."

181. On is frequently used where we use "of" in the sense of "about," &c. Thus above, "jealous on," and in Sonn. 84, "Fond on praise." In Early English (Stratmann) we have "On witch-craft I know nothing." "What shall become on me?" "Denmark won nothing on him." Compare—

"Enamour'd on his follies."-I Hen. IV. v. 2. 71.

"His lands which he stood seized on." *- Hamlet, i. 1. 88.

^{*} Globe, "of."

- "Or have we eaten on the insane root?"—Macbeth, i. 3. 84.
- "He is so much made on here."-Coriol. iv. 5. 203.
- "What think you on't."-Hamlet, i. 1. 55.

Note the indifferent use of on and "of" in

"God have mercy on his soul And of all Christian souls."—Hamlet, iv. 5. 200.

The use of on in

"Intended or committed was this fault?
If on the first,—I pardon thee,"—Rich. II. v. 3. 84.
is illustrated by

"My gracious uncle, let me know my fault, On what condition stands it."—Ib. ii. 3. 107.

- 182. On, being thus closely connected with "of," was frequently used even for the possessive "of," particularly in rapid speech before a contracted pronoun.
 - "One on's ears."—Coriol. ii. 2. 85. So Coriol. i. 3. 72; il. 1. 202.
 - "The middle on's face."-Lear, iv. 5. 20.
 - "Two on's daughters."—Ib. i. 4. 114.
 - "Two on's."-Cymb. v. 5. 311.
 - "My profit on't."—Temp. i. 2. 365, 456.
 - "You lie out on't, sir."—Hamlet, v. 1. 132; Lear, iv. 1. 52.
 - "He shall hear on't."-B. J. E. in &c.
 - "I am glad on't."—J. C. i. 3. 137.

In the two last examples on may perhaps be explained as meaning "concerning," without reference to "of."

The explanation of this change of "of" to "on" appears to be as follows. "Of" when rapidly pronounced before a consonant became "o'."

"Body o' me."—Hen. VIII. v. 2. 22. "O' nights."—T. N. i. 3. 5.

Hence the o' became the habitual representative of "of" in colloquial language, just as "a-" became the representative of "on" or "an." But when o' came before a vowel, what was to be done? Just as the "a-" was obliged to recur to its old form "an" before a vowel or mute h (compare Hamlet, i. 4. 19, "to stand an-end," and see 24), so before a vowel o' was forced to assume a euphonic n. (Compare the Greek custom.)

PREPOSITIONS.

121 royla pross line. And even when the pronoun is not contracted, we find in Coriol, we find in Coriol about : iv. 5. 174, the modern vulgarism-M' [meanled

"Worth six on him."

"To break the pate on thee."-I Hen. IV. ii. I. 34.

183. Out (out from) is used as a preposition like forth.

"You have push'd out your gates the very defender of them" Coriol, v. 2, 41.

(Early Eng. "Come out Ireland," "Out this land.")

"Out three years old."—Temp. i. 2. 41, "beyond three years." Explained by Nares, "completely."

From out. See 157.

184. Till is used for to:

"From the first corse till he that died to-day," Hamlet, i. 2. 105.

where probably till is a preposition, and "he" for "him." See He.

"Lean'd her breast up till a thorn."-P. P. st. 21.

Early Eng. "He said thus til (to) him," and, on the other hand, "To (till) we be gone." So "unto" in Chaucer for "until."

"I need not sing this them until (for 'unto them')."

"We know whereuntil (whereto) it doth amount."

L. L. L. v. 2, 494.

wer of On 1 Un, To devote

"And hath shipped me intil (into) the land."—Hamlet, v. I. 81.

185. To* (see also Verbs, Infin.). Radical meaning motion towards. Hence addition. This meaning is now only retained with verbs implying motion, and only the strong form "too" (comp. of and off) retains independently the meaning of addition. But in Elizabethan authors too is written to, and the prepositional meaning "in addition to" is found, without a verb of motion, and sometimes without any verb.

> "But he could read and had your languages And to't as sound a noddle," &c. -B. I. Fox, ii. I.

> "If he . . . to his shape, were heir of all this land."

K. 7. i. 1. 144

^{*} Cump. *pos throughout.

"And to that dauntless temper of his mind He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour."

Macbeth, iii. 1. 52.

i.e. "in addition to that dauntless temper." To, in this sense, has been supplanted by "beside," Compare also

"Nineteen more, to myself."-B. J. E. in &c. iv. 5.

To is used still adverbially in "to and fro," and nautical expressions such as "heave to," "come to." This use explains "Go to," M. of V. ii. 2. 169. "Go" did not in Elizabethan or E. E. necessarily imply motion from, but motion generally. Hence "go to" meant little more than our stimulative "come, come."

186. To hence means motion, "with a view to," "for an end," &c. This is of course still common before verbs, but the Elizabethans used to in this sense before nouns

> "He which hath no stomach to this fight."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 35. "For to that (to that end)

The multiplying villanies of Nature

Do swarm upon him."-Macbeth, i. 2. 10.

"Prepare yourself to death."-W. T. iii. 1. 167.

"Arm you to the sudden time."-K. 7. v. 6. 26.

"The impression of keen whips I'ld wear as rubies And strip myself to (for) death as to a bed."

M. for M. ii. 4. 102.

"Giving to you no further personal power To (for the purpose of) business with the king." Hamlet, i. 2. 37.

"Pawn me to this your honour."—T. A. i. 1. 147.

"Few words, but, to effect, more than all yet."

"He is frank'd up to fatting for his pains." Lear, iii. 1. 52.

Rich. III. i. 3. 314.

Hence it seems used for for in

"Ere I had made a prologue to my brains They had begun the play."-Hamlet, v. 2. 30

And perhaps in

"This is a dear manakin to you, Sir Toby."—T. N. iii. 2. 57. But see 419a, for this last example.

187. To hence, even without a verb of motion, means "motion to the side of." Hence "motion to and consequent rest near," as in "Like yourself

Who ever yet have stood to charity."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 86.

"To this point I stand."-Hamlet, iv. 5. 187.

"I beseech you, stand to me."-2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 70.

i.e. "Come and stand by me, help me."

Motion against in:

"The lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you."—M. Ado, ii. 1. 243 So T. N. iii. 4. 248; Coriol. iv. 5. 133.

Motion to meet:

"To her doom she dares not stand."-B. and F. Fair Sh. v. I.

Motion toward:

"What wouldst thou have to Athens?"-T. of A. iv. 3. 287.

"To Milan let me hear from thee by letters."

T. G. of V. i. 1. 57.

Hence "by the side of," "in comparison with."

"Impostors to true fear."—Macb. iii. 4. 64.

i.e. "Impostors when brought to the side of, and compared with, true fear."

"There is no woe to his correction,
Nor to his service no such joy on earth."

T. G. of V. ii. 4. 138, 139.

"The harlot's cheek, beautied with plastering art, Is not more ugly *to* the thing that helps it Than is my deed *to* my most painted word."

Hamlet, iii. 1. 51-53.

In "Treason can but peep to what it would, Acts little of his will,"—Ib. iv. 5. 125.

either to means "towards," an unusual construction with "peep," or the meaning is "treason can do nothing more than peep in comparison with what it wishes to do."

"Undervalued to tried gold."-M. of V. ii. 7. 53.

Hence "up to," "in proportion to," "according to."

"The Greeks are strong and skilful to their strength."

Tr. and Cr. i. 1. 7.

"That which we have we prize not to the worth."

M. Ado, iv. 1. 220.

"To's power he would Have made them mules."—Coriol. ii. 1. 262.

"Perform'd to point the tempest that I bade thee."

Temp. i. 2. 194

"He needs not our mistrust, since he delivers Our offices and what we have to do To the direction just."—Macb. iii. 3. 4.

Hence "like."

"My lady, to the manner of the days, In courtesy gives undeserving praise."—L. L. L. v. 2. 365. "Looked it of the hue

To such as live in great men's bosoms?"-B. J. Sejan. v. I.

"This is right to (exactly like) that (saying) of Horace."
B. J. E. out &c. ii. 1.

To seems to mean "even up to" in

"And make my senses credit thy relation To points that seem unpossible."—P. of T. v. 2. 125.

188. To is sometimes used without any sense of motion for "near."

"It would unclog my heart Of what lies heavy to 't."—Coriol. iv. 2. 48.

"Sits smiling to my heart."—Hamlet, i. 2. 124.

for "by" in

"Where . . . the best of all her sex
Doth only to her worthy self abide."—B. and F. F. Sh. ii. 1.

In the difficult passage (W. T. iv. 4. 550):

"But, as the unthought on accident is guilty To what we wildly do."

"Guilty" seems used for "responsible," and chance is said to be "responsible to" rashness (personified). (Or is to "as to," i.e. as regards?)

egards ()
In N. P. 175 there is "to the contrary," (but this is a translation

of "au contraire,") for "on the contrary."

To is inserted after "trust" (whereas we have rejected it in parenthetical phrases, probably for euphony's sake).

"And, trust to me, Ulysses, Our imputation will be oddly poised."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 339.

To seems "up to," "as much as," in

"I'll part sooner with my soul of reason than yield to one foot of iand."—B, and F. Elder Brother, iii. 5.

188a. "To," with Adjectives signifying obedience, &c. To is still used in the sense of "towards" after some adjectives, such as (1) "gentle," (2) "disobedient," (3) "open." But we could not say

- (1) "If thou dost find him tractable to us."-Rich. III. iii. 1. 174.
- (2) "A will most incorrect (unsubmissive) to heaven."

Hamlet, i. 2. 95.

"The queen is stubborn to justice."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 122.

"Penetrable to your kind entreats."-Rich. III. iii. 7. 225. (3) "Vulgar to sense." *- Hamlet, i. 2. 99.

i.e. "open to ordinary observation."

Similarly to is used after nouns where we should use "against," "in the sight of :"

"Fie! 'tis a fault to heaven, A fault against the dead, a fault to nature, To reason most absurd."—Hamlet, i. 2. 103.

189. To, from meaning "like," came into the meaning of "representation," "equivalence," "apposition." (Comp. Latin "Habemus Deum amico.")

> "I have a king here to my flatterer."-Rich. II. iv. 1. 306. "To crave the French king's sister

To wife for Edward."-3 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 31.

"Now therefore would I have thee to my tutor."

T. G. of V. iii. 1. 84. "Destiny . . . that hath to instrument this lower world."

Temp. iii. 2. 54.

"And with her to dowry some petty dukedoms."

Hen. V. iii. Prol. 31.

"Lay their swords to pawn."-M. W. of W. iii. 1. 113. "Had I admittance and opportunity to friend."-Cymb. i. 4. 118. "Tunis was never graced before with

Such a paragon to their queen."-Temp. ii. 1. 75.

Compare also Mach. iv. 3. 10; 7. C. iii. 1. 143.

"The king had no port to friend."-CLARENDON, Hist. 7.

"A fond woman to my mother (i.e. who was my mother) taught me so."-WAGER.

Thus "to boot" means "by way of, or for, addition." So in E. E. "to sooth" is used for "forsooth."

^{*} So "retentive to," J. C. i. 3. 95.

wes of you wwards. without with 4 motion jos any ver 6. 3. million

5. Willi Adzi

190. To, in the phrase "I would to God," may mean "near," "in the sight of;" or there may be a meaning of motion: "I should desire (even carrying my desire) to God." In the phrase "He that is cruel to halves" (B. J. Disc. 759), to means, perhaps, "up to the limit of." Possibly, however, this phrase may be nothing but a corruption of the more correct idiom "Would God that," which is 2. M. Airon, more common in our version of the Bible than "I would." The to may be a remnant and corruption of the inflection of "would," with a view h, "wolde;" and the I may have been added for the supposed necessity of a nominative. Thus

toward & cornegerant "Now wolde God that I might sleepen ever." CHAUCER, Monke's Tale, 14746.

CHAUCER, Monke's Tale, 14, 14, 14, 15, with more probable because of Wishing Wishing. This theory is rendered the more probable because, as a rule, in Wickliffe's version of the Old Testament, "Wolde God" is found in the older MSS., and is altered into "we wolden" in the later. Thus Genesis xvi. 3; Numbers xx. 3; Joshua vii. 7; Judges ix. 29; 6. 70 = Apparatur 2 Kings v. 3 (Forshall and Madden, 1850). However, Chaucer has "I hoped to God" repeatedly.

To was used, however, without any notion of "motion toward the future" in to-night (last night).

"I did dream to-night." - M. of V. ii. 5. 18; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2.31. So in E. E. "to year" for "this year," "to summer," &c. Perhaps the provincial "I will come the night, the morn," &c. is a corruption of this "to." It is, indeed, suggested by Mr. Morris that to is a corruption of the demonstrative. On the other hand, to in E. E. was "often used with a noun to form adverbs."-LAYAMON (Glossary).

"He aras to ban mid-nihte,"-LAYAMON, i. 324. is used for "he arose in the midnight."

Unto, like To, 185, is used for "in addition to:"

"Unto my mother's prayers I bend my knee."

Rich. II. v. 3. 97

191. Upon ("for the purpose of") is still used in "upon an errand," but not, as in

[&]quot;Upon malicious bravery dost thou come?" - Othello, i. 1. 100,

We should use "over" in

"I have no power upon you,"—A. and C. i. 3. 23. and we should not use upon in

"And would usurp *upon* my watery eyes."—T. A. iii. 1. 269.
"Let your highness

Command upon me."-Macbeth, iii. 1. 17.

though after "claim" and "demand" upon is still used. So "an attack upon" is still English, but not

"I have o'erheard a plot of death upon him."—Lear, iii. 6. 96. nor "I am yours...upon your will to suffer."—A. W. iv. 4. 30. i.e. "in dependence on." It would seem that the metaphorical use of upon is now felt to be too bold unless suggested by some strong word implying an actual, and not a possible influence. Thus "claim" and "demand" are actual, while "power" may, perhaps, not be put in action. So "attack" and "assault" are the actual results of "plot." Yet the variable use of prepositions, and their close connection with particular words, is illustrated by the fact that we can say, "I will wait upon him," but not

"I thank you and will stay upon your leisure."—A. W. iii. 5. 48.

Even here, however, our "wait upon" means, like "call upon," an actual interview, and does not, like "stay upon," signify the "staying in hope of, or on the chance of, audience."

Upon also means "in consequence of."

"When he shall hear she died *upon* (i.e. not 'after,' but 'in consequence of") his words."—M. Ado, iv. I. 225.

"And fled is he upon this villany."—Ib. v. 1. 258.

"Break faith upon commodity."-K. J. ii. 1. 597.

"Thy son is banish'd upon good advice."—Rich. II. i. 3. 233.

In "You have too much respect upon the world,"

M. of V. i. 1. 74.

there is an allusion to the literal meaning of "respect." "You look too much upon the world." The upon is connected with "respect," and is not used like our "for" in "I have no respect for him."

The use of "upon" to denote "at" or "immediately after" is retained in "upon this;" but we could not say

"You come most carefully upon your hour."-Hamlet, i. 1. 8.

hiplumer.

1. Vaggering met adial, SHAKESPEARIAN GRAMMAR. for parties 192. Upon is often used like on adverbially after the verb "look."

"Nay, all of you that stand and look upon."-Rich. II. iv. 1. 237.

"Why stand we like soft-hearted women here And look upon, as if," &c .- 3 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 27.

"Strike all that look upon with marvel, come."-W. T. v. 3. 100.

Apun "orte = " Near upon" is adverbial in

"And very near upon The duke is entering."—M. for M. iv. 6. 14.

"Indeed, my lord, it followed hard uton."—Hamlet, i. 2. 179.

Upon, from meaning superposition, comes to mean "in accordance with " (like "after"):

" Upon my power I may dismiss this court."

M. of V. iv. 1. 104.

193. With (which, like "by," signifies juxtaposition) is often used to express the juxtaposition of cause and effect.

"I live with (on) bread like you."-Rich. II. iii. 2. 175.

We could say "he trembles with fear," "fear" being regarded as connected with the trembler, but not

"My inward soul With nothing trembles: at something it grieves More than with parting from my lord the king." Rich. II. ii. 2. 12, 13.

"As an unperfect actor on the stage Who with his fear is put besides his part."-Sonn. 23.

We should say "in his fear" (or "by his fear," personifying Fear); or append the clause to the verb, "put beside his part with fear."

"It were a better death than die with mocks,

Which is as bad as die with tickling."—M. Ado, iii. 1. 79, 80.

"Another choaked with the kernell of a grape, and an emperour die by the scratch of a combe, and Aufidius with stumbling against the doore, and Lepidus with hitting his foot."-MONTAIGNE, 32.

Here the use of "by" seems intended to distinguish an external from an internal cause.

We say "so far gone in fear," but not

"Thus both are gone with conscience and remorse."

Rich. III. iv. 3. 20.

"This comes with seeking you."-T. N. 111. 4. 366.

"I feel remorse in myself with his words,"—2 Hen. VI. iv. 7, 111. More rarely, with is used with an agent:

"Rounded in the ear

With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil."—K. J. ii. 1. 587.

"We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth."—M. Ado, v. 1. 116.

"Boarded with a pirate."-2 Hen. VI. iv. 9. 33.

"He was torn to pieces with a bear."-W. T. v. 2. 66.

"Assisted with your honoured friends."—Ib. v. 1. 13.

This explains

"Since I am crept in favour with myself

I will maintain it with some little cost."—Rich. III. i. 2. 260.

The obvious interpretation is, "since I have crept into the good graces of myself;" but the second line shows the "I" to be superior to "myself," which is to be maintained by the "I." The true explanation is, "since I have crept into (Lady Anne's) favour with the aid of my personal appearance, I will pay some attention to my person." Add, probably, Hamlet, iii. 2. 207.

This meaning is common in E. E.:

"He was slayn wyb (by) Ercules."

R. OF BRUNNE, Chron. i. 12. 340.

With = "by means of."

"He went about to make amends with committing a worse fault."
-N. P. 176, where the French is "par une autre." So N. P. 176.

With = "in addition to," even when there are not two nouns to be connected together:

"Very wise and with his wisdome very valiant."-N. P. 664.

With is, perhaps, used for "as regards," "in relation to," as in our modern "this has not much weight with me," in

"Is Cæsar with Antonius priz'd so slight?"—A. and C. i. 1. 56. though here, perhaps, as above, with may mean "by." At all events the passage illustrates the connection between "with" and "by." Compare

"His taints and honours Wag'd equal with (i.e. in) him."—A. and C. v. 1. 31.

"So fond with gain."-R. of L. 134.

194. With is hence loosely used to signify any connection with an action, as in "to change with" (MONTAIGNE, 233), where we should say "to exchange for." So, though we still say "I parted

with a house," or "with a servant (considered as a chattel)," we could not say

"When you parted with the king."-Rich. II. ii. 2. 2.

"As a long-parted mother with her child."

Ib. iii. 2. 8; Rich. III. i. 4. 251

where with is connected with parting. See 419a. So

"I rather will suspect the sun with cold

Than thee with wantonness."—M. W. of W. iv. 4. 5. is we say "I charge him with."

"Next them, with some small distance, follows a gentleman bearing the purpose."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4, stage direction.

"Equal with," 3 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 137, is like our "level with." In

"The violence of either grief or joy

Their own enactures with themselves destroy,"

Hamlet, iii. 2. 207.

"with themselves" seems to mean "by or of themselves."

Note "They have all persuaded with him."—M. of V. iii. 2. 283. i.e. "argued with." So "flatter" is used for "deal flatteringly" in T. N. i. 5. 322, and in the first of the following lines:

"K. Rich. Should dying men flatter with those that live?

Gaunt. No, no, men living flatter those that die."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 88, 89.

"(She) married with my uncle."—Hamlet, i. 2. 151.

"I will break with her."-M. Ado, i. I. 311.

i.e. "open the matter in conversation with."

Time of with

195. With is used by Ben Jonson for like.

"Not above a two shilling.

B. 'Tis somewhat with the least."—B. J. E. in &c. i. 4.

of cause of the B. Its somewhat with the least."

"He is not with himself."—T. A. i. 1. 368. i.e. "in his senses."

Ben Jonson also uses without in the sense of "unlike," "beyond."

Ben Jonson also uses without in the sense of willinke, beyond.

196. Withal, the emphatic form of "with" (see "all"), is used for with after the object at the end of a sentence. Mostly, the object is a relative.

"These banish'd men that I have kept withal."

T. G. of V. v. 4. 152.

i.e. "With whom I have lived."-K. J. iii. 1. 327.

"And this is false you burden me withal."—C. of E. v. 1. 288.

"Such a fellow is not to be talk'd withal."—M. for M. v. 1. 347

Sometimes "this" is understood after withal, so that it means "with all this," and is used adverbially:

"So glad of this as they I cannot be Who are surprised withal."—Temp. iv. 1. 217.

i.e. "surprised with, or at, this." Here however, perhaps, and elsewhere certainly, with means "in addition to," and "with-all (this)" means "besides."

- "I must have liberty withal."-A. Y. L. ii. 7. 48.
- "Adding withal."-Rich. II. iv. 1. 18, &c.

But in "I came hither to acquaint you withal,"—A. Y. L. i. I. 139. there is no meaning of "besides," and withal means "therewith," "with it."

Withal follows its object, but is (on account of the "all" at the end of the previous verse) not placed at the end of the sentence, in

"Even all I have, yea, and myself and all Will I withal endow a child of thine."—Rich. III. iv. 4.249.

197. Without (used locally for "outside").

"What seal is that that hangs without thy bosom?"

Rich. II. v. 1. 56.

"Without the peril of the Athenian law."—M. N. D. iv. 1. 150.

"A mile without the town."—Ib. i. 1. 104.

This explains the pun:

"Val. Are all these things perceived in me?

Speed. They are all perceived without ye."—T. G. of V. ii. 1. 35.

Reversely, "out of" is used metaphorically for "without."

"Neither can anything please God that we do if it be done out of charity."—HALLIWELL.

198. Prepositions are frequently omitted after verbs of motion. Motion in:

"To reel the streets at noon."*—A. and C. i. 4. 20.

"She wander'd many a wood."—SPENS. F. Q. i. 7. 28.

"To creep the ground." "Tower the sky."—MILTON, P. L. vii. 441

* "To see great Pompey pass the streets of Rome."-J. C. i. r. 47.

Motion to or from:

"That gallant spirit hath aspired the clouds."

R. and 7. iii. 1. 122

"Ere we could arrive the point proposed."—J. C. i. 2. 110.

"Arrived our coast."-3 Hen. VI. v. 3. 8.

"Some sailors that escaped the wreck."—M. of V. iii. 1. 110.

"When we with tears parted Pentapolis."—P. of T. v. 3. 38.

"Depart the chamber and leave us."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 5, 91.

"To depart the city."—N. P. 190.

"Since presently your souls must part your bodies."

Rich. II. iii. 1. 3.

We can still say "to descend the hill," but not "to descend the summit," nor

"Some (of her hair) descended her sheav'd hat."-L. C. 31.

These omissions may perhaps illustrate the idiom in Latin, and in Greek poetry.

Verbs of ablation, such as "bar," "banish," "forbid," often omit the preposition before the place or inanimate object. Thus

"We'll bar thee from succession."-W. T. iv. 4. 440.

Or "Of succession."—Cymb. iii. 3. 102.

becomes "Bars me the right."

M. of V. ii. 1. 16; Rich. III. iv. 4. 400; A. Y. L. i. 1. 20.

Where a verb can take either the person or thing as an object, it naturally takes an indirect object without a preposition. Compare "Therefore we banish you our territories."—Rich. II. i. 3. 139.

198 a. The preposition is omitted after some verbs and adjectives that imply "value," "worth," &c.

"The queen is valued thirty thousand strong."

3 Hen. VI. v. 3. 14.

"Some precepts worthy the note."—A. W. iii. 5. 104. An imitation of this construction is, perhaps, to be traced in

"Guilty so great a crime."—B. and F. F. Sh. iv. I.

The omission of a preposition before "good cheap" (A.-S. eeáp, "price," "bargain"), I Hen. IV. iii. 3. 50, may perhaps be thus explained without reference to the French "bon marché." And thus, without any verb or adjective of worth,

"He has disgraced me and hindered me half a million."

M. of V. iii. 1. 57

- "Semblative" (unless adverbial [1]) is used with the same construction as "like" in
 - "And all is semblative a woman's part."—T. N. i. 4. 34.
- 199. The preposition is also sometimes omitted before the thing heard after verbs of hearing:
 - "To listen our purpose."-M. Ado, iii. 1. 12.
 - "List a brief tale."-Lear, v. 3. 181.
- So J. C. v. 5. 15; Hamlet, i. 3. 30; J. C. iv. 1. 41.
 - "Listening their fear."-Macbeth, ii. 2. 28.

Hence in the passive,

"He that no more must say is listen'd more."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 9.

- "Hearken* the end."-2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 305; Temp. i. 2. 122.
- 200. The preposition is omitted after some verbs which can easily be regarded as transitive. Thus if we can say "plot my death," there is little difficulty in the licence.
 - "That do conspire (for) my death."-Rich. III. iii. 4. 62.
 - "(In) Which from the womb I did participate." T.N. v. 1.245.
 - "She complain'd (about) her wrongs."-R. of L. 1839.

"And his physicians fear (for) him mightily."

Rich. III. i. 1. 137.

So 1 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 24; T. of A. ii. 2. 12; T. A. ii. 3. 305; M. of V. iii. 2. 29.

This explains

- "O, fear me not."-Hamlet, i. 3. 52; iii. 4. 7.
- "That he would labour (for) my delivery."—Rich. III. i. 1. 253.
- "To look (for) our dead."-Hen. V. iv. 7. 76.
- "I must go look (for) my twigs."—A. W. iii. 6. 115.
- "He hath been all this day to look (for) you."—A. Y. L. ii. 5. 34.

And in the difficult passage-

"O, whither hast thou led me, Egypt? See How I convey my shame out of thine eyes By looking back what I have left behind 'Stroy'd in dishonour."—A. and C. iii, II, 53,

While turning away from Cleopatra, Antony appears to say, that he is *looking back* (for) the fleet that he has left dishonoured and destroyed.

* The Globe inserts "at."

So "Scoffing (at) his state."-Rich. II. iii. 2. 163.

"Smile you (at) my speeches as I were a fool!"-Lear,

"Thou swear'st (by) thy gods in vain."—Ib. i. 1. 163.

"Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak (of) him."

Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 32.

Both here and in L. L. L. v. 2. 349; Macbeth, iv. 3. 159; T. N. i. 4. 20, "speak" is used for describe. In Macbeth, iv. 3. 154, "'tis spoken" is used for "tis said." Again, "said" is used for "called" in

"To be said an honest man and a good housekeeper."

T. N. iv. 2. 10; so Macbeth, iv. 3. 210.

"Talking that" is used like "saying that" in Tempest, ii. 1. 96. "Speak," however, in R. and F. iii. 1. 158, "Spake him fair" means "speak to:" but in the same expression M. of V. iv. 1. 271 it means "speak of." Similarly, "whisper" is often used without a preposition before a personal object.

"He came to whisper Wolsey."—Hen. VIII. i. 1. 179.

"They whisper one another in the ear."—K. J. iv. 2. 189.

"Your followers I will whisper to the business."

W. T. i. 2. 437.

Rarely, "whisper her ear."—M. Ado, iii. 1. 4.

In some cases, as in

"She will attend it better,"

T. N. i. 3. 27, 2. 453; M. of V. v. 4. 103

the derivation may explain the transitive use.

"Despair thy charm,"-Macbeth, v. 8. 13.

is, perhaps, a Latinism. So "sympathise," meaning "suffer with," is used thus:

"The senseless brands will sympathise The heavy accent of thy moving tongue."

Rich. II. v. 1. 47.

"Deprive," meaning "take away a thing from a person," like "rid," can dispense with "of" before the impersonal object.

"'Tis honour to deprive dishonour'd life."-R. of L. 1186.

This explains how we should understand-

"Which might deprive your sovereignty of reason."

Hamlet, i. 4. 73.

i.e. "which might take away your controlling principle of reason.' So, perhaps, "Frees all faults."— Tempest, Epilogue, 18.

This seems to nave arisen from the desire of brevity. Compare the tendency to convert nouns, adjectives, and neuter verbs into active verbs (290).

- 201. The preposition was also omitted before the indirect object of some verbs, such as "say," "question," just as we still omit it after the corresponding verbs, "tell" and "ask."
 - " Sayest (to) me so, friend?"—T. of Sh. i. 2. 190.
 - "You will say (to) a beggar, nay."-Rich. III. iii. I. 119.
 - "Still question'd (of) me the story of my life."—Othello, i. 3. 129.

In "Hear me a word,"—Rich. III. iv. 4. 180.

it must be a question whether me or word is the direct object. In

"I cry thee mercy,"-Rich. III. iv. 4. 515.

"mercy" is the direct object. This is evident from the shorter form

"(I) Cry mercy."—Rich. III. v. 3. 224.

After "give," we generally omit "to," when the object of "to" is a personal noun or pronoun. But we could not write—

"A bed-swerver, even as bad as these

That (to whom) vulgars (the vulgar) give bold'st titles."

W. T. ii. 1. 94,

"Unto his lordship, (to) whose unwished yoke My soul consents not to give sovereignty."—M. N. D. i. 1. 81. Somewhat similar is

"This 'longs the text."—P. of T. ii. Gower, 40. for "belongs (to) the text."

- 202. Preposition omitted in adverbial expressions of time, manner, &c.
 - "Forbear to sleep the nights, and fast the days."

 Rich. III. iv. 4. 118.

This is illustrated by our modern

"(Of) What kind of man is he?"—T. N. i. 5. 159.

"But wherefore do not you a mightier way
Make war upon this bloody tyrant, time?"—Sonn. 16.

"My poor country (Shall) More suffer, and *more sundry ways*, than ever."

Macbeth, iv. 3, 48; so Ib. i. 3, 154

"Revel the night, rob, murder, and commit
The newest sins the newest kind of ways."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 126.

"And ye sad hours that move a sullen pace."

B. and F. F. Sh. iv. I.

"I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver

Of my whole course of life; what drugs, what charms, What conjuration, and what mighty magic (For such proceeding I am charg'd withal) I won his daughter."—Othello, i. 3. 91.

"How many would the peaceful city quit

To welcome him! Much more, and much more cause,* Did they this Harry."—Hen. V. v. Prol. 34.

"To keep Prince Harry in continual laughter the wearing out of six fashions, which is four terms."—2 Hen. IV. v. 1. 84.

"Why hast thou not served thyself into my table so many meals?"

-Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 45: i.e. "during so many meals."

"To meet his grace just distance 'tween our armies."

2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 225.

- "That I did suit me all points like a man."-A. Y. L. i. 3. 118.
- "But were I not the better part made mercy."—Ib. iii. 1. 2.
- "And when such time they have begun to cry."—Coriol. iii. 3. 19. "Where and what time your majesty shall please."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 450.

"What time we will our celebration keep."—T. N. iv. 3. 30.
"Awhile they bore her up,

Which time she chanted snatches of old tunes."—Ham. iv. 7. 178.

In the following cases it would seem that a prepositional phrase is condensed into a preposition, just as "by the side of" (Chaucer, "byside Bathe") becomes "be-side," and governs an object.

"On this side Tiber."—7. C. iii. 2. 254.

"Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast."—C. of E. i. 1. 86.

"A sheet of paper writ o' both sides the leaf."—L. L. L. v. 2. 8.

'On each side her the Bishops of London and Winchester."

Hen. VIII. iv. 1 (order of coronation).

"She is as forward of our breeding as She is in the rear our birth."—W. T. iv. 4. 522.

"Our purpose" seems to mean "for our purpose," in

"Not to know what we speak to one another, so we seem to know, is to know straight, our purpose: chough's language, gabble enough and good enough."—A. W. iv. I. 21.

This seems the best punctuation. "Provided we seem to know what we say to one another, ignorance is exactly as good as knowledge, for our purpose."

* But "and (there was) much more cause" may be a parenthesis.

137 2. Hu males + 2 15

which many be

Apen verbs of

Hence the use of this for "in this way" or "thus" is not so bold appropriately as it seems:

"What am I that thou shouldst contemn me this?
What were thy lips the worse for one poor kiss?"

V. and A. 203. By you williams

Perhaps, however, "contemn" is confused with "refuse." But this is used for "thus" in E. E.

All constantly repeated adverbial expressions have a tendency to abbreviate or lose their prepositions. Compare "alive" for "on live," "around" for "in round," "chance" for "perchance," "like" for "belike," &c. In some adverbial expressions the preposition can be omitted when the noun is qualified by an adjective, but not otherwise. Thus we can use "yester-day," "last night," "this week," adverbially, but not "day," "night," "week," because in the latter words there is nothing to indicate how time is regarded. In O. E. the inflections were sufficient to justify an adverbial use, "dayes," "nightes." (Compare purtos.) But the inflections being lost, the adverbial use was lost with them.

203. Prepositions: transposed. (See also Upon.) In A.-S. and E. E. prepositions are often placed after their objects. In some cases the preposition may be considered as a separable part of a compound transitive verb. Thus in

" Ne how the Grekes with a huge route

Three times riden all the fire aboute,"—CHAUC. C. T. 2954.

"ride about" may be considered a transitive verb, having as its object "fire." Naturally, emphatic forms of prepositions were best suited for this emphatic place at the end of the sentence; and therefore, though "to," "tyll," "fro," "with," "by," "fore," were thus transposed, yet the longer forms, "untylle," "before," "behind," "upon," "again," were preferred. Hence in the Elizabethan period, when the transposition of the weaker prepositions was not allowed, except in the compound words "whereto," "herewith," &c. (compare "se-cum, quo-cum") the longer forms are still, though rarely, transposed.

For this reason, "with," when transposed, is emphasized into "withal." The prepositions "after," "before," and "upon," are thus transposed by Shakespeare:

[&]quot;God before."—Hen. V. i. 2. 307; iii. 6. 165, for "'fore God."

[&]quot; Hasten your generals after."-A. and C. ii. 4. 2.

So "I need not sing this them until (unto)."—HEYWOOD.

" For fear lest day should look their shames upon."

M. N. D. iii. 2. 385

"That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon."—A. W. iii. 4. 6.
"For my good will is to't,

And yours it is against."-Tempest, iii. 1. 31.

The use of prepositions after the relative, which is now somewhat avoided, but is very common in E. E., is also common in Shake-speare, and is evidently better adapted to the metre than the modern idiom, as far as regards the longer forms. "Upon which" is not so easily metricized as

"Ten thousand men that fishes gnawed upon."—Rich. III. i. 4. 25. "The pleasure that some fathers feed upon."—Rich. II. ii. 1. 79.

204. Prepositions transposed. "It stands me upon." This phrase cannot be explained, though it is influenced, by the custom of transposition. Almost inextricable confusion seems to have been made by the Elizabethan authors between two distinct idioms: (1) "it stands on" (adv.), or "at hand," or "upon" (comp. "instat," $\pi \rho o \sigma \eta \kappa \epsilon_i$), i.e. "it is of importance," "it concerns," "it is a matter of duty;" and (2) "I stand upon" (adj.), i.e. "I in-sist upon."

In (1) the full phrase would be, "it stands on, upon, to me," but, owing to the fact that "to me" or "me" (the dative inflection) is unemphatic, and "upon" is emphatic and often used at the end of the sentence, the words were transposed into "it stands me upon." "Me" was thus naturally mistaken for the object of upon.

Hence we have not only the correct form-

"It stands me (dative) much upon (adverb)
To stop all hopes."—Rich. III. iv. 2. 59.

(Sc Hamlet, v. 2. 63, where it means "it is imperative on me.") But also the incorrect—

"It stands your grace upon to do him right."

Rich. II. ii. 3. 138.

** It only stands

Our lives *upon* to use our strongest hands."—A. and C. ii. 1. 51. where "grace" and "lives" are evidently intended to be the objects

of "upon," whereas the Shakespearian use of "me" (220) renders it possible, though by no means probable, that "me," in the first of the above examples, was used as a kind of dative.

1. The time of

endy sime.

2200001/213/10

Hence by analogy-

"It lies you on to speak." - Coriol. iii. 2. 52.

The fact that this use of *upon* in "stand *upon*" is not a mere poetical transposition, but a remnant of an old idiom imperfectly understood, may be inferred from the transposition occurring in Elizabethan prose:

"Sigismund sought now by all means (as it stood him upon) to make himself as strong as he could."—NARES.

Perhaps this confusion has somewhat confused the meaning of the personal verb "I stand on." It means "I trust in" (M. W. of W. ii. I. 242), "insist on" (Hen. V. v. 2. 93), and "I depend on" (R. and J. ii. 2. 93), and in

"The moist star

Upon whose influence Neptune's empire stands."

Hamlet, i. 1. 119.

PRONOUNS.

205. Personal, Irregularities of (omission of, insertion of, see Relative and Ellipses). The inflections of Personal Pronouns are frequently neglected or misused. It is perhaps impossible to trace a law in these irregularities. Sometimes, however, euphony and emphasis may have successfully contended against grammar. This may explain I in "and I," "but I," frequently used for me. "'Tween you and I" seems to have been a regular Elizabethan idiom. The sound of d and t before me was avoided. For reasons of euphony also the ponderous thou is often ungrammatically replaced by thee, or inconsistently by you. This is particularly the case in questions and requests, where, the pronoun being especially unemphatic, thou is especially objectionable. To this day many of the Friends use thee invariably for thou, and in the Midland and North of England we have "wilta?" for "wilt thou?" Compare E. E. "wiltow?" for "wilt thou?" "binkestow?" for "thinkest thou?" and similarly, in Shakespeare, thou is often omitted after a questioning verb. Again, since he and she could be used (see below) for "man" and "woman," there was the less harshness in using he for him and she for her. Where an objective pronoun is immediately followed by a finite verb, it is sometimes treated as the subject, as below, "no man like he doth grieve."

206. He for him:

"Which of he or Adrian, for a good wager, begins to crow?"

Tempest, ii. 1. 28.

Some commentators insert "them" after "which of." (See 408.)

"I would wish me only he."-Coriol. i. 1. 236.

"And yet no man like he doth grieve my heart."

R. and F. iii. 5. 84.

"From the first corse till he that died to-day."—Ham. i. 2. 104. where "till" is a preposition. See Prepositions, Till, 184.

207. He for him *precedes* its governing verb in the following examples:

"Thus he that over-ruled I over-sway'd."-V. and A. 109.

"And he my husband best of all affects."—M. W. of W. iv. 4. 87.

So probably he depends upon "within" in

"'Tis better thee without than he within."—Macbeth, iii. 3. 14.

208. Him for he.

Him is often put for "he," by attraction to "whom" understood, for "he whom."

"Him (he whom) I accuse

By this the city ports hath enter'd."—Coriol. v. 6. 5. "Ay, better than him (he whom) I am before knows me."

A. Y. L. i. 1. 46.

"When him (whom) we serve's away."—A. and C. iii. I. 15.

"Your party in converse, him (whom) you would sound, He closes with you," &c.—Hamlet, ii. 1. 42.

Sometimes the relative is expressed:

"His brother and yours abide distracted—but chiefly him that you term'd Gonzalo"—Temp. v. i. 14.

Sometimes he is omitted:

"Whom I serve above is my master."—A. W. ii. 3. 261.

"To (him to) whom it must be done."-7. C. ii. 1. 331.

In "Damn'd be him,"—Macbeth, v. 8. 34. perhaps let, or some such word, was implied.

209. I for me (for euphony: see 205):

"Here's none but thee and I."-2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 69

"All debts are cleared between you and I."-M. of V. iii. 2. 321

"You know my father hath no child but I." -- A. Y. L. i. 2. 18.

" Unless you would devise some virtuous lie

And hang some praise upon deceased I."-Sonn. 72.

The rhyme is an obvious explanation of the last example. But, in all four, I is preceded by a dental.

So "Which may make this island Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban, For aye thy foot-licker."—Temp. iv. 1. 217.

210. Me for I:

"No mightier than thyself or me."-7. C. i. 3. 76.

"Is she as tall as me?"—A. and C. iii. 3. 14.

Probably than and as were used with a quasi-prepositional force.

211. She for her:

"Yes, you have seen Cassio and she together."-O. iv. 2. 3.

"So saucy with the hand of *she* here—what's her name?"

A. and C. iii. 13, 98.

She was more often used for "woman" than "he" for "man." Hence, perhaps, she seemed more like an uninflected noun than "he" and we may thus extenuate the remarkable anomaly

"Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee suck."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 252.

212. Thee for thou. Verbs followed by thee instead of thou have been called reflexive. But though "haste thee," and some other phrases with verbs of motion, may be thus explained, and verbs were often thus used in E. E., it is probable that "look thee," "hark thee," are to be explained by euphonic reasons. Thee, thus used, follows imperatives which, being themselves emphatic, require an unemphatic pronoun. The Elizabethans reduced thou to thee. We have gone further, and rejected it altogether. (See 205.)

- "Blossom, speed thee well."-W. T. iii. 3. 46.
- "Look thee here, boy."-Ib. 116.
- "Run thee to the parlour."-M. Ado, iii. I. 1.
- "Haste thee."-Lear, v. 3. 251.
- "Stand thee by, friar."-M. Ado, iv. 1. 24.
- "Hark thee a word."-Cymb. i. 5. 32.
- "Look thee, 'tis so."-T. of A. iv. 3. 530.
- "Come thee on."-A. and C. iv. 7. 16.

"Now, fellow, fare thee well."-Lear, iv. 6. 41.

"Hold thee, there's my purse."-A. W. iv. 5. 46; 7. C. v. 3. 85.

" Take thee that too."-Macbeth, ii. 1. 5.

In the two latter instances thee is the dative.

Thee is probably the dative in

"Thinkst thee?"-Hamlet, v. 2. 63.

or, at all events, there is, perhaps, confusion between "Thinks it thee?" i.e. "does it (E.E.) seem to thee?" and "thinkst thou?" Very likely "thinkst" is an abbreviation of "thinks it." (See 297.) Compare the confusion in

"Where it thinkst best unto your royal selfe."

Rich. III. iii, 1. 63 (Folio).

213. Thee for thou is also found after the verb to be, not merely in the Fool's mouth:

"I would not be thee, nuncle."—Lear, i. 4. 204.

but also Timon:

"I am not thee."—T. of A. iv. 3. 277. and Suffolk:

"It is thee I fear."-2 Hen. VI, iv. I. 117.

where thee is, perhaps, influenced by the verb, "I fear," so that there is a confusion between "It is thou whom I fear" and "Thee I fear." In these cases thee represents a person not regarded as acting, but about whom something is predicated. Hence thou was, perhaps, changed to thee according to the analogy of the sound of he and she, which are used for "man" and "woman."

214. Them for they:

"Your safety, for the which myself and them Bend their best studies."—K. J. iv. 2. 50.

Perhaps them is attracted by "myself"; but more probably it is a kind of quotation of "myself and them" from the previous line.

215. Us for We in "shall's." "Shall" (315), originally meaning necessity or obligation, and therefore not denoting an action on the part of the subject, was used in the South of England as an impersonal verb. (Compare Latin and Greek.) So Chaucer, "us oughte," and we also find "as us wol," i.e. "as it is pleasing to us." Hence in Shakespeare

- "Say, where shall's lay him?"-Cymb. iv. 2. 233.
- "Shall's have a play of this?"—Ib. v. 5. 228.
- "Shall's attend you there?"-W. T. i. 2. 178.
- "Shall's to the Capitol?"-Coriol. iv. 6. 148.
- 216. After a conjunction and before an infinitive we often find *I*, thou, &c., where in Latin we should have "me," "te," &c. The conjunction seems to be regarded as introducing a new sentence, instead of connecting one clause with another. Hence the pronoun is put in the nominative, and a verb is, perhaps, to be supplied from the context.

"What he is indeed

More suits you to conceive than I (find it suitable) to speak of."

A. Y. L. i. 2. 279.

- i.e. "than that I should speak of it."
 - "A heavier grief could not have been imposed *Than I* to speak my griefs unspeakable."—*C. of E.* i. 1. 33.

"The soft way which thou dost confess Were fit for thee to use as they to claim,"—Coriol, iii, 2, 83,

- "Making night hideous, and we fools of nature So horridly to shake our disposition."—Hamlet, i. 4. 54.
- "Heaven would that she these gifts should have, And I to live and die her slave."—A. Y. L. iii. 2. 162.

Sometimes the infinitive is implied, but not expressed:

- "To beg of thee it is my more dishonour Than thou of them."—Coriol. iii. 2. 125.
- I, thou, and he, are also used for me, thee, and him, when they stand quasi-independently at some distance from the governing verb or preposition.
- "But what o' that? Your majesty and we that have free souls, it touches us not."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 252.
- "I shall think the better of myself and thee during my life; I for a valiant champion, and thou for a true prince."—I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 300.
 - "(God) make me that nothing have with nothing griev'd, And thou with all pleas'd that hast all achieved."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 217

"With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil,
That daily break-vow, he that wins of all."—K. 7. ii. 1. 568

"Now let me see the proudest, He that dares most, but wag his finger at thee."

Hen. VIII. v. 3. 131.

(To punctuate, as in the Globe, "the proudest he," is intolerably harsh.)

"Justice, sweet prince, against that woman there, She whom thou gavest to me to be my wife,
That hath abused and dishonour'd me."—C. of E. v. I. 198.

"Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes Which art my near'st and dearest enemy,

Thou that art like enough," &c.?—I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 123

217. His was sometimes used, by mistake, for 's, the sign of the possessive case, particularly after a proper name, and with especial frequency when the name ends in s. This mistake arose in very early times. The possessive inflection 's (like the dative plural inflection um) was separated by scribes from its noun. Hence after the feminine name "Guinivere," we have in the later text of Layamon, ii. 511, "for Gwenayfer his love." The h is no more a necessary part of this separate inflection than it is of "his," the third pers. sing. indic. pres. of "beon" ("be"). "His" is constantly found for "is" in Layamon. No doubt the coincidence in sound between the inflection 's and the possessive "his" made the separation seem more natural, and eventually confused 's with his.

"Mars his sword . . . nor Neptune's trident nor Apollo's bow."

B. J. Cy.'s Rev. i. 1.

Also, by analogy,

"Pallas her glass."—BACON, Adv. of L. 278.

This is more common with monosyllables than with dissyllables, as the 's in a dissyllable is necessarily almost mute. Thus

"The count his gallies."-T. N. iii. 3. 26.

"Mars his true moving."-I Hen. VI. i. 2. 1.

So Tr. and Cr. iv. 5. 176, 255, &c.

"Charles his gleeks."-I Hen. VI. iii. 2. 123.

but never, or very rarely, "Phœbus his."

The possessive inflection in dissyllables ending in a sibilant sound is often expressed neither in writing nor in pronunciation.

"Marry, my uncle Clarence (Folio) angry ghost."

Rich. III. iii, 1. 144; ii. 1. 137.

"For justice sake."-J. C. iv. 3. 19.

"At every sentence end."-A. Y. L. iii. 2. 144.

"Lewis" is a monosyllable in

"King Lewis his satisfaction all appear."—Hen. V. .. 2. 88.

His is used like "hic" (in the antithesis between "hic . . . ille").

"Desire his (this one's) jewels and this other's house."*

Mach. iv. 3. 80; M. of V. iii. 2. 54-5; Sonn. xxix. 5, 6.

This explains

"And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls:

He murder cries, and help from Athens calls."

M. N. D. iii. 1. 25

His, being the old genitive of it, is almost always used for its.

218. His, her, &c. being the genitives of he, she (she in E. E. had, as one form of the nom., "heo," gen. "hire"), &c. may stand as the antecedent of a relative. Thus:

"In his way that comes in triumph over Pompey's blood."

7. C. i. 1. 55.

i.e. "in the way of him that comes."

"Love make his heart of flint that you shall love."—T. N. i. 5. 305. "Unless her prayers whom heaven delights to hear."—A. W.iii.4.27.

"If you had known . . . her worthiness that gave the ring."

M. of V. v. 1. 200.

"Armies of pestilence, and they shall strike Your children yet unborn and unbegot That lift your vassal hands against my head."

Rich. II. iii. 2. 89.

i.e. "the children of you who lift your hands."

"Upon their woes whom fortune captivates."
3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 115. So Lear, v. 3. 2.

"And turn our impress'd lances in our eyes Which do command them."—Lear, v. 3. 50.

In "Alas, their love may be call'd appetite,
No motion of the liver, but the palate,
That suffer surfeit, cloyment and revolt,"—T. N. ii. 4. 100-2.

it seems better to take that as the relative to "them," implied in "their (of them)," rather than to suppose "suffer" to be the subjunctive singular (367), or that to be the relative to "liver" and "palate" by confusion. It is true that is not often so far from its antecedent, but the second line may be treated as parenthetical.

^{* &}quot;Condemning some to death, and some to exile; Ransoming him or pitying, threatening the other."—Coriol 1. 6. 36

This is perhaps not common in modern poetry, but it sometimes

"Poor is our sacrifice whose eyes
Are lighted from above."—NEWMAN.

219. Your, our, their, &c., are often used in their old signification, as genitives, where we should use "of you," &c.

"We render you (Coriolanus) the tenth to be ta'en forth

At . . . your only choice."—Coriol. i. 9. 36.

i.e. "at the choice of you alone."

"To all our lamentation."-Coriol. iv. 6. 34.

i.e. "to the lamentation of us all."

"Have I not all their letters to meet me in arms?"

I Hen. IV. ii. 3. 28.

i.e. "letters from them all."

220. Me, thee, him, &c. are often used, in virtue of their representing the old dative, where we should use for me, by me, &c. Thus (but? does "him to" mean "the man to"?):

"I am appointed (by) him to murder you."—W. T. i. 2. 412.

"John lays you plots."-K. 7. iii. 4. 145.

This is especially common with me.

Me is indirect object in

"But hear me this."—T. N. v. 1. 123.

"What thou hast promis'd—which is not yet perform'd me."

Tempest, i. 2. 244.

We say "do me a favour," but not "to do me business."— Tempest, i. 2. 255.

"Give me your present to one Master Bassanio."

M. of V. ii. 2. 115.

"Who does me this?"—Hamlet, ii. 2. 601.

"Sayest thou me so?"—2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 109.

Me seems to mean "from me" in

"You'll bear me a bang for that."— J. C. iii. 2. 20.

"with me" in

"And hold me pace in deep experiment."—I Hen. IV. iii. i 48 Me means "to my injury" in

"See how this river comes me cranking in, And cuts me, from the best of all my land, A huge half-moon."—I Hen. IV. iii. I. 100.

"at my cost" and "for my benefit" in

"The sack that thou hast drunk me could have bought me lights

as good cheap at the dearest chandler's in Europe."-1 Hen, IV. iii. 3. 50.

Me in narrative stands on a somewhat different footing:

"He pluck'd me ope his doublet."-J. C. i. 2. 270.

"He steps me to her trencher."—T. G. of V. iv. 4. 9.

"The skilful shepherd peel'd me certain wands."

M. of V. i. 3. 85.

"He presently, as greatness knows itself, Steps me a little higher than his vow."—I Hen. IV. 1v. 3. 75

Falstaff, when particularly desirous of securing the attention of the Prince ("Dost thou hear me, Hal?"), indulges twice in this use of me.

> "I made me no more ado, . . . I followed me close." I Hen, IV, ii. 4, 233, 241.

Here, however, the verbs are perhaps used reflexively, though this would seem to be caused by the speaker's intense desire to call attention to himself. So in

"Observe me judicially, sweet sir; they had planted me three demi-culverins,"-B. J. E. in &c. iii. 2.

the me seems to appropriate the narrative of the action to the speaker, and to be equivalent to "mark me," "I tell you." Is such phrases as

"Knock me here,"-T. of Sh. i. 2. 8.

the action, and not merely the narrative of the action, is appropriated.

You is similarly used for "look you:"

"And 'a would manage you his piece thus, and come you in and come you out."-2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 304.

In "Study me how to please the eye indeed

By fixing it upon a fairer eye,"-L. L. L. i. 1. 80.

me probably means "for me," "by my advice," i.e. "I would have you study thus." Less probably, "study" may be an active vert. of which the passive is found in Macb. i. 4. 9.

There is a redundant him in

"The king, by this, is set him down to sleep."-3 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 2. where there is, perhaps, a confusion between "has set him(self) down" and "is set down."

Her seems used for "of her," "at her hands," in

"I took her leave at court,"-A. W v 3 79.

a.e. "I bade her farewell."

Us probably is used for "to us" in

"She looks us like

A thing made more of malice than of duty."—Cymb. iii. 5. 32. But possibly as "look" in Hen. V. iv. 7. 76, A. and C. iii. 10. 53, is used for "look for," so it may mean "look at," So

"Twa brooks in which I look myself."—B. J. Sad Sh. ii. 1. i.e. "I view myself."

Us seems equivalent to "for us" in

"We have not spoke us yet of torch-bearers."

M. of V. ii. 4. 5.

221. Your, like "me" above (Latin, iste), is used to appropriate an object to a person addressed. Lepidus says to Antony:

"Your serpent of Egypt is lord now of your mud by the operation of your sun: so is your crocodile."—A. and C. ii. 7, 29.

Though in this instance the *your* may seem literally justified, the repetition of it indicates a colloquial vulgarity which suits the character of Lepidus. So Hamlet, affecting madness:

"Your worm is your only emperor for diet; your fat king and your lean beggar is but variable service."—Hamlet, iv. 3. 24.

Compare

"But he could read and had your languages."—B. J. Fox, ii. L. i.e. "the languages which you know are considered important."

So: "I would teach these nineteen the special rules, as your punto, your reverso, your stoccata, your imbroccato, your passada, your montanto."—Bobadil, in B. J. E. in &c. iv. 5.

Hence the apparent rudeness of Hamlet is explained when he says to the player:

"But if you mouth it as many of *your* players do."—*Ham.* iii. 2. 3. i.e. "the players whom you and everybody know."

222. Our is used, like "my," vocatively:

- "Our very loving sister, well be-met."-Lear, v. 1. 20.
- "Tongue-tied our queen, speak thou."- W. T. i. 2. 27.
- "Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see you."

 M. for M. v. 1. 2.

In all these cases our is used in the royal style, for "my," by a single speaker referring merely to himself.

223. Him, her, me, them, &c. are often used in Elizabethan, and still more often in Early English, for himself, herself, &c.

> "How she opposes her (sets herself) against my will." T. G. of V. iii. 2. 26.

> "My heart hath one poor string to stay it by."-K. J. v. 7. 55.

"And so I say I'll cut the causes off

Flattering me with impossibilities."—3 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 143.

224. He and she are used for "man" and "woman."

"And that he

Who casts to write a living line must sweat."

B. I. on Shakespeare.

"I'll bring mine action on the proudest he

That stops my way in Padua."—T. of Sh. iii. 2. 236.

"Lady, you are the cruellest she alive."-T. N. i. 5. 259.

"I think my love as rare

As any she belied with false compare."-Sonn. 130.

"That she belov'd knows nought that knows not this." Tr. and Cr. i. 2. 314.

"With his princess, she The fairest I have yet beheld."—W. T. v. 1. 86.

"Betwixt two such shes."-Cymb. i. 6. 40; ib. i. 3. 29. *

This makes more natural the use of "he that," with the third person of the verb, in

"Are not you he

That frights the maidens?"—M. N. D. ii. 1. 34.

So A. V. L. iii. 2, 411.

225. Pronoun for pronominal adjective. The pronominal adjectives his, their, being originally possessive inflections of he, they, &c., were generally used in E. E. possessively or subjectively, i.e. "his wrongs" would naturally mean then "the wrongs done by him," not "to him." Hence, for objective genitives, "of" was frequently introduced, a usage which sometimes extended to subiective genitives. Hence

"The kindred of him hath been flesh'd upon us,"—Hen, V, ii, 4, 50, "Tell thou the lamentable tale of me."-Rich, II. v. 1. 44.

"The native mightiness and fate of him."-Hen. V. ii. 4. 64

"Against the face of them."-Psalm xxi. 12.

* Hence a "lady-she," W. T, i. 2. 44, means" a well-born woman."

It is used, perhaps, for antithesis in

"Let her be made

As miserable by the death of him

As I am made by my poor lord and thee."

Rich, III, i 2, 21

"O world, thou wast the forest to this heart, And this indeed, O world, the heart of thee."

7. C. iii. 1. 208.

226. It is sometimes used indefinitely, as the object of a verb, without referring to anything previously mentioned, and seems to indicate a pre-existing object in the mind of the person spoken of.

"Courage, father, fight it out."-3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 10.

i.e. "the battle."

"Ber. She never saw it.

King. Thou speak'st it falsely."—A. W. v. 3. 113.

i.e. " what thou sayest."

"Dangerous peer,

That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal."

2 Hen, VI. ii. 1. 22.

where it = "matters."

"To revel it with him and his new bride." (So C. of E. iv. 4. 66.)

—3 Hen. VI. iii. 3. 225.

i.e. "to take part in the intended bridal revels."

"I cannot daub it further."-Lear, iv. 1. 54.

i.e. "continue my former dissembling."

But it is often added to nouns or words that are not generally used as verbs, in order to give them the force of verbs.

"Foot it."-Tempest, i. 2. 380.

"To queen it."—Hen. VIII. ii. 3. 37.

"To prince it."—Cymb. iii. 3. 85.

"Lord Angelo dukes it well."-M. for M. iii. 2. 100.

And, later,

"Whether the charmer sinner it or saint it, If folly grow romantic, I must paint it."

POPE, Moral Essays, ii. 15.

The use of it with verbs is now only found in slang phrases.

227. It is sometimes more emphatically used than with us. We have come to use it so often superfluously before verbs that the emphatic use of it for "that" before "which" is lost.

"There was it

For which my sinews shall be stretched upon him."

Coriol. v. 6. 41

"That's it that always makes a good voyage of nothing."

T. N. ii. 4. 80.

"An if it please me which thou speak'st."—T. A. v. I. 59.

"It holds current that I told you of."—I Hen. IV. ii. I. 59.

So Isaiah (A. V.) li, 9: "Art thou not it that hath cut Rahab?"

Perhaps we must explain it as the antecedent of " what" (and not as in 226) in

"Deign it, Goddess, from my hand
To receive whate'er this land
From her fertile womb doth send."—B. and F. Fair Sh. i. I.

228. Its was not used originally in the Authorized Version of the Bible, and is said to have been rarely used in Shakespeare's time. It is, however, very common in Florio's Montaigne. His still represented the genitive of It as well as of He. Its is found, however, in M. for M. i. 2. 4, where it is emphatic; in W. T. i. 2 (three times, 151, 152, 266); Hen. VIII. i. I. 18; Lear, iv. 2. 32, and elsewhere. Occasionally it, an early provincial form of the old genitive, is found for its, especially when a child is mentioned, or when any one is contemptuously spoken of as a child. Ben Jonson (Sil. Wem. ii. 3) uses both forms—

"Your knighthood shall come on its knees."

And then, a few lines lower down-

"It knighthood shall fight all it friends."

Comp. W. T. iii. 2. 109:

"The innocent milk in it most innocent mouth."

"The hedge-sparrow fed the cuckoo so long,

That it's had it head bit off by it young."—Lear, i. 4 235.

But also of an unknown person:

"The corse they follow did with desperate hand Fordo it own life."—(Folio.) Hamlet, v. 1. 245.

"Woman it pretty self." -(Folio.) Cymb. iii. 4. 160

his: the

And of the ghost:

"It lifted up it head."-(Folio.) Hamlet, i. 2. 216.

Perhaps the dislike of its, even in the eighteenth century, aided the adoption of the French idiom "lever la tête."

"Where London's column, pointing at the skies, Like a tall bully lifts the head and lies."

POPE, Moral Essays, iii. 340.

"It-selfe" is found referring to "who." (See 264.)

"The world who of it-selfe is peised well."—K. J. ii. 1. 575.

229. Her is very often applied by Shakespeare to the mind and soul.

"Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?"

3 Hen. VI. ii. 6. 42.

Hamlet, iii. 2. 68.

"Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice."

So Rich. III. iii. 5. 28; Hamlet, ii. 2. 580.

"Our mind partakes

Her private actions to your secrecy."—P. of T. i. 1. 153. So Montaigne, 117.

The former passage from Hamlet shows the reason of this. The soul, when personified, is regarded as feminine, like Psyche. The body of a woman is also thus personified in

"And made thy body bare

Of her two branches, those sweet ornaments."—T. A. ii. 4. 18.

Milton occasionally uses its; often her for its; seldom, if ever, his for its.

"His form had not yet lost
All her original brightness."—MILTON, P. L. i. 592.

In this, and some other passages, but not in all, Milton may have been influenced by the Latin use of the feminine gender. "Form" represents "forma," a feminine Latin noun.

Personification will explain

"That Tiber trembled underneath her banks."

7. C. i. 1. 50.

230. Ungrammatical remnants of ancient usage. In Chaucer and earlier writers, preference is expressed, not by our modern "I had, or would, rather (i.e. sooner)," but by "(To) me

(it) were lever (German lieber)," i.e. "more pleasant." These two idoms are confused in the following example:

"Me rather had my heart might feel your love."

Rich. II. iii. 3. 192.

In the earliest writers "woe!" is found joined with the dative inflection of the pronoun, "woe is (to) us," "woe is (to) me."

"Wa worthe (betide) than monne (the man, dat.)."

LAYAMON, i. 142.

As early as Chaucer, and probably earlier, the sense of the inflection was weakened, and "woe" was used as a predicate: "I am woe," "we are woe," &c. Hence Shakespeare uses "sorrow" thus. Similarly our "I am well" is, perhaps, an ungrammatical modification of "well is me," Ps. cxxviii. 2 (Prayer-book). In Early English both constructions are found. In Anglo-Saxon, Mätzner "has only met with the dative construction."

- "I am sorrow for thee." Cymb. v. 5. 297.
- "I am woe for't, sir."—Timp. v. 1. 139.
- " Woe is my heart." Cymb. v. 5. 2.
- " Woe, woe are we, sir." A. and C. iv. 14. 133.

On the other hand,

- "Woe is me."-Hamlet, iii. 1. 168.
- " Woe me."—M. for M. 1.4.26.

Similarly, the old "(to) me (it) were better," being misunderstood, was sometimes replaced by "I were better."

- "I were better to be eaten to death,"-2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 245.
- "I were best to leave him."-I Hen. VI. v. 3. 82.
- "Poor lady, she were better love a dream."-T. N. i. 2. 27.
- "Thou'rt best." Tempest, i. 2. 366.

And when the old idiom is retained, it is generally in instances like the following:

- "Answer truly, you were best."-7. C. iii. 3. 15.
- "Madam, you're best consider."-Cymb. iii. 2. 79.

where you may represent either nominative or dative, but was almost certainly used by Shakespeare as nominative.

- 231. Thou and You.* Thou in Shakespeare's time was, very much like "du" now among the Germans, the pronoun of (1)
- * The Elizabethan distinction between thou and you is remarkably illustrated by the usage in E. E., as detailed by Mr. Skeat in William of Palerne. Preface, p. xli.

affection towards friends (2) good-humoured superiority to servants, and (3) contempt or anger to strangers. It had, however, already fallen somewhat into disuse, and, being regarded as archaic, was naturally adopted (4) in the higher poetic style and in the language of solemn prayer.

(1) This is so common as to need no examples. It should be remarked, however, that this use is modified sometimes by euphony (the ponderous thou, art, and terminations in est being avoided) and sometimes by fluctuations of feeling. Thus in the T. G. of V. Valentine and Proteus in the first twenty lines of earnest dialogue use nothing but thou. But as soon as they begin to jest, "thou art" is found too seriously ponderous, and we have (i. 1. 25) "you are over boots in love," while the lighter thee is not discarded in (i. 1. 28) "it boots thee not." So in the word-fencing of lines 36-40, you and your are preferred, but an affectionate farewell brings them back again to thou. The last line presents an apparent difficulty:

"Proteus. All happiness bechance to thee in Milan!

Valentine. As much to you at home, and so farewell."

T. G. of V. i. 1, 61-2.

But while thee applies to the single traveller, you is better suited to Proteus and his friends at home. It may be added, that when the friends meet after their long parting, there is a certain coldness in

the frequent you. (T. G. of V. ii. 5. 120.)

Fathers almost always address their sons with thou; sons their fathers with you. Thus in the dialogue between Henry IV. and the Prince (I Hen. IV. iii. 2), line II8, "What say you?" is perhaps the only exception to the rule. So in the dialogue between Talbot and his son (I Hen. VI. iv. 5) before the battle. In the excitement of the battle (I Hen. VI. iv. 6. 6-9) the son addresses his father as thou: but such instances are very rare. (A. Y. L. ii. 3. 69 is a rhyming passage, and impassioned also.) A wife may vary between thou and you when addressing her husband. Lady Percy addresses Hotspur almost always in dialogue with you: but in the higher style of earnest appeal in I Hen. IV. ii. 3. 43-67, and in the familiar "I'll break thy little finger, Harry," ib. 90, she uses thou throughout.

In the high Roman style, Brutus and Portia use you.

Hotspur generally uses thou to his wife, but, when he becomes serious, rises to you, dropping again to thou.

"Hotspur. Come, wilt thou see me ride? And when I am o' horse-back, I will swear I love thee infinitely—But hark you, Kate; I must not have you henceforth question me: This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate. I know you wise; but yet no further wise Than Harry Percy's wife: constant you are, But yet a woman: and for secrecy No lady closer—For I well believe Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know, And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate."

I Hen. IV. ii. 3. 103-115.

Mark the change of pronoun as Bassanio assumes the part of a friendly lecturer:

"Gra. I have a suit to you.

Bass. You have obtain'd it.

Gra. You must not deny me; I must go with you to Belmont.

Bass. Why, then you must.—But hear thee, Gratiano; Thou art too wild, too rude and bold of voice," &c.

M. of V. ii. 2. 187-90.

232. Thou is generally used by a master to a servant, but not always. Being the appropriate address to a servant, it is used in confidential and good-humoured utterances, but a master finding fault often resorts to the unfamiliar you (much as Cæsar cut his soldiers to the heart by giving them the respectful title of Quirites). Thus Valentine uses you to Speed in T. G. of V. ii. 1. 1-17, and thou, Ib. 47-69. Compare

" Val. Go to, sir: tell me, do you know madam Silvia?"—Ib. 14. with

" Val. But tell me: dost thou know my lady Silvia?"-Ib. 44.

Similarly to the newly-engaged servant Julia, who says "I'll do what I can," Proteus blandly replies:

"I hope thou wilt. [To Launce.] How now, you whoreson peasant,

Where have you been these two days loitering?"

T. G. of V. iv. 4. 48.

When the appellative "sir" is used, even in anger, thou generally gives place to you.

"And what wilt thou do? Beg, when that is spent? Well, sir. get you in."—A. Y. L. i. 1. 79, 80.

"Ay, ay, thou wouldst begone to join with Richmond: I will not trust you, sir."—Rich. III. iv. 4. 492.

Compare "Speak, what trade art thou?"—J. C. i. 1. 5. with "You, sir, what trade are you?"—Ib. 9.

This explains the change from thou to you in Tempest, i. 2. 443. Throughout the scene Prospero, addressing Ferdinand as an impostor, "speaks ungently" with thou. In Tempest, v. 1. 75-79, Prospero, who has addressed the worthy Gonzalo in the friendly thou, and the repentant Alonso in the impassioned thou, turning to his unnatural brother says,

"Flesh and blood

You brother mine,"

but, on pronouncing his forgiveness immediately afterwards, he says,

"I do forgive thee,

Unnatural though thou art."

So "For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive Thy rankest fault."—Tempest, v. 1. 230–2.

"Worthy sir, thou bleed'st."—Coriol. i. 5. 15.

is easily explained by the admiring epithet "worthy." Compare Ib. 24: "Bold gentleman, prosperity be thy page."

The difference between thou and you is well illustrated by the farewell addressed by Brutus to his schoolfellow Volumnius, and his servant Strato:

"Farewell to you; and you; and you, Volumnius; Farewell to thee, too, Strato."—J. C. v. 5. 33.

Compare also the farewell between the noble Gloucester and Edgar "dressed like a peasant:"

"Edg. Now fare you well, good sir."--Lear, iv. 6. 32.

"Glouc. Now, fellow, fare thee well."-Ib. 41.

It may seem an exception that in sc. iv. 1, Edgar uses thou to Gloucester, but this is only because he is in the height of his assumed madness, and cannot be supposed to distinguish persons. Afterwards, in sc. vi., he invariably uses you—a change which, together with other changes in his language, makes Gloucester say:

"Thou speak'st

In better phrase and manner than thou didst."—Lear, iv. 6. 8.

It may be partly this increased respect for Edgar, and partly euphony, which makes Gloucester use you in II. 10 and 24.

Thus Clarence to the Second Murderer:

"Clar. Where art thou, keeper? Give me a cup of wine, Sec. Murd. You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon. Clar. In God's name, what art thou?

Sec. Murd. A man, as you are. Clar. How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale? Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?"

Rich. III. i. 4. 167-176.

The last two lines seem discrepant: but they are not. Clarence is addressing both murderers, and both reply:

"Both. To, to, to-

Clar. To murder me?

Ay, ay."

Afterwards, when the murderers reproach Clarence with his faults, they address him as thou.

233. Thou towards strangers who were not inferiors was an insult. "If thou thouest him some thrice, it shall not be amiss," (T. N. iii. 2. 48,) is the advice given to Sir Andrew Aguecheek when on the point of writing a challenge.

In addressing Angelo, whose seat he occupies, the Duke in the following passage begins with ironical politeness, but passes into open contempt:

" Duke (to Escalus). What you have spoke I pardon; sit you down; We'll borrow place of him. (To Angelo.) Sir, by your leave,

Hast thou or word or wit or impudence,

That now can do thee office?"—M. for M. v. I. 368.

Thou is also used in a contemptuous "aside."

" Hastings. 'Tis like enough for I stay dinner there. Buckingham (aside). And supper too, although thou know'st it not.

Come, will you go?"-Rich. III. iii. 2. 122.

And, where there is no contempt, Cassius passes into thou when he addresses Brutus absent, whereas in his presence he restricts himself to you (J. C. i. 2. 312). The former is the rhetorical, the latter the conversational pronoun. So

"Be thou my witness,

You know that I held Epicurus strong."-J. C. v. 1. 74-7.

This explains the apparent liberty in

"O wise young judge, how I do honour thee!"

M. of V. iv. 1. 224.

234. Thou is often used in statements and requests, while you is used in conditional and other sentences where there is no direct appeal to the person addressed. Similarly the somewhat archaic ye is distinguished by Shakespeare from you by being used in rhetorical appeals. (See Ye, 236.)

Come thou on my side, and entreat for me As you would beg, were you in my distress."

Rich. III. i. 4. 273.

Rich.

My drown'd queen's name, as in the rest you said Thou hast been god-like perfect."—P. of T. v. 1. 208.

"I go, and if you plead as well to them

As I can say nay to thee for myself."—Rich. III. iii. 7. 52. "Give me thy hand, Messala;

Be thou my witness that against my will, &c. You know that I held Epicurus strong."—7. C. v. 1. 74-7.

235. Thou. Apparent exceptions.

"If he be leaden, icy-cold, unwilling,

Be thou so too, and so break off your talk,"

Rich, III. iii, 1, 177.

Here "your talk" means the talk between "thee and him."

In Hamlet, i. 2. 41-49, the King, as he rises in his profession of affection to Laertes, passes from you to thou, subsequently returning to you.

In the following instance a kiss induces the speaker to pass from your to thou:

"Goneril. Decline your head. (Kisses Edmund.) This kiss, if it durst speak,
Would raise thy spirits up into the air."—Lear, iv. 2. 23.

The most difficult passage is:

"If thou beest not immortal, look about you."-J. C. ii. 3. 8, 9.

In this short scene Cæsar is six times addressed by the soothsayer in the solemn and prophetic thou and thee, but once, as above, you. I can only suggest that "look about you" may mean "look about you and your friends."

In almost all cases where thou and you appear at first sight indiscriminately used, further considerations show some change of thought, or some influence of euphony sufficient to account for the change of pronoun.

The French Herald addresses Henry V. as thou, not for discourtesy (Hen. V. iv. 7. 74), but in the "high style" appropriate between heralds and monarchs. Few subjects would address their lords as thou. Only a Caliban addressing his Stephano would in the ordinary language say:

"Good my lord, give me thy favour still," - Temp. iv. 1. 204. Caliban almost always thou's unless he is cursing (Temp. i. 2. 363), or when he is addressing more than one person.

- 236. Ye. In the original form of the language ve is nominative, you accusative. This distinction, however, though observed in our version of the Bible, was disregarded by Elizabethan authors, and ye seems to be generally used in questions, entreaties, and rhetorical appeals. Ben Jonson says: "The second person plural is for reverence sake to some singular thing." He quotes-
 - "O good father dear, Why make ve this heavy cheer?"—GOWER.

Compare:

"I do beseech ye, if you bear me hard."-7. C. iii. 1. 157.

"You taught me how to know the face of right, And come ye now to tell me John hath made His peace with Rome?"—K. J. v. 2. 91.

"The more shame for ye; holy men I thought ye." Hen. VIII. iii. 1. 102.

"Therein, ye gods, you make the weak most strong."

"I' the name of truth,

Are ye fantastical?... My noble partner You greet with present grace."—Macbeth, i. 3. 53-55.

Ye and your seem used indiscriminately in Temp. v. 1. 33-8, "Ye elves . . . and ye that . . . you demi-puppets . . . and you whose pastime is, &c."

The confusion between you and ye is illustrated by the irregularity of the following:

"What mean you... do ye not know?... If, therefore, at the first sight ye doe give them to understand that you are come hither ... do you not think? Therefore, if you looke ..."—N. P. 170.

Sometimes ye seems put for you when an unaccented syllable is wanted:

"I never loved you much; but I ha' prais'd ye."

A. and C. ii. 6 78.

and perhaps in

"Ye shall, my lord,"-Rich. III. iv. 2. 86.

the "shall" being emphatic, and ye unemphatic, but the Folio varies here, as frequently in this play.

237. Mine, my. Thine, thy. The two forms, which are interchangeable in E. E. both before vowels and consonants, are both used by Shakespeare with little distinction before vowels.

Though there are probably many exceptions, yet the rule appears to be that *mine* and *thine* are used where the possessive adjective is to be unemphatic, my and thy in other cases.

Mine is thus used before words to which it is so frequently prefixed as to become almost a part of them, as "mine host" (M. W. of IV. i. 3. 1), but my in the less common

"Unto my hostess of the tavern."—I Hen. IV. i. 2. 53.

So we have almost always "mine honour," the emphatic

"By my honour He shall depart untouched,"—7. C. iii. 1. 141.

being an exception. *Mine* is almost always found before "eye," "ear," &c. where no emphasis is intended. But where there is antithesis we have *my*, thy:

"My ear should catch your voice, my eye your eye."
M. N. D. i. 1. 188.
and also in the emphatic

"To follow *me* and praise *my* eyes and face."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 223. Euphony would dictate this distinction. The pause which we are obliged to make between *my*, thy, and a following vowel, serves for a kind of emphasis. On the other hand, mine, pronounced "min," glides easily and unemphatically on to the following vowel.

238. Mine, hers, theirs, are used as pronominal adjectives before their nouns. That *mine* should be thus used is not remarkable, as in E. E. it was interchangeable with *my*, and is often used by Shakespeare where we should use *my*.

"Mine and my father's death come not upon thee."

Hamlet, v. 2. 341.

"The body is dead upon *mine* and my master's false accusation."

—M. Ado, v. 1. 249. So P. of T. i. 2. 92; Cymb. v. 5. 236.

In the following, *mine* is only separated by an adjective from its noun: "And his and *mine* lov'd darling."—*Tempest*, iii. 3. 93.

More remarkable are

- "What to come is yours and my discharge."—Temp. ii. 1. 253.
- "By hers and mine adultery." Cymb. v. 5. 186.
- 'Even in theirs and in the commons' ears."-Coriol. v. 6. 4.

It is felt that the ear cannot wait till the end of the sentence while so slight a word as her or their remains with nothing to depend on. The same explanation applies to mine, which, though unemphatic immediately before its noun, is emphatic when separated from its noun.

- 239. This of yours is now, as in E. E., generally applied to one out of a class, whether the class exist or be imaginary. We could say "this coat of yours," but not (except colloquially) "this head of yours." It is, however, commonly used by Shakespeare where even the conception of a class is impossible.
 - "Nor scar that whiter skin of hers than snow."—Othello, v. 2. 4. "Will not a calf-skin stop that mouth of thine?"—K. 7. iii. 1. 299.
- "This of hers, thine," &c. seem used as an adjective, like the Latin "iste." "This mouth of you" was felt to be harsh, the "you" being too weak to stand in such a position. "This your mouth" requiring a forced and unnatural pause after "this," was somewhat more objectionable to Shakespeare,* than to the Latin style of Milton and Addison. Hence "this of you" was used but modified. It is rare that we find such a transposition as
 - O then advance of yours that phraseless hand."—L. C. 225.
- **240.** Pronouns transposed. A feeling of the unemphatic nature of the nominatives we and they prevents us from saying "all we."
 - "Into the madness wherein now he raves
 And all we mourn for."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 151.
- So "all we" in the A. V. of the Bible, and "all they," Mark xii. 44. "Find out" is treated as a single word in
 - "Cass. Cinna, where haste you so?
 Cinna. To find-out you."—J. C. i. 3. 184.
 - * See, however— "How many ages hence Shall this our lofty scene be acted over!"—J. C. ii. r. 112.

So "To belch-up you."—Tempest, iii. 3. 56.

"And leave-out thee."-Rich. III. i. 3. 216.

"Both they (i.e. both of them)

Match not the high perfection of my loss."—Ib. iv. 4. 65.

No modern poet would be allowed to write, for the sake of rhyme,

"All days are nights to see till I see thee,
And nights bright days when dreams do show thee me."

Sonn. 43.

We could only say "give him me," when we meant "give him, not to so-and-so, but to me," emphatically, which is not the meaning here.

- 241. Omission of Thou. (See also 399, 402.) After a verb ending with the second person singular inflection, the *thou* is sometimes omitted in questions, as:
 - "Didst not mark that?"-Othello, ii. 1. 260.
 - "How dost that pleasant plague infest?"—DANIEL.
 - "Wilt dine with me, Apemantus?"-T. of A. i. 1. 206.

Thou is often omitted after "wouldst," or perhaps merged, in the form "woo't," as "wilt thou" becomes "wilta."

- "Noblest of men, woo't die?"—A. and C. iv. 15. 59.
- "Woo't weep? Woo't fight?... I'll do it."—Hamlet, v. I. 299.

Sometimes thou is inserted:

- " Woo't thou fight well?"—A. and C. iv. 2. 7.
- 242. Insertion of Pronoun. When a proper name is separated by an intervening clause from its verb, then for clearness (see 248) the redundant pronoun is often inserted.
 - "Sueno, albeit he was of nature verie cruell, yet qualified he his displeasure."—HOLINSHED, Duncane.
 - "Demeratus—when on the bench he was long silent . . . one asking him . . . he answered."—B. J. Disc. 744.
 - "For the nobility, though they continued loyal unto him, yet did they not co-operate with him."—B. E.
- 243. Insertion of Pronoun. Even where there is no intervening conjunctional clause, the pronoun is frequently inserted after a proper name as the subject. More rarely, the subject is a common noun. Still more rarely, the pronoun is inserted after the object,

The subject or object stands first, like the title of a book, to call the attention of the reader to what may be said about it. In some passages the transition may be perceived from the exclamatory use

"O thy vile lady!

She has robbed me of my sword,"—A. and C. iv. 14. 22. to the semi-exclamation:

"For God he knows."—Rich. III. iii. 7. 236; 1. 10; 1. 26.

"Where Heaven he knows how we shall answer him."

K. J. v. 7. 59.

(So T. G. of V. iv. 4. 112, and

"God, I pray him."-Rich. III. i. 3. 212.

The object (as in the last example) precedes in

"My sons, God knows what has bechanced them."

3 Hen. VI. i. 4. €

"Senseless trees they cannot hear thee,
Ruthless beasts they will not cheer thee."—P. P. 393.)

and hence to passages of simple statement :

"The skipping king he ambled up and down."

1 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 60

"Of six preceding ancestors that gem Conferr'd by testament to the sequent issue Hath it been owed and worn."—A. W. v. 3. 198.

"But this same Cassio, though he speak of comfort Touching the Turkish loss, yet he looks sadly."

Othello, ii. 1. 31.

But many such passages of simple statement may be regarded as abridgments of the construction with "for," "of," or some other preposition:

"For your intent . . . it is most retrograde to our desires."

Hamlet, i. 2. 112.

"For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems."—2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 213.

So "For (as regards) your brother, he shall go with me," might become

"Your brother he shall go along with me."

A. W. iii. 6. 117; Rich. II. ii. 2. 80; I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 442.

So "Of Salisbury, who can report of him?"—2 Hen. VI. v. 3. 1.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

- 244. Omission of the Relative. The relative is frequently omitted, especially where the antecedent clause is emphatic and evidently incomplete. This omission of the relative may in part have been suggested by the identity of the demonstrative that and the relative that:—
- "We speak that (dem.) that (rel.) we do know,"
 may naturally be contracted into—
 - "We speak that we do know."

Thus-

- "And that (that) most deeply to consider is
 The beauty of his daughter."—Temp. iii. 2. 106.
 "Thy honourable metal may be wrought
- From that (to which) it is disposed."—J. C. i. 2. 314.
 "Now follows that (that) you know, young Fortinbras," &c.

 Hamlet, i. 2. 17.
- "And that (that) is worse—the Lords of Ross are fled."

 Rich, II. ii. 2. 52.

i.e. "which is worse." So often in the A. V. of the Bible, "that is, being interpreted," means "which is" (as the Greek shows), though a modern reader would suppose that to be the demonstrative.

In many cases the antecedent immediately precedes the verb to which the relative would be the subject.

"I have a brother (who) is condemned to die."

M. for M. ii. 2. 33; C. of E. v. I. 283.

"I have a mind (which) presages."—M. of V. i. 1. 175. "The hate of those (who) love not the king."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 128.

"In war was never lion (that) raged more fierce."

16. ii. 1. 173.

"And sue a friend (who) 'came debtor for my sake."

"What wreck discern you in me (that)

Deserves your pity?"—Cymb. i. 6. 84; W. T. iv. 4. 378, 512

"You are one of those (who)

Would have him wed again."—W. T. v. 1. 23.

"i'll show you those (who) in troubles reign, Losing a mite, a mountain gain."—P. of T. ii. Gower, 8.

"Of all (who have) 'say'd (tried) yet, may'st thou prove prosperous."—P. of T. i. 1. 59.

"And they are envious (that) term thee parasite."—B. J. Fox, i. 1.
"For once (when) we stood up about the corn, he himself stuck not to call us the many-headed multitude."

Coriol. ii. 3. 16.

e. "On one occasion (on which) we stood up," &c. Compare-

"Was it not yesterday (on which) we spoke together?"

Macbeth, iii. 1. 74

"Off with his head.

And rear it in the place (in which) your father's stands," 3 Hen. VI. ii. 6. 86.

"Declare the cause

(for which) My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head."

1 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 55.

"O that forc'd thunder (that) from his breath did fly!—
O that sad breath (that) his spongy lungs bestow'd!"

"And being frank she lends to these (who) are free."

Sonn. 4.

So explain:

"To me (whom) you cannot reach you play the spaniel."

Hen. VIII. v. 2. 126.

"That's to you sworn (that) to none was ever said."

L. C. 25. So M. for M. iii. 2. 165.

Most of these examples (except those in which when and why are omitted) omit the nominative. Modern usage confines the omission mostly to the objective. "A man (whom) I saw yesterday told me," &c. We must either explain thus:

"Myself and Toby

Set this device against Malvolio here (which device), Upon some stubborn and discourteous parts,

We had conceiv'd against him,"—T. N. v. 1. 370.

or suppose (more probably), that there is some confusion between conceiving enmity" and "disliking parts."

In "To her own worth

She shall be prized: but that you say 'Be't so,' I'll speak it in my spirit and honour 'No.'"

Tr. and Cr. iv. 4. 136.

that probably means "as to that which."

Other instances are:

"My sister... a lady, sir (who), though it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful."—T. N. ii. 1. 27.

"What should I do (that) I do not?"-A. and C. i. 3. 8.

"Of every virtue (that) gives renown to men."—P. of T. i. 1. 13

Either a relative or a nominative (see 399) is omitted in

"These are my mates that make their wills their law (Who) have some unhappy passenger in chace."

T. G. of V. v. 4. 15.

In "And curse that justice did it,"—Coriol. i. 1. 179. either the relative is omitted after "justice," or "that" is used for "because" (284).

So, after disobeying King Cymbeline by allowing Posthumus to speak to the King's daughter, the Queen, while purposing to betray Posthumus, says aside:

"Yet I'll move him (the king)

To walk this way: I never do him (the king) wrong But he (who, like Posthumus) does buy my injuries to be friends, Pays dear for my offences."—Cymb. i. 1. 105.

The relative adverb where is omitted in

"From that place (where) the morn is broke

To that place (where) day doth unyoke."—B. and F. F. Sh. i. 1.
That, meaning "when," is omitted after "now." (See 284.)

245. The Relative is omitted (as well as the verb "is," "are," &c.) between a pronominal antecedent and a prepositional phrase,

&c.) between a pronominal antecedent and a prepositional phrase, especially when *locality is predicated*.

"And they in France of the best rank and station."

Hamlet, i. 3. 73. "He made them of Greece (i.e. the Grecians) to begin warre."

"He made them of Greece (i.e. the Grecians) to begin warre."

N. P. 175.

So "What is he at the gate?"—T. N. i. 5, 125.

So "What is he at the gate?"—T. N. i. 5. 125.

So in Early English and Anglo-Saxon. We make the same omission, but only after nouns: "The babes in the wood."

246. The Relative is omitted in the following example, and the antecedent is attracted into the case which the relative, if present, would have:

"Him (he whom) I accuse,
By this, the city ports hath enter'd."—Coriol. v. 6. 6.

Apparently there is an ellipsis of "that (relative) is" before participles in the following :

"Not that devour'd, but that which doth devour, Is worthy blame,"—R. of L. 451.

where "that devour'd" seems used for "that that is devour'd."

"Why have you not proclaim'd Northumberland, And all the rest (that are) revolted, faction-traitors?"

Rich. I.l. ii. 2. 57.

And in

"I hate the murderer, love him murdered,"

Rich. II. v. 5. 40.

the meaning seems to be, not "I love the fact that he is murdered," but "I love him (who is) murdered." Compare the harsh construction in

"But you must know your father lost a father, That father (who was) lost, lost his."—Hamlet, i. 2. 90.

"A little riper and more lusty red

Than that (which is) mixed in his cheek."

A. Y. L. iii. 5. 222.

The relative is attracted to a subsequent implied object in the following :

"Thou shalt not lack

The leaf of eglantine, *whom* not to slander, Outsweetened not thy breath."—Cymb. iv. 2. 223.

i.e. "the leaf which, not to slander it, would not outsweeten," &c.

247. The Relative (perhaps because it does not signify by inflection any agreement in number or person with its antecedent) frequently (1) takes a *singular* verb, though the antecedent be plural, and (2) the verb is often in the third person, though the antecedent be in the second or first.

(1) "All things that belongs" (so Folio; Globe, belong).—T. of Sh. ii. 1. 357.

"Whose wraths to guard you from, Which here in this most desolate isle else falls Upon your head."—Temp. iii. 2. 80.

"Contagious fogs which falling on our land Hath every pelting river made so proud."—M: N. D. ii. 1. 91.

This, however, might be explained by 337.

"Tis not the many oaths that makes the truth."

A. W. iv. 2. 21; K. 7. ii. 1. 216.

"With sighs of love that costs the fresh blood dear."

M. N. D. ili. 2. 97

"My observations
Which with experimental seal doth warrant
The tenour of my book."—M. Ado, iv. 1. 168.

"'Tis your graces that charms."—Cymb. i. 6. 117.

"So, so, so: they laugh that wins" (Globe, win).

Othello, iv. 1. 125.

"So are those crisped snaky golden locks Which makes."—M. of V. iii. 2. 92.

"Those springs

In chalic'd flowers that lies."—Cymb. ii. 3. 24.

"Each substance of a grief hath twenty shadows Which shows like grief itself."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 15.

"It is not words, that shakes me thus."—Othello, iv. 1. 43.
"But most miserable

Is the desires that's glorious." (Globe, "desire.")

Cymb. i. 6. 6.

"'Tis such fools as you

That makes the world full of ill-favour'd children."

A. Y. L. iii. 5. 53.

"(The swords) That makes such waste in brief mortality."

Hen. V. i. 2. 28

"There are some shrewd contents in you same paper That steals the colour from your cheeks."—M. of V. iii. 2. 246.

"Is kindling coals that fires all my breast." -3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 83.

"With such things else of quality and respect As doth import you."—Othello, i. 3. 283.

"Such commendations as becomes a maid."—I Hen. VI. v. 3. 177.

"Such thanks as fits a king's remembrance."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 26.

"Like monarch's hands that lets not bounty fall."

L. C. 41 (Globe, let).

"If it be you (you gods) that stirs these daughters' hearts."

Lear, ii. 4. 275 (Globe, stir).

"To be forbod the sweets that seems so good."

L. C. 164 (Globe, seem).

The distance of the relative from the antecedent sometimes makes a difference, as in

"I that please some, try all, both joy and terror Of good and bad, that makes and unfolds error."

W. T. iv. 1. 2.

This construction is found as late as 1671:

"If it be true that monstrous births presage
The following mischiefs that afflicts the age."

The Rehearsal, Epilogue.

- (2) "Antiochus, I thank thee who hath taught." -- P. of T. i. 1. 4.
- "Casca, you are the first that rears your hand."—J. C. iii. 1 30 "Rears his" or "rear your" would be right.
 - "To make me proud that jests."-L. L. v. 2. 66.
- "For it is you that puts us to our shifts."—T. A. iv. 2. 176. So Temb. v. 1. 79.
 - "O Lord, that lends me life!"-2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 19.
 - "They do but greatly chide thee who confounds." Sonn. 8.

The last two examples may also be explained (see 340) by the northern inflection of s for st: and the examples in (1) might come under the cases of plural nominative with apparently singular inflection considered in 333. But taking all the examples of (1) and (2) we are, I think, justified in saying that the relative was often regarded like a noun by nature third person singular, and, therefore, uninfluenced by the antecedent.

On the other hand, the verb is irregularly attracted into the second person in

"That would I learn of you

As one that are best acquainted with her person."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 268.

248. Relative with Supplementary Pronoun. With the Germans it is still customary, when the antecedent is a pronoun of the first or second person, to repeat the pronoun for the sake of defining the person, because the relative is regarded as being in the third person. Thus "Thou who thou hearest," &c. The same repetition was common in Anglo-Saxon (and in Hebrew) for all persons. "That (rel.) through him" = "through whom," "a tribe that they can produce" = "a tribe who can produce," &c.

Hence in Chaucer, Prol. 43-45:

"A knight ther was, and that a worthy man, *That*, from the tymë that he first began To ryden out, *he* lovede chyvalrye;"

and in the same author "that his" = "whose," "that him" = "whom," &c.

In the same way in Elizabethan authors, when the interrogative who (251) had partially supplanted that as a relative, we find who his for whose, whom him for whom, which it for which, &c.

The following is probably not a case of the supplementary pronoun:

"Bardolph and Nym had ten times more valour than this roaring devil i' the old play, *that* every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger."—*Henry V.* iv. 4. 76.

- That . . . his is not elsewhere used in Shakespeare, that I know of. The above probably means "than this (fellow, who is) a mere devil-in-the-play, so that every one may beat him."
- 249. The Supplementary Pronoun is generally conned to cases (as above, 242) where the relative is separated from its verb by an intervening clause, and where on this account clearness requires the supplementary pronoun.
 - "Who, when he lived, his breath and beauty set Gloss on the rose, smell on the violet."—V. and A.
 - "Which, though it alter not love's sole effect, Yet doth it steal sweet hours from love's delight."
 - "And who, though all were wanting to reward,
 Yet to himself he would not wanting be."—B. J. Cy.'s Rev.
 "Whom.

Though bearing misery, I desire my life Once more to look on him."—W. T. v. 1. 138.

"(The queen) whom Heavens in justice both on her and hers Have laid most heavy hand."—Cymb. v. 5. 464.

Here the construction is further changed by the addition of "both"... and hers."

"You are three men of sin whom Destiny (That hath to instrument this lower world, And what is in't) the never-surfeited sea Hath caused to belch up you."—Temp. iii. 2. 53.

In the following passage the which may almost with better right be regarded as supplementary than the noun which follows:

"Our natural goodness
Imparts this; which if you or stupified
Or seeming so in skill, cannot or will not
Relish a truth like us, inform yourselves
We need no more of your advice."—W. T. ii. 1. 165.

Here which means "as regards which," and in this and in other places it approximates to that vulgar idiom which is well known to readers of "Martin Chuzzlewit," (See 272.)

The following seems at first as though it could be explained thus, but "who" is put for "whom" (see 274), and "exact the penalty" is regarded as a transitive verb:

"Who, if he break, thou may'st with better face Exact the penalty."—M. of V. i. 3. 137.

Or this may be an imitation of the Latin idiom which puts the relative before the conjunction, thus:

"Who, when they were in health, I tell thee, herald, I thought upon one pair of English legs Did walk three Frenchmen."—Hen. V. iii. 6. 157.

250. Which that.

"Spite of his spite which that in vain Doth seek to force my fantasy."—INGELEND (A.D. 1560).

This use of which that consecutively is common in Chaucer, but not in Elizabethan authors. When it is remembered that which was originally an interrogative, it is easier to understand how that may have been added to give a relative force to which.

251. Who and what, In Early English who was the masc, or fem. and what the neut, interrogative (or used as the indefinite relative who-so, what-so), that being both the demonstrative and relative, except in the oblique cases.

The transition of the interrogative to the relative can easily be explained. Thus, the sentence

"O now who will behold
The royal captain of this ruin'd band?
Let him cry 'Praise and glory on his head,"
Hen V

Hen. V. iv. Prologue.

may easily become "now let him who will behold," &c.

We can now only use who-ever in this sense, but the Germans still use their interrogative (wer) thus. In such cases the who mostly retains a trace of its interrogative meaning by preceding the antecedent clause:

"Who steals my purse (he) steals trash,"—Othello, iii. 3. 157. and hence referring to a definite past:

" Who was the thane (he) lives yet."—Macbeth, i. 3. 109.

in this and other examples (as in Greek) the antecedent pronoun is often omitted owing to the emphatic position of the relative.

"Whom we raise we will make fast."-2 Hen. VI. i. 4 25.

"Is proclamation made that who finds Edward Shall have a high reward?"—3 Hen. VI. v. 5. 9.

"Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fixed."

C. of E. i. 1. 85.

"We are going to whom it must be done."-J. C. ii. 1. 331.

252. What, being simply the neuter of the interrogative who, ought consistently to be similarly used. As, therefore, who is used relatively, we may expect what to be used so likewise. And so it is; but, inasmuch as the adjective which very early took the force of the relative pronoun, what was supplanted by which, and is rarely used relatively. Even when it is thus used, it generally stands before its antecedent (like the transitional use of who above), thereby indicating its interrogative force, though the position of the verb is altered to suit a statement instead of a question.

"What cur contempt doth often hurl from us

We wish it ours again."—A. and C. i. 2. 127. So Rich. II. i. 1. 87.

"What you have spoke it may be so perchance."

Macbeth, iv. 3. 11.

"Look, what I speak, my life shall prove it true."

Rich. II. i. 1. 87.

"It is true that what is settled by custom, though it be not good, yet at least it is fit."—B. E. 99

An unemphatic antecedent precedes what in

"And I do fearfully believe 'tis done

What we so feared he had a charge to do."—K. J. iv. 2. 75.

I cannot remember any instance where what has for its antecedent a noun, as in the modern vulgarism, "The man what said." In

"And let us once again assail your ears, That are so fortified against our story,

What we have two nights seen."—Hamlet, i. 1. 33.

What depends on a verb of speech, implied either in "assail your ears" or in "story," i.e. "let us tell you what we have seen," or "our story describing what we have seen."

The antecedent was mostly omitted:

"What is done (that) cannot be undone."—Macb. v. 1. 74.

This use is common now, but we could not say

"To have his pomp and all what (that which) state compounds."

T. of A. iv. 2. 35

The following is a curious use of what:

"That Julius Cæsar was a famous man:

With what his valour did enrich his wit

He did set down to make his valour live."

Rich. III. iii. 1. 85: i.e. "(that) with which."

253. What is used for "for what," "why" (quid), as in

" What (why) shall I don this robe and trouble you?"

Cymb. iii. 4. 34

"What need we any spur but our own cause?"

J. C. ii. 1. 123.

"What shall I need to draw my sword?"—T. A. i. 1. 189.

"What should I stay?"-A. and C. v. 2. 317.

and in some other passages where the context shows this to be the meaning:

"Falstaff. This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy.

"Justice. What tell you me of it? be it as it is."

2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 130.

The following use of what for "in what state," i.e. "how far advanced," should be noticed:

"M. What is the night?

Lady M. Almost at odds with morning, which is which."

Macbeth, iii. 4. 126.

These adverbial uses of what are illustrated by

"His equal mind I copy what I can And, as I love, would imitate the man."

POPE, Imit. Hor. ii. 131.

254. What = "whatever."

"What will hap more to-night, safe scape the king,"

Lear, iii. 6. 121.

where the construction may be "Happen what will," a comma being placed after "will," or "Whatever is about to happen." Probably the former is correct and "will" is emphatic, "hap" being optative.

What = "whoever."

"There's my exchange. What in the world he is

That names me traitor, villain-like he lies."—Lear, v. 3. 97.

What is often used apparently with little sense of "of what kind or quality" where we should use who, especially in the phrase "what is he?"

"Chief Justice. What's he that goes there?

Servant. Falstaff, an't please your lordship."

2 Hen. IV. i. 2, 66.

"What's he that wi hes so? My cousin Westmoreland?"

Hen. V. iv. 3. 18.

Ros. What is he that shall buy his flock and pasture? Cor. That young swain."—A. Y. L. ii. 4. 88-9.

"Captain. He did see the love of fair Olivia!

Captain. A virtuous maid, the daughter of a count."

T. N. i. 2. 35; ib. i. 5. 124.

So Lear, v. 3. 125; Macbeth, v. 7. 2; Rich. II. v. 5. 69.

But in the Elizabethan and earlier periods, when the distinction between ranks was much more marked than now, it may have seemed natural to ask, as the first question about anyone, "of what condition or rank is he?" In that case the difference is one of thought, not of grammar.

255. What hence in elliptical expressions assumes the meaning "any."

"I love thee not a jar of the clock behind What lady-she (224) her lord."—W. T. i. 2. 44.

i.e. "less than any lady whatsoever loves her lord." So

"With promise of his sister and what else."

3 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 51; Tempest, iii. 1. 72.

i.e. "whatever else may be conceived," or "everything else."

"What not" is still used in this sense, as

"He that dares approach
On him, on you, who not? I will maintain
Mine honour firmly."—Lear, v. 3. 100: i.e. "on everybody."

Like the Latin "qua—qua," so "what—what" is used for "partly—partly," mostly joined to "with." In this collocation perhaps the alliteration of the two w's has had some influence: for what is not thus used except before "with."

"And such a flood of greatness fell on you What with our help, what with the absent king, What with the injuries of a wanton time."

1 Hen. IV. v. 1. 50.

So Tr. and Cr. v. 1. 103.

Originally this may have been "considering what accrued from our help, what from the king's absence," &c. but "what" is used by Spenser in the sense of "part," "her little what." (See p. 5.)

256. What is sometimes used before a noun without the appended indefinite article in exclamations. (See Article, 86.) It is also used without a noun in this sense:

O father Abram, what these Christians are!"

M. of V. 1. 3. 162.

" What mortality is!"—Cymb. iv. 1. 16.

i.e. "what a thing mortality is!"

257. Who for any one:

"The cloudy messenger turns me his back
And hums as who should say, 'You'll rue the time
That closs me with this answer."—Macheth, iii. 6. 42.

"He doth nothing but frown, as we should say, 'If you will not have me, choose."—M. of V. i. 2. 45.

Comp. M. of V. i. 1. 93, Rich. II. v. 4. 8. In these passages it is possible to understand an antecedent to 'who,' "as, or like (one) who should say." But in the passages

"Timon surnamed Misantropos (as who should say Loupgarou, or the man-hater)."—N. P. 171.

"She hath been in such wise daunted That they were, as who saith, enchanted."

GOWER, C. A. I. (quoted by Clarke and Wright).

it is impossible to give this explanation. And in Early Eng. (Morris, Specimens, p. xxxii.) "als wha say" was used for "as anv one may say." Comp. the Latin quis after si, num, &c. Possibiy an if is implied after the as by the use of the subjunctive. (See 107.)

Littré explains "comme qui dirait" by supplying "celui." "Il portait sur sa teste comme qui dirait un turban; c'est-à-dire, il portait, comme dirait celui qui dirait un turban." But this explanation seems unsatisfactory, in making a likeness to exist between "carrying" and "saying." But whatever may be the true explanation of the original idiom, Shakespeare seems to have understood who as the relative, for the antecedent can be supplied in all passages where he uses it, as %. C. i. 2. 120, "As who goes farthest."

258. That, which, who, difference between. Whatever rule may be laid down for the Elizabethan use of the three relative forms will be found to have many exceptions. Originally that was the only relative; and if Wickliffe's version of the New Testament be compared with the versions of the sixteenth century and with that of 1611, that will be found in the former replaced by which and who in the latter, who being especially common in the latest, our Authorized Version. Even in Shakespeare's time, however, there is great diversity of usage. Fletcher, in the Faithful Shepherdess

(with the exception of a few lines containing the plot, and probably written by Beaumont), scarcely uses any relative but the smooth that throughout the play (in the first act which is only used once): and during the latter half of the seventeenth century, when the language threw off much of its old roughness and vigour, the fashion of Wickliffe was revived. That came into favour not because, as in Wickliffe's time, it was the old-established relative, but because it was the smoothest form: the convenience of three relative forms. and the distinctions between their different shades of meaning, were ignored, and that was re-established in its ancient supremacy. Addison, in his "Humble Petition of Who and Which," allows the petitioners to say: "We are descended of ancient families, and kept up our dignity and honour many years, till the jack-sprat That supplanted us." But the supplanting was a restoration of an incapable but legitimate monarch, rather than a usurpation. Since the time of Addison a reaction has taken place; the convenience of the three distinct forms has been recognized, and we have returned somewhat to the Elizabethan usage.

- 259. As regards the Shakespearian use, the following rules will generally hold good :— $\,$
- (1) That is used as a relative (a) after a noun preceded by the article, (b) after nouns used vocatively, in order to complete the description of the antecedent by adding some essential characteristic of it.
- (2) Who is used (a) as the relative to introduce a fact about the antecedent. It may often be replaced by "and he," "for he," "though he," &c. (b) It is especially used after antecedents that are lifeless or irrational, when personification is employed, but not necessarily after personal pronouns.
- (3) Which is used (a) in cases where the relative clause varies between an essential characteristic and an accidental fact, especially where the antecedent is preceded by that; (b) where the antecedent is repeated in the relative clause; (c) in the form "the which," where the antecedent is repeated, or where attention is expressly called to the antecedent, mostly in cases where there is more than one possible antecedent and care is required to distinguish the real one; (d) where "which" means "a circumstance which," the circumstance being gathered from the previous sentence.

260. That, (a) Since that introduces an essential characteristic without which the description is not complete, it follows that, even where this distinction is not marked, that comes generally nearer to the antecedent than who or which.

"To think of the teen that I have turn'd you to Which is from my remembrance!"-Temp. i. 2. 65.

I to the world am like a drop of water That in the ocean seeks another drop, Who falling there to seek his fellow forth,

Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself."—C. of E. i. 2. 37. "You have oft enquired

After the shepherd that complain d of love,

Who you saw sitting by me on the turf."-A. Y. L. iii. 4. 52.

"And here's a prophet that I brought with me From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I found

With many hundreds treading on his heels," -K. 7, iv. 2, 148.

The same order is preserved in A. Y. L. iii. 5. 13; 2 Hen. IV. 1, 3, 59; Lear, iii, 4, 134-139; 2 Hen, VI. iv. I. 3; Lear, iv. 2, 51-53 (where we find that, who, that, consecutively); Lear, iii. 7. 89. 90; I Hen. IV. ii. I. 80 (that the which, that); Tempest, iv. I. 76

The distinction between that and which is preserved in

"It is an heretic that (by nature, of necessity) makes the fire, Not she which (as an accidental fact) burns in it." W. T. ii. 3. 115.

"And he doth sin that doth belie the dead, Not he which (as you do) says the dead is not alive." 2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 99.

In the latter passage "he that" = "who-so," and refers to a class, "he which" to the single person addressed. Thus Wickliffe (Matt. xxiii. 21) has "he that sweareth," whereas the other versions have "whoso" or "whosoever sweareth."

That is generally used after he, all, aught, &c. where a class is denoted. This is so common as not to require examples, and it is found even where that is objective.

"He that a fool doth very wisely hit."—A. Y. L. ii. 7. 53.

"The great globe itself, In

Yea, all which it inherit,"-Temp. iv. I. 154.

euphony perhaps will not allow "that it." (See Which, 265.)

The following is not an exception:

"It was the swift celerity of his death, Which I did think with slower foot came on, That brain'd my purpose."-M. for M. v. 1. 400. for here which is used parenthetically (see 271). So Rich. II. iii. 4. 50.

In "He that no more must say is listen'd more
Than they whom youth and ease have taught to glose."
Rich. II. ii. 1, 9, 10.

a distinction appears to be drawn between the singular nominative represented by the uninflected *that*, and the objective plural represented by the inflected *whom*.

261, That. (b) After nouns used vocatively.

"Hail, many-coloured messenger! that ne'er
Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter:
Who with thy saffron wings upon my flowers
Diffusest honey-drops, refreshing showers."
Temp. iv. 1. 76–79.

"Hast thou conspired with thy brother, too,

That for thine own gain shouldst defend mine honour?"

K. 7. i. 1. 242.

"You brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,
Expell'd remorse and nature; who with Sebastian
Would here have kill'd your king."

Tempest, v. 1.79; 33-9.

This close dependence of *that* on the antecedent, wherein it differs from *who* and *which*, is a natural result of its being less emphatic, and therefore less independent, than the two other forms. When the relative is necessarily emphatic, as at the end of a verse, we may sometimes expect *that* to be replaced by *which*, for that and no other reason.

"Sometimes like apes *that* mow and chatter at me, And after bite me; then like hedgehogs *which* Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way."—*Temp.* ii. 2. 10.

262. That is sometimes, but seldom, separated from the antecedent, like who. (See 263.)

"As if it were Cain's jawbone that did the first murder."

Hamlet, v. 1. 85.

It is perhaps not uncommon after the possessive case of nouns and pronouns. (See 218.) The antecedent pronoun is probably to be repeated immediately before the relative.

"Cain's jawbone, (him) that did," &c.

Less commonly as in

"They know the corn

Was not our recompense, resting well assured *That* ne'er did service for it."—*Coriol.* iii. 1. 122.

The use of that for who = "and they" is archaic. Acts xiii. 43. "They sueden Paul and Barnabas that spakun and counceileden hym." Tyndale, Cranmer, and Geneva have which; Rheims and A. V. who.

263. Who (a) for "and he," "for he," &c.

"Now presently I'll give her father notice Of their disguising and pretended flight;

Who (and he), all enraged, will banish Valentine."

T. G. of V. ii. 6, 38.

"My name is Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk,

Who (and I) hither come engaged by my oath

Against the duke of Hereford that (because he) appeals

me." Rich. II. i. 3. 17.

"Caius Ligarius doth bear Cæsar hard

Who (since he) rated him for speaking well of Pompey."

7. C. ii. 1. 216.

Hence who is often at some distance from the antecedent.

"Archbishop. It was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury.

Lord Bardolph. It was, my lord: who (for he) lined himself with hope,"—2 Hen. IV. i. 3, 27.

"To send the old and miserable king
To some retention and appointed guard,

Whose (for his) age has charms in it."—Lear, v. 3. 48.

"I leave him to your gracious acceptance; whose (for his) trial shall better publish his commendation."—M. of V. iv. 1. 165.

"In Ephesus I am but two hours old,

As strange unto your town as to your talk,

Who (and I), every word by all my wit being scann'd,

Want wit, in all, one word to understand."

C. of E. ii. 2. 153.

So Temp. iii. 1. 93; A. and C. i. 3. 29; Hen. V. i. Prologue, 33.

264. Who personifies irrational antecedents. (b) Who is often used of animals, particularly in similes where they are compared to men.

"I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan, Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death."—K. F. v. 7. 22.

"Or as a bear encompass'd round with dogs, Who having pinch'd a few and made them cry."

3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 16.

So 1 Hen. IV. v. 2. 10; 2 Hen. VI. iii. I. 254, v. I. 153; but also in other cases where action is attributed to them, e.g.

"A lion who glared."-7. C. i. 3. 21.

"A lioness who quickly fell before him."-A. Y. L. iv. 2. 13.

Who is also used of inanimate objects regarded as persons.

"The winds

Who take the ruffian billows by the tops,"—2 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 22. So R. and F. i. 1. 119; i. 4. 100: "The winds... who."

"Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down After my seeming."—2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 128.

"Night . . . who." - Hen. V. iv. Prol. 21.

"Your anchors, who

Do their best office if they can but stay you."—W. 7. iv. 4. 581.

"A queen

Over her passion, who most rebel-like Sought to be queen o'er her."—Lear, iv. 2. 16.

So probably in

"Your eve

Who hath cause to wet the grief on 't."—Tempest, ii. 1. 127. i.e. "your eye which has cause to give tearful expression to the sorrow for your folly."

"My arm'd knee Who bow'd but in my stirrups."—Coriol. iii. 2. 119.

But is who the antecedent here to "me" implied in "my?" (See 218.)

"The heart

Who great and puff'd up with this retinue."

2 Hen. 1V. iv. 3. 120.

So V. and A. 191 and 1043, "her heart...who;" T. A. iii. 2. 9, "my breast...who."

The slightest active force, or personal feeling, attributed to the antecedent, suffices to justify who. Thus:

"The dispers'd air who answer'd."-R. of L. 1805.

"Applause Who like an arch reverberates."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 120.

"Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones

Who though they cannot answer," &c.—T. A. iii. 1 38.

"Bushes,

As fearful of him, part, through whom he rushes."

V. and A. 630.

Se "her body . . . who," K. of L. 1740; "the hairs who wave," V. and A. 306; "lips who . . . still blush," R. and F. iii. 3. 38; "sighs who," R. and J. iii. 5. 136; "mouths who," P. of T. i. 4. 33; "palates who," P. of T. i. 4. 39; "her eyelids who like sluices stopped." V. and A. Sometimes who is used where there is no notion of personality:

"The world, who of itself is peised well,"-K. J. ii. 1. 575. where perhaps ruho is used because of the pause after "world," in the sense "though it." (See 263.) If there had been no comma between "world" and the relative, we should have had that or which.

Perhaps in this way we may distinguish in

"The first, of gold, who this inscription bears; The second, silver, which this promise carries."

M. of V. ii. 7. 4.

i.e. "the first of gold, and it bears this inscription; the second, (silver.) which carries," &c. In the first the material, in the second the promise, is regarded as the essential quality. [Or does euphony prefer which in the accented, who in the unaccented syllables?]

In almost all cases where who is thus used, an action is implied,

so that who is the subject.

Whom is rare.

"The elements

Of whom your swords are temper'd."—Temp. iii. 2. 62.

265. Which (E. E. adj. hw-ilc, "wh(a)-like") is used interchangeably with Who and That. It is interchanged with who in

"Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt, Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;

And, after that wise prince, Henry the Fifth, Who by his power conquered all France."

3 Hen. VI. iii. 3. 87.

1.ike who (263), which implies a cause in

"Deposing thee before thou wert possess'd, Which (for thou) art possess'd now to depose thyself." Rich. II. ii. 1. 108.

It is often used for that (see 261), where the personal antecedent is vocatively used or preceded by the article:

"The mistress which I serve." - Temp. iii. I. 6.

So M. for M. v. 1. 305; W. T. i. 2. 455, v. 2. 60.

"Abhorred slave,
Which any point of goodness will not take."—Temp. i 2, 352
"And thou, great goddess Nature, which hast made it."
W. T. ii. 3, 104.

So in our version of the Lord's Prayer.

266. Which, like that, is less definite than who. Who indicates an individual, which a "kind of person;" who is "qui," which "qualis."

"I have known those which (qualis) have walked in their sleep who (and yet they, 263) have died holily in their beds."—Mach. v. 1. 66.

"For then I pity those I do not know Which (unknown persons) a dismiss'd offence would after gall."

M. for M. ii. 2. 102.

"They have—as who have not, that their great stars Throned and set high?—servants, who seem no less, Which are to France the spies and speculations Intelligent of our state."—Lear, iii. 1. 24.

Here "who seem no less" is parenthetical, and for who might be written "they." Which means "of such a kind that." Where "so dear," "such," &c. is implied in the antecedent, we may expect the corresponding which (278) in the relative:

"Antonio, I am married to a wife Which is as dear to me as life itself."—M. of V. iv. 1. 283.

When the antecedent is personal and plural, which is generally preferred to who. Which, like that (260), often precedes who.

"I am Prospero, and that very duke Which was thrust from Milan, zvho," &c.—Tempest, v. 1. 160.

267. The ... that; that ... which. In A.-S. "be" (the) was the relative and "se" the article. When the form "be" (the) became the article, "that" became the relative. In the same way it perhaps arises that when that was applied to the antecedent, the relative form preferred by Shakespeare was which. "The man that says" = "whoever says," and the indefinite that is sufficient; but "that man," being more definite, requires a more definite relative. After a proper name, who would answer the purpose; but after "that man," that being an adjective, "which man" was the natural expression, which being originally also an adjective. Hence the marked change in

"If he sees aught in you that makes him like

That anything he sees which moves his liking."—K. J. ii. 1. 512

"When living blood doth in these temples beat

Which owe the crown that thou o'er-masterest."—Ib. ii. 1. 109.

Possibly "that" is a demonstrative, and "he" is used for "man" in the following, which will account for the use of which; but more probably which is here used for that, and there is a confusion of constructions.

"Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through our host, That he which hath no stomach to this fight, Let him depart,"—Hen. V. iv. 3. 34.*

268. Which more definite than That. Generally it will be tound that which is more definite than that. Which follows a name, that a pronoun:

"Here's the Lord Say which sold the towns in France; he that made us pay one-and-twenty fifteens." -2 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 23.

Sometimes which is used in this sense to denote an individual or a defined class, while that denotes a hypothetical person or an indefinite class. Hence

"And such other gambol faculties a' has, that show a weak mind and an able body, for the which the Prince admits him."—2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 74.

And compare

"She that was ever fair and never proud, &c.
She was a wight, if ever such wight were."—Othello, ii. 1-149.

with

"I find that she which late Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now The praised of the king: who (263), so ennobled, Is as 'twere born so."—A. W. ii. 3. 179.

"It is a chance which does redeem all sorrows That I have ever felt."—Lear, v. 3. 266.

Which states a fact, that a probability, in

"Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes, Which art my near'st and dearest enemy? Thou that art like enough."—I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 124.

In "Cut off the heads of too fast growing sprays

That look too lofty in our commonwealth:

You thus employ'd, I will go root away

The noisome weeds which, without profit, suck

The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers."—Rich. II. iii 4.37.

^{*} See 415 and compare T. A. iii. 1. 151; Lear, ii. 1. 63.

We must explain "all the heads that may happen to look too lofty, and the weeds which, as a fact, such the fertility," &c.

So that introduces an essential, and which an accidental, or at all events a less essential quality, in the two following passages:—

"(Thou) commit'st thy anointed body to the cure
Of those physicians that first wounded thee."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 99.

"Now for our Irish wars. We must supplant those rough, rug-headed kerns, Which live like venom where no venom else, But only they, have privilege to live."—Ib. 157.

That may state a fact with a notion of purpose:

- "Now, sir, the sound *that* tells (*i.e.* to tell) what hour it is Are clamorous groans *which* strike upon my heart, *Which* is the bell."—*Rich. II.* v. 5. 57.
- 269. Which with repeated antecedent. Which being an adjective frequently accompanies the repeated antecedent, where definiteness is desired, or where care must be taken to select the right antecedent.
 - "Salisbury. What other harm have I, good lady, done But spoke the harm that is by others done?

 Constance. Which harm within itself so heinous is—"

"And, if she did play false, the fault was hers,

Which fault lies," &c.—K. F. i. I. 119; Rich. II, i. I. 104.

This may sometimes explain why which is used instead of that, and why that is preferred after pronouns:

"Let my revenge on her that injured thee Make less a fault which I intended not."—F. Sh. v. 1.

An antecedent noun ("fault") can be repeated, and therefore can be represented by the relative which; an antecedent pronoun "her" cannot.

Sometimes a noun of similar meaning supplants the antecedent:

"Might'st bespice a cup
To give mine enemy a lasting wink,
Which draught to me were cordial."—W. T. i. 2. 318

270. The which. The above repetition is, perhaps, more common with the definite "the which":

"The better part of valour is discretion; in the which better part have saved my life."—I Hen. IV. v. 4. 125.

Sometimes the noun qualified by which is not repeated, and only slightly implied in the previous sentence:

"Under an oak . . . to the which place."-A. Y. L. ii. 1. 33.

"Let gentleness my strong enforcement be, In the which hope I blush."—Ib. ii. 7. 119.

The question may arise why "the" is attached to which and not to who. (The instance

"Your mistress from the whom I see There's no disjunction,"—W. T. iv. 4, 539.

is, perhaps, unique in Shakespeare.) The answer is, that who is considered definite already, and stands for a noun, while which is considered as an indefinite adjective; just as in French we have "Lequel," but not "Lequi." "The which" is generally used either as above, where the antecedent, or some word like the antecedent, is repeated, or else where such a repetition could be made if desired. In almost all cases there are two or more possible antecedents from which selection must be made. (The use of "Lequel" is similar.)

"To make a *monster of the multitude*, of the *which* (multitude) we being members should bring ourselves to be monstrous members." -- Coriol. ii. 3. 10.

"Lest your justice

Prove violence, in the which (violence) three great ones suffer."

W. T. ii. 1. 128.

"Eight hundred nobles

In name of *lendings* for your highness' soldiers,

The which (nobles) he hath detain'd for lewd employments."

Rich. II. i. 1. 90.

"The which" is also naturally used after a previous "which."

"The present business

Which now's upon us: without the which this story Were most impertinent."—Temp. i. 1. 138.

"The chain

Which God he knows I saw not, for the which He did arrest me."—C. of E. v. I. 230.

271. Which for "which thing," often parenthetically.

"Camillo.

As you are certainly a gentleman, thereto Clerk-like experienced, which no less adorns Our gentry, than our parents' noble names."—W. T. i. 2 392

Very often the "thing" must be gathered not from what precedes but from what follows, as in

"And, which became him like a prince indeed,

He made a blushing 'cital of himself."—I Hen. IV. v. 2. 62.

"And, which was strange, the one so like the other As could not be distinguished."—C. of E. i. 1. 53.

That is rarely thus used by Shakespeare:

"And, that is worse,
The Lord Northumberland, his son young Henry Percy,
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 55.

Often, however, in our A. V. that in "that is, being interpreted," is the relative, though a modern reader would not perceive it.

"I was never so berhymed since Pythagoras' time that (when) I was an Irish cat, which I can hardly remember."—A. Y.L.iii. 2.188.

"I'll resolve you,
Which to you shall seem probable, of every
These happen'd accidents."—Temp. v. 1. 249.

i.e. "I will explain to you (and the explanation shall seem probable) every one of these accidents."

"My honour's at the stake, which (danger) to defeat I must produce my power."—A. W. ii. 3. 156.

"Even as I have tried in many other occurrences, which Cæsar affirmed (ce que dit César), that often," &c.—MONTAIGNE, 36.

272. Which for "as to which." Hence which and "the which" are loosely used adverbially for "as to which." So in Latin, "quod" in "quod si."

"Showers of blood,

The which how far off from the mind of Bolingbroke
It is such crimson tempest should bedew," &c.

Rich. II. iii, 3. 45.

"With unrestrained loose companions— Even such, they say, as stand in narrow lanes, And beat our watch, and rob our passengers; Which he, young, wanton, and effeminate boy, Takes on the point of honour, to support So dissolute a crew."—Rich. II. v. 3. 10.

"But God be thanked for prevention:

Which I in sufferance heartly will rejoice."

Hen. V. il. 2 159

273. Which. It is hard to explain the following:

"A mote will turn the balance which Pyramus which Thisbe is the better."—M. Ñ. D. v. 1. 325.

unless which is used for the kindred "whether."

In "My virtue or my plague, be it either which,"

Hamlet, iv. 7. 13.

there is perhaps a confusion between "be it either" and "be it whichever of the two." Perhaps, however, "either" may be taken in its original sense of "one of the two," so that "either which" is "which-one-so-ever of the two."

274. Who for whom. The inflection of who is frequently neglected.

"Who I myself struck down."-Macbeth, iii. 1. 123.

"Who does the wolf love? The lamb."—Coriol. ii. 1. 8.

Compare W. T. iv. 4.636, v. I. 109.

Apparently it is not so common to omit the *m* when the *whom* is governed by a preposition whose contiguity demands the inflection:

"There is a mystery with whom relation Durst never meddle."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 201.

Compare especially,

"Consider who the king your father sends, To whom he sends."—L. L. L. ii. I. 2.

The *interrogative* is found without the inflection even after a pre position:

"C. Yield thee, thief.

Gui. To who?"-Cymb. iv. 2. 75; Othello, i. 2. 52.

"With who?"-Othello, iv. 2, 99.

And in a dependent question:

"The dead man's knell

Is there scarce asked for who."—Macbeth, iv. 3. 171.

In the following, who is not the object of the preposition:

"This is a creature . . . might make proselytes Of who she but bid follow,"—W. T. v. I. 109.

RELATIVAL CONSTRUCTIONS.

275.—So as. Bearing in mind that as is simply a contraction for "all-so" ("alse," "als," "as"), we shall not be surprised at some interchanging of so and as.

We still retain "as . . . so": "As I had expected so it happened," but seldom use "so . . . as," preferring "as . . . as;" except where so (as in the above phrase) requires special emphasis. The Elizabethans frequently used so before as.

> "So well thy words become thee as thy wounds." Macbeth, i. 2, 43.

"Look I so pale, Lord Dorset, as the rest?" Rich. III. ii. 1. 83.

"And with a look so piteous in purport As if he had been loosed out of hell."—Hamlet, ii. 1. 82.

"Thou art so full of fear As one with treasure laden."-V. and A.

"Fair and fair and twice so fair As any shepherd may be."-PEELE. "All so soon as."-R. and 7. i. 1. 140.

This is not very common in Shakespeare. Nor is it common to find so for as where the clause containing the second as is implied but not expressed.

> "Make us partakers of a little gain, That now our loss might be ten times so much." I Hen. VI. ii. I. 53.

If the relatival as precedes, so, not as, must follow as the demonstrative. The exception below is explicable as being a repetition of a previous as used demonstratively:

> "As little joy, my lord, as you suppose You should enjoy, were you this country's king, As little joy may you suppose in me That I enjoy."—Rich. III. i. 3. 153.

"That" is the relative.

Ben Jonson (p. 789) writes as follows on so and as: "When the comparison is in quantity, then so goeth before and as followetn.

> 'Men wist in thilk time none So fair a wight as she was one.'-GOWER, lib. 1.

But if the comparison be in quality, then it is contrary. 'For, as the fish, if it be dry, Mote, in default of water dye: Right so without air or live, No man ne beast might thrive.'-Gower."

So as is frequently used for so that. (See 109.)

This construction is generally found with the past and future indicative, but we sometimes find "so as he may see," for "so that he may see." "So as" is followed by the subjunctive in

"And lead these testy rivals so astray

As one come not within another's way."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 359.

Compare the use of &s with the subjunctive in Greek. There is no more reason for saying, "I come so that (i.e. in which way) I may see," than for saying, "I come so as (i.e. in which way) I may see." We sometimes find so as that for so as in this sense.

The so is omitted after as in the adjurations

"As ever thou wilt deserve well at my hands, (so) help me to a candle,"—T. N. iv. 2. 86.

where as means "in which degree," and so "in that degree." Hence as approximates to "if."

It would seem that "as...so" are both to be implied from the previous verse in

"Had you been as wise as bold,

(As) young in limbs, (so) in judgment old."

M. of V. ii. 7. 71.

276. As . . . as. The first As is sometimes omitted:

"A mighty and a fearful head they are

As ever offered foul play in a state."—I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 168.

"He pants and looks (as) pale as if a bear were at his heels."

T. N. iii. 4. 323; Tempest, v. 1. 289.

In the expression "old as I am," &c. we almost always omit the

first as. Shakespeare often inserts it:

"As near the dawning, provost, as it is."—M. for M. iv. 2. 97.

"But I believe, as cold a night as 'tis, he could wish himself in Thames up to the neck."—Hen. V. iv. I. 118.

The expression is elliptical: "(be it) as cold as it is."

277. That . . . that, that . . . (as) to. That is still used provincially for such and so: e.g. "He is that foolish that he understands nothing." So

"From me whose love was of *that* dignity

That it went hand in hand even with the yow

I made to her in marriage."—Hamlet, i. 5. 48.

That is more precise than "of that kind" or "such."

That, meaning "such," is used before the infinitive where we use the less emphatic "the." "Had you that craft to reave her Of what should stead her most?"-A. W. v. 3, 86.

So T. N. i. 1. 33; Rich. III. i. 4. 257; and Macbeth, iv. 3. 74: "There cannot be

That vulture in you to devour so many."

This omission of "as" after that meaning "so," is illustrated by the omission of "as" after "so" (281).

278. Such which. Such (in Early English, "swulc," "suilc," "suilch," "sich") was by derivation the natural antecedent to which; such meaning * "so-like," "so-in-kind;" which meaning "what-like," "what-in-kind?" Hence-

"Such sin

For which the pardoner himself is in."—M. for M. iv. 2. 111. "There rooted between them such an affection which cannot choose but branch now."-W. T. i. 1. 26.

So W. T. iv. 4. 783; Coriol. iii. 2. 105.

Compare "Duty so great which wit so poor as mine May make seem bare."-Sonn. 26.

Similarly which is irregularly used after "too:"

"And salt too little which may season give To her foul-tainted flesh."-M. Ado, iv. 1. 144.

Whom follows such in

"Such I will have whom I am sure he knows not."

A. W. iii. 6, 24.

279. Such that; so . . . that (rel.); such . . . where. Hence such is used with other relatival words:

"Such allowed infirmities that honesty Is never free of."-W. T. i. 2. 263.

"To such a man

That is no fleering tell-tale."—J. C. i. 3. 116.

"For who so firm that cannot be seduced."-7. C. i. 2. 316

"His mother was a witch, and one so strong That could control the moon."—Temp v. 1. 270; ib. 315

"But no perfection is so absolute

That some impunity doth not pollute."-R. of L.

"Who's so gross

That seeth not this palpable device?"—Rich. III. iii. 6. 11 "Such things were

That were most precious to me."-Macbeth, iv 3. 222.

[•] Hence "such-like" (Temp. in. 3, 59) is a pleonesm.

"For no man well of such a salve can speak
That heals the wound and cures not the disgrace."

Sonn. 34.

Coriol. iii. 2. 55; T. G. of V. iv. 4. 70; A. W. i. 3. 221; Lear, ii. 2. 127; Othello, iii. 3. 417.

Hence it seems probable that that is the relative, having for its antecedent the previous sentence, in the following passages from Spenser:—

"Whose loftie trees yelad with summer's pride

Did spred so broad that heaven's light did hide."-F. Q. i. 1. 7.

"(He) Shook him so hard that forced him to speak."—Ib. 42.

Similarly "And the search so slow Which could not trace them."—Cymb. i. 1. 65.

The licence in the use of these words is illustrated by-

"In me thou seest the twilight of such day As, after sunset, fadeth in the west, Which by and by black night doth take away. In me thou seest the glowing of such fire That on the ashes of his youth doth lie As on the death-bed."—Sonn. 73.

In the first case *such* as is used, because *which* follows; in the second, *such that*, because as follows. So *Hamlet*, iii. 4. 41-46:

"Such an act that . . . such a deed as."

Such, so, where:

"Soch a schoole where the Latin tonge were properly and perfitlie spoken."—ASCH. 45.

· "In no place so unsanctified

Where such as thou mayest find him."-Macbeth, iv. 2. 81

"So narrow where one but goes abreast."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3, 155.

280. That as. We now use only such with as, and only that with which. Since, however, such was frequently used with which, naturally that was also used with as (in which way) used for which. Thus as approaches the meaning of a relative pronoun.

"I have not from your eyes that gentleness As I was wont to have."—7. C. i. 2. 33.

"Under these hard conditions as this time Is like to lay upon us."—Ib. 174.

"Those arts they have as I could put into them."

Cymb. v. 5. 338

"Methinks the realms of England, France, and Ireland Bear *that* proportion to my flesh and blood As did the fatal brand Althea burned

Unto the prince's heart at Calydon."—2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 233.

"With that ceremonious affection as you were wont."

Lear, i. 4. 63.

So after this:

"I beseech you do me this courteous office as to know what my offence is."—T. N. iii. 4. 278.

Similarly

"With hate in those where I expect most love."

Rich. III. ii. 1. 33.

Either (1) the nominative is omitted (see 399), or (2) as is put for who, the relative to an implied antecedent, in:

"Two goodly sons,
And, which was strange, the one so like the other
As could not be distinguish'd but by names."

C. of E. i. 1. 52.

i.e. (1) "so like that (they) could not be," as being used for that (see 109); or (2) "the one so like the other," &c. is loosely used for "the two so like each other as could not be distinguished."

Similarly as is used as a relative after an antecedent implied, but not expressed, by so with an adjective:

"I cannot but be sad, so heavy-sad As . . . makes me faint."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 31. i.e. "I feel such sadness as."

281 So (as). Under the Relative we have seen that sometimes the antecedent, sometimes the relative, is omitted, without injury to the sense. Similarly in relatival constructions, e.g. so... as, so... that, &c. one of the two can be omitted.

The as is sometimes omitted:

"I wonder he is so fond

(as) To trust the mockery of unjust slumbers."

Rich. III. ii. 3. 26.

"So fond [i.e. foolish] (as) to come abroad."

M. of V. iii. 2. 10.

"No woman's heart
So big (as) to hold so much."—T. N. ii. 4. 99.

"Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars

(as) On equal terms to give him chastisement?"

Rich. II. iv. 1. 21.

R. and J. ii. 3. 91; Macheth, ii. 3. 55; Rich. II. iii. 3. 12.

"And while it is so, none so dry or thirsty

Will deign to sip or touch one drop of it."—T. of Sh. v. 2. 144.

i.e. "None is so thirsty (who) will deign" where we should say "as to deign." Less probably, "none (be he how) so (ever) dry."

So and as are both omitted in:

"Be not (so) fond

(As) To think that Cæsar bears such rebel blood."—J. C. iii. 1. 40.

282. So (that). The that is sometimes omitted.

"I am so much a fool (that) it would be my disgrace."

Mach. iv. 2. 27

283. (So) that. So before that is very frequently omitted:

"Ross. The victory fell on us. Dunc. Great happiness!
Ross. (So) that now Sueno, the Norway's king, craves composition."—Macbeth, i. 2. 59.

Compare Macb. i. 7. 8, ii. 2. 7, ii. 2. 24; 7. C. i. 1. 50.

In all these omissions the missing word can be so easily supplied from its correspondent that the desire of brevity is a sufficient explanation of the omission.

"A sheet of paper Writ o' both sides the leaf, margent and all, That he was fain to seal on Cupid's name."—L. L. L. v. 2. 9.

284. That, for because, when. Since that represents different cases of the relative, it may mean "in that," "for that," "because" ("quod"), "or at which time" ("quum").

In, or for that .

"Unsafe the while that we must lave our honours," &c.

Macbeth, iii, 2, 39.

"O, spirit of love! How quick and fresh art thou That (in that), . . . nought enters there but," &c.

"Like silly beggars

Who sitting in the stocks refuge their shame, That (because) many have and others must sit there, And in this thought they find a kind of ease."

Rich. II. v. 5. 27.

At which time : when :

"In the day that thou eatest thereof." - Gen. ii. 17.

"Now it is the time of night

That the graves all gaping wide,

Every one lets forth his sprite."—M. N. D. v. 1. 387.

"So wept Duessa until eventyde,

That shynyng lamps in Jove's high course were lit."

SPENS. F. Q. i. 5. 19.

"Is not this the day

That Hermia should give answer of her choice?"

M. N. D. iv. 1. 133.

"So, till the judgment that yourself arise, You live in this and dwell in lovers' eyes."—Sonn. 55.

Compare "Then that," apparently "then when." (2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 117.)

These uses of *that* are now superseded by the old interrogatives *why* and *when*, just as, even in Shakespeare's time, many of the uses of *that* had been transferred to the interrogatives *who* and *which*.

"Albeit I will confess thy father's wealth
Was the first motive that I wooed thee, Anne."

M. W. of W. iii. 4. 14.

i.e. "for which, or why, I wooed thee."

The use of that for when is still not uncommon, especially in the phrase "now that I know," &c. It is omitted after "now" in

"But now (that) I am return'd, and that war thoughts

Have left their places vacant, in their rooms

Come thronging soft and delicate desires."—M. Ado, i. 1. 303. So Rich. III. i. 2. 170; M. N. D. iv. 1. 67, 109.

That = "in which" in

"Sweet Hero, now thy image doth appear In the sweet semblance that I loved it first."—M. Ado, v. 1. 260-

285. That omitted and then inserted. The purely conjunctional use of *that* is illustrated by the Elizabethan habit of omitting it at the beginning of a sentence, where the construction is obvious, and then inserting it to connect a more distant clause with the conjunction on which the clause depends. In most cases the subjects of the clauses are different.

"Though my soul be guilty and that I think," &c. B. J. Cy.'s Rev. iii. 2.

"Were it not thy sour leisure gave sweet leave, And that thou teachest."—Sonn. 39.

"If this law

Of nature be corrupted through affection, And *that* great minds, of partial indulgence To their benumbed wills, resist the same."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 179.

This may explain (without reference to "but that," 122):

"If frosts and fasts, hard lodging and thin weeds Nip not the gaudy blossoms of your love, But *that* it bear this trial."—L. L. v. 2. 813.

For "if that," see 287.

"Think I am dead, and that even here thou takest, As from my death-bed, my last living leave."

Rich. II. v. 1. 38.

So T. N. v. 1. 125; W. T. i. 2. 84; A. and C. iii. 4. 31; P. of T. i. Gower, 11.

"I love and hate her, for she's fair and royal,
And that she hath all worthy parts more exquisite."

Cymb. iii. 5. 71.

i.e. "for that" or "because."

"She says I am not fair, that I lack manners;
She calls me proud, and that she could not love me."

A. Y. L. iv. 2. 16.

In the above example the *that* depends upon a verb of speech implied in "calls." This construction is still more remarkable in—

"But here's a villain that would face me down

He met me on the mart, and that I beat him."—C. of E. iii. 1. 7.

Compare the French use of "que" instead of repeating "si," "quand," &c.

286. Whatsoever that. In the following there is probably an ellipsis:

"This and what needful else (there be)
That calls upon us."—Macbeth, v. 8. 72.

"Till whatsoever star (it be) that guides my moving Points on me graciously with fair aspect."—Sonn. 26.

"As if that whatsoever god (it be) who leads him

Were slily crept into his human powers."—Coriol. ii. 1. 235.

In the latter, *that* is probably the demonstrative. It might, however, be the conjunctional *that*. See "if *that*," 287.

287. That as a conjunctional affix. Just as so and as are affixed to who (whoso), when (whenso), where (whereas, whereso), in order to give a relative meaning to words that were originally interrogative. in the same way that was frequently affixed.*

" When that the poor have cried."

7. C. iii. 2. 96; T. N. v. 1. 338.

" Why that."-Hen. V. v. 2. 34.

"You may imagine him upon Blackheath, Where that his lords desire him to have borne His bruised helmet and his bended sword

Before him through the city."-Hen. V. v. Prologue, 17.

So A. Y. L. ii. 7. 75; ii. 3. 117. This, with the above, explains

"Edmund. When by no means he could.

Gloucester. Pursue him, ho! go after. By no means what? Edmund. Persuade me to the murder of your lordship, But that I told him," &c .- Lear, ii. 1. 47.

Gradually, as the interrogatives were recognized as relatives, the force of that, so, as, in "when that," "when so," "when as," seems to have tended to make the relative more general and indefinite; "who so" being now nearly (and once quite) as indefinite as "whosoever." The "ever" was added when the "so" had begun to lose its force. In this sense, by analogy, that was attached to other words, such as "if," "though," "why," &c.

" If that the youth of my new interest here Have power to bid you welcome."-M. of V. iii. 2, 224.

Compare

" If that rebellion Came like itself, in base and abject routs."

2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 32; T. N. i. 5. 324, v. 1. 375. So Lear, v. 3. 262; Rich. III. ii. 2. 7.

'The fuller form is found, CHAUC. Pard. Tale, 375: "If so were that I might;" and Lodge writes, "If so I mourn." Similarly, "If so be thou darest."-Coriol. v. 14. 98.

Compare:

" While that."-Hen. V. v. 2. 46.

" Though that."

Coriol. i. 1. 144; Lear, iv. 6. 219; T. N. i. 3, 48.

"Lest that."-Hen. V. ii. 4. 142; T. N. iii. 4. 384.

"Whether that."-I Hen. VI. iv. I. 28.

^{*} St. Mark iii. 35. Where our Version has "Whosoever shall do the will of my Wather," Wickliffe has "Who that doth."

"So as that," frequently found.

"Since that,"-Mach. iv. 3, 106; Rich. III. v. 3, 202,

"How that" is also frequent. We also find that frequently affixed to prepositions for the purpose of giving them a conjunctival meaning: "For that" (Macb. iv. 3. 185); "in that;" "after that," &c.

The Folio has

"Your vertue is my priuiledge: for that
It is not night when I doe see your face.
Therefore I thinke I am not in the night."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 220.

The Globe omits the full stop after "face," making "for that" (because) answer to "therefore." Others remove the stop after "privilege" and place it after "for that."

Hence we find "but that" where we should certainly omit that

"The breath no sooner left his father's body But *that* his wildness, mortified in him, Seem'd to die too."—*Hen. V.* i. 1. 26.

288. That, origin of. Is that, when used as above, demonstrative or relative? The passage quoted above from Chaucer,* "If so were that," renders it probable that a similar ellipsis must be supplied with the other conjunctions: "Though (it be) that," "Since (it is) that," &c. With prepositions the case is different, e.g. "for that," "in that," "after that." For this use of that can be traced to A.-S., where we find "for pam pe," i.e. "for this purpose that," "after pam pe," &c. Here "pam" is more emphatic than "pe," and evidently gave rise to the English that. But "pam" was the A.-S. demonstrative. It follows that the that is (by derivative use, at all events) demonstrative in "for that," or, perhaps we should say, stands as an abridgment for "that (demonst.) that (rel.)." In fact, we can trace the A.-S. "after pam pe" to the E. E. "after that that," and so to the later "after that." Hence we must explain

"The rather

For that I saw the tyrant's power afoot."—Macb. iv. 3. 185. as "for that (that), i.e. for that, because, I saw." It would be wrong, however, to say that that in "since that" is, by derivative use, demonstrative. On the contrary, "since" in itself (sip-pan) contains the demonstrative, and "since that" corresponds to "sip-pan pat" where that (pat) is relative. And similarly "though that" corresponds to the A.-S. "peah pe," where that (pe) is the relative. The that in

* Compare "If so be that."

"after that," "before that," invites comparison with the "quan " in "postquam" and "antequam," though in the Latin it is the antecedent, not the relative, that is suppressed. The tendency of the relative to assume a conjunctional meaning is illustrated by the post-classical phrase, "dico quod (or quia) verum est," in the place of the classical "dico id verum esse." Many of the above Elizabethan phrases, which are now disused, may be illustrated from French: "Since that," "puisque;" "though that," "quoi que;" "before that," "avant que," &c. Instead of "for that," we find in French the full form, "par ce que," i.e. "by that (dem.) that (rel.)." It is probable that Chaucer and Mandeville, if not earlier writers. were influenced in their use of the conjunctional that by French usage. Even in the phrase "I say that it is true," that may be explained as having a relatival force (like 871, "quod," and the French "que"), meaning, "I say in what way, how that, it is true." In the phrase, "I come that (in the way in which; 'ut,' is, 'afin que') I may see," the relatival force of that is still more evident.

289. As is used in the same way as a conjunctional affix. Thus "zohile as:"

"Pirates . . . still revelling like lords till all be gone While as the silly owner of the goods Weeps over them."—2 Hen VI. i. 1. 225.

" When as:"

"When as the enemy hath been ten to one."—3 Hen VI. i. 2.75.

"When as the noble Duke of York was slain."—Ib. ii. I. 46. So Ib. v. 7. 34.

"Where as" is used by us metaphorically. But Shakespeare has "Unto St. Alban's.

Where as the king and queen do mean to hawk."
2 Hen VI. i. 2. 57.

"They back retourned to the princely Place,

Whereas an errant knight... they new arrived find."

Spens. F. Q. i. 4. 38.

So "there as" is used in earlier English. "There that" is also found in Chaucer in a local sense.

Of course the "so" in "whenso," "whereso" &c., is nearly the same in meaning, just as it is the same in derivation, with the as in "whenas," &c.

VERBS, FORMS OF.

290. Verbs, Transitive (formation of). The termination en (the infinitive inflection) is sufficient to change an English monosyllabic noun or adjective into a verb. Thus "heart" becomes "hearten;" "light," "lighten;" "gladden," &c. The licence with which adjectives could be converted into verbs is illustrated by

"Eche that enhauncith hym schal be lowid, and he that mekith hymself shall be highid."—WICKLIFFE, St. Luke xiv. 11.

In the general destruction of inflections which prevailed during the Elizabethan period, en was particularly discarded. It was therefore dropped in the conversion of nouns and adjectives into verbs, except in some cases where it was peculiarly necessary to distinguish a noun or adjective from a verb. (So strong was the discarding tendency that even the e in "owen," "to possess," was dropped, and Shakespeare continually uses "owe" for "owen" or "own" * (T. N. i. 5. 329; Rich. II. iv. I. 185). The n has now been restored.) But though the infinitive inflection was generally dropped, the converting power was retained, undiminished by the absence of the condition. Hence it may be said that any noun or adjective could be converted into a verb by the Elizabethan authors, generally in an active signification, as—

"Which happies (makes happy) those that pay the willing lover."

Sonn. 11.

"Time will unfair (deface) that (which) fairly doth excel."—Ib. 5. So:

Balm'd (healed) .- Lear, iii. 6. 105.

Barn.—"Barns a harvest."—R. of L.

Bench (sit) .- Lear, iii. 6. 40.

Bold (embolden). - " Not bolds the king." - Lear, v. 1. 26.

Brain. "Such stuff as madmen

Tongue and brain not." - Cymb. v. 4. 147.

i.e. "such stuff as madmen use their tongues in, but not their brains."

Child.—" Childing autumn."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 112: i.e. "autumn producing fruits as it were children."

Climate. - "Climates (neut.) [lives] here." - W. T. v. I. 170.

Cowarded.—"That hath so cowarded and chased your blood."—Hen. V. ii. 2. 75.

^{*} Compare " The gates are ope," Coriol. i. 4. 43.

Coy (to be coy). - "Nay, if he coy'd." - Coriol. v. 1. 6.

Disaster (make disastrous-looking).—"The holes where eyes should be which pitifully disaster the cheeks."—A. and C. ii. 7. 18.

False .- "Has falsed his faith."-SPENS. F. Q. i. 19. 46.

Fame. - "Fames his wit." - Sonn. 84.

Fault.-" Cannot fault (neut.) twice."-N. P. Pref.; B. J. Alch.iii I

Feeble. - "And feebling such as stand not in their liking."

Coriol. i. 1. 199.

Fever (give a fever to).—"The white hand of a lady fever thee, Shake thou to look on't."—A. and C. iii. 13. 138.

Fond. "My master loves her truly,
And I, poor monster, fond as much on him."—T. N. ii. 2. 35.

Fool (stultify). "Why, that's the way
To fool their preparations."—A. and C. v. 2. 225.

This explains

"Why old men fool and children calculate." - J. C. i. 3. 65.

Foot.—"Foots" (kicks).—Cymb. iii. 5. 148. On the other hand, in "A power already footed" (Lear, iii. 2. 14), it means "set on foot;" and in "the traitors late footed in the kingdom" (Ib. iii. 7. 45), it means "that have obtained a footing."

Force (to urge forcibly).—"Why force you this?"—Coriol. iii. 2. 51. Also (to attach force to, regard):

"But ah! who ever shunn'd by precedent
The destin'd ills she must herself assay,
Or forced examples 'gainst her own content,
To put the by-past perils in her way?"—L. C. 157.

i.e. "whoever regarded examples." So L. L. L. v. 2. 440.

Furnace. - "Furnaces sighs." - Cymb. i. 6. 66.

Gentle.—"This day shall gentle his condition."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 63.

God.—"He godded me."—Coriol. v. 3. 11.

Honest, -" Honests (honours) a lodging."-B. J. Sil. Wom. i. I.

Inherit (make an inheritor). "That can inherit us

So much as of a thought of ill in him."—Rich. II. ii. 1. &F.

Knee (kneel). - "Knee the way." - Coriol. v. 1. 5.

Lesson (teach).—"Lesson me."—T. G. of V.ii. 7. 5; Rich, III. i. 4. 246.
Linger (make to linger).
"Life

Which false hope lingers in extremity."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 72 · M. N. D. i. I 4.

Mad. - "Mads" (makes angry). - Rich. II. v. 5. 61.

Mellow (ripen, trans.).—T. N. i. 3. 43.

Mist (cover with mist).—"If that her breath will mist or stain the stone."—Lear, v. 3. 262.

Malice. - " Malices" (bears malice to). - N. P.

Pale (make pale).—"And 'gins to pale his uneffectual fire."

Hamlet, i. 5. 90.

Panging (paining). "'Tis a sufferance panging
As soul and body's severing."—Hen. VIII. ii. 3. 15.

Path (walk).—"For if thou path (neuter), thy native semblance on."—J. C. ii. 1. 83.

Plain (make plain).—"What's dumb in show I'll plain in speech."
P. of T. iii. Gower, 14.

Property (treat as a tool).—"They have here propertied me."
T. N. iv. 2. 100; K. J. v. 2. 79.

Rag'd (enraged).—There is no corruption (though the passage is marked as corrupt in the Globe) in

"For young colts being rag'd do rage the more."

Rich. II. ii, 1, 70.

Safe.—" And that which most with you should safe my going, Fulvia is dead."—A. and C. i. 3. 55.

i.e. "make my departure unsuspected by you of dangerous consequences."

Scale (weigh, put in the scale).—"Scaling his present bearing with his past."—Coriol. ii. 3. 257.

Stage (exhibit) .- "I do not like to stage me to their eyes."

M. for M. i. 1. 69.

Stock (put in the stocks). - "Stocking his messenger."

Lear, ii. 2. 139

Stream (unfurl) .- " Streaming the ensign." - Rich, II. iv. 1. 94.

Toil (give labour to).—Probably in

"Why this same strict and most observant watch So nightly *toils* the subject of the land."—Ham't, i. 1. 72. So "toil'd," passive.—Rich. II. iv. 1. 96.

Tongue,—"How might she tongue me?"—M. for M. iv. 4. 28.

i.e. "speak of, or accuse, me." "Tongue" means "speak" in

"Such stuff as madmen Tongue, and brain not."—Cymb. v. 4. 14

Trifle.—"Trifles (renders trifling) former knowing."—Mach. ii. 4. 4. Undeaf.—"My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 6.

Verse (expressing in verse).—"Versing love,"—M. N. D. ii. I. 67. Violent (act violently).—"And violenteth in a sense as strong,"

Tr. and Cr. iv. 4. 4.

Wage (pay: so E. E.).—"He waged me."—Coriol. v. 6. 40.

Womb (enclose).—"The close earth wombs or the profound sea hides."

W. T. iv. 4. 501.

Worthied (ennobled). - "That worthied him." - Lear, ii. 2. 128.

The dropping of the prefix be was also a common licence. We have recurred to "bewitch" and "belate," but Shakespeare wrote—

"And witch the world with noble horsemanship."

I Hen. IV. iv. 1. 110

"Now spurs the lated traveller apace."—Macbeth, iii. 3. 6.

"Disorder, that hath spoil'd us, friend us now."

Hen. V. iv. 5. 17.

291. Sometimes an intransitive verb is converted into a transitive verb.

Cease.—"Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!"
T. of Sh. Ind. 2. 13. So Cymb. v. 5. 255.

Expire.—Time "expires a term."—R. and J. i. 4. 109.

Fall.—An executioner "falls an axe."—A. Y. L. in 5.5 and probably (though fall may be the subjunctive) in

"Think on me, and fall thy edgeless axe."—Rich. III. v. 3. 135.

Peer. —"Peers (causes to peer) his chin."—R. of L.

Perish.—"Thy flinty heart . . . might perish (destroy) Margaret." 2 Hen. VI. iii, 2. 100.

Quail (make to quail).—"But when he meant to quail and shake the orb."—A. and C. v. ii. 85.

Relish.—"Relishes (makes acceptable) his nimble notes to pleasing ears."—R. of L.

Remember (remind: so Fr.).—"Every stride I take Will but remember me what," &c.—Rich. II. i. 3. 269.

Retire (so Fr.).—"That he might have retired his power"
Rich. II. ii. 2. 46.

Shine.—"God doth not shine honour upon all men equally."—B. E. 45. Squint.—" Squints the eye and makes the harelip."—Lear, iii. 4.122. i.e. "makes the eye squint."

Fear. This word is not in point. It had the signification of "frighten" in A.-S. and E. E. Hence,

"Thou seest what's past : go fear thy king withal."

3 Hen. VI. iii. 3, 226,

"This aspect of mine hath fear'd the valiant."

M. of V. ii. 1. 9.

So in Spenser, "Words fearen babes."

The same remark applies to "learn," which meant "teach."

"The red plague rid you For learning me your language."—Tempest, i. 2. 365.

292. The licence in the formation of verbs arose partly from the unfixed nature of the language, partly from the desire of brevity and force. Had it continued, it would have added many useful and expressive words to the language. In vigorous colloquy we still occasionally use such expressions as-

"Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncles."-Rich. II. ii. 3. 87.

"Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no prouds."

R. and F. iii. 5. 153.

As it is, we can occasionally use the termination -fy, as in "stultify," and sometimes the suffix -en or the prefix be-. But for the most part we are driven to a periphrasis.

293. Transitive verbs are rarely used intransitively.

"But, sir, forgive me Eye (appear).

Since my becomings kill me, when they do not

Eye well to you. -A. and C. i. 3. 97. Lack (to be needed).-" And what so poor a man as Hamlet is

May do to express his love and friending to you, God willing, shall not *lack.*"—*Hamlet*, i. 5. 186. So E. E.

Need (to be needed). - "These ceremonies need not."

B. J. E. in &c. iii. 2.

This is perhaps a remnant of the ancient love for impersonal verbs. Such verbs would be appropriate to express "need." Hence in Matt. xix. 20, Mark x. 21, Wickliffe has "faileth to me" and "to thee," where the A. V. has "what do I lack" and "thou lackest." Similarly, Milton (Areopagitica) uses "what wants there?" for "what is needed?" and this use still exists in conversation. So often Shakespeare, e.g.

"There wanteth now our brother Gloucester here."

Rich. III. ii. 1. 43,

Show (like our "look:" compare German "schauen").

"Each substance of a grief hath twenty shadows Which shows like grief itself."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 15.

294. Verbs Passive (formation of). Hence arose a curious use of passive verbs, mostly found in the participle. Thus "famous'd for fights" (Sonn. 25) means "made famous;" but in

"Who, young and simple, would not be so lover'd?"-L. C.

lover'd means "gifted with a lover." And this is the general rule. A participle formed from an adjective means "made (the adjective)," and derived from a noun means "endowed with (the noun)." On the other hand, stranger'd below means, not "gifted with a stranger," but "made a stranger." This use will be best illustrated by the following examples:—

Childed (provided with children).—" He childed as I father'd."
Lear, iii. 6. 117

Faith'd (believed).—" Make thy words faith'd."—Ib. ii. 1. 72.

Father'd (provided with a father). See above, Lear, iii. 6. 117. Feebled (enfeebled).—K. J. v. 2. 146.

Fielded (encamped in the field).—"Our fielded friends."

Coriol. i. 4. 12.

Grav'd (entomb'd).—" Grav'd in the hollow ground."
Rich. II. iii. 2. 140.

Guiled (deceitful). — "A guiled shore." — M. of V. iii. 2. 97.

Compare: "Beguiled (i.e. made plausible)
With outward honesty, but yet defiled
With inward vice."—R. of L.

Inhabited (made to inhabit).—"O, knowledge ill-inhabited, worse than Jove in a thatch'd house."—A. Y. L. iii. 3. 10.

King'd (ruled).—"King'd of our fears, until our fears, resolv'd, Be by some certain king purged and deposed."—K. J. ii. 1.371. i.e. "ruled by our fears."

Look'd (looking).—"Lean-look'd prophets."—Rich. II. ii. 4. 11.

Lorded (made a lord). - "He being thus lorded." - Tempest, i. 2. 97.

Contrast this with "king'd" above, which means not "made a king," but "ruled as by a king."

Meered. "When half to half the world opposed,
He being the meered question."—A. and C. iii. 13.10

The word "meered" is marked as corrupt by the Globe: but perhaps it is the verb from the adj. "meere" or "mere," which in Elizabethan English means "entire." Hence, "he being the entire question," i.e. "Antony, being the sole cause of the battle, ought not to have fled."

Million'd. - "The million'd accidents of time." - Sonn. 115.

Mouthed. - "Mouthed graves." - Ib. 77.

Necessited.—"I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood Necessited to help, that by this token I would relieve her."—A. W. v. 3. 85.

i.e. "made necessitous."

Nighted (benighted).—"His nighted life."—Lear, iv. 5. 13; "Thy nighted colour."—Hamlet, i. 2. 68: i.e. "thy night-like colour."

Paled.—"Paled cheeks."—L. C. 28.

Pensived .-- Ib. 31.

Pined.—"His pined cheek."—Ib. 5.

Practised (plotted against).—"The death-practised duke."

Lear, iv. 6. 284.

Servanted (made subservient). - Coriol. v. 2. 89.

Slow'd (retarded).—"I would I knew not why it should be slow'd."
R. and J. iv. 1. 16.

Stranger'd (made a stranger).—"Dower'd with our curse, and stranger'd with our oath."—Lear, i. 1, 207.

Toil'd.—"I have been so toil'd."—B. J. E. out &c. iii. I.

Traded.—" Traded pilots."—Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 64.

Unlook'd (unlooked for).—Rich. III. i. 3. 214: compare look (seek).
Hen. V. iv. 7. 76.

Unsured (unassured).—"Thy now unsured assurance to the crown."

K. J. ii. 1. 471.

Vouchsafed (?).—" To your most pregnant and vouchsafed ear."

T. N. iii. 1. 190.

i.e. capable of conceiving and graciously bestowed.

Window'd (placed in a window).

"Wouldest thou be window'd in great Rome."

A. and C. iv. 14. 72.

Woman'd (accompanied by a woman).

"To have him see me woman'd."—Othello, iii. 4. 195.

Year'd .- "Year'd but to thirty."-B. J. Sejan. i. I.

In many cases a participle seems preferred where an adjective would be admissible, as "million'd." So in *Tempest*, v. I. 43, "the azured vault."

295. Verbs Passive. With some few intransitive verbs, mostly of motion, both be and have are still used. "He is gone," "he has gone." The is expresses the present state, the has the activity necessary to cause the present state. The is evidently quite as justifiable as has (perhaps more so), but it has been found more convenient to make a division of labour, and assign distinct tasks to is and has. Consequently is has been almost superseded by has in all but the passive forms of transitive verbs. In Shakespearian English, however, there is a much more common use of is with intransitive verbs.

```
"My life is run his compass."—J. C. v. 3. 25.
```

"Being sat."-L. C. st. x.

"Being deep stept in age."—ASCH. 189.

"An enter'd tide."-Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 159.

"I am arrived for fruitful Lombardy."-T. of Sh. i. I. 3.

"Pucelle is entered into Orleans."

1 Hen. VI. i. 5. 36; Cymb. v. 4. 120.

"Five hundred horse . . . are marched up."

2 Hen. I

"The king himself is rode to view their battle."

2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 186.

Hen. V. iv. 3. 1.

"His lordship is walk'd forth."—2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 3.

"The noble Brutus is ascended."—J. C. iii. 2. 11.

"You now are mounted

Where powers are your retainers."-Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 112.

"I am descended of a gentler blood."—I Hen. VI. v. 4. 8.

"Through his lips do throng

Weak words, so thick come (particip.) in his poor heart's aid."

R. of L. 1784.

Compare our "welcome."

"How now, Sir Proteus, are you crept before us?"
T. G. of V. iv. 1. 18.
So Rich. III. i. 2. 259.

"Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away."

M. Ado, iv. 2. 63.

[&]quot;Whether he be scaped."-3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 2.

This idion is common with words of "happening:"

"And bring us word . . . how everything is chanced."

F. C. v. 4. 32; 2 Hen. IV. i. I. 87.

"Things since then befallen."—3 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 106.

"Of every one these happen'd accidents."-Temp. v. 1. 249.

"Sad stories chanced in the days of old."-T. A. iii. 2. 83.

Hence a participial use like "departed" in

"The treachery of the two fled hence."-W. T. ii. 1. 195.

In some verbs that are both transitive and intransitive this idiom is natural:

"You were used to say." - Coriol. iv. 1. 3.

Perhaps this is sometimes a French idiom. Thus, "I am not purposed" (MONTAIGNE, 38), is a translation of "je ne suis pas délibéré."

This constant use of "be" with participles of verbs of motion may perhaps explain, by analogy, the curious use of "being" with the present participle in

"To whom being going."—Cymb. iii. 6. 63.

As above mentioned, the tendency to invent new active verbs increased the number of passive to the diminution of neuter verbs:

"Poor knave, thou art o'erwatched." - J. C. iv. 3. 241.

"Be wreak'd (i.e. avenged) on him."—V. and A. So, N. P. 194.

"Possess" was sometimes used for to "put in possession," as in "Possess us, possess us" (T. N. ii. 3. 149): i.e. "inform us." So M. of V. iv. 1. 35. Hence the play on the word.

"Deposing thee before thou wert *possess'd* (of the throne), Which art *possessed* (with a spirit of infatuation) to destroy thyself."—*Rich. II.* ii. 1. 107-8; *M. of V.* i. 3. 65.

We still say a man "is well read." But in Mach. i. 4. 9, there is-

"As one that had been studied in his death."

"For Clarence is well-spoken."-Rich. III. i. 3. 348.

"I am declined into the vale of years." - Othello, iii. 3. 265.

"How comes it, Michael, you are thus forgot?"

1b. ii. 3. 188.

i.e. "you have forgotten yourself."

"If I had been remembered."—Rich. III. ii. 4. 22.

We still say "well-behaved," but not

"How have I been behaved."-Othello, iv 2. 108.

It was perhaps already considered a vulgarity, for Dogberry says (M. Ado, iv. 2. 1):

"Is our whole dissembly appear'd?"

and in a prose scene (Coriol. iv. 3. 9)-

"Your favour is well appear'd (fol.) by your tongue."

Perhaps, however, appear was sometimes used as an active verb. See Cymb. iv. 2. 47, iii. 4. 148, quoted in 296.

- 296. Verbs Reflexive. The predilection for transitive verbs was perhaps one among other causes why many verbs which are now used intransitively, were used by Shakespeare reflexively. Many of these were derived from the French.
 - " Advise you."-T. N. iv. 2. 102.
 - "Where then, alas! may I complain myself?"-Rich. II. i. 2. 42.
 - "Endeavour thyself to sleep."-T. N. iv. 2. 104.
 - "I do repent me,"-Rich. II. v. 3. 52.

"Repose you."-1b. ii. 3. 161.

"He... retired himself."—Rich. II. iv. 1. 96; Coriol. i. 3. 30, which is in accordance with the original meaning of the word.

It has been shown above that "fear" is used transitively for "frighten." Hence, perhaps, as in Greek φοβοῦμαι,

"I fear me."—2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 150.
Appear is perhaps used reflexively in

"No, no; we will hold it as a dream till it appear itself."

M. Ado, i. 2. 22.

"If you could wear a mind

Dark as your fortune is, and but disguise

That which to appear itself must not yet be."—Cymb. iii. 4. 148. i.e. "that which, as regards showing itself, must not yet have any existence." Though these passages might be perhaps explained without the reflexive use of appear, yet this interpretation is made more probable by

"Your favour is well appear'd."—Coriol. iv. 3. 9.

297. Verbs Impersonal. An abundance of Impersonal verbs is a mark of an early stage in a language, denoting that a speaker has not yet arrived so far in development as to trace his own actions and feelings to his own agency. There are many more impersonal verbs in Early English than in Elizabethan, and many more in Elizabethan than in modern English. Thus—

"It yearns me not."-Hen. V. iv. 3. 26.

"It would pity any living eye."—SPENS. F. Q. i. 6. 43.

Comp. 2 Maccabees iii. 21: "It would have pitied a man."

"It dislikes me." - Othello, ii. 3. 49.

So "it likes me," "meseems," "methinks," &c.

"Which likes me."-Hen. V. iv. 3, 77.

And therefore like is probably (not merely by derivation, but consciously used as) impersonal in

"So like you, sir."-Cymb. ii. 3. 59.

Want is probably not impersonal but intransitive, "is wanting," in

"There wants no diligence in seeking him?"*—Cymb, iv. 3, 20.

The singular verb is quite Shakespearian in

"Though bride and bridegroom wants (are wanting) For to supply the places at the table."—T. of Sh. iii. 2. 248.

So in "Sufficeth my reasons are both good and weighty."—Ib.i. 1.252.

"Sufficeth I am come to keep my word."—Ib. iii. 2. 108.

the comma after "sufficeth" is superfluous; "that I am come to keep my word sufficeth."

In

"And so betide to me As well I tender you and all of yours,"—Rich. III. ii. 4. 71.

betide may be used impersonally. But perhaps so is loosely used as a demonstrative for "such fortune," in the same way in which as (280) assumes the force of a relative. If betide be treated as impersonal, befal in "fair befal you" may be similarly treated, and in that case "fair" is an adverb. But see (5). The supposition that "betide" is impersonal and "fair" an adverb is confirmed by "Well be (it) with you, gentlemen."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 398.

The impersonal needs (which must be distinguished from the adverbial genitive needs) often drops the s; partly, perhaps, because of the constant use of the noun need. It is often found with "what," where it is sometimes hard to say whether "what" is an adverb and need a verb, or "what" an adjective and need a noun.

> "What need the bridge much broader than the flood?" M. Ado, i. 1. 318,

either "why need the bridge (be) broader?" or "what need is there (that) the bridge (be) broader?"

Comp. the old use of "thinketh" (seemeth):

"Where it thinks best unto your royal self."—Rich. III. iii. 1. 63. The Folio has thinkst; and perhaps this is the true reading, there being a confusion between "it thinks" and "thinkst thou." Compare "thinkst thee" in

"Doth it not, thinkst thee, stand me now upon?"—Hamlet, v. 2. 63.

The impersonal and personal uses of *think* were often confused. Chapman (Walker) has "*methink*." S seems to have been added to assimilate the termination to that of "methinks" in "methoughts" (W. T. i. 2. 154; Rich. III. i. 4. 9).

It is not easy, perhaps not possible, to determine whether, in the phrase "so please your highness," please is used impersonally or not; for on the one hand we find, "So please him come,"

(7. C. iii. 1. 140);

and on the other,

"If they please."—W. T. ii. 3. 142.

"I do repent: but Heaven hath pleased it so."—Ham. iii. 4. 173.

VERBS, AUXILIARY.

298. Be, Beest, &c., was used in A.-S. (been) generally in a future sense. Hence, since the future and subjunctive are closely connected in meaning, be assumed an exclusively subjunctive use; and this was so common, that we not merely find "if it be" (which might represent the proper inflected subjunctive of be), but also "if thou beest," where the indicative is used subjunctively.

"If, after three days' space, thou here best found."

2 Hen, VI. iii, 2, 295.

"Beest thou sad or merry,

The violence of either thee becomes."—A. and C. i. 5. 59. And (Mätzner, vol. i. p. 367), bee, beest, bee, pl. bee, is stated by Wallis to be the regular form of the subjunctive. Hence, from the mere force of association, be is often used (after though, if, and other words that often take the subjunctive) without having the full force of the subjunctive. Indeed any other verb placed in the same context would be used in the indicative. Thus:

"Though Page be a secure (careless) fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty."—M. W. of W. ii. 1. 242.

"If Hamlet from himself be ta'en away

And, when he's not himself, does wrong Laertes."-Ham.v.2.245.

"If he be a whoremonger and comes before him, He were as good go a mile on his errand."—M. for M. iii. 2. 38.

299. Be in questions and dependent sentences.

So, as a rule, it will be found that be is used with some notion of doubt, question, thought, &c.; for instance, (a) in questions, and (b) after verbs of thinking.

(a) "Be my horses ready?"—Lear, i. 5. 36.

"Be the players ready?"—Hamlet, iii. 2. 111.

This is especially frequent in questions of appeal:

"Where be his quiddities?"—Hamlet, v. 1. 107.

"Where be thy brothers?"—Rich. III. iv. 4. 92.

"Where be the bending knees that flatter'd thee? Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?"

Ib. iv. 4. 95-6.

And in questions implying doubt, e.g. "where can they be?"

"Where be these bloody thieves?"-Othello, v. I. 64.

Partly, perhaps, by attraction to the previous be, partly owing to the preceding where, though not used interrogatively, we have

"Truths would be tales,

Where now half-tales be truths."—A. and C. ii. 2. 137.

(b) "I think it be, sir; I deny it not."—C. of E. v. 1. 379.

"I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell."—I Hen. VI. ii. 1. 46.

"I think he be transformed into a beast."-A. Y. L. ii. 7. 1.

"I think it be no other but even so."—Hamlet, i. 1. 108.

So I Hen. IV. ii. 1. 12; T. G. of V. ii. 3. 6.

Be expresses more doubt than is after a verb of thinking. In the following, the Prince thinks it certain that it is past midnight, the Sheriff thinks it may possibly be two o'clock:

" Prince. I think it is good morrow, is it not?

Sheriff. Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock."

1 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 573.

Very significant is this difference in the speech of the doubtful Othallo—

"I think my wife be honest, and think she is not,"

Othello, iii. 3. 384.

where the *is* is emphatic and the line contains the extra dramatic syllable. *Be* is similarly used by a jealous husband after "hope:"

"Ford. Well, I hope it be not so."—M. W. of W. ii. 1. 113, where the hope is mixed with a great deal of doubt.

"I kissed it (the bracelet):
I hope it be not gone to tell my lord
That I kiss aught but he,"—Cymb, ii, 3, 153,

where, though the latter part is of course fanciful, there is a real fear that the bracelet may be lost.

Also, in a dependent sentence like the following:

" Prove true

That I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you."—T. N. iii. 4. 410. Be follows "when," as "where" above, especially where when alludes to a future possibility.

"Haply a woman's voice may do some good

When articles too nicely urged be stood on."—Hen. V.v. 2.93.

In "Alas, our frailty is the cause, not we,

For such as we are made, of such we be,"—T. N. ii. 2. 33. it can scarcely be asserted that "for" is "for that" or "because." It is more probable that the scene originally ended there, and that Shakespeare used be in order to get the rhyme, which so often terminates a scene.

300. Be is much more common with the plural than the singular. Probably only this fact, and euphony, can account for

"When blood is nipp'd and ways be foul."—L. L. L. v. 2. 926.

In "When he sees reason of fears, as we do, his fears out of doubt be of the same relish as ours,"—Hen. V. iv. 1. 113.

the be may partly be explained as not stating an independent fact, but a future event, dependent on the clause "when," &c. Partly, perhaps, "out of doubt" is treated like "there is no doubt that," and be follows in a kind of dependent clause.

Be is also used to refer to a number of persons, considered not individually, but as a kind or class.

"O, there be players that I have seen play, and heard others praise, and that highly, that," &c.—Hamlet, iii. 2. 32; ib. 44.

"There be some sports are painful."-Tempest, iii. 1. 1.

But it cannot be denied that the desire of euphony or variety seems sometimes the only reason for the use of be or are.

"Where is thy husband now? Where be thy brothers?"—Rich. III. iv. 4. 92.

301. Were. What has been said above of be applies to were, that it is often used as the subjunctive where any other verb would

not be so used, and indeed where the subjunctive is unnecessary or wrong, after "if," "though," &c., and in dependent sentences.

In early authors there seems to have been a tendency to use should for shall, and were for be after "that" in subordinate sentences: "Go we fast that we were there." "Let us pray that he would." "My will is that it were so." In these sentences a wish is implied, and were, perhaps, indicates the desire that the wish should be fulfilled, not hereafter, but at once, as a thing of the past.

"I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword with a dozen of them two hours together."—I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 182.

"If there were anything in thy pocket but tavern reckonings, I am a villain."—I Hen. IV. iii. 3. 180.

"What if we do omit

This reprobate till he were well inclined?"—M. for M. iv. 3. 78.

In some of these passages there may be traced, perhaps, a change of thought: "I am a rogue (that is, I should be), if it were true that I was not," &c. "What if we omit (what if we were to omit) this reprobate till he were well inclined?"

"Duchess. I pray thee, pretty York, who told thee this? York. Grandam, his nurse.

Duchess. His nurse! Why, she was dead ere thou wert born. York. If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me."

Rich. III. ii. 4. 34.

"If ever Bassianus, Cæsar's son,

Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,

Koon then this passage to the Capital"

Keep then this passage to the Capitol."—T. A. i. 1. 11.

Comp. 2 Hen. IV. v. 2. 85; A. and C. i. 3. 41.

"No marvel, then, though he were ill-affected."—Lear, ii. 1. 100. where the meaning is: "It is no wonder, then, that he was a traitor," and no doubt or future meaning is implied.

Somewhat similar is an idiom common in good authors even now: "It is not strange that he should have succeeded," for the shorter and simpler, "It is not strange that he succeeded."

"Lamachus, . . . whom they sent hither, though he were waxen now somewhat old."—N. P. 172.

So, but with a notion of concession,

"And though (granting that) he were unsatisfied in getting, Which was a sin, yet in bestowing, madam, He was most princely."—Hen. VIII. iv. 2. 55.

"If it were so it was a grievous fault."—J. C. iii. 2. 84. So, beginning with certainty:

"She that was ever fair and never proud."—Othello, ii. 1. 149 and ending with doubt:

"She was a wight, if ever such wight were."-Ib. ii. 1. 159.

In dependent sentences even after "know," as well as "think:"

"I would I had thy inches: thou shouldst know There were a heart in Egypt."—A. and C. i. 3. 41.

"Which of your friends have I not strove to love, Although I knew he were mine enemy."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 31.

"Imagine' twere the right Vincentio."- T. of Sh. iv. 4. 12.

"As who should say in Rome no justice were."-T. A. iv. 3. 20.

"But that it eats our victuals, I should think Here were a fairy."—Cymb. iii. 6. 42.

"He will lie, sir, with such volubility that you would think truth were a fool."—A. W. iv. 3, 285.*

302. Were is used after "while" in

"If they would yield us but the superfluity while it were whole-some."—Coriol. i. 1. 18.

and, still more remarkably, after "until," referring to the past, in

"It hath been taught us from the primal state
That he which is, was wish'd until he were."

A. and C. i. 4. 42.

The following is contrary to our usage, though a natural attraction:

"And they it were that ravished our sister."—T. A. v. 3. 99. for "it was they." See 425 at end.

Can. See May, 307.

303. Do, Did: original use. In Early as in modern English, the present and past indefinite of the indicative were generally represented by inflected forms, as "He comes," "He came," without the aid of do or did. Do was then used only in the sense of "to cause," "to make," &c.; and in this sense was followed by an infinitive.

^{*} In this and many other instances the verb in the second clause may be attracted into the subjunctive by the subjunctive in the first clause.

"They have done her understonde." -- GOWER.*

i.e. "they have caused her to understand."

Similarly it is used like the French "faire" or "laisser" with the ellipsis of the person who is "caused" to do the action, thus—

"Do stripen me and put me in a sakke, And in the nexte river do me drenche."

CHAUCER, Marchante's Tale, 10,074.

i e. "cause (some one) to strip me-to drench me."

In the same way "let" is repeatedly used in Early English:

"He let make Sir Kay seneschal of England."—Morte d'Arthur. where a later author might have written "he did make."

Gradually the force of the infinitive inflection *en* was weakened and forgotten; thus "do stripen" became "do strip," and do was used without any notion of causation.†

Sometimes do is reduplicated, as:

"And thus he did do slen hem alle three."—CHAUCER, C. T. 7624. or used with "let," as in

"He let the feste of his nativitee Don crien."—CHAUCER, C. T. 10,360.

The verb was sometimes used transitively with an objective noun, as:

"He did thankingys."—WICKLIFFE, St. Matt. xv. 36. and so in Shakespeare in

"Do me some charity."-Lear, iii. 4. 61.

"This fellow did the third (daughter) a blessing."

Lear, i. 4. 115. "Do my good-morrow to them."—Hen. V. iv. 1. 26.

"To do you salutation from his master."

J. C. iv. 2. 5; Rich. III. v. 3. 210.

"After the last enchantment you did here."—T. N. iii. I. 123. and in the words "to don," i.e. "put on," and "dout," i.e. "put out."

But as a rule do had become a mere auxiliary, so that we even find it an auxiliary to itself, as in

"Who does do you wrong?"-T. N. v. 1. 143.

* Quoted from Richardson's Dictionary.

† The question may arise why do was preserved to let as an auxiliary verb. Probably the ambiguity of let, which meant both "suffer" and "hinder," was an obstacle to its general use.

304. Do, did. How used by Shakespeare? In St. Matt. xv. 37, Wickliffe has "and alle eten;" Tyndal, &c., "all dia eat." It is probable that one reason for inserting the did here was the similarity between the present and past of "eat," and the desire to avoid ambiguity. In the following verse, however, Wickliffe has "etun," Tyndal "ate," and the rest "did eat." This shows how variable was the use of did in the sixteenth century, and what slight causes determined its use or non-use. The following passage in connection with the above would seem to show that did was joined to eat to avoid ambiguity, and when it was not joined to other verbs:

"And the Peloponnesians did eat it up while the Byzantines died."—N. P. 180.

It can hardly be denied that in such lines as

"It lifted up it (so Folio) head, and did address Itself to motion,"—Hamlet, i. 2. 216.

the did is omitted in the first verb and inserted in the second simply for the sake of the metre. Did is commonly used in excited narrative:

"Horses did neigh, and dying men did groan,
And ghosts did shriek and squeal about the streets."

F. C. ii. 2. 23

"The sheeted dead Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets."

Hamlet, i. 1. 116.

But in both the above passages the inflection in *-ed is also used.

305. Verbs: "Do" omitted before "Not." In Early English the tenses were represented by their inflections, and there was no need of the auxiliary "do." As the inflections were disused, "do" came into use, and was frequently employed by Elizabethan authors. They, however, did not always observe the modern rule of using the auxiliary whenever not precedes the verb. Thus—

- "I not doubt."-Temp. ii. 1. 121.
- "Whereof the ewe not bites."-Ib. v. 1. 38.
- "It not belongs to you."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 98.
- "It not appears to me."—Ib. 107.
- "Hear you bad writers and though you not see."

"On me whose all not equals Edward's moiety."

Rich. III. i. 2. 259.

"Neat Terence, witty Plautus, now not please."

B. J. on Shakespeare.

Less commonly in a subordinate sentence

"I beseech you . . . that you not delay."—Coriol. i. 6. 60.

Later, a rule was adopted that either the verb, or the auxiliary part of it, must precede the negative: "I doubt not," or "I do not doubt." Perhaps this may be explained as follows. The old English negative was "ne." It came before the verb, and was often supplemented by a negative adverb "nawicht," "nawt," "noht" (which are all different forms of "no whit" or "naught"), coming after the verb.

"His hors was good, but he ne was not gaie."

CHAUCER, C. T. 74.

(Compare in French "ne... pas," in Latin, "non (nenu)," i.e. "ne... unum.") In the fifteenth century (Mätzner) this reduplication began to pass out of fashion. In Shakespeare's time it had been forgotten; but, perhaps, we may trace its influence in the double negative "nor will not," &c., which is common in his works.

"Vex not yourself, nor strive not with your breath."

Rich. II. ii. 1. 3.

Possibly the idiom now under consideration is also a result of the Early English idiom. The not, which had ousted the old dual negative "ne"... "not," may have been thought entitled to a place either before or after the verb. Latin, moreover, would tend in the same direction. It must further be remembered that not is now less emphatic than it was, when it retained the meaning of "naught" or "no-whit." We can say, "I in-no-way trust you," or, perhaps, even "I no-whit trust you," but not is too unemphatic to allow us to say "I not trust you." Hence the "do" is now necessary to receive a part of the emphasis.

Not is sometimes found in E. E. and A.-S. between the subject and the verb, especially in subordinate sentences where the not, "no-whit," is emphatic.

306. Do, Did, omitted and inserted. In modern English prose there is now an established rule for the insertion and omission of do and did. They are inserted in negative and interrogative sentences, for the puroose of including the "not" or the subject of

the interrogation between the two parts of the verb, so as to avoid ambiguity. Thus: "Do our subjects revolt?" "Do not forbid him." They are not inserted except for the purpose of unusual emphasis in indicative sentences such as "I remember." In Elizabethan English no such rule had yet been established, and we find—

"Revolt our subjects?"-Rich. II. iii. 2. 100.

"Forbid him not."-Mark ix. 39. E. V.

On the other hand-

"I do remember."-T. N. iii. 3. 48.

This licence of omission sometimes adds much to the beauty and vigour of expression.

"Gives not the hawthorn-bush a sweeter shade?"

3 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 42.

is far more natural and vigorous than

"Does not the hawthorn-bush give sweeter shade?"

307. Can, May, Might. May originally meant "to be able" (E. E. "mag;" A.-S. "magan;" German "mögen"). A trace of this meaning exists in the noun "might," which still means "ability." Thus we find

"I am so hungry that I may (can) not slepe."

CHAUCER, Monke's Tale, 14,744.

"Now help me, lady, sith ye may and can."

Knighte's Tale, 2,314.

In the last passage *may* means "can," and "ye can" means "ye have knowledge or skill." This, the original meaning of "can," is found, though very rarely, in Shakespeare:

"I've seen myself and served against the French,
And they can well on horseback."—Hamlet, iv. 7. 85.

i.e. "they are well skilled."

"And the priest in surplice white
That defunctive music can."—Phænix and Turtle, 14.
And perhaps in

"The sum of all I can, I have disclosed;
Why or for what these nobles were committed
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady."

Rich. 111. ii. 4. 40.

"The strong'st suggestion
Our worser genius can."—Tempest, iv 1 27.

A trace of this emphatic use of can is found in

"What can man's wisdom

In the restoring his bereaved sense?"—Lear, iv. 4. 8.

But, as "can" (which even in A.-S. meant "I know how to" and therefore "I am able") gradually began to encroach on may, and to assume the meaning "to be able," may was compelled to migrate from "ability" to "possibility" and "lawfulness." Thus "mögen" signifies moral, "können" physical, possibility. In the following passage:

"From hence it comes that this babe's bloody hand

May not be cleansed with water of this well,"—F. Q. ii. 10. it is not easy at once to determine whether may means "can" or "is destined," "must," "ought." Hence we are prepared for the transition which is illustrated thus by Bacon:*

"For what he may do is of two kinds, what he may do as just and what he may do as possible."

308. May in "I may come" is therefore ambiguous, since it may signify either "lawfulness," as in "I may come if I like," or "possibility," as in "I may come, but don't wait for me." In the latter sentence the "possibility" is transposed so as to include the whole sentence "it is possible that I may come," just as—

"He needs not our mistrust,"—Mach. iii. 3. 2. means "it is not necessary that we should mistrust him."

309. May is used with various shades of the meaning of "permission," "possibility," &c.:

"He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you."

M. for M. iii. 2. 172.

i.e. "if I am permitted by heaven to live long enough."

It is a modest way of stating what ought to be well known, in

"If you may please to think I love the king."—W. T. iv. 4. 532.

"A score of ewes may be worth ten pounds."—2 Hen. IV. iii. 2.57.

1.e. "is possibly worth ten pounds." "May be" is often thus used almost adverbially for possibly.

In "Season your admiration for awhile Till I may deliver,"—Hamlet, i. 2. 193.

may means "can," "have time to."

"May (can) it be possible?"—Hen. V. ii. 2. 100.

* Quoted from Todd's "Johnson."

310. May with a Negative. Thus far Elizabethan and modern English agree; but when a negative is introduced, a diver-

gence appears.

In "I may not-come" may would with us mean "possibility," and the "not" would be connected with "come" instead of may; "my not-coming is a possibility." On the other hand, the Elizabethans frequently connect the "not" with may, and thus with them "I may-not come" might mean "I can-not or must-not come." Thus may is parallel to "must" in the following passage:—

"Yet I must not, For certain friends that are both his and mine, Whose loves I may not drop."—Macb. iii. 1. 122.

Probably this disuse of may in "may not" (in the sense of "must not") may be explained by the fact that "may not" implies compulsion, and may has therefore been supplanted in this sense by the more compulsory "must."

311. May used for the old subjunctive in the sense of purpose.

If we compare Wickliffe's with the sixteenth-century Versions of the New Testament, it appears that, in the interval, the subjunctive had lost much of its force, and consequently the use of auxiliary verbs to supply the place of the subjunctive had largely increased.

In I Cor. iv. 8, Wickliffe has, "And I wold that ye regne, that also we regnen with you," where the later Versions, "And I would to God that ye did reign, that we also might reign." So also Col. i. 28: "Techynge eche man in al wisdom; that we offre eche man perfight," where the rest have "that we may offer" or "to offer." So ib. 25, "that I fille the word of God" for "that I may fulfil." But may is found very early used with its modal force

The subjunctive of purpose is found in-

"Go bid thy mistress . . . she strike upon the bell."—Macb. ii. 1. 31.
"Sir, give me this water that I thirst not."—St. Yohn iv. 15.

"He wills you, in the name of God Almighty,

That you divest yoursels."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 78.

But it was not easy to distinguish the subjunctive representing an

* So in ante-Elizabethan English, and in Spenser, we find "nill," "not," for "will not," "wot not," "nam" for "am not," &c. "Cannot" is also a trace of the close connection between the verb and the accompanying negative.

object, from the indicative representing a fact, since both were used after "that," and there was nothing but their inflections (which are similar in the plural) to distinguish the two. The following is an instance of the indicative following "that:"—

"But freshly looks and over-bears attaint
With cheerful semblance and sweet majesty,
That every wretch pining and pale before,
Beholding him, plucks comfort from his looks."

Hen. V. iv. Prologue, 39.

Hence arose the necessity, as the subjunctive inflections lost their force, of inserting some word denoting "possibility" or "futurity" to mark the subjunctive of purpose. "Will" is apparently used in this sense as follows:—

"Therefore in fierce tempest is he coming, In thunder and in earthquake like a Jove, That, if requiring fail, he will compel."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 101.

But, as a rule, may was used for the present subjunctive and might for the past, according to present usage. "That" is omitted in

"Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck."—I Hen. VI. ii. 5. 37. i.e. "that I may embrace."

In "Lord marshal, command our officers at arms Beready to direct these home alarms,"—Rich. II. i. 204-5. it is doubtful whether "be" is the subjunctive or the infinitive with "to" omitted (349). I prefer the former hypothesis, supplying "that" after "command." Compare

"Some one take order Buckingham be brought To Salisbury."—Rich. III. iv. 4. 539.

So "that" is omitted before "shall:"

"The queen hath heartily consented he shall espouse Elizabeth."

Ruch. III. iv. 5. 18.

312. Might, the past tense of may, was originally used in the sense of "was able" or "could."

"He was of grete elde and might not travaile."—R. BRUNNE.

So "That mought not be distinguish'd."—3 Hen. VI. v. 2. 45.

"So loving to my mother, That he *might* not beteem the winds of heaven Visit her face too roughly."—*Hamlet*, i. 2. 141.

i.e. "could not bring himself to allow the winds," &c.

It answers to "can" in the following :-

"Ang. Look, what I will not that I cannot do.

Isab. But might you do't, and do the world no wrong?"

M. for M. ii. 2. 52

"Might you not know she would do as she has done?"

A. W. iii, 4. 2.

i.e. " Could you not know."

"I might not this believe Without the sensible and true avouch Of mine own eyes."—Hamlet, i. 1. 56.

"But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft quench'd in the chaste beams of the wat'ry moon."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 161.

"In that day's feats,
When he might act the woman in the scene,
He proved best man i' the field."—Coriol. ii. 2. 100.

i.e. "when he was young enough to be able to play the part of a woman on the stage."

Might naturally followed may through the above-mentioned changes. Care must be taken to distinguish between the indicative and the conditional use of might. "How might that be?" (indicative) would mean "How was it possible for that to take place?" On the other hand, "How might that be?" (subjunctive) would mean "How would it be possible hereafter that this should take place?" The same ambiguity still attends "could." Thus "How could I thus forget myself yesterday!" but "How could I atone to-morrow for my forgetfulness yesterday?"

313. May, Might, like other verbs in Elizabethan English, are frequently used optatively. We still use may thus, as in "May he prosper!" but seldom or never might. But it is clear that—

"Would I might
But ever see that man,"—Temp. i. 2. 168.

naturally passes into "Might I but see that man," Thus we have—
"Lord worshipped might he be."—M. of V. ii. 2. 98.

314. Must (E. E. moste) is the past tense of the E. E. present tense mot, which means "he is able," "he is obliged." From meaning "he had power to do it," or "might have done it," the word came to mean "ought," and it is by us generally used with a notion of compulsion. But it is sometimes used by Shakespeare to

mean no more than definite futurity, like our "is to" in "He is to be here to-morrow."

"He *must* fight singly to-morrow with Hector, and is so prophetically proud of an heroical cudgelling that he raves in saying nothing."—*Tr. and Cr.* iii. 3. 247.

Se, or nearly so, probably in

"Descend, for you must be my sword-bearer."

M. of V. ii. 6. 40.

And somewhat similar, without the notion of compulsion, is the use in M. of V. iv. 1. 182; M. N. D. ii. 1. 72.

It seems to mean "is, or was, destined" in

"And I must be from thence."—Macbeth, iv. 3. 212.

So "A life which *must* not yield To one of woman born."—*Ib.* v. 8. 12.

315, Shall. Shall for will. Shall meaning "to owe" is connected with "ought," "must," "it is destined."

Thus,

"If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke, Imp out our drooping country's broken wing, Away with me."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 291.

i.e. "if we are to, ought to."

"Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer."—M. of V. ii. 4. 40. i.e. "is to be."

Hence *shall* was used by the Elizabethan authors with all three persons to denote inevitable futurity without reference to "will" (desire).

"If much you note him,

You shall offend him and extend his passion."—Mach. iii. 4. 57. i.e. "you are sure to offend him."

So probably,

"Nay, it will please him well, Kate, it shall (is sure to) please him."

Hen. V. v. 2. 369.

"My country

Shall have more vices than it had before." - Macb. iv. 3. 47.

"And, if I die, no man shall pity me."—Rich. III. v. 3. 201. i.e. "it is certain that no man will pity me."

^{* &}quot;Thou shalt not," &c

There is no notion of compulsion on the part of the person speaking in

"They shall (are sure to) be apprehended by and by."

Hen. V. ii. 2, 2

"If they do this (conquer),
As, if please God, they shall (are destined to do)."

Hen. V. iv. 3. 120.

The notion of necessity, must, seems to be conveyed in

"He that parts us *shall* bring a brand from heaven, And fire us hence like foxes."—*Lear*, v. 3. 22.

In "He shall wear his crown,"—J. C. i. 3. 87.

shall means "is to." So in

"Your grace shall understand."—M. of V. iv. 1. 149.

"What is he that shall (is to) buy?"-A. Y. L. ii. 4. 88.

"Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 292.

i.e. "men cannot help making mistakes."

"He that escapes me without some broken limb shall (must, will have to), acquit him well."—A. Y. L. i. I. 134.

"K. Desire them all to my pavilion.

Glost. We shall, my lord."—Hen. V. iv. 1. 27.

In the last passage, "I shall" has a trace of its old meaning, "I ought:" or perhaps there is a mixture of "I am bound to" and "I am sure to." Hence it is often used in the replies of inferiors to superiors.

" King Henry. Collect them all together at my tent:

I'll be before thee.

Erpingham. I shall do't, my lord."-Hen. V. iv. 1. 305.

"Fear not, my lord, your servant shall do so."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 268.

So A. W. v. 3. 27; A. and C. iii. 12. 36, iv. 6. 3, v. 1. 3; Hen. V. iv. 3. 126; M. for M. iv. 4. 21; A. and C. v. 1. 68.

"You shall see, find," &c., was especially common in the meaning "you may," "you will," applied to that which is of common occurrence, or so evident that it cannot but be seen.

"You shall mark
Many a duteous and knee-crooking slave,
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,
Wears out his time. Whip me such honest knaves."

Othello, i. 1. 440.

Shall is sometimes colloquially or provincially abbreviated into se, s:

"Thou's hear our counsel."—R. and J. i. 3. 9. "I'se try."—Lear, iv. 6. 246. (See 461.)

316. Will. You will. He will. Later, a reluctance to apply a word meaning necessity and implying compulsion* to a person addressed (second person), or spoken of (third person), caused post-Elizabethan writers to substitute will for shall with respect to the second and third persons, even where no will at all, i.e. no purpose, is expressed, but only futurity. Thus will has to do duty both as will proper, implying purpose, and also as will improper, implying merely futurity. Owing to this unfortunate imposition of double work upon will, it is sometimes impossible to determine, except from emphasis or from the context, whether will signifies purpose or mere futurity. Thus (1) "He will come, I cannot prevent him," means "He wills (or is determined) to come;" but (2) "He will come, though unwillingly," means "His coming is certain."

Will is seldom used without another verb:

"I will no reconcilement."—Hamlet, v. 2. 258.

So in "I will none of it." (See 321.)

317. Shall. You shall. He shall. On the other hand shall, being deprived by will of its meaning of futurity, gradually took up the meaning of compulsory necessity imposed by the first person on the second or third. Thus: "You shall not go," or even "You shall find I am truly grateful." (Not "you will find," but "I will so act that you shall perforce find," &c.)

The prophetic shall ("it shall come to pass") which is so common in the Authorized Version of the Bible, probably conveyed to the original translators little or nothing more than the meaning of futurity. But now with us the prophetic shall implies that the prophet identifies himself with the necessity which he enunciates. Thus the Druid prophesying the fall of Rome to Boadicea says—

[&]quot;Rome shall perish."-COWPER.

^{*} Coriol. iii. 1. 90, "Mark you his absolute 'shall." A similar teeling suggested the different methods of expressing an imperative in Latin and Greek and the substitution of the optative with au for the future in Greek.

318. Shall. I shall. When a person speaks of his own future actions as inevitable, he often regards them as inevitable only because fixed by himself. Hence "I shall not forgive you" means simply, "I have fixed not to forgive you;" but "I shall be drowned," "My drowning is fixed." (See 315.)

319. Will. "I will." Some passages which are quoted to prove that Shakespeare used will with the first person without implying

wish, desire, &c., do not warrant such an inference.

In Hamlet, v. 2. 183, "I will win for him, if I can; if not, I will gain nothing but my shame and the odd hits," the will is probably used by attraction with a jesting reference to the previous "will:" "My purpose is to win if I can, or, if not, to gain shame and the odd hits."

"There is no hope that ever I will stay
If the first hour I shrink and run away."—I Hen. VI. iv. 5. 30.
t.e. "There is no hope of my ever being willing to stay."

"I'll do well yet."—Coriol. iv. 1. 21.

i.e. "I intend to do well yet."

"I will not reason what is meant hereby,
Because I will (desire to) be guiltless of the meaning."

Rich. III. i. 4. 95.

In "I will sooner have a beard grow in the palm of my hand than he shall get one on his cheek,"—2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 23. there is a slight meaning of purpose, as though it were, "I will sooner make a beard grow," derived from the similarity in sound of the common phrase "I will sooner die, starve, than, &c."

In "Good argument, I hope, we will not fly,"—Hen. V. iv. 3. 118. the meaning appears to be "good argument, I hope, that we have no intention of flying."

There is a difficulty in the expression "perchance I will;" but, from its constant recurrence, it would seem to be a regular idiom. Compare the following passages:—

"Perchance, Iago, I will ne'er go home."-Othello, v. 2. 197.

"Perchance I will be there as soon as you."—C. of E. iv. 1. 39.

"Perhaps I will return immediately."-M. of V. ii. 5. 52.

In all these passages "perchance" precedes, and the meaning seems to be in the last example, for instance: "My purpose may, perhaps, be fulfilled," and "my purpose is to return immediately," or, in

I Hen. VI. i. 3. 52.

other words, "If possible, I intend to return immediately." In all these cases, the "perhaps" stands by itself. It does not qualify "will." but the whole of the following sentence.

In "I will live to be thankful to thee for't,"—T. N. iv. 2. 88. the will refers, not to live, but to "live-to-be-thankful," and the sentence means "I purpose in my future life to prove my thankfulness."

320. Will is sometimes used with the second person (like the Greek optative with &v) to signify an imperative. It is somewhat ironical, like our "You will be kind enough to be quiet." Perhaps originally an ellipsis, as in Greek, was consciously understood, "You will be quiet (if you are wise)," &c.

"You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals."—Hen. VIII. v. 4. 1. In "Gloucester, thou will answer this before the pope,"

there is no imperative, but there is irony.

On the other hand, "you will," perhaps, means "you are willing and prepared" in:

"Portia. You know I say nothing to him: he hath neither Latin, French, nor Italian, and you will come into court and swear that I have a poor pennyworth in the English."—M. of V. i. 2. 75.

321. Will, with the third person. Difficult passages.

The following is a perplexing passage:-

"If it will not be (i.e. if you will not leave me) I'll leave you."—M. Ado, ii. 1. 208.

Here the meaning seems to be "if it is not to be otherwise," and in Elizabethan English we might expect shall. But probably "it" represents fate, and, as in the phrase, "come what will," the future is personified: "If fate will not be as I would have it." And this explains

"What shall become of (as the result of) this? What will this do?"—M. Ado, iv. 1. 211.

The indefinite unknown consequence is not personified, the definite project is personified. "What is destined to result from this project? What does this project intend to do for us?"

"My eye will scarcely see it,"—Hen. V. ii. 2. 104. means "can scarcely be induced to see it."

"Ile will" means "he will have it that," "he pretends," in

"This is a riddling merchant for the nonce;

He will be here, and yet he is not here."—I Hen. VI. ii. 3. 58.

"She'll none of me,"—T. N. i. 3. 113.

"will" means "desires," "none" "nothing," and "of" "as regards" (173), "to do with."

322. Should. Should is the past tense of shall, and underwent the same modifications of meaning as shall. Hence should is not now used with the second person to denote mere futurity, since it suggests a notion, if not of compulsion, at least of bounden duty. But in a conditional phrase, "If you should refuse," there can be no suspicion of compulsion. We therefore retain this use of should in the conditional clause, but use would in the consequent clause:

"If you should refuse, you would do wrong."

On the other hand, Shakespeare used should in both clauses:

"You should refuse to perform your father's will if you should refuse to accept him."—M. of V. i. 2. 100.

And should is frequently thus used to denote contingent futurity.

"They told me here, at dead time of the night, Ten thousand swelling toads, as many urchins, Would make such fearful and confused cries, As any mortal body hearing it Should straight fall mad."—T. A. ii. 3. 102, 104.

" Would" = "were in the habit." Comp. ἐφίλουν.

"(In that case) Strength should be lord of imbecility, And the rude son should strike the father dead; Force should be right."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 114.

323. Should for ought. Should, the past tense, not being so imperious as shall, the present, is still retained in the sense of ought, applying to all three persons. In the Elizabethan authors, however, it was more commonly thus used, often where we should use ought:

"You should be women; And yet your beards forbid me to interpret That you are so."—Macheth, i. 3. 45.

"So should he look that seems to speak things strange."

10, i. 2. 46.

"I should report that which I say I saw, But know not how to do it."—Ib. v. 5. 31. "Why 'tis an office of discovery, love, And I should be obscured."—M. of V. ii. 6. 44.

i.e. "A torch-bearer's office reveals (439) the face, and mine ought to be hidden."

324. Should is sometimes used as though it were the past tense of a verb "shall," meaning "is to," not quite "ought." Compare the German "sollen."

"About his son that should (was to) have married a shepherd's daughter."—W. T. iv. 4. 795.

"The Senate heard them and received them curteously, and the people the next day should (were to) assemble in counsell to give them audience."—N. P. Alcibiades, 170.

In the following, should is half-way between the meaning of "ought" and "was to." The present, shall, or "am to," might be expected; but there is perhaps an implied past tense, "I (you said) was to knock you."

"Petruchio. And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's pate.

Grumio. My master is grown quarrelsome: I should knock you,

And then I know after who comes by the worse."

T. of Sh. i. 1. 131.

325. Should was hence used in direct questions about the past, where *shall* was used about the *future*. Thus, "How *shall* the enemy break in?" *i.e.* "How *is the* enemy to break in?" became, when referred to the past, "How was the enemy to break in?"

"I was employ'd in passing to and fro
About relieving of the sentinels.
Then how or which way should they first break in?"

I Hen, VI. ii, I. 71.

"What should this mean?"-Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 160.

i.e. "what was this (destined, likely) to mean?" It seems to increase the emphasis of the interrogation, since a doubt about the past (time having been given for investigation) implies more perplexity than a doubt about the future. So we still say, "Who could it be?" "How old might you be?"

"What should be in that Cæsar?"—J. C. i. 2. 142.
i.e. "what could there be," "what might there be," "Shall," "may," and the modern "can," are closely connected in meaning.

"Where should he have this gold?"—T. of A. iv. 3. 395.

In the following instance, *should* depends upon a verb in the present; but the verb follows the dependent clause, which may, therefore, be regarded as practically an independent question.

"What it should be . . . I cannot dream of."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 7.
But also

"Put not yourself into amazement how should these things be."

M. for M. iv. 2, 220.

326. Should was used in a subordinate sentence after a simple past tense, where *shall* was used in the subordinate sentence after a simple present, a complete present, or a future. Hence we may expect to find *should* more common in Elizabethan writers than with us, in proportion as *shall* was also more common. We say "I will wait till he comes," and very often, also, "I intended to wait till he came." The Elizabethans more correctly, "I will wait till he *shall* come;" and therefore, also, "I intended to wait till he *should* come." Thus, since it was possible to say "I ask that I shall slay him," Wickliffe could write "They axeden of Pilate that thei schulden sle hym" (Acts xiii. 28); "They aspiden hym that thei schulden fynde cause" (Luke vi. 7). In both cases we should now say "might."

So "She replied,
It should be better he became her guest."—A. and C. ii. 2. 226.
"Thou knew'st too well

My heart was to thy rudder tied by the strings, And thou *shouldst* tow me after."—*Ib.* iii. 11. 58.

The verb need not be expressed, as in

"A lioness lay crouching . . . with cat-like watch, When that the sleeping man should stir."—A. Y. L. iv. 2. 117.

"She has a poison which shall kill you," becomes

"She did confess she had For you a mortal mineral, which being took Should by the minute feed on life,"—Cymb. v. 5. 51.

This perhaps explains

"Why, 'tis well known that whiles I was protector, Pity was all the fault that was in me, For I *should* melt at an offender's tears, And lowly words were ransom for their fault."

2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 126.

"All my fault is that I shall melt (am sure to melt)," would become "all my fault was that I should melt;" "for" meaning "for that" or "because."

"And (Fol.) if an angel should have come to me, And told me Hubert *should* put out mine eyes, I would not have believed him."—K. J. iv. I. 68-70.

Here, since the Elizabethans could say "Hubert shall," they can also say "he told me Hubert should."

So since the Elizabethans could say "To think that deceit *shall* steal such gentle shapes," they could also say, regarding the subordinate clause as referring to the past,

"Oh, that deceit should steal such gentle shapes!"
Rich. III. ii. 2. 27.

"Good God, (to think that) these nobles should such stomachs bear!"—I Hen. VI. i. 3. 90.

327. "Should have" with the second and third persons. The use of "should have" with the second and third persons is to be noted. It there refers to the past, and the should simply gives a conditional force to "have." It is incongruous to use should in connection with the past, and hence we now say "If an angel had come" in this sense. When we use "should have," it refers to a question about the past which is to be answered in the future. "If he should have forgotten the key, how should we get out," i.e "if, when he comes, it should turn out that he had forgotten." Compare, on the other hand, the Shakespearian usage.

"Gods, if you Should have ta'en vengeance on my faults, I never Had lived to put on this."—Cymb. v. 1. 8.

In M. Ado, ii. 3. 81, the "should have" is inserted, not in the conditional clause, but in a dependent relative clause. "If it had been a dog that should have howled thus, they would have killed him."

328. "Should," denoting a statement not made by the speaker. (Compare "sollen" in German.) There is no other reason for the use of *should* in

"But didst thou hear without wondering how thy name should be so hanged and carved about these trees."—A. Y. L. iii. 2. 182.

Should seems to indicate a false story in George Fox's Journal:

"From this man's words was a slander raised upon us that the Quakers should deny Christ," p. 43 (Edition 1765). "The priest of that church raised many wicked slanders upon me: 'That I rode upon a great black horse, and that I should give a fellow money to follow me when I was on my black horse.'"

"Why should you think that I should woo in scorn?"

M. N. D. iii, 2. 122.

329. Would for will, wish, require. Would, like should, could, ought, (Latin* "potui," "debui,") is frequently used conditionally. Hence "I would be great" comes to mean, not "I wished to be great," but "I wished (subjunctive)," i.e. "I should wish." There is, however, very little difference between "thou wouldest wish" and "thou wishest," as is seen in the following passage:—

"Thou wouldst (wishest to) be great,

Art not without ambition, but without

The illness should (that ought to) attend it: what thou wouldst highly

That thou wouldst holily, wouldst not play false, And yet wouldst wrongly win."—Macbeth, i. 5. 20.

As will is used for "will have it," "pretends," so would means "pretended," "wished to prove."

"She that would be your wife."—C. of E. iv. 4. 152.

i.e. "She that wished to make out that she was your wife."

So "One that would circumvent God."—Hamlet, v. 1. 87.

Applied to inanimate objects, a "wish" becomes a "requirement:"

"I have brought

Golden opinions from all sorts of people, Which would (require to) be worn now in their newest gloss."

Macbeth, i. 7. 32.

"Words

Which would (require to) be howled out in the desert air."

1b. iv. 3. 194.

"And so he goes to heaven,
And so am I revenged. That would (requires to) be scann'd."

Hamlet, iii. 3. 75.

"This would (requires to) be done with a demure abasing of your cya sometimes."—B. E. 92.

^{*} Madvig, 348. 1.

It is a natural and common mistake to say, "Would is used for should, by Elizabethan writers."

Would is not often used for "desire" with a noun as its object:

"If, duke of Burgundy, you would the peace."

Hen. V. v. 2. 68.

- 330. Would often means "liked," "was accustomed." Compare $\epsilon\phi(\lambda\epsilon\iota$.
- "A little quiver fellow, and a' would manage his piece thus: and a' would about and about, and come you in and come you out; rah-tah-tah would a' say, bounce would a' say: and away again would a' go, and again would a' come."—2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 200.
- "It (conscience) was wont to hold me only while one would tell twenty."—Rich. III. i. 4. 122.

"But still the house affairs would draw her hence."

Othello, i. 3. 147.

So, though more rarely, will is used for "is accustomed."

"Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments Will hum about mine ears."—Tempest, iii. 2. 147.

331. "Would" not used for "should." Would seems on a superficial view to be used for should, in

"You amaze me; I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection."—M. Ado, ii. 3. 119.

But it is explained by the following reply: "I would have sworn it had," i.e. "I was ready and willing to swear." So, "I was willing and prepared to think her spirit invincible."

So in "What power is in Agrippa, If I would say, 'Agrippa, be it so,'
To make this good?"—A. and C. ii. 2. 144.

'If I would say" means "If I wished, were disposed, to say."

"Alas, and would you take the letter of her?"—A. W. iii. 4. 1. i.e. "Were you willing," "Could you bring yourself to."

To take would for should would take from the sense of the following passage:

"For I mine own gain'd knowledge should profane. If I would time expend with such a snipe, But for my sport and profit."—Othello, i. 3, 399,

i.e. "If I were willing to expend."

In

Would probably means "wish to" or "should like to," in

"You could, for a need, study a speech which I would set down and insert in't, could you not?"—Hamlet, ii. 2. 567.

In "Prince. What wouldest thou think of me, if I should weep?

Poins. I would think thee a most princely hypocrite."

2 Hen. IV. ii. 2. 59.

the second *would* is attracted to the first, and there is also a notion of determination, and voluntary "making up one's mind" in the reply of Poins.

So "be triumphant" is equivalent to "triumph," in which willingness is expressed, in

"Think you, but that I know our state secure, I would be so triumphant as I am?"—Rich. III. iii. 2. 84. i.e. "think you I would triumbh as I do?"

In "I would be sorry, sir, but the fool should be as oft with your master as with my mistress,"—T. N. m. 1. 44.

it must be confessed there seems little reason for would. Inasmuch, however, as the fool is speaking of something that depends upon himself, i.e. his presence at the Count's court, it may perhaps be explained as "I would not willingly do anything to prevent," &c., just as we can say "I would be loth to offend him," in confusion between "I should be loth to offend him," and "I would not willingly, or I would rather not, offend him."

"And how unwillingly I left the ring," When nought would be accepted but the ring,"

M. of V. v. 1. 197.

there seems, as in our modern "nothing would content him but," some confusion between "he would accept nothing" and "nothing could make itself acceptable."

VERBS, INFLECTIONS OF.

332. Verbs: Indicative Present, old forms of the Third Person Plural. There were three forms of the plural in Early English—the Northern in es, the Midland in en, the Southern in eth: "they hop-es," "they hop-en," "they hop-eth." The two former forms (the last in the verbs "doth," "hath," and possibly in others) are found in Shakespeare. Sometimes they are used for the sake of the rhyme; sometimes that explanation is insufficient:

En.-" Where, when men be-en, there's seldom ease."

Pericles, ii. Gower, 28.

"O friar, these are faults that are not seen,

Ours open and of worst example be-en."—B. J. S. Sh. i. 2.

"All perishen of men of pelf,

Ne aught escapen but himself."-Pericles, ii. Gower, 36.

"As fresh as bin the flowers in May."—PEELE.

"Words fearen (terrify) babes."—Spens. F. Q.

"And then the whole quire hold their hips and laugh, And waxen in their mirth."—M. N. D. ii. 1. 56.

This form is rarely used by Shakespeare, and only archaically. As an archaic form it is selected for constant use by Spenser.

333. Third person plural in -s. This form is extremely common in the Folio. It is generally altered by modern editors, so that its commonness has not been duly recognized. Fortunately, there are some passages where the rhyme or metre has made alteration impossible. In some cases the subject-noun may be considered as singular in thought, e.g. "manners," &c. In other cases the quasi-singular verb precedes the plural object; and again, in others the verb has for its nominative two singular nouns or an antecedent to a plural noun (see 247). But though such instances are not of equal value with an instance like "his tears runs down," yet they indicate a general predilection for the inflection in -s which may well have arisen from the northern E. E. third person plural in -s.

"The venom clamours of a jealous woman *Poisons* more deadly than a mad dog's tooth."

C. of E. v. 1. 69.

"The great man down, you mark his favourites flies,
The poor advanced makes friends of enemies."

Hamlet, iii. 2. 214-5.

Here the Globe reads "favourite;" completely missing, as it seems to me, the intention to describe the *crowd* of favourites scattering in flight from the fallen patron.

"The extreme parts of time extremely forms
All causes to the purpose of his will."—L. L. v. 2. 750.

"Manners" is, perhaps, used as a singula, in

So

"What manners is in this?"—R. and J. v. 3. 214.

"Which very manners urges."-Lear, v. 3. 234.

"Whose church-like humours fits not for a crown."

2 Hen. VI. i. I 247.

"Riches" may, perhaps, be considered a singular noun (as it is by derivation, "richesse") in

"The riches of the ship is come a shore."—Othello, ii. I. 83. But not

"My old bones aches" (Globe, ache) .- Tempest, iii. 2. 2.

"His tears runs down his beard like winter-drops" (Globe, run).

16. v. 1. 16.

"We poor unfledg'd

Have never wing'd from view o' the nest, nor knows not What air's from home" (Globe, know).—Cymb. iii. 3. 27.

"And worthier than himself

Here tends (Globe and Quarto, tend) the savage strangeness be puts on,

Disguise the holy strength of their command," &c.

Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 135.

"These naughty times

Puts (Globe, put) bars between the owners and their rights."

M. of V. iii. 2. 19.

"These high wild hills and rough uneven ways Draws out our miles, and makes them wearisome."

Rich. II. ii. 3. 5.

"Not for all the sun sees, or The close earth wombs, or the profound seas hides."

(Globe, sea.)—W. T. iv. 4. 501.

"The imperious seas breeds monsters" (Globe, breed).

Cynth. iv. 2, 35.

"Untimely storms makes men expect a dearth" (Globe, make).
Rich. III. ii. 3. 33.

Numbers, perhaps, sometimes stand on a different footing:

"Eight yards of uneven ground is three score and ten miles afoot with me."—I Hen. IV. ii. 2. 28.

i.e. "A distance of eight yards;" and compare

"Three parts of him is ours already."—J. C. i. 3. 154.

"Two of both kinds makes up four."—M. N. D. iii, 2, 438.

But no such explanation avails in

"She lifts the coffer-lids that close his eyes,
Where, lo! two lamps burnt out in darkness lies."

V. and A. 1128.

"Whose own hard dealings teaches them suspect The deeds of others."—M. of V. i. 3. 163.

"Those pretty wrongs that liberty commits
Thy beauty and thy years full well befits."—Sonn. 41.

There is some confusion in

"Fortune's blows

When most struck home, being gentle wounded craves A noble cunning."—Coriol. iv. 4. 8.

On the whole, it is probable that though Shakespeare intended to make "blows" the subject of "craves," he afterwards introduced a new subject, "being gentle," and therefore "blows" must be considered nominative absolute and "when" redundant: "Fortune's blows (being) struck home, to be gentle then requires a noble wisdom."

"Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives,"

Macbeth, ii. 1. 61.

in a rhyming passage.

It is perhaps intended to be a sign of low breeding and harsh writing in the play of Pyramus and Thisbe.

"Thisbe, the flowers of odours savours sweet."

M. N. D. iii. 1. 84.

334. Third person plural in -th.

"Those that through renowne hath ennobled their life."

MONTAIGNE, 32.

See, however, Relative, 247.

"Their encounters, though not personal, hath been royally encountered" (Globe, have).—W. T. i. 1. 29.

"Where men enforced doth speak anything."—M. of V. iii. 2. 33.

"Hath all his ventures fail'd?" (Globe, have.)—Ib. iii. 2. 270.

This, however, is a case when the verb precedes the subject. (See below, 335.)

335. Inflection in -s preceding a plural subject. Passages in which the quasi-singular verb precedes the plural subject stand on a somewhat different footing. When the subject is as yet future and, as it were, unsettled, the third person singular might be regarded as the normal inflection. Such passages are very common, particularly in the case of "There is," as—

"There is no more such masters."—Cymb. iv. 2. 371.

"There was at the beginning certaine light suspitions and accusations put up against him."—N. P. 173.

"Of enjoin'd penitents there's four or five."—A. W. iii. 5. 98.

"The spirit upon whose weal depends and rests
The lives of many."—Hamlet, iii, 3, 14.

"Then what intends these forces thou dost bring?" 2 Hen. VI. v. 1. 60.

"There is no woman's sides can," &c. - T. N. ii. 4. 96.

"Is there not charms?"-Othello, i. 1. 172.

"Is all things well?"-2 Hen. VI. iii, 2, 11.

"Is there not wars? Is there not employment?"

2 Hen. IV. i. 2. 85.

So I Hen. VI. iii. 2. 123; R. and F. i. I. 48; 2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 199; 1 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 9; Hen. v. 2. 4. 1.

"Here comes the townsmen."-2 Hen. VI. ii. I. 68.

"Here comes the gardeners" (Globe, come). - Rich. II. iii. 4. 24.

"There comes no swaggerers here."-2 Hen. IV. ii. 4. 83.

This, it is true, comes from Mrs. Quickly, but the following are from Posthumus and Valentine:

"How comes these staggers on me?"—Cymb. v. 5. 233.

"Far behind his worth

Comes all the praises that I now bestow."—T. G. of V. ii. 4. 72. And in the Lover's Complaint, where the rhyme makes alteration impossible:

"And to their audit comes

Their distract parcels in combined sums."—L. C. 230.

"What cares these roarers for the name of king?"—Temp. i. 1. 17.

"There grows all herbs fit to cool looser flames."

B. and F. F. Sh. i. I.

"There was the first gentlemanlike tears that ever we shed." W. T. v. 2, 155.

"Has his daughters brought him to this pass?" (Globe, have.) Lear, iii. 4. 65.

"What means your graces?" (Globe, mean.)-Ib. iii. 7. 30.

"But most miserable

Is the desires that's (247) glorious" (Globe, desire). - Cymb. i. 6. 6. ("Few" and "more" might, perhaps, be considered nouns in

"Here's a few flowers."—Cymb. iv. 2. 283.

"There is no more such masters."—Ib. iv. 2. 371.

A sum of money also can be considered as a singular noun:

"For thy three thousand ducats here is six."—M. of V. iv. 1. 84.)

"There lies

Two kinsmen (who) digged their graves with weeping eyes." Rich. II. iii. 3. 168.

"Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardell and box."

W. T. iv, 4, 783.

"At this hour

Lies at my mercy all mine enemies" (Globe, lie).

Tempest, iv. 1. 264.

336. Inflection in "s" with two singular nouns as subject.

The inflection in s is of frequent occurrence also when two or more singular nouns precede the verb:

"The heaviness and guilt within my bosom Takes off my manhood."—Cymb. v. 2. 2.

"Faith and troth bids them."-Tr. and Cr. iv. 5. 170.

"Plenty and peace breeds cowards."-Cymb. iii. 6. 21.

"For women's fear and love holds quantity."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 177.

"Where death and danger dogs the heels of worth."

A. W. iii. 4. 15.

"Scorn and derision never comes (Globe and Quarto, come) in tears."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 123.

"Thy weal and woe are both of them extremes,

Despair and hope makes thee ridiculous."—V. and A. 988.

"My hand and ring is yours."-Cymb. ii. 4. 57.

"O, Cymbeline, heaven and my conscience knows."

Ib. iii, 3, 99.

"Hanging and wiving goes by destiny."—M. of V. ii. 9. 83.

"The which my love and some necessity Now lays upon you."—M. of V. iii. 4. 34.

337. Apparent cases of the inflection in "s."

Often, however, a verb preceded by a plural noun (the apparent nominative) has for its real nominative, not the noun, but the noun clause.

"The combatants being kin Half stints their strife before they do begin."—Tr. and Cr. iv. 5. 93. i.e. "The fact that the combatants are kin."

"Whereon his brains still beating puts him thus From fashion of himself."—Hamlet, iii. 1. 182.

i.e. "The beating of his brains on this."

"And our ills told us Is as our earing."—A. and C. i. 2. 115.

i.e. "The telling us of our faults is like ploughing us."

"And great affections wrestling in thy bosom

**Doth* make an earthquake of nobility."—K. 7. v. 2. 42.

"To know our enemies' minds we'ld rip their hearts:

(To rip) Their papers is more lawful."—Lear, iv. 6. 266.

So in

"Blest be those,

How mean soe'er, that have their honest wills, Which seasons comfort,"—Cymb. i. 6. 8.

"which" has for its antecedent "having one's honest will."

Conversely, a plural is implied, and hence the verb is in the plural, in

"Men's flesh preserv'd so whole do seldom win."

2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 301.

t.e. "when men are too careful about their safety they seldom win."

"Smile heaven (the gods, or the stars) upon this fair conjunction, That long have frowned upon their enmity."—Rich. III. v. 5. 21.

It may be conjectured that this licence, as well as the licence of using the -s inflection where the verb precedes, or where the noun clause may be considered the nominative, would in all probability not have been tolerated but for the fact that -s was still recognized as a provincial plural inflection.

The following is simply a case of transposition:

"Now, sir, the sound that tells what hour it is Are clamorous groans."—Rich. II. v. 5. 56.

- 338. S final misprinted. Though the rhyme and metre establish the fact that Shakespeare used the plural verbal inflection in s, yet it ought to be stated that s final in the Folio is often a misprint. Being indicated by a mere line at the end of a word in MS., it was often confused with the comma, full stop, dash or hyphen.
 - " Comes (,) shall we in?"-T. of A. i. 1. 284.

"At that I have kil'd my lord, a Flys."-T. A. iii. 2. 53.

"Good man, these joyful tears show thy true hearts."

Hen. VIII. v. 3. 175.

Conversely, in one or two places the dash or hyphen has usurped the place of the s.

"Unkle, what newe-?"-I Hen. IV. v. 2. 30.

"With gobbets of thy Mother-bleeding heart."

2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 85.

Sometimes (even without the possibility of mistake for a comma) the -s is inserted:

"Sir Protheus, your Fathers call's for you."-T. G. of V. i. 3.88. "Sawcie Lictors

Will catch at us like Strumpets, and scald Rimers Ballads us out of tune."—A. and C. v. 2. 216.

Yet in many passages the -s is probably correct, though we should now omit it, especially at the end of nouns. As we still use "riches," "gains," almost as singular nouns, so Shakespeare seems to have used "lands," "wars," "stones," "sorrows," "flatteries," "purposes," "virtues," "glories," "fortunes," "things," "attempts," "graces," "treasons," "succours," "behaviours," "duties," "funerals," "proceedings," &c. as collective nouns.

In other cases there seems at least a method in the error. The -s is added to plural adjectives and to adjectives or nouns dependent upon nouns inflected in "s," as

"The letters patents."—Rich. II. ii, 1. 202 (Folio).

It is common in E. E. for plural adjectives of Romance origin to take the plural inflection. But see 430. The Globe reads " patents" in Rich. II. ii. 3. 130.

The following are selected, without verification, from Walker:

"Kings Richards throne."-Rich. II. i. 3.

"Smooth and welcomes newes."-I Hen, IV. i. I.

"Lords Staffords death."-Ib. v. 3.

"The Thicks-lips." - Othello, i. I.

A word already plural sometimes receives an additional plural inflection:

"Your teethes."—J. C. v. 1.
"Others faults."—I Hen. IV. v. 2.

"Men look'd . . . each at others." - Coriol. v. 5.

"Boths."-T. A. ii. 4. "On others grounds."-Othello, i. I.

339. Past indicative forms in u are very common in Shakespeare. Thus, "sang" does not occur, while "sung" is common as a past indicative. "Sprang" is less common as a past tense than "sprung" (2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 111) "Begun" (Hamlet, iii. 2. 220) is not uncommon for "began," which is also used. We also find

"I drunk him to his bed."-A. and C. ii. 5. 21.

Past indicative tenses in u were common in the seventeenth century, but the irregularity dates from the regular Early English idiom.

In A.-S. the second person singular, and the three plural persons of some verbs, e.g. "singan," had the same vowel u, while the first and third persons singular had a. Hence, though the distinction was observed pretty regularly in E. E., yet gradually the u and a were used indiscriminately in the past tense without distinction of person.

340. Second Person Singular in -ts. In verbs ending with -t, -test final in the second person sing. often becomes -ts for euphony. Thus: "Thou torments," Rich. II. iv. 1. 270 (Folio); "Thou requests," Rich. III. ii. 1. 98 (Folio); "revisits," Hamlet, i. 4. 53; "splits," M. for M. ii. 2. 115; "exists," Ib. iii. 1. 20 (Folio); "solicites," Cymb. i. 6. 147 (Folio); "refts," Cymb. iii 3. 103 (Folio). "Thou fleets," Sonn. 19; this is marked in

"What art thou call'st . . . and affrights?"

B. and F. F. Sh. iv. 1.

This termination in -s contains perhaps a trace of the influence of the northern inflection in -s for the second pers. sing.

- 341. Past Indicative: -t for -ted. In verbs in which the infinitive ends in -t, -ed is often omitted in the past indicative for euphony.
 - "I fast and prayed for their intelligence."—Cymb. iv. 2. 347 "There they hoist us."—Tempest, i. 2. 147.

"Plunged in the foaming brine and quit the vessel."—Ib. 211.

"When service sweat for duty, not for meed."—A. Y.L.ii. 3.58.

"Stood Dido . . . and waft her love

To come again to Carthage."-M. of V. v. 1. 10.

Compare Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 33; M. of V. iii. 2. 205.

We find "bid" for "bided," i.e. "endured," in

"Endured of (by) her for whom you bid like sorrow."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 301.

This is, of course, as natural as "chid," "rid," &c., which are recognized forms. On the other hand, the termination in -ed is sometimes used for a stronger form:

"I shaked."-Tempest, ii. 1. 319.

342. Participle: -ed omitted after d and t. Some verbs ending in -tc, -t, and -d, on account of their already resembling parti-

ciples in their terminations, do not add -ed in the participle. The same rule, naturally dictated by euphony, is found in E. E. "If the root of a verb end in -d or -t doubled or preceded by another consonant, the -de or -te of the past tense, and -d or -t of the past participle, are omitted."*

Acquit.—" Well hast thou acquit thee."—Rich. III. v. 5. 3.

Addict .- Mirror for Magistrates (NARES).

Articulate.—"These things indeed you have articulate."

I Hen. IV. v. 1. 72.

Betid.—Tempest, i. 2. 31.

Bloat(ed).—"Let the bloat king tempt you."—Hamlet, iii. 4. 182.

Contract.—" He was contract to lady Lucy."—Rich. III. iii. 7. 179.

Degenerate.—" They have degenerate."—B. E. 38.

Deject.—"And I of ladies most deject and wretched."

Hamlet, iii. 1. 163.

Devote. — T. of Sh. i. 1. 32.

Disjoint for disjointed .- Hamlet, i. 2. 20.

Enshield.—" An enshield beauty."—M. for M. ii. 4. 80.

Exhaust.—"Their means are less exhaust."—B. E. 16.

Graft.—"Her noble stock graft with ignoble plants."

Rich. III. iii. 7. 127.

Compare "An ingraft infirmity." - Othello, ii. 3. 144.

Heat.—"The iron of itself, though heat red-hot."—K. J. iv. 1. 61.

Hoist .- "For 'tis the sport to have the enginer

Hoist with his own petard."—Hamlet, iii. 4. 207.

Infect.—" Many are infect."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 188.

Quit.—"The very rats instinctively have quit it."—Temp. i. 2. 147.

Suffocate. —" Degree is suffocate." — Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 125.

Taint.—" Unspotted heart never yet taint with love."

Wed,-Hen, VIII, iii, 1, 141.

I Hen. VI. v. 3. 183.

Waft. "A braver choice of dau

''A braver choice of dauntless spirits

Than now the English bottoms have waft o'er." -K. 7. ii. 1. 73.

Wet .- Rich. III. i. 2. 216.

Whist (for "whisted," which is used by Surrey in the indicative).

"The wild waves whist,"-Tempest, i. 2. 379.

^{*} Morris, Specimens of Early English, xxxv

i.e. "being whisted or made silent." So, in imitation,

"The winds, with wonder whist,

Smoothly the waters kist."—MILTON, Hymn on the Nativity. Words like "miscreate," Hen. V. i. 2. 16; "create," M. N. D. v. I. 412, "consecrate," Ib. 422, being directly derived from Latin participles, stand on a different footing, and may themselves be regarded as participial adjectives, without the addition of d.

- 343. Participles, Formation of. Owing to the tendency to drop the inflection *en*, the Elizabethan authors frequently used the curtailed forms of past participles which are common in Early English: "I have spoke, forgot, writ, chid," &c.
 - "Have you chose this man?"-Coriot. ii. 3. 163.

Where, however, the form thus curtailed was in danger of being confused with the infinitive, as in "taken," they used the past tense for the participle:

Arose.—" And thereupon these errors are arose."—C. of E. v. 1. 388. Drove for driven.—2 Hen, VI. iii. 2. 84.

Eat.—"Thou . . . hast eat thy bearer up."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 165; M. Ado, iv. 1. 196.

Froze for frozen. — C. of E. v. 1. 313; 2 Hen. IV. i. 1. 199.

Holp.—"We were . . . holp hither."—Temp. i. 2. 63.

(In this case, however, the en is merely dropped.)

Took.—"Where I have took them up."—7. C. ii, 1. 50.

Mistook.—"Then, Brutus, I have much mistook your passion."

10. i. 2. 48.

Rode for ridden. - 2 Hen. IV. v. 3. 98; Hen. V. iv. 3. 2.

Smit for smitten.—T. of A. ii. 1. 123.

Smote for smitten .- Coriol. iii. 1. 319.

Strove for striven .- Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 30.

Writ .- Rich. II. ii. 1. 14.

Wrote for written. - Lear, i. 2. 93; Cymb. iii. 5. 21.

Or sometimes the form in ed:

"O, when degree is shaked."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 101.

So Hen. V. ii. I. 124; Temp. ii. I. 39; I Hen. IV. iii. I. 17. But shook for shaken is also common.

[&]quot;The wind-shaked surge." -- Othello, ii. 1. 13.

"Ope" in "The gates are ope," Coriol. i. 4. 43, seems to be the adjective "open" without the -n, and not a verb.

- 344. Irregular participial formations. The following are irregular:—
 - "You have swam."-A. Y. L. iv. 1. 38.
 - "I have spake."-Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 153.
 - " Misbecomed."-L. L. L. v. 2. 778.
 - "Becomed,"-Cymb. v. 5. 406.
 - "Which thou hast perpendicularly fell."-Lear, iv. 6. 54.
 - "We had droven them home."—A. and C. iv. 7. 5.
- "Sawn" for "seen" is found as a rhyme to "drawn," L. C. 91.
 - "Strucken."—C. of E. i.11.46; L. L. iv. 3. 224; J. C. iii. 1. 209.
 - "When they are fretten with the gusts of heaven."

M. of V. iv. 1. 77.

"Sweaten."— Macbeth, iv. 1. 65. (So Quartos.)

Caught seems to be distinguished as an adjective from the participle catch'd in

"None are so surely caught when they are catch'd

As wit turned fool."—L. L. L. v. 2. 69.

The following are unusual:-

- "Splitted."—C. of E. i. 1. 105, v. 1. 308; A. and C. v. 1. 24.
- "Beated."-Sonn. 62.

The following are archaic:-

- "Marcus, unknit that sorrow-wreathen knot."—T. A. iii. 2. 4.
- "Foughten."-Hen. V. iv. 6. 18.

345. The participial prefix y- is only two or three times used in Shakespeare's plays: "y-clept," "y-clad," "y-slaked." In E. E. y- is prefixed to other forms of speech beside participles, like the German ge-. But in Elizabethan English the y- was wholly disused except as a participial prefix, and even the latter was archaic. Hence we must explain as follows:

"The sum of this

Brought hither to Pentapolis

Yravished the regions round."-P. of T. iii. Gower, 35.

Shakespeare was probably going to write (as in the same speech, line 1, "yslaked hath") "yravished the regions hath," but the necessity of the rhyme, and the diminished sense of the grammatical force of the participial prefix, made him alter the construction.

The y- is used by Sackville before a present participle, "y-causing." In M. of V. ii. 9. 68, and elsewhere, we find "I wiss" apparently for the old "v-wiss."

VERBS, MOODS AND TENSES.

346. Indicative simple present for complete present with adverbs signifying "as yet," &c.

This is in accordance with the Latin idiom, "jampridem opto," &c., and it is explicable on the ground that, when an action continued up to the present time is still continuing, the speaker may prefer the verb to dwell simply on the fact that the action is present. allowing the adverb to express the past continuousness:

"That's the worst tidings that I hear of yet."

I Hen. IV. iv. 1. 127.

"How does your honour for this many a day?"—Hamlet, iii. 1. 91.

347. Simple past for complete present with "since," &c.

This is in accordance with the Greek use of the aorist, and it is as logical as our more modern use. The difference depends upon a difference of thought, the action being regarded simply as past without reference to the present or to completion.

"I saw him not these many years, and yet I know 'tis he."—Cymb. iv. 2, 66.

"I saw not better sport these seven years' day."-2 Hen, VI. ii. 1. 3.

"Since death of my dear'st mother It did not speak before."—Cymb. iv. 2. 190.

"I did not see him since."—A. and C. i. 3. 1.

"I was not angry since I came to France Until this instant."—Hen. V. iv. 7, 58.

"I can tell you strange news that you yet dreamed not of."-M. Ado, i. 2. 4.

It will be noticed that the above examples all contain a negative. The indefinite tense seems to have peculiar propriety when we are denying that an action was performed at any time whatever. Hence the contrast:

> "Judges and senates have been bought with gold, Esteem and love were never to be sold."

POPE, Essay on Man, iv. 187.

But we have also, without a negative,

"And since I saw thee,

The affliction of my mind amends."—Tempest, v. 1. 114.

The simple present is in the following example incorrectly combined with the complete present. But the two verbs are so far apart that they may almost be regarded as belonging to different sentences, especially as "but" may be regarded as semi-adversative.

"And never since the middle summer's spring

Met we... but... thou hast disturbed our sport."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 83-7.

On the other hand, the complete present is used remarkably in—
"D. Pedro. Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?
Claud. I have drunk poison whiles he utter'd it."

M. Ado, v. I. 253.

This can only be explained by a slight change of thought: "I have drunk poison (and drunk [339] poison all the) while he spoke."

348. Future for Subjunctive and Infinitive. The future is often used where we should use the infinitive or subjunctive.

A comparison of Wickliffe with the versions of the sixteenth century would show that in many cases the Early English subjunctive had been replaced by the Elizabethan "shall."

"And I will sing that they shall hear I am not afraid."

M. N. D. iii, 1. 126.

"That you shall surely find him
Lead to the Sacittary the raised search"—O

Lead to the Sagittary the raised search."—Othello, i. 1. 158.

"That thou shalt see the difference of our spirits,

I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it."—M. of V. iv. 1. 368.

"Therefore in fierce tempest is he coming
That, if requiring fail, he will compel."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 101.

Here, however (283), "so" may be omitted before "that," i.e. "so that he purposes compulsion if fair means fail."

"Reason with the fellow.

Lest you shall chance to whip your information."

Coriol. iv. 6. 53.

"If thou refuse and wilt encounter with my wrath."

W. T. ii. 3, 138,

"The constable desires thee thou wilt mind
Thy followers of repentance."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 84.

" Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd?"

Rich. II. ii. 3. 119.

So with "for" used for "because" (117) in the sense of "in order that."

"And, for the time shall not seem tedious, I'll tell thee what befel me."—3 Hen. VI. iii. I. 10.

As in Latin, the future is sometimes correctly and logically used with reference to future occurrences; but we find it side by side with the incorrect and modern idiom.

- "Farewell till we shall meet again."-M. of V. iii. 4. 40.
- "He that outlives this day and comes safe home, He that shall live this day and see old age."

Hen. V. iv. 3. 44

- "All France will be replete with mirth and joy,
 When they shall hear how we have play'd the men."

 I Hen. VI. i, 6. 16.
- "When they shall know."-Rich. II. i. 4. 49.
- "If you shall see Cordelia."—Lear, iii. 1. 46.
- "Till your strong hand shall help to give him strength."

 K. F. ii. 1. 33.

The future seems used (perhaps with reference to the original meaning of "shall") to signify necessary and habitual recurrence in

"Good Lord, what madness rules in brain-sick men When for so slight and frivolous a cause Such factious emulations shall arise,"—I Hen. VI. iv. 1. 113.

So "Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 293.

349. Infinitive. "To" omitted and inserted. In Early English the present infinitive was represented by -en (A.-S. -an), so that "to speak" was "speken," and "he is able to speak" was "he can speken," which, though very rare, is found in Pericles, ii. Prologue, 12. The -en in time became -e, and the -e in time became mute; thus reducing "sing-en" to "sing." When the en dropped into disuse, and to was substituted for it, several verbs which we call auxiliary, and which are closely and commonly connected with other verbs, retained the old licence of omitting to, though the infinitival inflection was lost. But naturally, in the Elizabethan period, while this distinction between auxiliary and non-auxiliary verbs was gradually gaining force, there was some difference of opmion as to which verbs did, and which did not, require the "to," and in Early English there is much inconsistency in this

respect. Thus in consecutive lines "ought" is used without, and "let" with, "to."

"And though we owe the fall of Troy requite,
Yet let revenge thereof from gods to light."

Mirror for Magistrates (quoted by Dr. GUEST).

"You ought not walk."—7. C. i. 1. 3.

"Suffer him speak no more."-B. J. Sejan. iii. 1.

"If the Senate still command me serve."—Ib. iii. I.

"The rest I wish thee gather."-I Hen. VI. ii. 5. 96.

"You were wont be civil."—Othello, ii. 3. 190.

"I list not prophesy."—W. T. iv. 1. 26.

"He thought have slaine her."—SPENS. F. Q. i. 1. 50.

"It forst him slacke."-Ib. 19.

' Stay" is probably a verb in

"How long within this wood intend you (to) stay?"

M. N. D. ii. 1. 138.

"Desire her (to) call her wisdom to her."—Lear, iv. 5. 35.

"As one near death to those that wish him (to) live."

A. W. ii. 1. 134.

"What might'st thou do that honour would (wished) thee (to) do?"—Hen. V. Prologue, 18.

"That wish'd him in the barren mountains (to) starve."

I Hen. IV. i. 3, 159.

So M. for M. iv. 3. 138; M. Ado, iii. 1. 42. Hence "overlook" is probably not the subjunctive (see however 369) but the infinitive in

"Willing you (to) overlook this pedigree."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 90. So after "have need:"

"Thou hadst need send for more money."-T. N. ii. 3. 99.

"Vouchsafe me speak a word."—C. of E. v. 1. 282.

"To come view fair Portia."—M. of V. ii. 7. 43.

"We'll come dress you straight."—M. W. of W. iv. 2. 80.

"I will go seek the king."-Hamlet, ii. 1. 101.

We still retain a dislike to use the formal to after "go" and "come," which may almost be called auxiliaries, and we therefore say, "I will come and see you."

We cannot reject now the to after "know" (though after this word we seldom use the infinitive at all, and prefer to use the conjunction "that"), but Shakespeare has

"Knowing thy heart (to) torment me with disdain."—Sonn. 132

A similar omission is found in

"That they would suffer these abominations
By our strong arms from forth her fair streets (to be) chased."

R. of L. 1634.

So "Because, my lord, we would have had you (to have) heard The traitor speak."—Rich. III. iii. 5. 56.

To is inserted after "let" both in the sense of "suffer" and in that of "hinder."

"And let (suffer) no quarrel nor no brawl to come."

T. N. v. 1. 364.

"If nothing *lets* (prevents) to make us happy both."—Ib. 256. On the other hand, to is omitted after "beteem" in the sense of "suffer:"

"He might not beteem the winds of heaven Visit her face too roughly."—Hamlet, i. 2. 142.

After "durst:"

"I durst, my lord, to wager she is honest."—Othello, iv. 2. 11.
The to is often inserted after verbs of perceiving,—"feel," "see,"

"hear," &c.
"Who heard me to deny it?"—C. of E. v. 1. 25.

"Myself have heard a voice to call him so."

2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 94.

"Whom when on ground she grovelling saw to roll."
SPENS. F. O. v. 7. 32.

"Methinks I feel this youth's perfections To creep in at mine eyes."—T. N. i. 5. 317.

"I had rather hear you to solicit that."—Ib. iii. 1. 120.

"To see great Hercules whipping a gig, And profound Solomon to tune a jig, And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys."

L. L. iv. 3. 167-9.

This quotation shows that, after "see," the infinitive, whether with or without "to," is equivalent to the participle. "Whipping," "to tune," and "play," are all co-ordinate. The participial form is the most correct: as in Latin, "Audivi illam canentem;" modern English, "I heard her sing;" Elizabethan English, "I heard her to sing." The infinitive with to after verbs of perception occurs rarely, if ever, in Early English (Mätzner quotes Wickliffe, St. John xii. 18, but ?). It seems to have been on the increase towards

the end of the sixteenth century, for whereas Wickliffe (St. Matt. xv. 31) has "The puple wondride seynge dumb men spekynge and crokid men goynge, blynde men seyinge," Tyndale (1534) has "The people wondred to se the domme speak, the maymed whole, the halt to go, and the blynde to se;" and the A. V. (1611) has to throughout. This idiom is also very common in North, and Florio's "Montaigne." We have recurred to the idiom of Early English.

Compare William of Palerne, 1. 871: "and whan he seis bat semly sitte him bi-fore," i.e. "and when he saw her in her beauty sit before him." In this quotation we might render "sitte" by the participle "sitting," as the girl is regarded as "in the state of sitting." This opens the question of the origin of the phrase "to see great Hercules whipping." Is "whipping," by derivation, a verbal abbreviated for "a-whipping," as in 93, or a present participle? The common construction after "see" and "hear" in Layamon and William of Palerne seems to be neither the participle nor the verbal, but the infinitive in -e or -en. Probably, when the infinitive inflection died out, it was felt that the short uninflected form was not weighty enough to express the emphatic infinitive, and recourse was had to the present participle, a substitution which was aided by the similarity of the terminations -en and -ing. This is one of the many cases in which the terminations of the infinitive and present participle have been confused together (93). and the -ing in this construction represents the old infinitive inflection -en. This may explain:

"I my brother know
Yet living (to live) in my glass."—T. N. iii. 4. 415.
i.e. "that my brother lives."

Hence, perhaps, also -ing was added as a reminiscence of the old gerundive termination -ene, in such expressions as

"Put the liveries to making."—M. of V. ii. 2. 124.

Similarly we find, side by side, in Selden's "Table Talk," "He fell to eating" and he "fell to eat."

350. "To" omitted and inserted in the same sentence. The to is often omitted in the former of two clauses and inserted in the latter, particularly when the finite principal verb is an auxiliary, or like an auxiliary.

"Whether hadst thou rather be a Faulconbridge And, like thy brother, to enjoy thy land."—K. J. i. 1. 134 "I would no more

Endure this wooden slavery than to suffer The flesh-fly blow my mouth."—Tempest, iii. 1. 62.

"Who would be so mock'd with glory, or to live But in a dream of friendship?"—T. of A. iv. 2. 33.

So K. J. v. 2. 138-9; J. C. iv. 3. 73; T. N. v. 1. 346.

"Sir, I desire you (to) do me right and justice,
And to bestow your pity on me."—Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 14.
"Bids you

Deliver up the crown and to take pity."-Hen. V. ii. 4. 104.

"Makes both my body pine and soul to languish."
P. of T. i. 1, 31.

"Make thy two eyes like stars start from their spheres,
Thy knotted and combined locks to part."—Hamlet, i. 4. 18.

"Brutus had rather be a villager
Than to repute himself a son of Rome."—F. C. i. 2. 173.

"She tells me she'! wed the stranger knight, Or never more to view nor day nor night."—P. of T. ii. 5. 17.

"Some pagan shore, Where these two Christian armies *might* combine The blood of malice in a vein of league, And not to spend it so unneighbourly."—K. J. v. 2. 39.

Thus probably we must explain:

"And let them all encircle him about,
And fairy-like to pinch the unclean knight,"
M. W. of W. iv. 4. 57.

The common explanation "to-pinch," attributes to Shakespeare an archaism which is probably nowhere found in his works (not even in *P. of T.* iii. 2. 17). See All to, 28.

It is a question how to explain

"She is abus'd, stol'n from me and corrupted By spells and medicines bought of mountebanks: For nature so preposterously to err, Being not deficient, blind or lame of sense, Sans witchcraft could not."—Othello, i. 3. 62.

Here, either as above, (1) "to err" depends on "could," i.e. "Nature was not able to err;" or (2) "could not" might perhaps stand for "could not be," "was impossible," having for its subject "Nature to err." (See 354.) In (2) "for" may be either (a) a con-

junction, or (b) a preposition: "It was not possible for Nature thus to err." I prefer (1).

In "For little office

The lateful commons will perform for us Except, like curs, to tear us all to pieces," Rich. II. ii. 2. 139.

"to tear" may be considered as a noun, the object of "except."

351. It were best (to). T_0 is often omitted after "best" in such phrases as "it were best," "thou wert best," &c. Perhaps there is in some of these cases an unconscious blending of two constructions, the infinitive and imperative, exactly corresponding to the Greek old ob" old ob old ob old ob.

"'Tis best put finger in the eye."-T. of Sh. i. 1. 78.

"I were best not call."-Cymb. iii. 6. 19.

"'Twere best not know myself."-Macbeth, i. 2. 73.

"Best draw my sword."—Cymb. iii. 6. 25.

In most of these cases the speaker is speaking of himself: but often it is impossible, without the context, to tell whether the verb is in the infinitive or imperative. Thus in

"Better be with the dead,"—Macbeth, iii. 2. 20. it is only the following line,

"Whom we, to gain our peace, have sent to peace," that shows that be is infinitive. When we now use this idiom, we generally intend the verb to be used imperatively.

352. I were best (to). The construction

"Thou wert better gall the devil."-K. 7. iv. 3. 95.

"I were best leave him."-I Hen. VI. v. 3. 82.

"Madam, you're best consider."-Cymb. iii. 2. 79.

like the modern construction "if you please," (in which we should now say, and be correct in saying, that "you" is the subject, though it was originally the object, of "please,") represents an old impersonal idiom: "Me were liefer," i.e. "it would be more pleasant to me;" "Me were loth;" "Him were better." Very early, however, the personal construction is found side by side with the impersonal. The change seems to have arisen from an erroneous feeling that "Me were better" was ungrammatical. Sometimes the to is inserted:

"You were best to go to bed."—2 Hen. VI. v. I. 196.

"You were best to tell Antonio what he said."-M. of V ii. 8. 33.

353. "To" omitted after Conjunctions.

Where two infinitives are coupled together by a conjunction, the to is still omitted in the former, where the tatter happens to be nearer to the principal verb, e.g. after "rather than." "Rather than see himself disgraced, he preferred to die." But we could not say

"Will you be so good, scauld knave, as eat it?"—Hen. V. v. 1. 31.

This is probably to be explained, like the above, as a blending of two constructions—the infinitive, "Will you be so good as to eat it?" and the imperative, "Eat it, will you be so good?"

In "Under the which he shall not choose but fall."

Hamlet, v. 7. 66.

"Nay then, indeed she cannot choose but hate thee."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 289.

"Thou shalt not choose but go."-T. N. iv. I. 61.

the obvious and grammatical construction is "he shall not choose anything except (to) fall;" "she cannot choose anything except (to) hate thee;" but probably (contrary to Mätzner's view, iii. 18) the explanation of the omission is, that Shakespeare mentally supplies "shall," "can," &c. "He shall not choose anything else, but (shall) fall." This is supported by

"Who . . . cannot choose but they must blab." - Othello, iv. 1. 28.

354. Noun and infinitive used as subject or object.

It might be thought that this was a Latinism. But a somewhat similar use of the infinitive with a noun in impersonal sentences is often found in E. E. and, though rarely, in A.-S.

"No wondur is a lewid man to ruste."—CHAUCER, C. T. 504.

"It is ful fair a man to bear him even."—Ib. 1525.

"It spedith one man for to die for be puple."—WICKLIFFE, St. John xviiii. 14.

(So Mätzner, but Bagster has "that o man,") i.e. "that one man should die."

"It is the lesser fault, modesty finds,

Women to change their shapes than men their minds."

T. G. of V. v. 4, 109.

"As in an early spring We see the appearing buds which to prove fruit Hope gives not so much warrant as despair That frosts will bite them."—2 Hen. IV. i. 3. 39.

"This to be true I do engage my life."—A. Y. L. v. 4. 171.

"Be then desir'd

A little to disquantity your train,

And the remainder that shall still depend

To be such men that shall besort your age."—Leur, i. 4. 272.

In the following instance "brags of" is used like "boasts:"

"Verona brags of him

To be a virtuous and well-govern'd youth."—R. and J. i. 5. 70.
"I have deserv'd

All tongues to talk their bitterest."—W. T. iii. 2. 217.

"(This) is all as monstrous to our human reason

As my Antigonus to break his grave."—Ib. v. 1. 42.

"O that self-chain about his neck

Which he foreswore most monstrously to have."

C. of E. v. 1. 11; Rich. III. iv. 4. 337.

Add perhaps "The duke

Will never grant this forfeiture to hold,"-M. of V. iii. 3. 25.

though "forfeiture" may be personified, and "grant" used like "allow." We retain this use, but transpose "for" in "for to" (see the example from Wickliffe above) and place it before the noun or pronoun:

"For me to put him to his purgation would perhaps plunge him into far more choler."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 317.

355. The Infinitive used as a Noun. This use is still retained when the Infinitive is the subject of a verb, as "To walk is pleasant;" but we should not now say—

"What's sweet to do to do will aptly find."-L. C. 13.

"My operant powers their functions leave to do."

Hamlet, iii. 2. 184; ib. iii. 4. 66.

"Have not to do with him."—Rich. III. i. 3. 292.

So 3 Hen. VI. iv. 5. 2.

"Metaphors far-fet hinder to be understood."—B. J. Disc. 757.

Apparently to is omitted in the following curious passage:—

"For to (to) have this absolute power of Dictator they added never to be afraid to be deposed."—N. P. 611.

It is doubtful whether the infinitive is a noun in the objective in

"Nor has he with him to supply his life."—T. of A. iv. I. 46.

i.e. "the power of supplying;" or whether "anything" is understood: "He has not anything to supply his livelihood."

We can say "I was denied my rights," but not

"I am denied to sue my livery here."-Rich. III. ii. 3. 129.

356. Infinitive, indefinitely used. To was originally used not with the infinitive but with the gerund in -c, and, like the Latin "ad" with the gerund, denoted a purpose. Thus "to love" was originally "to loven," i.e. "to (or toward) loving" (ad amandum). Gradually, as to superseded the proper infinitival inflection, to was used in other and more indefinite senses, "for," "about," "in," "as regards," and, in a word, for any form of the gerund as well as for the infinitive.

"To fright you thus methinks I am too savage."—Mach. iv. 2. 70. Not "too savage to fright you," but "in or for frighting you."

"I was too strict to make mine own away."—Rich. II. i. 3. 243. i.e. "I was too severe to myself in sacrificing my son."

"Too proud to be (of being) so valiant."—Coriol. i. 1. 263.

"I will not shame myself to give you (by giving you) this."

M. of V. iv. 1. 431.

"Make moan to be abridged."—Ib. i. 1. 126.

Not, "in order to be," but, "about being abridged."

"Who then shall blame

His pester'd senses to recoil and start."—Macb. v. 2. 22.

i.e. "for recoiling." Comp. T. of Sh. iii. 2. 27; A. Y. L. v. 2. 110.

"O, who shall hinder me to wail and weep?"

Rich. III. ii. 2. 27.

i.e. "as regards, or from, wailing."

"But I shall grieve you to report (by reporting) the rest."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 95.

"You might have saved me my pains to have taken away the ring."

T. N. ii. 2. 6.

i.e. "by having taken away."

"I the truer, so to be (for being) false with you."

Cymb. i. 5. 44.

"Lest the State shut itself out to take any penalty for the same."—B. E. 158.

i.e. "as regards taking any penalty." We still say, "I fear to do it," where "to" has no meaning of purpose; but Bacon wrote—

"Young men care not to innovate."-B. E. 161.

"are not cautious about innovating." So Tr. and Cr. v. 1. 71.

This gerundive use of the infinitive is common after the verb "to mean :"

"What mean these masterless and gory swords

To lie discolour'd by this place of peace?"-R. and 7. v. 3. 143.

"What mean you, sir,

To give them this discomfort?"-A. and C. iv. I. 34. So Tr. and Cr. v. 1, 30.

"To weep to have that which it fears to lose."-Sonn. 64.

i.e. "to weep because of having, because-it has."

We say, "I took eleven hours to write it," or "I spent eleven hours in writing," not

"Eleven hours I spent to write it over."

Rich. III. iii. 6. 5; M. of V. i. 1. 154.

"But thou strik'st me

Sorely, to say (in saying) I did."-W. T. v. I. 18. "You scarce can right me throughly then to say

You did mistake."—Ib. ii. 1. 99.

i.e. "by saving."

"I know not what I shall incur to pass it."-Ib. ii. 2. 57.

ie. "I know not what penalty I shall incur as the consequence of, or for, letting it pass."

"You're well to live."-W. T. iii. 3. 121.

i.e. "You are well off as regards living," resembles our modern, "You are well to do." The infinitive thus used is seldom preceded by an object:

"So that, conclusions to be as kisses, if your (221) four negatives Make your two affirmatives, why then," &c. -T. N. v. 1. 22.

"What! I, that kill'd her husband and his father, To take her in her heart's extremest hate !"

Rich, III. i. 2, 231-2.

From 216 it will be seen that the English pronoun, when it represents the Latin accusative before the infinitive, is often found in the nominative. The following is a curious instance of the ambiguity attending this idiom :-

"I do beseech your grace

To have some conference with your grace alone."

Rich. II. v. 3. 27.

s.e. "about having some conference," and here, as the context shows, "that I may have some conference,"

Equally ambiguous, with a precisely opposite interpretation, ts

"Sir, the queen

Desires your visitation, and to be

Acquainted with this stranger."-Hen. VIII. v. 1. 169.

i.e. "and that you will become acquainted."

"Of him I gather'd honour Which he to seek (seeking) of me again perforce Behoves me keep at utterance."—Cymb, iii. i. 72.

Probably we must thus explain:

"Thou'lt torture me to leave unspoken that Which, to be spoke, would torture thee."—Ib. v. 5. 139.

i.e. "You wish to torture me for leaving unspoken that which, by being spoken, would torture you."

"Foul is most foul being foul to be a scoffer,"

A. Y. L. iii. 5. 62.

seems to mean "foulness is most foul when its foulness consists in being scornful."

357. "To" frequently stands at the beginning of a sentence in the above indefinite signification. Thus *Macb.* iv. 2. 70, quoted above, and—

"To do this deed,

Promotion follows."—W. T. i. 2. 356.

"To know my deed, 'twere best not know myself."

Macbeth, ii. 2. 73.

"To say to go with you, I cannot."-B. J. E. out &c. iv. 6.

"To belie him I will not."-A. W. iv. 3. 299.

"Other of them may have crooked noses, but to over (as regards owning) such straight arms, none."—Cymb. iii. 1. 38.

"For of one grief grafted alone,

To graft another thereupon,

A surer crab we can have none."—Heywood.

"To lack or lose that we would win So that our fault is not therein, What woe or want end or begin?"—Ib.

"To sue to live, I find I seek to die,
And seeking death find life,"—M. for M. iii. 1. 43.

where "to sue to live" means "as regards suing to live," and corresponds to "seeking death."

This indefinite use of the infinitive in a gerundive sense seems to be a continuation of the old idiom which combined to with the gerund.

Less frequently the clause depends on "that:"

"But that I'll give my voice on Richard's side, God knows I will not do it."—Rich. III. iii. 1. 53.

- 358. For to. When the notion of purpose is to be brought out, for to is often used instead of to, and in other cases also. Similarly the Danish and Swedish languages (Mätzner) have "for at," and the old French has "por (pour) a," with the infinitive. For to is still more common in Early English than in Elizabethan.
- 359. Infinitive active is often found where we use the passive, as in

"Yet, if men moved him, was he such a storm As oft 'twixt May and April is to see."—L. C. 102.

This is especially common in "what's to do" (T. N. iii. 3. 18; &c.) for "what's to be done." See Ellipses, 405, and compare

"Savage, extreme, rude, cruel, not to trust."—Sonn. 129. i.e. "not to be trusted."

360. Infinitive, complete Present. It is now commonly asserted that such expressions as "I hoped to have seen him yesterday" are ungrammatical. But in the Elizabethan as in Early English authors, after verbs of hoping, intending, or verbs signifying that something ought to have been done but was not, the Complete Present Infinitive is used. We still retain this idiom in the expression, "I would (i.e. wished to) have done it." "I ought (i.e. was bound) to have done it." But we find in Shakespeare—

"I hoped thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's wife;
I thought thy bride-bed to have deck'd, sweet maid."

Hamlet, v. I. 268,

"Thought to have begg'd."-Cymb. iii. 6. 48.

In "Levied an army weening to redeem,
And have install'd me in the diadem,"—I Hen. VI. ii. 5. 89, it is difficult to explain the juxtaposition of the simple present with an apparently complete present infinitive. Probably have is here used in the sense of "cause," i.e. "thinking to redeem me and to have me install'd," "to cause me to be install'd." So in

"Ambitious love hath so in me offended
That barefoot plod I the cold ground upon
With sainted yow my faults to have amended,"

A. W. iii. 4. 7.

"to have amended" seems to mean "to cause to be amended." But possibly there is no need for this supposition of transposition. The thought of *unfulfilment* and disappointment growing on the speaker might induce her to put the latter verb in the complete present infinitive.

"Pharnabazus came thither thinking to have raised the siege."— N. P. 179.

Sometimes the infinitive is used without a verb of "thinking," to imply an unfulfilled action.

"I told him of myself, which was as much As to have ask'd him pardon."—A. and C. ii. 2. 79.

But often it seems used by attraction to "have," expressed or implied in a previous verb.

"She would have made Hercules to have turned spit."

M. Ado, ii. 1. 261.

"I had not (i.e. should not have) been persuaded to have hurled These few ill-spoken lines into the world."

BEAUMONT on Faithful Shepherdess.

So Milton: "He trusted to have equall'd the Most High."

The same idiom is found in Latin poetry (Madvig, 407. Obs. 2) after verbs of wishing and intending. The reason of the idiom seems to be a desire to express that the object wished or intended is a completed fact, that has happened contrary to the wish and cannot now be altered.

361. Subjunctive, simple form. See also Be, Were, An, But, If, &c. The subjunctive (a consequence of the old inflectional form) was frequently used, not as now with would, should, &c., but in a form identical with the indicative, where nothing but the context (in the case of past tenses) shows that it is the subjunctive, as:

"But, if my father had not scanted me,
Yourself, renowned prince, then stood as fair."

M. of V. ii. 1 17.

"Preferment goes by letter and affection,
And not by old gradation where each second
Stood heir to the first."—Othello, i. 1. 38.

If it be asked what is the difference between "stood" here and "would have stood," I should say that the simple form of the subjunctive, coinciding in sound with the indicative, implied to an Elizabethan more of *inevitability* (subject, of course, to a condition which is not fulfilled). "Stood" means "would certainly have stood." The possibility is regarded as an unfulfilled fact, to speak paradoxically. Compare the Greek idiom of w with the indicative.

"If he did not care whether he had their love or no, he waived indifferently twixt doing them neither good nor harm; but he seeks their hate with greater devotion than they can render it him."—Coriol. ii. 2. 17.

"If they

Should say, 'Be good to Rome,' they *charged* him even As those should do," &c.—*Coriol*. iv. 6, 112.

"(If I rebuked you) then I check'd my friends."

Rich. III. iii. 7. 150.

"Till" is used varyingly with the indicative present, future, and the subjunctive.

The subjunctive is found after "so" in the sense of "so (that)," i.e. "(if it be) so (that)."

"I will . . . endow a child of thine, So in the Lethe of thy angry soul

Thou drown the sad remembrance of these wrongs."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 251.

Sometimes the presence of the subjunctive, used conditionally (where, as in the case of *did*, the subjunctive and indicative are identical in inflections), is indicated by placing the verb before the subject:

"Did I tell this . . . who would believe me?"

M. for M. ii. 4. 171.

"Live Roderigo,
He calls me to a restitution."—Othello, v. 1. 14.

"Live a thousand years,

I shall not find myself so fit to die."—7. C. iii. 1. 159.

"Live thou, I live."-M. of V. iii. 2. 61.

Where we should say, "Should I tell, live," &c.

The indicative is sometimes found where the subjunctive might be expected:

"Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house, I will discharge my bond,"—C. of E. iv. I. 12.

where the first clause might be taken interrogatively, "Is it your

pleasure to walk with me? In that case I will," &c. So 2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 225. Perhaps we may thus explain the so-called imperative in the first person plural:

"Well, sit we down,

And let us hear Bernardo speak of this."—Hamlet, i. 1. 23.

i.e. "suppose we sit down?" "what if we sit down?" Compare Ib. 168.

"Alcib. I'll take the gold thou giv'st me, not all thy counsel. So Timon. Dost thou, or dost thou not, Heaven's curse upon thee!"-T. of A. iv. 3. 131.

So "willy-nilly" and

"He left this ring behind him, would I or not."-T. N. i. 5. 321.

"Please" is, however, often found in the subjunctive, even interrogatively.

"Please it you that I call?"-T. of Sh. iv. 4. 1.

It then represents our modern "may it please?" and expresses a modest doubt.

The subjunctive is also found, more frequently than now, with if, though, &c. The subjunctive "he dare" is more common than "he dares" in the historical plays, but far less common in the others. The only difference between the two is a difference of thought, the same as between "he can jump six feet" and "he could jump six feet," i.e. if he liked.

Compare "For I know thou darest.

But this thing dare not." *- Tempest, iii. 2. 62-3.

i.e. "would not dare on any consideration:" stronger than "dares."

The indiscriminate use of "dare" and "dares" (regulated, perhaps, by some regard to euphony) is illustrated by

> "Here boldly spread thy hands, no venom'd weed Dares blister them, no slimy snail dare creep." B. and F. F. Sh. iii. I.

362. Subjunctive auxiliary forms. The simple form of the subjunctive is sometimes interchanged and co-ordinate with the auxiliary form.

"If thou wert the ass, thy dulness would torment thee, and still thou livedst but as a breakfast to the wolf; if thou wert the wolf, thy greediness would afflict thee, and oft thou shouldst hazard thy life for a dinner; wert thou a horse, thou wouldest be seized by

^{* &}quot;This thing" means "this creature Trinculo," and is antithetical to "thou."

the leopard; wert thou a leopard, thou wert german to the lion."-T. of A. iv. 3. 385-94.

Note here that "livedst" and "shouldst" imply inevitability and "Wouldest" is used in the passive because the passive compulsion. in itself implies compulsion. "Would" is used after "dulness" and "greediness" because they are quasi-personified as voluntary persecutors. Why not "hazardedst" as well as "livedst?" Perhaps to avoid the double d.

"Do," "did," are often used with verbs in the subjunctive:

"Better far, I guess,
That we do make our entrance several ways."—I Hen. VI. ii. 1. 30. "Lest your retirement do amaze your friends."-I Hen. IV. v. 4. 5.

363. The Subjunctive is replaced by the Indicative after "if," where there is no reference to futurity, and no doubt is expressed, as in "if thou lovest me."

> "O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord. Banish the cankers of ambitious thoughts."

2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 17.

"An thou canst not smile as the wind sits, thou'lt catch cold shortly."-Lear, i. 4. 112.

"Ah, no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me."-I Hen. IV. 1i. 4. 312.

In the last example Falstaff is assuming the Prince's love as a present fact in order to procure the immediate cessation of ridicule. But in the following he asks the Prince to do him a favour regarded as future, and as somewhat more doubtful:-

"If thou love me, practise an answer."-I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 411. Incredulity is expressed in

"If thou have power to raise him, bring him hither."

Ib. iii. 1. 60.

In "If thou dost nod thou break'st thy instrument,"

7. C. iv. 3. 271.

the meaning is "you are sure to break," and the present indicative being used in the consequent, is also used in the antecedent. 'So in

"I am quickly ill and well So (almost 'since') Antony loves."—A. and C. i. 3. 73.

In "It (my purpose) is no more But that your daughter, ere she seems as won, Desires this ring,"-A. W. iii. 7. 32.

the purpose is regarded graphically as a *fact* in the act of being completed. However, the indiscriminate use of the indicative and subjunctive at the beginning of the seventeenth century is illustrated by the A. V. *St. Matt.* v. 23:

"Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest,"

- 364. Subjunctive used optatively or imperatively. This was more common then than in modern poetry.
 - "Who's first in worth, the same be first in place."
 B. J. Cy.'s Rev. v. 1.
 - (May) "Your own good thoughts excuse me, and farewell."

 L. L. L. ii. 1. 177
 - "O heavens, that they were living both in Naples,
 The king and queen there! (provided) that they were, I wish
 Myself were mudded in the oozy bed."—Tempest, v. 1. 150.
 - "No man *inveigh* against the wither'd flower,
 But chide rough winter that the flower hath kill'd."

 R. of L.
 - "In thy fats our cares be drowned,
 With thy grapes our hairs be crowned."—A. and C. ii. 7. 122.

The juxtaposition of an imperative sometimes indicates the imperative use.

- "Touch you the sourest points with sweetest terms, Nor (let) curstness grow to the matter."—A. and C. ii. 2. 25.
- "Good now, sit down, and tell me he that knows," &c.

 Hamlet, i. 1. 70.
- "Take Antony Octavia to his wife."—A. and C. ii. 2. 129.
- "Run one before, and let the queen know."-Ib. iv. 8. 1.
- "Thus time we waste, and longest leagues make short; Sail seas in cockles, have an wish but for 't."

F. of T. iv. 4. Gower, 2.

i.e. "Let any one but wish it, and we will sail seas in cockles."

Sometimes only the context shows the imperative use:

"For his passage, (See that) The soldiers' music and the rites of war *Speak* loudly for him."—*Hamlet*, v. 2. 411.

The 'and' is superfluous, or else "question" is imperative, in

"Question, your grace, the late ambassadors, And you shall find."—Hen. V. ii. 4. 61.

"Hold out my horse and I will first be there." So in

Rich. II. ii. 1. 300.

"Then (see that) every soldier kill his prisoners."

Hen. V. iv. 6. 37.

On the other hand, "prove" is conditional (or "and" is omitted)

"O my father! Prove you that any man with me conversed, Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death."

M. Ado, iv. I. 182-6.

Often it is impossible to tell whether we have an imperative with a vocative, or a subjunctive used optatively or conditionally.

> "Melt Egypt into Nile, and kindly creatures Turn all to serpents."—A. and C. ii. 5. 78. "That I shall clear myself,

Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience, I make as little doubt as," &c.—Hen. VIII. v. 1. 66.

"Now to that name my courage prove my title."

A. and C. v. 2. 291.

'Sport and repose turn from me day and night." Hamlet, iii. 2. 218.

365. This optative use of the subjunctive dispensing with "let," "may," &c. gives great vigour to the Shakespearian line:

" Judge me the world." - Othello, i. 2. 72.

i.e. "let the world judge for me."

in

"Disorder, that hath spoil'd us, friend us now."

Hen. V. iv. 5. 17.

"Long die thy happy days before thy death."

Rich. III. i. 3. 207.

"The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul."-Ib. 222.

The reader of Shakespeare should always be ready to recognize the subjunctive, even where the identity of the subjunctive with the indicative inflection renders distinction between two moods impossible, except from the context. Thus:

"Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse, Which in the day of battle tire thee more Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st! My prayers on the adverse party fight, And there the little souls of Edward's children Whisper the spirits of thine enemies, And promise them success and victory."—Rich, III, iv. 4. 190,

Here, in the second line, "tire," necessarily subjunctive, impresses upon the reader that the co-ordinate verbs, "fight," &c., are also subjunctive. But else, it would be possible for a careless reader to take "fight," &c. as indicative, and ruin the passage.

This optative or imperative use of the subjunctive, though common in Elizabethan writers, had already begun to be supplanted by auxiliaries. Thus Wickliffe has (*Coloss.* ii. 16) "No man juge you," while all the other versions have "Let no man judge you."

366. Subjunctive, complete present. (See Should for "if he should have.") The subjunctive with "have" is not very frequent. It is used where a past event is not indeed denied, but qualified conditionally, in an argumentative manner:

"If, sir, perchance
She have restrain'd the riots of your followers,
"Tis on such ground . . . as clears her from all blame."

Lear, ii. 4. 145 i.e. "If it should hereafter be proved that she have," "if so be that she have"

So "If this young gentleman have done offence."

T. N. iii. 4. 344.

"Though it have" is somewhat similarly used to express a concession for the sake of argument, not a fact.

"For though it have holp madmen to their wits."
Rich. II. v. 5. 62.

367. Subjunctive used indefinitely after the Relative.

"In her youth There is a prone and speechless dialect Such as move men."—M. for M. i. 2. 189

"And the stars whose feeble light Give a pale shadow."—B. and F.

"But they whose guilt within their bosom lie Imagine every eye beholds their blame."—R. of L. ii. 1344.

"Thou canst not die, whilst any zeal abound."

DANIEL (quoted by WALKER).

"I charge you to like as much of this play as please you."

A. Y. L. Epilogue.

"And may direct his course as please himself."

Rich. III. ii 2. 129.

Perhaps (but see 218)

"Alas, their love may be called appetite, No motion of the liver, but the palate That suffer surfeit."—T. N. ii. 4. 102.

In the subordinate clauses of a conditional sentence, the relative is often followed by the subjunctive:

"A man that were to sleep your sleep."-Cymb. v. 4. 179.

i.e. "If there were a man who was destined to sleep your sleep."

"If they would yield us but the superfluity while it were wholesome."—Coriol. i. 1. 18.

368. Subjunctive in a subordinate sentence. The subjunctive is often used with or without "that," to denote a purpose (see above, That). But it is also used after "that," "who," &c. in dependent sentences where no purpose is implied, but only futurity.*

"Be it of less expect

That matter needless of importless burden

Divide thy lips."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 71.

No "purpose" can be said to be implied in "please," in the following:—
"May it please you, madam,

That he bid Helen come to you."—A. W. i. 3. 71.
"Yet were it true

To say this boy were like me."—W. T. i. 2. 135.

"Thou for whom Jove would swear

Juno but an Æthiop were."-L. L. iv. 3. 118.

"Would you not swear that she were a maid?"

M. Ado, iv. 1. 40.

"One would think his mother's milk were scarce out of him."

T. N. i. 5. 171.

In the last four passages the second verb is perhaps attracted to the mood of the first.

"Proteus. But she is dead. Silv.

Say that she be: yet," &c.

T. G. of V. iv. 2. 109.

"With no show of fear,

No, with no more than if we heard that England Were busied with a Whitsun Morris-dance."

Hen. V. ii. 4. 25.

⁴ I have found no instance in Shakespeare like the following, quoted by Walker from Sidney's Arcadia:

[&]quot;And I think there she do dwell."

"I pray (hope) his absence proceed by swallowing that."

Cymb. iii. 5. 58

"If it be proved against an alien
That by direct or indirect attempt

He seek the life of any citizen."—M. of V. iv. 1. 351.

"One thing more rests that thyself execute."—T. of Sh. i. 1. 251. where, however, "that" may be the relative, and "execute" an imperative.

I know of no other instance in Shakespeare but the following, where the subjunctive is used after "that" used for "so that," of a fact:

"Through the velvet leaves the wind

All unseen can passage find, That the lover sick to death

Wish himself the heaven's breath."-L. L. L. iv. 3. 108.

The metre evidently may have suggested this licence: or -es or -d may have easily dropped out of "wishes" or "wish'd."

The subjunctive is used where we should use the future in

"I doubt not you (will) sustain what you're worthy of by your attempt."—Cymb. i. 4. 125.

"Think" seems used subjunctively, and "that" as a conjunction in

"And heaven defend (prevent) your good souls that you (should) think

I will your serious and great business scant For (because) she is with me."—Othello, i. 3. 267.

The "that" is sometimes omitted:

"It is impossible they bear it out."-Ib. ii. 1. 19.

Here "bear" is probably the subjunctive. The subjunctive is by no means always used in such sentences. We may contrast

"No matter then who see it."-Rich. II. v. 2. 59.

"I care not who know it."-Hen. V. iv. 7. 118.

with

"I care not who knows so much."-T. N. iii. 4. 300.

369. The Subjunctive after verbs of command and entreaty is especially common; naturally, since command implies a purpose.

"We enjoin thee that thou carry."-W. T. ii. 3. 174.

"I conjure thee that thou declare."-Ib. i. 2. 402.

So M. for M. v. 1. 50.

"Tell him from me

He bear himself with honourable action." T. of Sh. Ind. i. I. 119.

"Thy dukedom I resign, and do entreat

Thou pardon me my wrongs."—Temp. v. I. 119.

So after "forbid."

"Fortune forbid my outside have not charmed her."

T. N. ii. 2, 19.

Sometimes an auxiliary is used:

"I do beseech your majesty may salve."-I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 155.

Hence in such passages as

"Go charge my goblins that they grind their joints,"

Temp. iv. 1. 259.

the verb is to be considered as in the subjunctive.

After a past tense "should" is used:

"She bade me . . . I should teach him." - Othello, i. 3. 165.

370. Irregular sequence of tenses. Sometimes the sequence of tenses is not observed in these dependent sentences:

"Therefore they thought it good you hear a play."

T. of Sh. Ind. 2. 136.

"Twere good you do so much for charity."-M. of V. iv. 1. 261.

In both cases a present is implied in the preceding verb: "They thought and think," "It were and is good."

Reversely in

"But de not stain

The even virtue of our enterprise To think that or our cause or our performance Did need an oath."—7. C. ii. 1. 136.

"Did need" means "ever could need," and is stronger than "need" or "can need." In

"Is it not meet that I did amplify my judgment?" - Cymb. i. 5. 17. as in "It is time he came," the action is regarded as one "meet" in time past, as well as in the future.

"It hath been taught us from the primal state
That he which is is wished until he were."—A. and C. i. 3. 42.

Here "were" is used partly for euphony and alliteration, partly because the speaker is speaking of the past, "is and was always wished until he were."

371. Conditional sentences. The consequent does not always answer to the antecedent in mood or tense. Frequently the irregularity can be readily explained by a change of thought.

"And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,

(Or rather, I would) Were growing time once ripen'd to
my will."—I Hen. VI. ii. 4. 98.

So 3 Hen. VI. v. 7. 21.

"If we shall stand still

(Or rather, if we should, for we shall not) We should take root."

Hen. VIII. i. 2. 86.

"I will find

Where truth is hid, (and I would find it) though it were hid indeed

Within the centre."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 157-8.

Compare Ezek. xiv. 14, A. V.:

"Though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver but their own souls."

with ib. 20, "they shall deliver."

"But if the gods themselves did see her then

(If they had seen her) The instant burst of clamour that she

Would have made milch the burning eyes of heaven."

Hamlet, ii. 2. 535-40. "Till I know 'tis done.

Howe'er my hopes (might be), my joys were ne'er begun."

Ib. iv. 3. 70.

Sometimes the consequent is put graphically in the present merely for vividness:

"If he should do so,

He leaves his back unarm'd; ... never fear that."

2 Hen. IV. i. 3. 80.

Or else the speaker rises in the tone of confidence:

"I am assured, if I be measured rightly,

Your majesty hath no just cause to hate me."-Ib. v. 2. 66.

PARTICIPLES.

372. Participles, Active. Our termination -ing does duty for (1) the old infinitive in -an; (2) the old imperfect participle in end, ende, ande; and (3) a verbal noun in -ung. Hence arises great con-

fusion. It would sometimes appear that Shakespeare fancied that -ing was equivalent to -en, the old affix of the Passive Participle. Thus—

"From his all-obeying breath I hear the doom of Egypt."—A. and C. iii. 13. 77.

i.e. "obeyed by all."

"Many a dry drop seemed a veeping tear."—R. of L. i. 1375. So "His unrecalling crime" (R. of L.) for "unrecalled."

(In "Many excesses which are owing a man till his age,"—B. E. 122. i.e. "own, or, belonging to a man," owing is not a participle at all, but an adjective, "agen," "âwen," "ôwen," "owenne," "owing;" which was mistaken for a participle.

"There is more owing her than is paid."—A. W. i. 3. 107.

"Wanting," as in *Coriol*. ii. 1. 217, "One thing is wanting," can be explained from the use of the verb wanteth in the following passage:

"There wanteth now our brother Gloucester here
To make the period of this perfect peace."—R. III. ii. 1. 43.)

The same explanation may apply to "I am much beholding to you," which is sometimes found for "beholden," Rich. III. ii. 1.129, J. C. iii. 2.70-3, and even to

"Relish your nimble notes to pleasing ears." -- R. of L.

In the following, *-ing* might be supplanted, without altering the sense, by the infinitive or the verbal preceded by a-:*

"Women are angels, wooing: Things won are done."—Tr. and Cr. i. 2. 312.

t.e. "women are considered angels to woo, or a-wooing," where wooing, if treated as an ordinary present participle, would give the opposite to the intended meaning. Probably in the above, as in the following, a- is omitted.

"Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness
Last longer (a-, or in) telling than thy kindness date."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 254.

The "in" is inserted in

"Pause a day or two
Before you hazard; for in choosing wrong I lose your company."—M. of V. iii. 2. 2.

^{*} Comp. "Returning were as tedious as (to) go o'er,"—Mach. iii. 4. 138. to which the ing perhaps qualifies "go" as well as "return," and might be supplanted by "to."

i.e. "in the event of your choosing wrong, I lose your company." The two constructions occur together in

"Come, come, in wooing sorrow let's be brief,
Since, (a-)wedding it, there is such length in grief."

Rich. II. v. 1. 92.

It is perhaps a result of this confusion between the verbal and the infinitive that, just as the infinitive with "to" is used independently at the beginning of a sentence (357) in a gerundive signification, so is the infinitive represented by -ing:

"Why, were thy education ne'er so mean,

Having thy limbs, a thousand fairer courses

Offer themselves to thy election."—B. J. E. in &c. ii, I.

i.c. "since thou hast thy limbs." This explains the many instances in which present participles appear to be found agreeing with no noun or pronoun.

Part of this confusion may arise from the use of the verbal in -ing as a noun in compounds. We understand at once that a "knedyng trowh" (CHAUCER, C. T. 3548) means "a trough for kneading;" but "spending silver" (Ib. 12946) is not quite so obviously "money for spending." Still less could we say

"Sixth part of each! A trembling contribution."

Hen. VIII. i. 2, 95

Somewhat different is

"Known and feeling sorrows,"—Lear, iv. 6. 226. where "feeling" seems to be used like "known," passively, "known and realized sorrows,"

So "loading" is used for "laden," BACON, Essays, p. 49 (Wright).

"Your discontenting father,"-W. T. iv. 4. 543.

may perhaps be explained by the use of the verb "content you;" "I discontent (me)" meaning "I am discontented."

373. The Verbal differs in Elizabethan usage from its modern use. (a) We do not employ the verbal as a noun followed by "of," unless the verbal be preceded by "the," or some other defining adjective. But such phrases as the following are of constant occurrence in Elizabethan English:

"To disswade the people from making of league."—N. P. 170.

"He was the onely cause of murdering of the poor Melians."

10, 171.

"By winning only of Sicilia."-N. P. 171.

⁶³ Enter Clorin the Shepherdess, sorting of herbs."

B. and F. F. Sh. ii. I.

i.c. "a-sorting, or in sorting of herbs."

For instances from Shakespeare, see 178 and 93.

(b) On the other hand, when the verbal is constituted a noun by the dependence of "the," or any other adjective (except a possessive adjective) upon it, we cannot omit the of. The Elizabethans can.

"To plague thee for thy foul misleading me."

3 Hen. VI. v. 1. 97.

We should prefer now to omit the "thy" as well as "foul," though we have not rejected such phrases as

"Upon his leaving our house."-Goldsmith.

For instances of "of" omitted when "the" precedes the verbal, see Article, 93. In this matter modern usage has recurred to E. E.

374. Participles, Passive. It has been shown (294) that, from the licence of converting nouns, adjectives, and neuter verbs into active verbs, there arose an indefinite and apparently not passive use of Passive Participles. Such instances as

"Of all he dies possess'd of,"-M. of V. v. 1. 293.

(possess being frequently used as an active verb,) may thus be explained.

Perhaps,

"And, gladly quaked (made to quake), hear more,"

Coriol. i. 9. 6.

may be similarly explained. Compare also:

"All the whole army stood agazed on him."

1 Hen. VI. i. 1. 126.

But, in the following, we can only say that, in the excessive use of this licence, -ed is loosely employed for -ful, -ing, or some other affix expressing connection.

"Revenge the jeering and disdain'd contempt."

I Hen. IV. i. 3. 183.

" Brooded-watchful day."-K. 7. iii. 3. 52.

As we talk of "watching (during) the night," this may explain

"The weary and all-watched night."-Hen. V. iv. Prologue, 38.

But more probably "all-watched" (like "o'er-watched," J. C. it. 3. 241) resembles "weary," and means "tired with watching." For this use of adjectives see 4.

" Grim-look'd night."—M. N. D. v. I. 171.

"The ebbed man."—A. and C. i. 4. 43.

It is perhaps still not unusual to say "the tide is ebbed."

"A moulten raven."-I Hen. IV. iii. I. 152.

"With sainted vow."—A. W. iii. 4. 7. (= saintly).

"And at our more considered time we'll read."—Hamlet, ii. 2. 81.

" Unconstrained gyves."—L. C. 242.

Sometimes passive participles are used as epithets to describe the state which would be the result of the active verb. Thus:

"Why are you drawn?"—Temp. ii. 1. 308; M.N.D. iii. 2. 402. i.e. "Why do I find you with your swords drawn?"

"Under the blow of thralled discontent."—Sonn. 124.

"The valued file" (Macb. iii. 1. 95) perhaps means "the file or catalogue to which values are attached."

- 375. The Passive Participle is often used to signify, not that which was and is, but that which was, and therefore can be hereafter. In other words, -ed is used for -able.
- "Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels."—Rich. III. i. 4. 27.
- "All unavoided is the doom of destiny."—Ib. iv. 4. 217. i.e. "inevitable." So
 - "We see the very wreck that we must suffer, And unavoided is the danger now."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 268.

"With all imagined (imaginable) speed."—M. of V. iii. 4. 52.

"The murmuring surge
That on the *unnumber'd* idle pebbles chafes."—*Lear*, iv. 6.21.
So, probably, Theobald is right in reading

"The twinn'd stone upon th' unnumber'd beach,"

Cymb i. 6. 30

though the Globe retains "number'd."

" Unprized" in

"This unprized precious maid,"--Lear, i. 1. 262. may mean "unprized by others, but precious to me."

"There's no hoped for mercy with the brothers."

3 Hen. VI. v. 4. 35.

i.e. "to be hoped for."

It has been conjectured that "delighted" means "capable of being delighted" in

"This sensible warm motion to become A kneaded clod, and the delighted spirit To bathe in fiery floods."—M. for M. iii. 1. 121.

More probably, "delighted" here means the spirit "that once took its delight in this world;" but "kneaded" seems used for "kneadable."

376. Participle used with a Nominative Absolute. In

Anglo-Saxon a dative absolute was a common idiom. Hence, even when inflections were discarded, the idiom was retained; and indeed, in the case of pronouns, the nominative, as being the normal state of the pronoun, was preferred to its other inflections. The nominative absolute is much less common with us than in Elizabethan authors. It is often used to call attention to the object which is superfluously repeated. Thus in

"The master and the boatswain, Being awake, enforce them to this place,"—Temp. v. 1. 100. there is no need of "them." So "he" is superfluous in

"Why should he then protect our sovereign, He being of age to govern of himself?"—2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 166.

It is common with the relative and relative adverbs.

"Then Deputy of Ireland; who remov'd, Earl Surrey was sent thither."—Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 42.

"My heart,

Where the impression of mine eye infixing, Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me."

A. W. v. 3. 47.

Govren'd a wolf, who hang'd for human slaughter, Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet."

M. of V. iv. 1. 134.

"Emblems
Laid nobly on her; which perform'd, the choir
Together sung 'Te Deum.'"—Hen. VIII. iv. 1. 91.

The participle with a nominative originally intended to be absolute seems diverted into a subject in

"The king . . . aiming at your interior hatred Makes him send."—Rich. III. i. 3. 65-8.

i.e. "the fact that the king guesses at your hatred makes him send."

377. The Participle is often used to express a condition where, for perspicuity, we should now mostly insert "if."

"Requires to live in Egypt, which not granted, He lessens his requests."—A, and C. iii. 12. 12.

He lessens his requests."—A. and C. iii. 12. 12 "That whose ask'd her for his wife,

His riddle told not, lost his life."—P. of T. i. Gower, 38. "For I do know Fluellen valiant, And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder."

Hen. V. iv. 7. 188.

"Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires, I am friend to them and you."—W. T. v. 1. 230.

"Admitted" is probably a participle in

"This is the brief of money, plate and jewels I am possess'd of: 'tis exactly valued,

Not petty things admitted."—A. and C. v. I. 146.

i.e. "exactly, if petty things be excepted."

The participle is sometimes so separated from the verb that it seems to be used absolutely.

"Resolve me with all modest haste which way *Thou* might'st deserve, or they impose this usage, *Coming* from us."—*Lear*, ii. 4. 27.

i.e. "since thou comest."

"But being moody give him line and scope."

2 Hen, IV. iv. 4. 39.

"And" is sometimes joined to a participle or adjective thus used. See And, 95.

"What remains
But that I seek occasion how to rise,

And yet the king not privy to my drift."—3 Hen. VI. i. 2. 47.

"But when the splitting wind

Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks, And flies (being) fled under shade."—Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 51.

i.e. "the flies also being (295) fled."

378. Participle without Noun. This construction is rare in earlier English.

"My name is gret and merveylous, treuly you telland."—Cov. Myst. (Mätzner).

Here again, as in 93, we must bear in mind the constant confusion between the infinitive, the present participle, and the verbal. In the above example we should expect the infinitive, "to tell you the truth," and perhaps "telland" is not exactly used for, but confused with, "tellen."*

It is still a usual idiom with a few participles which are employed almost as prepositions, e.g. "touching," "concerning," "respecting," "seeing." "Judging" is also often thus incorrectly used, and sometimes "considering;" but we could scarcely say—.

"Or in the night *imagining* (if one imagines) some fear, How easy is a bush suppos'd a bear."—M. N. D. v. 1. 21.

"Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises, Which is a great way growing on the south,

Weighing the youthful season of the year."—J. C. ii. 1. 108.

Note especially—

"I may not be too forward,

Lest (I) being seen thy brother, tender George,

Be executed."—Rich. III. v. 3. 95.

"(It must be done) something from the palace, always thought That I require a clearness."—Macbeth, iii. 1. 132.

v.c. "it being always borne in mind."

"(Death sits) infusing him (man) with self and vain conceit, And, (man having been) humour'd thus, (Death) comes at the last."—Rich. II. iii. 2. 168.

This use is common in prose.

"He was presently suspected, *judging* (since men judged) the ill success not in that he could not, but . . . for that he would not."— N. P. 182.

So "being," i.e. "it being the fact," is often used where we use "seeing."

"You loiter here too long, being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go."—2 Hen. IV. ii. 1. 200; M. Ado, iv. 1. 251.
"Though I with death and with

Reward did threaten and encourage him, Not doing 't and (it) being done."—W. T. iii, 2. 166.

* It would be interesting to trace the corresponding process in French by which the gerund "dicendo" and the participle "dicens" were blended in "disant." It was not till the beginning of the eighteenth century that the Academy definitely propounced "La règle est faite. On ne fera plus accorder les participes présents "But from the earliest times the d of the gerund became t.

i.e. "I threatened him, not doing it, with death, and encouraged him with reward, (it) being done;" a specimen of irregular terseness only to be found in Elizabethan authors and in Mr. Browning's poems.

. The context often suggests a noun or pronoun:

"If not that, I being queen, you bow like subjects, Yet that, (I being) by you deposed, you quake like rebels."

Rich. III. i. 3, 162.

"But her eyes—
How could he see to do them? Having made one,
Methinks it should have power to steal both his."

M. of V. iii. 2. 125.

i.e. "when he had made one."

"Had, having, and in quest to have, extreme."—Sonn. 129. i.e. "when an object is had, possessed," unless it is still more irregularly used for "having had."

This irregularity is perhaps in some cases explained by 372.

379. Participle with Pronoun implied. Sometimes a pronoun on which a participle depends can be easily understood from a pronominal adjective. Compare

"Nostros vidisti flentis ocellos."

So "Not helping, death's my fee."—A. W. ii. 1. 192.

e.e. "death is the fee of me not helping."

"Men
Can counsel speak and comfort to that grief
Which they themselves not feel; but, tasting it,
Their counsel turns to passion."—M. Ado, v. 1. 22.

"She dares not look, yet, winking, there appears Quick-shifting antics ugly in her eye."—R. of L. 458. "Coming (as we came) from Sardis, on our former ensign Two mighty eagles fell."—7. C. v. I. 80.

380. Instead of the Participle an Adjective is sometimes found.

"I would not seek an absent argument Of my revenge, thou present."—A. Y. L. iii. I. 4.

"And (she), her attendants absent, swallowed fire." - J. C. iv. 3. 156.

" Joy absent, grief is present for that time."-Rich. II. i. 3. 259.

Sometimes the adjective depends on an implied pronoun:

"Thy word is current with him for my death, But dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath."

Rich. II. i. 3. 232.

i.e. "the breath of me when dead."

"It is an obvious conjecture from this use of "absent," "present," "dead," that their quasi-participial terminations favoured this participial use. But add

"Thence,

A prosperous south-wind friendly, we have cross'd."
W. T. v. 1. 161.

381. The Participle is sometimes implied in the case of a simple word, such as "being."

"I have heard him oft maintain it to be fit that sons (being) at perfect age and fathers declining, the father should be as ward to the son."—Lear, i. 2. 77.

"And be well contented

To make your house our tower. You (being) a brother of us, It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness Would come against you."—Hen. VIII. v. 1. 106.

i.e. "Since you are our brother." (Or (?) "though you were our brother, it [would be and] is fit to proceed thus.")

"(Those locks are) often known To be the dowry of a second head,

The skull that bred them (being) in the sepulchre."

M. of V. iii. 2. 96.

We retain this use in antithetical phrases, such as "face to face," "sword against sword," but we should rarely introduce an adjective into such an antithetical compound. Shakespeare, however, has

"And answer me declined sword 'gainst sword."

A. and C. iii. 13. 27.

ELLIPSES.

382. Several peculiarities of Elizabethan language have already been explained by the desire of brevity which characterised the authors of the age. Hence arose so many elliptical expressions that they deserve a separate treatment. The Elizabethan authors objected to scarcely any ellipsis, provided the deficiency could be easily supplied from the context.

"Vouchsafe (to receive) good-morrow from a feeble tongue."

7. C. ii. 1. 313. "When shall we see (one another) again?" Cymb. i. 1. 124; Tr. and Cr. iv. 4. 59.

Just so we still use "meet."

"You and I have known (one another), sir."

A. and C. ii. 6. 86; Cymb. i. 4. 36.

"On their sustaining garments (there is) not a blemish, But (the garments are) fresher than before."

Tempest, i. 2. 219.

Thus also, as in Latin, a verb of speaking can be omitted where it is implied either by some other word, as in

"She calls me proud, and (says) that She could not love me."—A. Y. L. iv. 3. 16.

"But here's a villain that would face me down He met me on the mart."—C, of E, iii, I, 7.

i.e. "maintain to my face that he met me;" or by a question as in "What are you?

(I ask) Your name and quality; and why you answer This present summons."—Lear, v. 3. 120.

(The Globe inserts a note of interrogation after quality.)

"Enforce him with his envy to the people, And (say) that the spoil got on the Antiates Was ne'er distributed."—*Coriol.* iii. 3. 4.

Thus, by implying from "forbid" a word of speaking, "bid," and not by a double negative, we should perhaps explain

"You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wag their high tops and (bid them) to make no noise."

M. of V. iv. I. 76.

M. of V. iv. 1. 7
Thus "I know not whether to depart in silence

Or bitterly to speak in your reproof
Best fitteth my degree or your condition.
If (I thought it fittest) not to answer, you might haply

think," &c.—Rich. III. iii. 7. 144.

After "O!" "alas!" and other exclamations, a verb of surprise

or regret is sometimes omitted.

"O (it is pitiful) that deceit should steal such gentle shapes."

Rich. III. ii. 2. 27.
"Good God! (I marvel that) these nobles should such

stomachs bear:

A myself fight not once in forty year."—1 Hen. VI. i. 3. 90.

Scmetimes no exclamation is inserted:

"Ask what thou wilt. (I would) That I had said and done." 2 Hen. VI. i. 4. 31.

Ellipses in Conjunctional Sentences. The Elizabethaus seem to have especially disliked the repetition which is now considered necessary, in the latter of two clauses connected by a relative or a conjunction.

383. And:

"Have you
Ere now denied the asker, and now again
Of him that did not ask but mock (do you) bestow
Your sued-for tongues?"—Coriol. ii. 3. 213.

Here in strictness we ought to have "bestowed," or 'do vou bestow."

An ellipse must be supplied proleptically in

"(Beggars) Sitting in the stocks refuge their shame,
That (i.e. because) many have (sat), and many must sit
there."—Rich. II. v. 5. 27.

"Of (such) dainty and such picking grievances." 2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 198.

"It (i.e. love) shall be (too) sparing and too full of riot."

V. and A. 1147.

"It shall be (too) merciful and too severe."-Ib. 1155.

384. As:

"His ascent is not so easy as (the ascent of) those who," &c.

Coriol. ii. 2. 30.

"Returning were as tedious as (to) go o'er."—Macb. iii. 4. 138.

"They boldly press so far as (modern Eng. that) further none (press)."—B. J. Cy.'s Rev. v. 3.

"O, 'tis sweating labour

To bear such idleness so near the heart As Cleopatra (bears) this."—A. and C. i. 3. 95.

"And I, that haply take them from him now,
May yet ere night yield both my life and them
To some man else, as this dead man doth (to) me."
3 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 60.

"Return those duties back as (they) are most fit (to be returned)."

Lear, i. 1. 99.

As can scarcely, in the above, be taken for "which."

"This is a strange thing (as strange) as e'er I look'd on."

Temp. v. 1. 289.

385. But (after but the finite verb is to be supplied without the negative):

"The tender nibbler would not take the bait But (would) smile and jest."—P. P. 4.

"To be thus is nothing, But to be safely thus (is something)."—Macbeth, iii. 1. 47.

"And though I could
With barefaced power sweep him from my sight
And bid my will avouch it, yet I must not,
(For certain friends that are both his and mine,
Whose loves I may not drop,) but (I must) wail his fall
Who I myself struck down."—Macbeth, iii. 1. 119.

Sometimes but itself is omitted:

"'Tis not my profit that doth lead mine honour,
(But it is) Mine honour (that doth lead) it (i.e. profit)."

A. and C. ii. 7. 83.

Sometimes the repeated varies slightly from the original proposition:

"'Tis not enough to help the feeble up,

But (it is necessary) to support him after."—T. of A.i. 1. 107.

In the following, the negative is *implied* in the first verb through the question, "Why need we?" i.e. "We need not." The second verb must not be taken interrogatively, and thus it omits the negative.

"Why, what need we Commune with you of this, but rather follow Our forceful indignation?"—W. T. ii. 1. 162.

i.e. "Why need we commune with you? we need rather follow our own impulse." Else, if both verbs be taken interrogatively, "but" must be taken as "and net:" "Why need we commune with you, and not follow our own impulse?"

Where the negative is part of the subject, as in "none," a new subject must be supplied:

"God, I pray him

That none of you may live your natural age

But (each of you) by some unlook'd accident cut off."

Rich. III. i. 3. 214.

386. Ere:

"The rabble should have first unroof'd the city

Ere (they should have) so prevail'd with me."—Coriol. i. 1. 222.

"I'll lean upon one crutch and fight with the other Ere (I will) stay behind this business."—Coriol. i. 1. 246.

387. If:

"I am more serious than my custom; you
Must be so too, if (you must or intend to) heed me."
Temp. ii. 1. 220.

See "must," 314.

"I yet beseech your majesty

If (it is) for (i.e. because) I want that glib and oily art

... That you make known," &c.—Lear, i. 1. 227.

"O, if (you be) a virgin

And your affection (be) not gone forth, I'll make you The queen of Naples."—*Tempest*, i. 2. 447–8.

"Haply you shall not see me more, or if (you see me), (You will see me) A mangled shadow."—A. and C. iv. ii. 27.

This is a good Greek idiom. So

"Not like a corse: or if, not to be buried, But quick, and in mine arms."—W. T. iv. 4. 131.

In the following hypothetical sentence there is a curious ellipsis:

"Love, loving not itself, none other can."—Rich. II. v. 2. 88. i.e. "if a man does not love his own flesh and blood he cannot (love) a stranger."

388. Like (t.e. resembling):

"But you like none, none (like) you, for constant heart." - Sonn.

388a, Or:

"For women's fear and love holds quantity;
In neither (is) aught, or (it is) in extremity."

Hamlet, iii. 2. 178.

i.e. "women's fear and love vary together, are proportionable: they either contain nothing, or what they contain is in extremes."

389. Since:

"Be guilty of my death since (thou art guilty) of my crime."

R. of L.

390, Than:

"To see sad sights moves more than (to) hear them told."

R. of L. 451.

"It cost more to get than (was fit) to lose in a day."*

B. J. Poetaster

Since I suppose we are made to be no stronger Than (that) faults may shake our frames."

M. for M. ii. 4. 133.

"But I am wiser than (I should be were I) to serve their precepts."—B. J. E. out &c. i. I.

Is yet the cover of a fairer mind

Than (that which is fit) to be butcher of an innocent child."

K. 7. iv. 2. 258.

"This must be known; which being kept close might move More grief to hide, than hate to utter (would move) love."

Hamlet, i. I. 108-9.

i.e. "this ought to be revealed, for it (273), by being suppressed, might excite more grief in the king and queen by the hiding (356) of the news, than our unwillingness to tell bad news would excite love."

"What need we any spur but our own cause To prick us to redress? What other bond Than (that of) secret Romans?"—J. C. ii. 1. 125.

As in the case of "but" (385), so in the following, the verb must be repeated without its negative force:

"I heard you say that you had rather refuse
The offer of an hundred thousand crowns
Than (have) Bolingbroke's return to England."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 17.

Here, perhaps, the old use of the subjunctive "had" for "would have" exerts some influence.

The word "rather" must be supplied from the termination er in

"The rarer action is

In virtue (rather) than in vengeance."—Temp. v. 1. 28.

"You are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table than a necessary bencher in the Capitol."—Coriol. ii. 1. 91.

391. Though:

"Saints do not more, though (saints) grant for prayers' sake."

R. and F. i. 5. 107.

"I keep but two men and a boy (as) yet, till my mother be dead.
But what though? Yet I live like a poor gentleman born."

M. W. of W. i. 1. 287.

^{*} Compare the Greek idiom. - Felf, ii. 863. 2. 2.

392. Till:

"He will not hear till (he) feel."—T. of A. ii. 2. 7.

393. Too to:

"His worth is too well known (for him) to be forth-coming." B. J. E. out &c. v. I.

394. Relative. (In relative sentences the preposition is often not repeated.)

"Most ignorant of what he's most assured (ot)."

M. for M. ii. 2. 119.

"A gift of all (of which) he dies possess'd."—M. of V. iv. I. 389.

"Err'd in this point (in) which now you censure him."

M. for M. ii. 1. 15.

"For that (for) which, if myself might be his judge, He should receive his punishment in thanks."—Ib. 4 28.

"I do pronounce him in that very shape (In which) He shall appear in proof."—Hen. VIII. i. 196

"As well appeareth by the cause (for which) you come."

Rich, II, i. 1. 26.

"In this (in or of) which you accuse her."—W. T. ii. 1. 133.

"In that behalf (in) which we have challenged it."

K. 7. ii. 1. 264.

"To die upon the bed (upon which) my father died."

W. T. iv. 4. 466.

"In such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears,
And stops my tongue while (my) heart is drown'd in cares."

3 Hen. VI. iii. 3. 14.

There is a proleptic omission in

"Or (upon) whom frown'st thou that I do fawn upon."
Sonn. 149.

395. Antithetical sentences frequently do not repeat pronouns, verbs, &c.

"What most he should dislike seems pleasant to him, What (he should) like, (seems) offensive."—Lear, iv. 2. 10.

Sometimes the verb has to be repeated in a different tense.

"To know our enemies' minds we'ld rip their hearts:
(To rip) Their papers is more lawful."—Lear, iv. 6. 266.

"To be acknowledg'd, madam, is (to be) overpaid."

1b. iv. 7. 4

The antithesis often consists in the opposition between past and present time.

> "I meant to rectify my conscience, which I then did feel full sick, and yet (do feel) not well."

Hen. VIII. ii. 4. 204.

" And may that soldier a mere recreant prove That means not (to be), hath not (been), or is not in love." Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 288.

"She was beloved, she loved; she is (beloved) and doth (love)." Ib. iv. 5. 292.

396. Ellipsis of Neither before Nor, One before Other.

"(Neither) He nor that affable familiar ghost."-Sonn. 86.

"But (neither) my five wits nor my five senses can Dissuade one foolish heart from seeing thee."-Ib. 141.

"A thousand groans . . .

Came (one) on another's neck."-Ib. 131. " Pomp. You will not bail me then, sir.

Lucio. (Neither) Then, Pompey, nor now." M. for M. iii. 2. 86.

397. Ellipsis of Adverbial and other Inflections.

"The duke of Norfolk sprightfully and bold(ly)."

Rich. II. i. 3. 3.

"Good gentlemen, look fresh(ly) and merrily."-J. C. ii. 1. 224. "Apt(ly) and willingly."-T. N. v. 1. 135.

"With sleided silk, feat(ly) and affectedly."-L. C. 48. "His grace looks cheerfully and smooth(ly) this morning."

Rich. III. iii. 4. 50.

"And she will speak most bitterly and strange(ly)." M. for M. v. 1. 36.

"How honourable(y) and how kindly we Determine."-A. and C. v. I. 58.

"And that so lamely and unfashionable(y)."-Rich. III, i. 1. 22.

It will not escape notice (I) that in all but two of these instances the -ly is omitted after monosyllabic adjectives, which can be more readily used as adverbs without change; (2) that "honourable," "unfashionable," &c., in their old pronunciation would approximate to "honourably," "unfashionably," and the former is itself used as an adverb. (See I.) Nevertheless it seems probable that this, like the following idiom, and like many others, arises partly from the readiness with which a compound phrase connected by a conjunction is regarded as one and inseparable. Compare

"Until her husband('s) and my lord's return."-M. of V. iii. 4. 30.

"As soul('s) and body's severing."—Hen. VIII. ii. 3. 16

where "soui-and-body" is a quasi-noun.

"Shall be your love('s) and labour's recompense."

Rich. II. ii. 3. 62.

398. Ellipsis of Superlative Inflection.

"The generous and gravest citizens."-M. for M. iv. 6. 13.

"Only the grave and wisest of the land."—HEYWOOD (Walker).

"The soft and sweetest music."—B. J. (16.).

"The vain and haughtiest minds the sun e'er saw."

GOFFE (Ib.).

"To mark the full-fraught man and best endued."

Hen. V. ii. 2. 139.

"The humble as the proudest sail doth bear."—Sonn. 80.
The est of the second adjective modifies the first.

Reversely we have-

"The best condition'd and unwearied spirit,"—M. of V. iii. 2. 295. where "best" modifies the second adjective.

"Call me the horrid st and unhallow'd thing
That life and nature tremble at."—MIDDLETON (Walker).

In "I took him for the plainest harmless creature,"

Rich. III. iii. 4. 25.

though the meaning may be "the plainest, (the most) harmless creature," it is more likely a compound word, "plainest-harmless" (see 2).

399. Ellipsis of Nominative. Where there can be no doubt what is the nominative, it is sometimes omitted.

"It was upon this fashion bequeathed me by will, but poor a thousand crowns, and as thou sayest *charged* my brother, on his blessing, to breed me well."—A. Y. L. i. 1. 3.

"They call him Doricles: and boasts himself
To have a worthy feeding."—W. T. iv. 4. 168.

"Who loved her so, that speaking of her foulness (He) Washed it with tears." —M. Ado, iv. 1. 156.

"(It) shall not be long but I'll be here again."

Macbeth, iv. 2. 23.

"Nor do we find him forward to be sounded,
But with a crafty madness keeps aloof."—Hamlet, iii. 1. 8.

"That" might (but for, 260) be treated as a relative pronoun.

This explains K. J. ii. 1. 571, and

"When I am very sure, if they should speak,

(They) Would almost damn those ears which," &c.

M. of V. i. 1. 97.

Compare

"Come, fortune's a jade, I care not who tell her, (Who, i.e. since she) Would offer to strangle a page of the cellar."—B. and F.

"The king must take it ill That he's so slightly valued in his messenger, (That he or ? you) Should have him thus restrained."

So Hen. VIII. i. 2. 197.

The following might be explained by transposition, "may all" for "all may:" but more probably "they" is implied:

"That he awaking when the other do,
May all to Athens back again repair."

M. N. D. iv. 1. 72. See also Ib. v. i. 98.

400. The omission of the Nominative is most common with "has," "is," "was," &c.

"He has" is frequently pronounced and sometimes written "has," and "he" easily coalesces with "was," "will," &c. Hence these cases should be distinguished from those in the preceding paragraph.

"And to the skirts of this wild wood he came, Where, meeting with an old religious man, After some question with him was converted."

A. Y. L. v. 4. 167.

Lear, ii. 2. 154.

"This young gentlewoman had a father whose skill was almost as great as his honesty: had it stretch'd so far, would have made nature immortal."—A. W. i. 1. 20.

" Hero. I'll wear this.

Marg. By my troth, 's not so good."—M. Ado, iii. 4. 9 and 18.
"For Cloten

There wants no diligence in seeking him, And (he) will no doubt be found."—Cymb. iv. 3. 21.

"For I do know Fluellen vatiant.
And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder;
And quickly will return an injury."—Hen. V. iv. 7. 188.

"This is that banish'd haughty Montague, And here is come."—R. and J. v. 3. 52

"As for Cromwell, Beside that of the jewel-house, (he) is made master O' the rolls."—Hen. VIII. v. i. 34; 50.

'I know the gentleman; and, as you say, There (he) was a' gaming."—Hamlet, ii. 1. 58.

"Bring him forth; has sat in the stocks all night," &c.

A. W. iv. 3. 116.

So Ib. 114, 298; T. N. i. 5. 156.

"'Tis his own blame: hath put himself from rest."

Lear, ii. 4. 293.

Ib. iii. 1. 5; Othello, iii. 1. 67; T. of A. iii. 2. 39, iii. 3. 23, iv.3. 463. This omission is frequent after appellatives or oaths.

"Poor jade, is wrung in the withers out of all 'cess."

I Hen. IV. ii. 1. 6.

"Poor fellow, never joyed since the price of oats rose."—Ib. 11.

"Richard. Send for some of them.

Ely. Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart."

Rich. III. iii. 4. 36.

In "And the fair soul herself,
Weigh'd between loathness and obedience, at
Which end o' the beam should bow,"—Tempest, ii. 1. 131.
either "she" is omitted, or "should" is for "she would," or "o'"

401. A Nominative in the second person plural or first person is less commonly omitted.

"They all rush by
And leave you hindermost;
Or like a gallant horse, fall'n in first rank,
(You) Lie there for pavement to the abject rear."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 162.

"They . . . gave me cold looks,
And, meeting here the other messenger,
Having more man than wit about me, (I) drew."

Lear, ii. 4. 42.

Lear, 11. 4. 42.

The I before "pray thee," "beseech thee," is constantly omitted. (Tempest, ii. 1. 1.)

"Good-morrow, fair ones; (I) pray you if you know."—A. Y. L. iv. 3.76.

i.e. "I ask you whether you know."

has been inserted by mistake.

The inflection of the second person singular allows the nominative to be readily understood, and therefore justifies its omission.

"Art any more than a steward?"—T. N. ii. 3. 122.

"It was she

First told me thou wast mad; then (thou) cam'st in smiling." Ib. v. 1. 357.

402. Ellipsis of Nominative explained. This ellipsis of the nominative may perhaps be explained partly (1) by the lingering sense of inflections, which of themselves are sometimes sufficient to indicate the person of the pronoun understood, as in Milton-

"Thou art my son beloved: in him am pleased;"

partly (2) by the influence of Latin; partly (3) by the rapidity of the Elizabethan pronunciation, which frequently changed "he" into "'a" (a change also common in E. E.),

"' 'a must needs,"-2 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 59.

and prepared the way for dropping "he" altogether. Thus perhaps "Who if alive and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have in sworn to take him a box o' th' ear,"—Hen. V. iv. 7. 132.

we should read "'a live and ever dare." In the French of Rabelais the pronouns are continually dropped: but the fuller inflections in French render the omission less inconvenient than in English. In the following instance there is an ambiguity which is only removed by the context :-

"We two saw you four set on four; and (you) bound them and were masters of their wealth."-I Hen. IV. ii. 4. 278.

403. Ellipsis of It is, There is, Is.

"So beauty blemish'd once (is) for ever lost."—P. P. 13.

"I cannot give guess how near (it is) to day."-7. C. ii. 1. 2. "Seldom (is it) when

The steeled gaoler is the friend of men."

M. for M. iv. 2. 90.

"And (it is) wisdom

To offer up a weak poor innocent lamb."—Mach. iv. 3. 16. "Since [there is neither (163)] brass nor stone nor earth nor boundless sea,

But sad mortality o'ersways their power."-Sonn. 64.

"Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill (is) upon his own head."-Hen. V. iv. I. 197.

" Many years,

Though Cloten (was) then but young, you see, not wore him From my remembrance."-Cymb. iv. 4. 23.

So Hen. V. iv. 7. 132 (quoted in 402), if the text be retained. It is a question whether "are" is omitted, or whether (less probably) (And, 95) "and" is used for "also" with a nom. absolute, in "But 'tis not so above;

There is no shuffling, there the action lies
In his true nature: and we ourselves (? are) compelled
To give in evidence."—*Hamlet*, iii. 3. 62; T. N. i. I. 38;

Hen. V. i. I. 57

"Which I did store to be my foster-nurse,
When service should in my old limbs lie lame,
And unregarded age (? should be) in corners thrown."

A. Y. L. ii. 3. 42.

As the verb is omitted by us constantly after "whatever," e.g. "anything whatever," so Shakespeare could write,

"Beyond all limit of what else (is) in the world."

Temp. iii. 1. 172.

Thus also "however" is for "however it may be," i.e. "in any case:"

"If haply won perhaps a hapless gain;
If lost, why then a grievous labour won;

However (it be), but a folly bought with wit."

T. G. of V. i. 1. 34.

We have passed in the use of "however" from the meaning "in spite of what may happen in the future," to "in spite of what happened in the past," i.e. "nevertheless."

"There is" is often omitted with "no one but," as

"(There is) no one in this presence
But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks."

Rich. III. ii. 1. 84.

"Who is" (244) is omitted in

"Here's a young maid (who is) with travel much oppressed, And faints for succour."—A. Y. L. ii. 4. 75.

Otherwise the nominative (399) is omitted before "faints."

404. Ellipsis of It and There.

"Whose wraths to guard you from, Which here in this most desolate isle else falls Upon your head, (there) is nothing but heart-sorrow, And a clear life ensuing."—*Temp.* iii. 2. 82.

"Satisfaction (there) can be none but by pangs of death."

T. N. iii, 4, 261.

"D. Pedro. What! sigh for the toothache?
Leon. Where (there) is but a humour or a worm."
M. Ado, iii. 2. 27; Ib. ii. 2. 20.

"At the Elephant (it) is best to lodge."—T. N. iii. 3. 40.

"Be (it) what it is."—Cymb. v. 4. 149.

"The less you meddle with them the more (it) is for your honesty."—M. Ado, iii. 3. 56.

The omission is common before "please."

"So please (it) him (to) come unto this place." - J. C. iii. 1. 140.

"Is (it) then unjust to each his due to give?"

Spens. F. Q. i. 9. 38.

"(It) remains
That in the official marks invested you
Anon do meet the Senate."—Coriol. ii. 3. 147.

This construction is quite as correct as our modern form with "it." The sentence "That in.... Senate," is the subject to "remains." So—

"And that in Tarsus (it) was not best
Longer for him to make his rest."—Pericl. ii. Gower, 25.

"Happiest of all is (it or this), that her gentle spirit Commits itself to you to be directed."—M. of V. iii. 2. 166.

We see how unnecessary and redundant our modern "it" is from the following passage:—

"Unless self-charity be sometimes a vice, And to defend ourselves it be a sin."—Othello, ii. 3. 203.

This is (if the order of the words be disregarded) as good English as our modern "Unless it be a sin to defend ourselves." The fact is, this use of the modern "it" is an irregularity only justified by the clearness which it promotes. "It" at the beginning of a sentence calls attention to the real subject which is to follow. "It is a sin, viz. to defend oneself."

The sentence is sometimes placed as the object, "it" being omitted.

"But long she thinks (it) till he return again."-R. of L. 454.

"Being" is often used for "it being," or "being so," very much like $\delta\nu$ and its compounds in Greek.

"That Lepidus of the triumvirate Should be deposed; and, (it) being (so), that we detain All his revenue."—A. and C. iii, 6. 3°C.

' I learn you take things ill which are not so Or, being (so), concern you not."—A. and C. ii. 2. 30.

405. Ellipses after will and is.

"I will," i.e. "I purpose," when followed by a preposition of motion, might naturally be supposed to mean "I purpose motion." Hence, as we have

"He purposeth to Athens,"—A. and C. iii. I. 35.

" I'll to him."-R. and J. iii. 2. 141.

"Will you along?"-Coriol. ii. 3. 157.

"Now we'll together."-Macbeth, iv. 3. 136.

"I will to-morrow,

And betimes I will, to the weird sisters."—Ib. iii. 4. 133.

"Strange things I have in head that will to hand."

Ib. iii. 4. 139.

Compare

50

"Give these fellows some means (of access) to the king."

Hamlet, iv. 6. 13.

Similarly, as we have

"I must (go) to Coventry."-Rich. II. i. 2. 56.

"I must (go) a dozen mile to-night."—2 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 310.

so "And he to England shall along with you."—Hamlet, iii. 3. 4. We still say. "He is (journeying) for Paris." but not

"He is (ready) for no gallants' company without them."
B. J. E. out &c. i. 1.

"Any ordinary groom is (fit) for such payment."

Hen. VIII. v. 1. 174.

So T. N. iii. 3. 46; A. W. iii. 6. 109.

"I am (bound) to thank you for it."-T. of A. i. 2. 111.

Such an ellipsis explains

"Run from her guardage to the sooty bosom

Of such a thing as thou, (a thing fit) to fear (act.), not to delight."—Othello, i. 2. 71.

Again, we might perhaps say, "This is not a sky (fit) to walk under," but not

"This sky is not (fit) to walk in."—J. C. i. 3. 39.

The modern distinction in such phrases appears to be this: when the noun follows is, there is an ellipse of "fit," "worthy:" when the noun precedes is, there is an ellipse of "intended," "made.'

Thus: "this is a book to read" means "this is a book worthy to read;" but, "this book is to read and not to tear," means "this book is intended or made for the purpose of reading." This distinction was not recognized by the Elizabethans. When we wish to express "worthy" elliptically, we insert a: "He is a man to respect," or we use the passive, and say, "He is to be respected." Shakespeare could have written "He is to respect" in this sense. The Elizabethans used the active in many cases where we should use the passive. Thus—

"Little is to do."-Macbeth, v. 7. 28.

"What's more to do."—Ib. v. 8. 64; A. and C. ii. 6. 60; 7. C. iii. 1. 26; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 3.

Hence "This food is not to eat" might in Shakespeare's time have meant "This food is not fit to eat;" now, it could only mean "intended to eat." Similarly "videndus" in Cicero meant "one who ought to be seen," "worthy to be seen;" but in poetry and in later prose it meant "one who may be seen," "visible."

The following passages illustrate the variable nature of this ellipsis:— "I have been a debtor to you

For curtesies which I will be ever to pay you,

And yet pay still."—Cymb. i. 4. 39.

i.e. "kindnesses which I intend to be always ready to pay you, and yet to go on paying."

We still retain an ellipsis of "under necessity" in the phrase

"I am (yet) to learn."—M. of V. i. 1. 5.

But we should not say:

"That ancient Painter who being (under necessity) to represent the griefe of the bystanders," &c.—MONTAIGNE, 3.

We should rather translate literally from Montaigne: "Ayant à représenter."

In "I am to break with thee of some affairs,"

T. G. of V. iii. 1. 59.

the meaning is partly of desire and partly of necessity: "I want." So Bottom says to his fellows:

"O, masters, I am (ready) to discourse wonders."

M. N. D. iv. 29.

The ellipsis is "sufficient" in

"Mark Antony is every hour in Rome Expected; since he went from Egypt 'tis

A space (sufficient) for further travel."—A. and C. ii. 1. 31.

IRREGULARITIES.

406. Double Negative.—Many irregularities may be explained by the desire of emphasis which suggests repetition, even where repetition, as in the case of a negative, neutralizes the original phrase:

"First he denied you had in him no right."

C. of E. iv. 2. 7.

"You may deny that you were not the cause."

Rich. III. i. 3. 90.

"Forbade the boy he should not pass these bounds." P. P. 124
"No sonne, were he* never so old of yeares, might not marry."—ASCH. 37.

This idiom is a very natural one, and quite common in E. E.

Double Comparative and Superlative. See Adjectives, 11.

407. Double Preposition. Where the verb is at some distance from the preposition with which it is connected, the preposition is frequently repeated for the sake of clearness.

"And generally in all shapes that man goes up and down in, from fourscore to thirteen, this spirit walks in."

T. of A. ii. 2. 119.

"For in what case shall wretched I be in."—DANIEL.

"But on us both did haggish age steal on."-A. W. i. 2. 29.

"The scene wherein we play in."—A. Y. L. ii. 7. 139.

"In what enormity is Marcius poor in?"—Coriol. ii. 1. 18.

"To what form but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice forced with wit, turn him to?"—Tr. and Cr. v. I. 63.

408. "Neither ... nor," used like "Both ... and," followed by "not."

"Not the king's crown nor the deputed sword, The marshal's truncheon nor the judge's robe, Become them," &c.—M. for M. ii. 2. 60.

* The use of "never so" is to be explained (as in Greek, θαυμαστόν ὅσον) by an ellipsis. Thus—

"Though ne'er so richly parted (endowed)."-E. out &c. iii. 1.

means—"Though he were endowed richly—though never a man were endowed so richly."

This very natural irregularity (natural, since the *unbecomingness* may be regarded as predicated *both* of the "king's crown," the "deputed sword," *and* the "marshal's truncheon") is very common.

"He nor that affable familiar ghost
That nightly gulls him with intelligence
As victors of my silence cannot (406) boast."—-Sonn. 86.

The following passage may perhaps be similarly explained:

"He* waived indifferently 'twixt doing them neither good ner harm."—Coriol. ii. 2. 19, 20.

But it is perhaps more correct to say that there is here a confusion of two constructions, "He waived 'twixt good and harm, doing them neither good nor harm." The same confusion of two constructions is exemplified below in the use of the superlative.

409. Confusion of two Constructions in Superlatives.

- "This is the greatest error of all the rest."-M. N. D. v. 1. 252.
- "Of all other affections it is the most importune."-B. E. Envy.
- "York is most unmeet of any man."-2 Hen. VI. i. 3. 167.
- "Of all men else I have avoided thee."-Macbeth, v. 8. 4.
- "He hath simply the best wit of any handicraft-man in Athens."

 M. N. D. iv. 2. 9.

"To try whose right,

Of thine or mine,* is most in Helena."—Ib. iii. 2. 337.

"I do not like the tower of any place."—Rich. III. iii. 1. 68.

This (which is a thoroughly Greek idiom, though independent in English) is illustrated by Milton's famous line—

"The fairest of her daughters Eve."

The line is a confusion of two constructions, "Eve fairer than all her daughters," and "Eve fairest of all women." So "I dislike the tower more than any place," and "most of all places," becomes "of any place."

Our modern "He is the best man that I have ever seen," seems itself to be incorrect, if "that" be the relative to "man." It may, perhaps, be an abbreviation of "He is the best man of the men that I have ever seen."

^{*} Comp. if the reading be retained-

[&]quot;Which, of he or Adrian, begins to crow?"-Temp. i. 1. 29.

410. Confusion of two constructions with "whom."

"Young Ferdinand whom they suppose is drown'd."

Temp. iii. 3. 92.

"Of Arthur whom they say is killed to-night."-K. J. iv. 2. 165.

"The nobility whom we see have sided."—Coriol. iv. 2. 2. So in St. Matt. xvi. 13, all the versions except Wickliffe's have "Whom do men say that I, the son of man, am?" Wickliffe has

"Whom seien men to be mannes sone?"

The last passage explains the idiom. It is a confusion of two

The last passage explains the idiom. It is a confusion of two constructions, e.g. "Ferdinand who, they suppose, is drowned," and "whom they suppose to be drowned."

411. Other confusions of two constructions.

"Why I do trifle thus with his despair Is done to cure it,"—Lear, iv. 6. 33.

combines "Why I trifle is to cure" and "My trifling is done to cure." In itself it is illogical.

"The battle done, and they within our power Shall never see his pardon,"—Lear, v. 1. 67.

is a confusion of "let the battle be done, and they" and "the battle (being) done, they."

"I saw not better sport these seven years day." -2 Hen. VI. ii. 1. 3. A combination of "since this day seven years" and "during these seven years."

"Out of all 'cess (excess),"—I Hen. IV. ii. 1. 6.

is a confusion of "to excess," or "in excess," and "out of all bounds." "So late ago," T. N. v. 1. 22, seems a combination of "so lately" and "so short a time ago,"

"Marry that, I think, be young Petruchio,"—R. and J. i. 5. 133. is a confusion of "That, I think, is" and "I think that that be." For the subjunctive after "think," see Subjunctive, 368 and 299. So, perhaps,

"This youth, howe'er distressed, appears he hath had Good ancestors,"—Cymb. iv. 2. 47.

is a confusion of "He hath had, (it) appears, good ancestors," and 'He appears to have had." This is, perhaps, better than to take "appears" as an active verb. See 295. Precisely similar is:

"Let what is meet be said, it must be meet."—Coriol. iii. 1. 170.

combining "Let what is meet be said to be" and "Let it be said (that) what is meet must be meet."

Compare 353, and add, as a confusion of the infinitive and imperative,

"There is no more but (to) say so."-Rich. III. iv. 2. 81.

In "We would have had you heard," Ib. III. iii. 5. 56, there may be some confusion between "you should have heard" and "we would have had you hear;" but more probably the full construction is "We would have had you (to have) heard (360)," and "to have" is omitted through dislike of repetition. So Coriol. iv. 6. 35 (415): "We should... found it so."

Compare also

- "He would have had me (to have) gone into the steeple-house."
 Fox's Journal (ed. 1765), p. 57.
- "He would have had me (to have) had a meeting."-Ib. p. 60.
- 412. Confusion of proximity. The following (though a not uncommon Shakespearian idiom) would be called an unpardonable mistake in modern authors:—
 - "The posture of your blows are yet unknown."-7. C. v. I. 33.
 - "Whose loss of his most precious queen and children Are even now to be afresh lamented."—W. T. iv. 2. 26.
 - "Which now the loving haste of these dear friends
 Somewhat against our meaning have prevented."
 Rich. III. iii. 5. 56.

"The venom of such looks, we fairly hope, Have lost their quality."—Hen. V. v. 2. 19.

"But yet the state of things require."—DANIEL, Ulysses and Sirene

"The approbation of those . . . are," &c .- Cymb. i. 4. 17.

"How the sight

Of those smooth rising cheeks renew the story Of young Adonis."—B. F. F. Sh. i. 1.

"Equality of two domestic powers
Breed scrupulous faction."—A. and C. i. 3. 48.

"The voice of all the gods

Make heaven drowsy."-L. L. L. iv. 3. 345.

Here, however, "voice" may be (471) for "voices."

"Then know

The peril of our curses light on thee."-K. J. in. 1. 205.

'The very thought of my revenges that way Recoil upon myself."—W. T. ii. 3. 20.

"More than the scope

Of these delated *articles allow.*"—*Hamlet*, i. 2. 38.

The subjunctive is not required, and therefore "have" is probably

plural, in "If the *scorn* of your bright *eyne*

Have power to raise such love in mine."—A. Y. L. iv. 3. 51.

In these cases the proximity of a plural noun seems to have caused the plural verb, contrary to the rules of grammar. The two nouns together connected by "of" seem regarded as a compound noun with plural termination. So

- "These kind-of-knaves."-Lear, ii. 2. 107.
- "Those blest-pair-of-fixed-stars."-B. and F. F. Sh. ii. I.
- "These happy-pair of lovers meet straightway."-Ib.

Similarly-

"Where such as thou mayest find him."-Macbeth, iv. 2. 81.

In the following instance the plural nominative is implied from the previous singular noun—

"As every alien pen hath got my use, And under thee their poesy disperse."—Sonn. 78.

In "And the stars whose feeble light

Give a pale shadow to the night,"—B. and F. F. Sh. iii. 1.

perhaps "give" may be subjunctive after the relative. (See 367.)

413. Implied nominative from participial phrases. Sometimes a nominative has to be extracted ungrammatically from the meaning of a sentence. This is often the case in participial phrases:

"Beaten for loyalty
Excited me to treason."—Cymb. v. 5. 343.

1.e. "my having been beaten."

"The king of his own virtuous disposition, Aiming belike at your interior hatred, Which in your outward actions shews itself, Makes him to send."—Rich. ITI. i. 2. 63.

e.e. "the fact that the king aims makes him to send."

414. The redundant Object. Instead of saying "I know what you are," in which the object of the verb "I know" is the clause "what you are," Shakespeare frequently introduces before

the dependent clause another object, so as to make the dependent clause a mere explanation of the object.

- "I know you what you are."-Lear, i. 1. 272.
- "I see you what you are."—T. N. i. 5. 269.
- "Conceal me what I am."-Ib. i. 2. 53.
- "You hear the learn'd Bellario what he writes."

 M. of V. iv. 1. 167.
- "We'll hear him what he says."—A. and C. v. 1. 51.
- "To give me hearing what I shall reply."

I Hen. VI. iii. 1. 28.

- "But wilt thou hear me how I did proceed?"
- Hamlet, v. 2. 27. "March on and mark King Richard how he looks."
- Rich. II. iii. 3. 61; Ib. v. 4 1. "Sorry I am my noble cousin should Suspect me that I mean no good to him."
- **See the dew-drops, how they kiss

 Every little flower that is."—B. and F. F. Sh. ii. 1.

Hence in the passive:

"The queen's in labour, (They say in great extremity) and fear'd She'll with the labour end,"—Hen. VIII. v. 1. 19.

where the active would have been "they fear the queen that she will die." For "fear" thus used, see Prepositions, 200.

So "no one asks about the dead man's knell for whom it is" becomes in the passive

"The dead man's knell

Is there scarce asked, for who,"—Macbeth, iv. 3. 171.

and "about which it is a wonder how his grace should glean it" becomes

Which is a wonder how his grace should glean it."

Hen. V. i. 1. 53.

This idiom is of constant occurrence in Greek; but it is very natural after a verb of observation to put, first the primary object of observation, e.g. "King Richard," and then the secondary object, viz. "King Richard's looks." There is, therefore, no reason whatever for supposing that this idiom is borrowed from the Greek. After a verb of commanding the object cannot always be called redundant, as in

"(She) bade me, if I had a friend that loved her, I should but teach him how to tell my story."

Óthello, i. 3. 165.

is "she commanded me (that) I should," &c. But it is redundant in

"The constable desires thee thou wilt mind Thy followers of repentance."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 84.

"He wills you . . . that you divest yourself."—Ib. ii. 4. 77–8.

Compare

"Belike they had some notice of (about) the people How I had moved them."—J. C. iii. 2. 275.

A somewhat different case of the redundant object is found in

"Know you not, master, to some kind of men Their graces serve *them* but as enemies? No more do yours,"—A. Y. L. ii. 3. 10.

where the last line means, "your graces are not more serviceable to you."

415. Construction changed by change of thought.

"One of the prettiest touches was when, at the relation of the queen's death, ... how attentiveness wounded his daughter."—
W. T. v. 2, 94.

The narrator first intends to narrate the point of time, then diverges into the manner, of the action.

"Purpose is but the slave to memory,

Which now, like fruit unripe, sticks on the tree,

But fall unshaken when they mellow be."—Hamlet, iii. 2. 201.

The subject, which is singular, is here confused with, and lost in, that to which it is compared, which is plural. Perhaps this explanation also suits:

"And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,

Save in aspect *hath'* all offence sealed up,"—K. J. ii. 1. 250. though this may be a case of plural nominative with singular verb.

(See 334.)

In the following, Henry V. begins by *dictating* a proclamation, but under the influence of indignation passes into the *imperative* of the proclamation itself:

"Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through our host That he which hath no stomach to this fight Let him depart."—Hen. V. iv. 3, 35-6,

This is more probable than that "he" (224) is used for "man."

"Should" is treated as though it were "should have" (owing to the introduction of the conditional sentence with "had") in the following anomalous passage:

"We should by this to all our lamentation, If he had gone forth consul, found it so."—Coriol. iv. 6. 35.

So Rich. III. iii. 5. 56 (411).

The way in which a divergence can be made from the subject to the thing compared with the subject is illustrated by

"So the proportions of defence are filled: Which, of a weak and niggardly projection, Doth, like a miser, spoil his coat with scanting A little cloth."—Hen. V. ii, 4. 46.

"Whose veins, like a dull river far from spring

Is still the same, slow, heavy, and unfit
For stream and motion, though the strong winds hit
With their continual power upon his sides."

B. and F. F. Sh. i. 1.

"But, good my brother,
Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,
Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven,
Whiles, like a puffed and reckless libertine,
Himself the primrose path of dalliance treads."

Hamlet, i. 3. 50.

instead of "whiles you tread." But in

"Those sleeping stones
That, as a waist, doth girdle you about,
Had been dishabited,"—K. J. ii. 1. 216.

"doth," probably, has "that" for its subject. See Relative, 247.

In "Are not you he
That frights the maidens of the villagery,
Skim milk, and sometimes labour in the quern
And bootless make the breathless housewife churn?"

M. N. D. ii. 1. 35-9.

the transition is natural from "Are not you the person who?" to "Do not you?"

416. Construction changed for clearness. (See also 285.) Just as (285) that is sometimes omitted and then inserted to connect a distant clause with a first part of a sentence, so sometimes "to" is inserted apparently for the same reason—

"That God forbid, that made me first your slave. I should in thought control your times of pleasure,

Or at your hand the account of hours to crave."-Sonn. 58.

Here "to" might be omitted, or "should" might be inserted instead, but the omission would create ambiguity, and the insertion would be a tedious repetition.

> "Heaven would that she these gifts should have, And I to live and die her slave."-A. Y. L. iii. 2. 162.

> "Keep your word, Phœbe, that you'll marry me, Or else, refusing me, to wed this shepherd." Ib. v. 4. 21-2.

"But on this condition, that she should follow him, and he not to follow her."-BACON, Adv. of L. 284.

"The punishment was, that they should be put out of commons and not to be admitted to the table of the gods."-Ib. 260.

"That we make a stand upon the ancient way, and look about us and discover what is the straight and right way, and so to walk in it."-B. E. 100.

In the following, the infinitive is used in both clauses, but the "to" only in the latter :-

"In a word, a man were better relate himself to a Statue or Picture, than to suffer his thoughts to pass in smother."

B. E. 103.

417. Noun Absolute. See also Redundant Pronoun, 243. Sometimes a noun occurs in a prominent position at the beginning of a sentence, to express the subject of the thought, without the usual grammatical connection with a verb or preposition. In some cases it might almost be called a vocative, only that the third person instead of the second is used, and then the pronoun is not redundant. Sometimes the noun seems the real subject or object of the verb, and the pronoun seems redundant. When the noun is the object, it is probably governed by some preposition understood, "as for," "as to."

"My life's foul deed, my life's fair end shall free it."-R. of L.

"The prince that feeds great natures, they will slay him."

B. I. Sejanus, iii. 3.

"But virtue, as it never will be moved, So lust," &c. - Hamlet, i. 5. 53.

"Look when I vow, I weep; and vows so born, In their nativity all truth appears."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 124. But this may be explained by 376.

"'Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill upon his own head."
-Hen. V. iv. I. 197.

"But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt
The least of you shall share his part thereof."

Rich. III. v. 3. 267. "That thing you speak of I took it for a man."—Lear, iv. 6. 77.

The following may be thus explained:-

"Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through our host, That he which hath no stomach to this fight, Let him depart."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 34.

"That can we not . . . but he that proves the king To him will we prove loyal."—K. J. ii. 1. 271.

"He" being regarded as the normal form of the pronoun, is appropriate for this independent position. So

"But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,
That they who brought me in my master's hate
I live to look upon their tragedy."—Rich. III. iii. 2. 57.

These three examples might, however, come under the head of Construction changed, 415, as the following (which closely resembles the first) certainly does:

"My lord the emperor,
Sends thee this word that, if thou love thy son,
Let Marcius, Lucius, or thyself, old Titus,
Or any one of you, chop off your hand."—T. A. iii. 1. 151

In this, and perhaps in the first example, the "that," like $\delta\tau\iota$ in Greek, is equivalent to inverted commas.

"May it please your grace, Antipholus, my husband, Whom I made lord of me, . . . this ill day A most outrageous fit of madness took him."

C. of E. v. 1. 138.

"The trumpery in my house, go bring it hither."— Temp. iv. 1. 186. It is, of course, possible to have an infinitive instead of a noun:

"To strike him dead, I hold it not a sin."—R. and F. i. 4. 61.

For the noun absolute with the participle, see Participle, 376.

418. Foreign Idioms. Several constructions in Bacon, Ascham, and Ben Jonson, such as "ill," for "ill men" (Latin 'mali'), "without all question" ('sine omni dubitatione'), seem to have been

borrowed from Latin. It is questionable, however, whether there are many Latinisms in construction (Latinisms in the formation of words are of constant occurrence) in Shakespeare. We may perhaps quote—

"Those dispositions that of late transform you From what you rightly are."—Lear, i. 4. 242.

Compare

"He is ready to cry all this day,"-B. J. Sil. Wom. 4.

as an imitation of the Latin use of "jampridem" with the present in the sense of the perfect. But it is quite possible that the same thought of *continuance* may have prompted the use of the present, both in English and Latin. "He is and has been ready to cry," &c. The use of "more better," &c., the double negative, and the infinitive after 'than," are certainly of English origin. The following—

"Whispering fame
Knowledge and proof doth to the jealous give,
Who than to fail would their own thought believe,"—
B. J. Sejan. 2.

in the omission of "rather" after "would," reminds us of the omission of "potius" after "malo." Perhaps also

" Let that be mine,"—M. for M. ii. 2. 12.

is an imitation of "meum est," "It is my business."

The following resembles the Latin idiom, "post urbem conditam," except that there is also an ellipsis of a pronoun:

"'Tis our hope, sir,

After (our being) well enter'd (as) soldiers, to return

And find your grace in health."—A. W. ii. 1. 6.

I cannot recall another such an instance, and it is doubtful whether "after" does not here mean "hereafter:" "It is our hope to return hereafter well-apprenticed soldiers." But such participial phrases preceded by prepositions seem to be of classical origin, as in Milton:

"Nor delay'd
The winged saint after his charge received."

MILTON, P. L. v. 248.

"He, after Eve seduced, unminded slunk Into the wood fast by."—Ib. 332.

and even, contrary to the particular Latin idiom :

"They set him free without his ransom paid."-I Hen. VI.iii, 3.72.

The following resembles the Latin use of "qui si," for the English "and if he."

"Which parti-coated presence of loose love
Put on by us, if in your heavenly eyes
Have misbecomed our oaths and gravities."—L. L. L. v. 2. 778.

419. Transposition of Adjectives.

The adjective is placed after the noun:

- (1) In legal expressions in which French influence can be traced:
 - "Heir apparent."-I Hen. IV. i. 2. 65.

"Heir general."-Hen. V. i. 2. 66.

- "Thou cam'st not of the blood-royal." 1. Hen. IV. i. 2. 157,
- "In the seat royal."-Rich. III. iii. 1. 164.

"Sport royal."-T. N. ii. 3. 187.

"Or whether that the body public be a horse."

M. for M. i. 2. 163.

- "My letters patents (Fol.) give me leave."—Rich. II. ii. 3. 130.
- (2) Where a relative clause, or some conjunctional clause, is understood between the noun and adjective:

"Duncan's horses,

(Though) Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race, Turned wild in nature."—Macbeth, ii. 4. 15.

"Filling the whole realm . . . with new opinions

(That are) Divers and dangerous."—Hen. VIII. v. 3. 18.

Hence, where the noun is unemphatic, as "thing," "creature," this transposition may be expected:

- "In killing creatures (that were) vile."-Cvmb. v. 5. 252.
- "He look'd upon things (that are) precious as they were The common muck of the world."—Coriol. ii, 2, 129,

Hence, after the name of a class, the adjective is more likely to be transposed than in the case of a proper name. Thus

"Celestial Dian, goddess argentine."-P. of T. v. 2. 251.

i.e. "goddess (that bearest) the silver bow." The difference between a mere epithet before the noun, and an additional statement conveyed by an adjective after the noun, is illustrated by

"If yet your gentle souls fly in the air
And be not fix'd in (a) doom (that is) perpetual."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 11, 12.

Similarly in

"With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut."-A. Y. L. ii. 7. 155.

"My presence like a robe pontifical."—I Hen IV. iii. 2. 56.

"eyes" and "a robe" are unemphatic, their existence being taken for granted, and the essence of the expression is in the transposed adjective.

The "three" is emphatic, and the divorcing of *some* "souls and bodies" is taken as a matter of course, in

"Souls and bodies hath he divorced three."—T. N. iii. 4. 260 Somewhat similar—

"Satisfaction there can be none."-Ib. 262.

This relative force is well illustrated by

"Prince, I fear no uncles dead.

Glou. Nor none that live, I hope."

Rich, III. iii, I. 146.

(3) Hence participles (since they imply a relative), and any adjectives that from their terminations resemble participles, are peculiarly liable to be thus transposed.

Similarly adjectives that end in -ble, -ite, and -t, -ive, -al, are often found after their nouns, e.g. "unspeakable," "unscaleable," "impregnable;" "absolute," "devout," "remote," "infinite" (often), "past," "inveterate;" "compulsative," "invasive," "defective;" "capital," "tyrannical," "virginal," "angelical," "unnatural."

- (4) Though it may be generally said that when the noun is unemphatic, and the adjective is not a mere epithet but essential to the sense, the transposition may be expected, yet it is probable that the influence of the French idiom made this transposition especially common in the case of some words derived from French. Hence, perhaps, the transposition in
 - "Of antres vast and deserts idle." Othello, i. 2. 140.

And, besides "apparent" in the legal sense above, we have

"As well the fear of harm as harm apparent."

Rich. III. ii. 2, 130.

Hence, perhaps, the frequent transposition of "divine," as

"By Providence divine."-Tempest, i. 2. 158.

So "Ful wel sche sang the service devyne."

CHAUCER, C. T. 122.

"Men devout."-Hen. V. i. I. 9.

"Unto the appetite and affection common." - Coriol. i. 1. 103

Latin usage may account for some expressions, as "A sectary astronomical."—Lear, i. 2. 164.

419a. Transposition of adjectival phrases.

It has been shown above (419), that when an adjective is not a mere epithet, but expresses something essential, and implies a relative, it is often placed after the noun. When, however, connected with the adjective, e.g. "whiter," there is some adverbial phrase, e.g. "than snow," it was felt that to place the adjective after the noun might sometimes destroy the connection between the noun and adjective, since the adjective was, as it were, drawn forward to the modifying adverb. Hence the Elizabethans sometimes preferred to place the adjectival part of the adjective before, and the adverbial part after, the noun. The noun generally being unemphatic caused but slight separation between the two parts of the adjectival phrase. Thus "whiter than snow," being an adjectival phrase, "whiter" is inserted before, and "than snow" after, the noun.

"Nor scar that [whiter] skin-of-hers [than snow]."
Othello, v. 2. 4.

"So much I hate a [breaking] cause to be [Of heavenly oaths]."—L. L. v. 2. 355.

So "A [promising] face [of manly princely virtues]."

B. and F. (Walker).

"As common
As any [the most vulgar] thing [to sense]."—Ham. i. 2. 99.
1.e. "anything the most commonly perceived."

"I shall unfold [equal] discourtesy [To your best kindness]."—Cymb. ii. 3. 101.

"The [farthest] earth [removed from thee]."-Sonn. 44.

"Bid these [unknown] friends [to us], welcome."

W. T. iv. 3. 65.

"Thou [bloodier] villain [than terms can give thee out]."

**Macbeth*, v. 8. 7.

"A [happy] gentleman [in blood and lineaments]."

Rich. II. iii. 1. 9.

"As a [long-parted] mother [with her child]."

**D. iii. 2. 8. (See 194.)

'Thou [little better] thing [than earth]."-Ih. iii. 4. 77.

'You have won a [happy] victory [to Rome]."

Coriol. v. 3. 186.

Hence, even where the adjective cannot immediately precede the noun, yet the adjective comes first, and the adverb afterwards.

"That were to enlard his fat-already-pride."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 205.

"May soon return to this our [suffering] country [Under a hand accurst]."—Macbeth, iii. 6. 48.

"The [appertaining] rage

The [appertanting] rag
[To such a greeting]."—R. and J. iii. 1. 66.

"With [declining] head [into his bosom]."—T. of Sh. Ind. 1. 119. So probably

"Bear our [hack'd] targets [like the men that owe them]."

A. and C. iv. 8, 31.

This is very common in other Elizabethan authors:

"The [stricken] hind [with Shaft]."—LORD SURREY (Walker).

"And [worthie] work [of infinite reward]."

SPENSER, F. Q. iii. 2. 21.

"Of that [too wicked] woman [yet to die]."

B. and F. (Walker).

"Some sad [malignant] angel [to mine honour]."—Ib.

which perhaps explains

"Bring forth that [fatal] screech-owl [to our house]."
3 Hen. VI. ii. 6. 56.

So "Thou [barren] thing [of honesty] and honour!"—B. and F. perhaps explains

"Thou perjur'd and thou [simular] man [of virtue]."

Lear, iii. 2. 54.

"Bring me a [constant] woman [to her husband]."

Hen, VIII. iii. 1. 134.

"O, for my sake do you with fortune chide,

The [guilty] goddess [of my harmful deeds]."—Sonn. 111. "To this [unworthy] husband [of his wife]."—A. W. iii. 4. 30.

"A [dedicated] beggar [to the air]."—T. of A. iv. 2. 13.

This transposition extends to an adverb in

"And thou shalt live [as freely] as thy lord [To call his fortunes thine]."—T. N. i. 4. 39, 40.

i.e. "as free to use my fortune as I am."

Unless "to" is used loosely like "for," the following is a case of transposition:

"This is a [dear] manakin [to you], Sir Toby."

T. N. iii. 2. 57.

420. Transposition of Adverbs. The Elizabethan authors allowed themselves great licence in this respect.

We place adverbial expressions that measure excess or defect before the adjective which they modify, "twenty times better," &c. This is not always the case in Shakespeare:

"Being twenty times of better fortune."-A. and C. iv. 2. 3.

"Our spoils (that) we have brought home
Do more than counterpoise, a full third part,

The charges of the action."—Coriol. v. 6. 78.
"I am solicited not by a few,

And those of true condition."—Hen. VIII. i. 2. 18.

For not transposed, see also 305.

"Like to a harvest man that's task'd to mow Or all, or lose his hire."—Coriol. i. 3. 40.

In "All good things vanish less than in a day" (Nash), there is, perhaps, a confusion between "less long-lived than a day" and "more quickly than in a day." At all events the emphatic use of "less" accounts for the transposition.

Such transpositions are most natural and frequent in the case of adverbs of limitation, as but (see But, 129), only, even, &c.

"Only I say,"-Macbeth, iii. 6. 2.

for "I only say."

"Only I yield to die."-J. C. v. 4. 12.

for "I yield only in order to die,"

"And I assure you

Even that your pity is enough to cure me,"—B. J. for "that even your pity."

He did it to please his mother and to be partly proud,"

Coriol. i. 1. 40.

for "and partly to be proud."

Somewhat similar is

"Your single bond,"-M. of V. i. 3. 146.

for "the bond of you alone."

421. Transposition of Adverbs. When an adverb is transposed to the beginning for emphasis, it generally transposes the subject after the verb, but adverbs are sometimes put at the beginning of a sentence without influencing the order of the other words.

- " Seldom he smiles."-7. C. i. 2. 205.
- "For always I am Cæsar."-Ib. i. 2. 212.
- " No more that thane of Cawdor shall deceive."

Macbeth, i. 2. 63.

"Of something nearly that concerns yourselves."

M. N. D. 1. I. 126.

422. Transposition of Article. In Early English we sometimes find "a so new robe." The Elizabethan authors, like ourselves, transposed the a and placed it after the adjective: "so new a robe." But when a participle is added as an epithet of the noun, e.g. "fashioned," and the participle itself is qualified by an adjective used as an adverb, e.g. "new," we treat the whole as one adjective, thus, "so new-fashioned a robe." Shakespeare on the contrary writes-

"So new a fashion'd robe."-K. 7. iv. 2. 27.

"So fair an offer'd chain."-C. of E. iii. 2. 186.

"Or having sworn too hard a keeping oath."

"So rare a wonder'd father and a wife."

L. L. L. i. 1. 65.

Temp. iv. 1. 123.

"I would have been much more a fresher man."

Tr. and Cr. v. 6. 20.

We still say, "too great a wit," but not with Chaucer, C. T.:

"For when a man hath overgret a wit,"

possibly because we regard "overgreat" as an adjective, and "too great" as a quasi-adverb. Somewhat similar is:

> "On once-a-flock-bed, but repair'd with straw, With tape-ty'd curtains never meant to draw."

POPE, Moral E. iii. 301.

So we can say "how poor an instrument," regarding "how" as an adverb, and "how poor" as an adverbialized expression, but not

"What poor an instrument,"—A. and C. v. 2, 236.

because "what" has almost lost with us its adverbial force.

"So brave(ly) a mingled temper saw I never."

B. and F. (Walker).

"Chaucer, who was so great(ly) a learned scholar."

KINASTON (Walker).

The a is used even after the comparative adjective in "If you should need a pin,

You could not with more tame a tongue desire it."

M. for M. ii. 2. 46.

- 423. Transpositions in Noun-clauses containing two nouns connected by "of." It has been observed in 412 that two nouns connected by "of" are often regarded as one. Hence sometimes pronominal and other adjectives are placed before the whole compound noun instead of, as they strictly should be, before the second of the two nouns.
 - "Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope."
 - 3 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 40. "My pith of business."—M. for M. i. 4. 70.

"The tribunes have pronounced

My everlasting doom of banishment."—T. A. iii. 1. 51.

"Let it stamp wrinkles in her brow of youth."

Lear. i. 4, 306.

"My latter part of life."—A. and C. iv. 6. 39.

"My whole course of life." - Othello, i. 3. 91.

"I will presently go learn their day of marriage."
M. Ado, ii. 2. 57

"Thy bruising irons of wrath."-Rich. III. v. 3. 110.

"Thy ministers of chastisement."—Ib. 113.

"In my prime of youth."-Ib. 119.

"Thy heat of lust."-R. of L. 1473.

"My home of love." - Sonn. 109.

"And punish them to your height of pleasure."

M. for M. v. 1. 240.

"His means of death, his obscure funeral."

Hamlet, iv. 5. 213.

i.s. "the means of his death.

"What is your cause of distemper?"—Hamlet, iii. 2. 350.

"Your sovereignty of reason."—Ib. i. 4. 73. (See 200.)

" My better part of man."-Macbeth, v. 7. 18.

" His chains of bondage."-Rich. II. i. 3. 89.

4 Your state of fortune and your due of birth."
Rich. III. iii. 7. 127.

This is perhaps illustrated by

"What country-man?"—T. N. v. 1. 238; T. of Sk. i. 2. 190. for "a man of what country?"

The possessive adjective is twice repeated in

"Her attendants of her chamber."-A. Y. L. ii. 2. 5.

So "This cause of Rome,"-T. A. i. 1. 32.

does not mean "this cause as distinguished from other caused of Rome," but "this, the Roman cause." Somewhat similar is

" Your reproof

Were well deserv'd of rashness,"—A. and C. ii. 2. 124. where we should say "the reproof of your rashness" (unless "of" here means "about," "for").

"The idea of her life shall sweetly creep

Into his study of imagination."—M. Ado, iv. 1. 227.

i.e. "the study of his imagination."

"Our raiment and state of bodies."-Coriol. v. 3. 95.

"More than ten criers, and six noise of trumpets."

B. J. Sejan. v. 7.

The compound nature of these phrases explains, perhaps, the omission of the article in

"Hath now himself met with the fall-of-leaf."

Rich. II. iii. 4. 49.

424. Transposition of Prepositions in Relative and other clauses. We now dislike using such transpositions as

"The late demand that you did sound me in."--Rich. III. iv. 2.87.

"Betwixt that smile we would aspire to."-Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 368.

"A thousand men that fishes gnawed upon."-Rich. III. i. 4. 25.

"Found thee a way out of his wreck to rise in."

Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 438.

But it may be traced to E. E. (203), and is very common in Shakespeare, particularly in *Hen. VIII.*, where we even find

"Where no mention

Of me must more be heard of."-Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 435.

It has been said above (203) that the dissyllabic forms of prepositions are peculiarly liable to these transpositions. Add to the above examples:

"Like a falcon towering in the skies, Coucheth the fowl below."—R. of L. 506.

425. Transposition after Emphatic Words. The influence of an emphatic word at the beginning of a sentence is shown in the

transposition of the verb and subject. In such cases the last as well as the first word is often emphatic.

"In dreadful secrecy impart they did."—Hamlet, i. 2. 207. "And so have I a noble father lost,

A sister driven into desperate terms."—Ib. iv. 7. 25.

Here note, that though the first line could be re-transposed and Laertes could naturally say "I have lost a father," on the other hand he could not say "I have driven a sister" without completely changing the sense. "Have" is here used in its original sense, and is equivalent to "I find." When "have" is thus used without any notion of action, it is separated from the participle passive.

"But answer made it none."-Hamlet, i. 2. 216.

" Pray can I not."—Ib. iii. 3. 38.

"Supportable
To make the dear loss have I means much weaker."
Temp. v. 1. 146.

The influence of an emphatic adverbial expression preceding is shown in the difference between the order in the second and the first of the two following lines:—

"As every alien pen hath got my use,
And under thee their poetry disperse."—Sonn. 78.

"I did, my lord,
But loath am to produce so bad an instrument."

A. W. v. 3. 201.

"Before the time I did Lysander see, Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me."—M. N. D. i. 1. 205.

When the adverbs "never," "ever," are emphatic and placed near the beginning of a sentence, the subject often follows the verb, almost always when the verb is "was," &c. We generally write now "never was," but Shakespeare often wrote "(there) was never."

"Was never widow had so dear a loss."-Rich. III. ii. 2. 77.

Sometimes a word is made emphatic by repetition:

"Sec. O. Peace! We'll hear him.
Third O. Ay, by my beard will we."—T. G. of V. iv. 1. 10.

"Hamlet. Look you, these are the stops.
Guild. But these cannot I command."—Hamlet, iii. 3. 377.

Or partly by antithesis, as well as by its natural importance:

"I your commission will forthwith despatch, And he to England shall along with you."

Hamlet, iii. 3. 3, 4.

"My soul shall thine keep company to heaven."

Hen. V. iv. 6. 16.

The following is explained by the omission of "there:"

"I am question'd by my fears . . . that (there) may blow No sneaping winds at home."—W. T. i. 2. 13.

There seems a disposition to place participles, as though used absolutely, before the words which they qualify.

"And these news,

Having been well, that would have made me sick,

Being sick, have in some measure made me well."

2 Hen. IV. i. I. 138,

It is rare to find such transpositions as

"Then the rich jewell'd coffer of Darius,

Transported shall be at high festivals."—I Hen. VI. i. 6. 26.

Transpositions are common in prose, especially when an adverb precedes the sentence.

"Yet hath Leonora, my onely daughter, escaped."

MONTAIGNE (Florio), 225.

"And, therefore, should not we marry so young."—Ib.

"Now, sir, the sound that tells what hour it is Are clamorous groans,"—Rich. II. v. 5. 56.

is rather a case of "confusion of proximity" ("are" being changed to "is") than transposition. (See 302.)

426. Transposition after Relative. The relative subject, possibly as being somewhat unemphatic itself, brings forward the object into a prominent and emphatic position, and consequently throws a part of the verb to the end, not however (as in German) the auxiliary.

"By Richard that dead is."-I Hen. IV. i. 3. 146.

"But chide rough winter that the flower hath killed."-R. of L.

"That heaven's light did hide."-SPENS. F. O.-i. 1. 7.

427. Other Transpositions. In the second of two passive clauses when the verb "is" is omitted, the subject is sometimes transposed, perhaps for variety.

"When liver, heart, and brain, These sovereign thrones, are all supplied, and filled (Are) Her sweet perfections with one self king."

T. N. i. 1. 39.

"Since his addiction was to courses vain, And never (was) noted in him any study."—*Hen. V.* i. 1. 57.

It is not probable that "perfections" and "study" are here ab-

solutely used with the participle. See, however, And, 95.

In "By such two that would by all likelihood have confounded each other" (Cymb. i. 4. 53), "two" is emphatic, like "a pair." So "we" is emphatic in, "all we like sheep have gone astray," and in Hamlet, ii. 2. 151, in both cases, because of antithesis.

"Into the madness wherein now he raves
And all we mourn for."—Hanlet, ii. 2. 151. (See 240.)

COMPOUND WORDS.

428. Hybrids. The Elizabethans did not bind themselves by the stricter rules of modern times in this respect. They did not mind adding a Latin termination to a Teutonic root, and vice versā. Thus Shakespeare has "increaseful," "bodement," &c. Holland uses the suffix -/y after the word "fool" (which at all events does not come to us direct from the Latin), "foolify," where we use "stultify." The following words illustrate the Elizabethan licence:—

- "Bi-fold."-Tr. and Cr. v. 2. 144.
- "Out-cept."-B. J. (Nares).
- "Exteriorly."—K. J. iv. 2. 257.

"Sham'st thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught?"
3 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 142.

where there is a confusion between the Latin "extracted" and the English "raught," past part. of "reach." Compare Pistol's "exhale," Hen. V. ii. 1. 66, i.e. "ex-haul," "draw out," applied to a sword.

There was also great licence in using the foreign words which were pouring into the language.

- "And quench the stelled fires."—Lear, iii. 7. 61.
- "Be aidant and remediate."—Ib. iv. 4. 17.
- " Antres vast and deserts idle." Othello, i. 3. 140.

429. Adverbial Compounds.

"Till Harry's back-return."—Hen. V. v. Prologue, 41.

"Thy here-approach," Mach. iv. 3. 133, 148; "Our hence-going," Cymb. iii. 2. 65; "Here-hence," B. J. Poetast. v. I; "So that men are punish'd for before-breach of the king's laws in now-the-king'squarrel," Hin. V. iv. I. 179, i.e. "the king's now (present) quarrel." This last extraordinary compound is a mere construction for the occasion, to correspond antithetically to "before-breach," but it well illustrates the Elizabethan licence.

"The steep-up heavenly hill."-Sonn. 7.

"I must up-fill this osier cage of ours."—R. and 7. ii. 3. 7.

"Up-hoarded."-Hamlet, i. 1. 136.

"With hair up-staring." - Tempest, i. 2. 213.

- 430. Noun-Compounds. Sometimes the first noun may be treated as a genitive used adjectively. (See 22.) Thus, "thy heartblood" (Rich. II. iv. I. 38) is the same as "thy heart's blood;" "brother-love" (Hen. VIII. v. 3. 73), i.e. brother's love.
 - So "Any-moment-leisure."—Hamlet, i. 3. 133.
 "This childhood-proof."—M. of V. i. 1. 144.

 - "Childhood-innocence."-M. N. D. iii. 2. 202.
 - "All the region-kites."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 607.
 - "A lion-fell."-M. N. D. v. 1. 227, i.e. "a lion's skin." So probably

"Faction-traitors,"-Rich. II. ii. 2. 57.

"Self" is used as a compound noun in "self-conceit," and this explains

"Infusing him with self-and-vain-conceit,"-Rich, II, iii, 2.166.

"Every minute-while,"-I Hen. VI. i. 4. 54.

where "while" has its original force as a noun = "time."

But often when a noun is compounded with a participle, some preposition or other ellipse must be supplied, as "like" in our "stone-still," &c., and the exact meaning of the compound can only be ascertained by the context.

"Wind-changing Warwick."-3 Hen. VI. v. 1. 57.

"My furnace-burning heart."—Ib. ii. 1. 80.

i.e. "burning like a furnace."

"Giant-rude," A. Y. L. iv. 3, 34; "marble-constant," A. and C. v. 2. 240; "honey-heavy-dere," 7. C. ii. 1. 230; so "flower-

soft hands," A. and C. ii. 2. 215; "maid-pale peace," Rich. II. iii. 3. 98; "an orphan's water-standing eye," 3 Hen. VI. v. 6. 40. i.e. "standing with water;" "weeping-ripe," L. L. L. v. 2. 274, "ripe for weeping;" "thought-sick," Hamlet, iii. 4. 51, i.e. "as i.e. the result of thought;" so "lion-sick," Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 13, is explained lower down, "sick of proud heart;" "pity-pleading eyes," R. of L. 561, i.e. "pleading for pity;" "peace-parted souls," Hamlet, v. i. 261, i.e. "souls that have departed in peace;" "fancy-free," M. N. D. ii. I. 164, i.e. "free from fancy (love);" "child-changed father," Lear. iv. 7. 17, i.e., "changed to a child."

Or the noun is put for a passive participle or an adjective.

"Upon your sword sit laurel(led) victory."-A. and C.i. 3. 100.

"The honey of his music(al) vows."—Hamlet, iii. 1. 164.

"The venom(ous) clamours of a jealous woman." C. of E. v. I. 69; so R. of L. 850.

"The Carthage queen."-M. N. D. i. 1. 173.

"Your Corioli walls." - Coriol, i. 8, 8; ii. 1. 180.

"Our Rome gates."-Ib. iii. 3. 104: Ib. iv. 5. 214.

For similar examples, see 22.

Sometimes the genitive is used:

"I'll knock your knave's pate." T. of Sh. i. 2. 12; C. of E. iii. 1. 74.

431. Preposition-Compounds.

"An after-dinner's (comp. 'afternoon's') breath." Tr. and Cr. ii. 3. 120.

"At after-supper."-Rich. III. iv. 3. 31; M. N. D. v. i. 34.

" At over-night." - A. W. iii. 4. 23.

"The falling-from of his friends."—T. of A. iv. 3. 400.

The preposition usually attached to a certain verb is sometimes appended to the participle of the verb in order to make an adjective.

"There is no hoped-for mercy."-3 Hen. VI. v. 4. 35.

"Some never-heard-of torturing pain,"-T. A. ii. 3. 285. for "unheard-of."

"Your sued-for tongues." - Coriol. ii. 3. 216.

" Bemock'd-at stabs."-Temp. iii. 3. 63.

"The unthought-on accident."-W. T. iv. 4. 549.

"Your unthought-of Harry."-I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 141.

- 432. Verb-Compounds. Verbs were compounded with their objects more commonly than with us.
 - "Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight zany, Some mumble-news."—L. L. v. 2. 463-4.
 - " All find-faults."-Hen. V. v. 2. 298.

We still use "mar-plot" and "spoil-sport." Such compounds seem generally depreciatory. "Weather-fend" in

"In the lime grove which weather-fends your cell,"

Temp. v. 1. 10.

means "defend from the weather," and stands on a somewhat different footing.

One is disposed to treat "wilful-blame" as an anomalous compound in

"In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-blame."

I Hen. IV. iii. I. 177.

like "A false-heart traitor."-2 Hen. VI. v. 1. 143.

But "heart" is very probably a euphonious abbreviation of "hearted." The explanation of "too wilful-blame" is to be sought in the common expression "I am too blame," Othello, iii. 3. 211, 282; M. of V. v. I. 166. "I am too too blame," is also found in Elizabethan authors. It would seem that, the "to" in "I am to blame" being misunderstood, "blame" came to be regarded as an adjective, and "to" (which is often interchanged in spelling with "too") as an adverb. Hence "blame," being regarded as an adjective, was considered compoundable with another adjective.

- 433. Participial Nouns. A participle or adjective, when used as a noun, often receives the inflection of the possessive case or the plural.
 - "His chosen's merit."—B. and F. F. Sh. iii. I.
 - "All cruels else subscribed."—Lear, iii. 7. 65.

i.e. "All cruel acts to the contrary being yielded up, forgiven." Compare for the meaning *Lear*, iv. 7. 36, and for "subscribe," *Tr. and Cr.* iv. 5. 105. Another explanation is, "all other cruel animals being allowed entrance."

So "Vulgars," W. T. ii. 1. 94; "Severals," Hen. V. i. 1. 86, i.e. "details."

"Yon equal potents."-K. J. ii. 1. 357.

"To the ports

The discontents repair."—A. and C. i. 4. 39.

"Lead me to the revolts (revolters) of England here."

K. J. v. 4. 7: so Cymb. iv. 4. 6

Add, if the text be correct:

"The Norways' king."-Macbeth, i. 2. 59.

2.4. "the king of the Norwegians."

It would appear as though an adjective in agreement with a plural noun received a plural inflection in

"Letters-patents."—Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 249; Rich. II. ii. 1. 202 (Folio), 3. 130.

More probably the word was treated by Shakespeare as though it were a compound noun. But in E. E. adjectives of Romance origin often take the plural inflection.

- "Lawless resolutes."-Hamlet, i. 1. 98.
- "Mighty opposites."-Ib. v. ii. 62.
- 434. Phrase-Compounds. Short phrases, mostly containing participles, are often compounded into epithets.
 - "The always-wind-obeying deep."-C. of E. i. 1. 64.
 - "My too-much-changed son."-Hamlet, ii. 2. 36.
 - "The ne er-yet-beaten horse of Parthia."—A. and C. iii. 1. 33.
 - "Our past-cure malady."-A. W. ii. 1. 124.
 - " A past-saving slave."—Ib. iv. 3. 158.
 - "The none-sparing war."-Ib. iii. 2. 108.
 - "A jewel in a ten-times-barred-up chest."-Rich. II. i. 1. 180.
 - " A too-long-wither'd flower."-Ib. ii. 1. 134.
 - "Tempt him not so too-far."-A. and C. i. 3. 11.
 - "The to-and-fro-conflicting wind."—Lear, iii. 1. 11.
 - "You that have turn'd off a first-so noble wife."

A. W. v. 3. 220.

" Of this yet-scarce-cold battle."-Cymb. v. 5. 469.

"A cunning thief, or a-that-way-accomplished courtier."

Ib. i. 4. 101.

- " In this so-never-needed help."-Coriol. v. 1. 34.
- " A world-without-end bargain."-L. L. v. 2. 799.

See Sonn. 5.

- " Our not-fearing Britain." Cymb. ii 4. 19.
- "The ne'er-lust-wearied Antony."—A. and C. ii. 1. 28.
- "A twenty-years-nemoved thing ."-T. N. v. i. 92

435. Anomalous Compounds. We still, though rarely, abbreviate "the other" into "t'other," but we could not say

"The t'other."—B. J. Cy's. Rev. iv. 1; v. 1 (a corruption of E. E. bet oper).

"Yea, and furr'd moss when winter flowers are none, To winter-ground thy corpse."—Cymb. iv. 2. 229.

i.e. perhaps "to inter during winter." So "to winter-rig" is said (Halliwell) to mean "to fallow land during winter."

"And" is omitted in

"At this odd-even and dull watch of the night."

Othello, i. 1. 12!

Cicero says, that the extreme test of a man's honesty is that you can play at odd and even with him in the dark. And perhaps "odd-(and-)even" here means, a time when there is no distinguishing between odd and even.

As there is a noun "false-play," there is nothing very remarkable in its being converted thus into a verb:

"Pack'd cards with Cæsar and false-played my glory."

A. and C. iv. 14. 19.

A terse compound is often invented for special use, made intelligible by the context. Thus, the profit of excess is called

" Poor-rich gain."-R. of L. 140.

"Where shall I live now Lucrece is unlived."-Ib. 1754.

PREFIXES.

A-. See 24.

436. All-to (see 28) is used in the sense of "completery asunder" as a prefix in

"And all-to-brake his skull."-Judges ix. 53.

"Asunder" was an ordinary meaning of the prefix "to" in E. E. It must be borne in mind that all had no necessary connected with to, till by constant association the two syllables were corrupted into a prefix, all-to, which was mistaken for altogether and so used. Hence, by corruption, in many passages, where all-to or all-too is said to have the meaning of "asunder," it had come to mean "altogether," as in

"Mercutio's yey hand had al-to frozen mine."-IIALLIWELL.

It has been shown (73) that too and to are constantly interchanged in Elizabethan authors. Hence the constant use of all too for "quite," "decidedly too," as in Rich. II. iv. I. 28, "all too base," may have been encouraged by the similar sound of all-to. Shakespeare does not use the archaic all-to in the sense of "asunder," nor does Milton probably in

"She plumes her feathers and lets grow her wings, That in the various bustle of resort Were all too ruffled."—MILTON, Comus, 376.

- 437. At- in "attask'd," *Lear*, i. 4. 366 ("task'd," "blamed"), perhaps represents the O.E. intensive prefix "of," which is sometimes changed into "an-," "on-," or "a-." But the word is more probably a sort of imitation of the similar words "attach" and "attack."
- 438. Be. The prefix be is used, not merely with verbs of colouring, "smear," "splash," &c., to localize and sometimes to intensify action, but also with nouns and adjectives to convert the nouns into verbs:
 - "Bemonster."—Lear, iv. 2. 63.
 - "Be-sort."—Ib. i. 4. 272.
 - "All good be-fortune you."—T. G. of V. iv. 3. 41.
 - "Bemadding."-Lear, iii. 1. 38.

It is also used seemingly to give a transitive signification to verbs that, without this prefix, mostly require prepositions:

- "Begnaw."-Rich. III. i. 3. 221.
- "Behowls the moon."—M. N. D. v. I. 379.
- "Bespeak" = "address" in Hamlet, ii. 2. 140.
- "Beweep."-Rich. III. ii. 2. 49; Lear, i. 4. 324.

In participles, like other prefixes, it is often redundant, and seems to indicate an unconscious want of some substitute for the old participial prefix.

"Well be-met."-Lear, v. I. 20.

But the theory that be- in "become," "believe," "belove," &c., represents the old ge-, does not seem to be sound.

- 439. Dis- was sometimes used in the sense of un-, to mean "without," as
 - "Discompanied," Cy.'s Rev. iii. 3, for "unaccompanied,"

"A little to disquantity your train."-Lear, i. 4. 270.

"Dishabited," K. 7. ii. 1. 220, = "Caused to migrate."
"Dislived," CHAPMAN, = "Deprived of life."

"Dislived," CHAPMAN, = "Deprived of life."
"Disnatured," Lear, i. 4. 305, for "Unnatural."

"Disnoble," HOLLAND; "Distemperate," RALEIGH for "ignoble" and "intemperate."

"Being full of supper and distempering draughts."

Othello, i. 1. 30.

"Discovery" is often used for "uncovering," i.e. "unfoid, whether literally or metaphorically. "So shall my anticipation prevent your discovery," Hamlet, ii. 2. 305, i.e. "render your disclosure needless by anticipation." So Rich. III. iv. 4. 240.

440. En- was frequently used, sometimes in its proper sense of enclosing, as "enclosed," "enguard," Lear, i. 4. 349; "encave," Othello, iv. I. 82; "How dread an army hath enrounded him," Hen. V. iv. Prol. 36; "enwheel thee round," Othello, ii. I. 87; "enfetter'd," ib. ii. 3. 351; "enmesh," ib. 368; "enrank," I Hen. VI. i. I. 115; "enshelter'd and embay'd," Othello, ii. I. 18; "ensteep'd," ib. 70; "engaol'd," Rich. II. i. 3. 166; "enscheduled," Hen. V. v. 2. 73; "enshelled," Coriol. iv. 6. 45. So "enshound," "envassell'd," Daniel on Florio; "embattle" (to put in battle array); "enfree" (to place in a state of freedom); "entame," A. Y. L. iii. 5. 48 (to bring into a state of tameness). But the last instances show that the locative sense can be metaphorical instead of literal, and scarcely perceptible. There is little or no difference between "free" and "enfree." So "the enridged sea," Lear, iv. 6. 71; "the enchafed flood," Othello, ii. I. 17, are, perhaps, preferred by Shakespeare merely because in participles he likes some kind of prefix as a substitute for the old participial prefix. In some cases the en- or in- seems to take a person as its object, "endart," R. and J. i. 3. 98 ("to set darts in," not "in darts"). So "enpierced," R. and J. i. 4. 19; and so, perhaps, "empoison," Coriol. v. 6. 11. The word "impale" is used by Shakespeare preferably in the sense of "surrounding."

"Impale him with your weapons round about,"

Tr. and Cr. v. 7. 5.

means "hedge him round with your weapons." So

"Did I impale him with the regal crown."-3 Hen. VI. iii. 3. 189.

- 441. For- is used in two words now disused:
 - "Forslow no longer."-3 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 56.
- "She fordid herself."—Lear, v. 3. 255; M. N. D. v. 1. 381. In both words the prefix has its proper sense of "injury."
- 442. Un- for modern in-; in- for un-. (Non- only occurs twice in all the plays of Shakespeare, and in V. and A. 521.)

Incharitable, infortunate, incertain, ingrateful, incivil, insubstantial.

Unpossible, unperfect, unprovident, unactive, unexpressive, unproper, unrespective, unviolable, unpartial, unfallible, undividable, unconstant, uncurable, uneffectual, unmeasurable, undisposed, unvincible (N. P. 181), unreconciliable (A. and C. v. I. 47).

We appear to have no definite rule of distinction even now, since we use ungrateful, ingratitude; unequal, inequality.* Un-seems to have been preferred by Shakespeare before p and r, which do not allow in- to precede except in the form im-. In- also seems to have been in many cases retained from the Latin, as in the case of "ingratus," "infortunium," &c. As a general rule, we now use in- where we desire to make the negative a part of the word, and un-where the separation is maintained—"untrue," "infirm." Hence un- is always used with participles—"untamed," &c. Perhaps also un- is stronger than in-. "Unholy" means more than "not holy," almost "the reverse of holy." But in "interpretate," "in- has nearly the same meaning, "the reverse of."

"You wrong the reputation of your name In so unseeming to confess receipt."—L. L. L. ii. 1. 156.

Here "unseeming" means "the reverse of seeming" more than "not seeming" (like $o\vec{v}$ $\phi\eta\mu\iota$): "in thus making us as though you would not confess."

SUFFIXES.

- 443. -Er is sometimes appended to a noun for the purpose of signifying an agent. Thus—
 - "A Roman sworder."-2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 135.

^{*} This however is perhaps explained below. In- is a part of the noun "ingratitude;" un- in the adjective "ungrateful" means "not."

- "O most gentle pulpiter."—A. Y. L. iii. 2. 163.
- "A moraler." Othello, ii. 3. 301.
- "Homager."—A. and C. i. 1. 31. (O. Fr. "homagier.")
- "Justicers."-Lear, iv. 2. 79. (Late Lat. "justitiarius.")

In the last two instances the -er is of French origin, and in many cases, as in "enchanter," it may seem to be English, while really it represents the French -eur.

"Joinder," 7. N. v. 1. 160, perhaps comes from the French "joindre."

The -er is often added to show a masculine agent where a noun and verb are identical:

- "Truster."-Hamlet, i. 2. 172.
- "The pauser reason."—Macbeth, ii. 3. 117.
- "Causer."-Rich. III. iv. 4. 122.
- "To you, my origin and ender."—L. C. ii. 22.

Note the irregular, "Precurrer" (for "precursor").—P. P.

We have "windring" from "winder," Tempest, iv. 1. 128, formed after the analogy of "wander," "clamber," "waver," the er having apparently a frequentative force.

- 444. -En, made of (still used in golden, &c.), is found in-
 - "Her threaden fillet."—L. C. 5: Hen. v. iii. Prol. 444.
 - "A twiggen bottle."—Othello, iii. 3. 152.
- 445. -Ive, -ble. (See 3.) -Ive is sometimes used in a passive instead of, as now, in an active signification. Thus: "Incomprehensive depths;" "plausive," "worthy to be applauded;" "directive," "capable of being directed;" "insuppressive metal;" "the fair, the inexpressive she" (similarly used by Milton in the Hymn on the Nativity). On the other hand, -ble is sometimes used actively, as in "medicinable" (which is also used passively), and in "unmeritable."

"This is a slight unmeritable man."—J. C. iv. 1. 12.

So "defensible," "deceivable," "disputable," and "tenable."

In "Intenible sieve," A. W. i. 3. 208, not only does -ble convey an active meaning, but Shakespeare uses the Latin instead of the English form of the termination, just as we still write "terrible," not "terrable." I imagine we have been influenced in our -able by the accidental coincidence of meaning between the word "able"

and the termination -ble. But French influence must have had some weight.

446. -Less. Sometimes found with adjectives, as "busyless," "sickless," "modestless."

-Less used for "not able to be."

"That phraseless hand."-L. C. 225; i.e. "in-describable."

"That termless skin."-Ib. 94.

"Sumless treasuries."—Hen. V. i. 2. 165.

"My careless crime."—R. of L. 771.

"Your great opposeless wills."—Lear, iv. 6. 38.

It is commonly used with words of Latin or Greek origin, as above Add "reasonkess," Hen. V. v. 4. 137; "crimeless," 2 Hen. VI. ii. 4. 63.

447. -Ly found with a noun, and yet not appearing to convey an adjectival meaning. "Anger-ly," Mach. iii. 5. 1; T. G. of V. i. 2. 62. Compare "wonder-ly" in the Morte d'Arthur, and "cheer-ly," Tempest, i. 1. 6. This is common in E. E.

The -ly represents "like," of which it is a corruption. Compare: "Villain-like he lies,"—Lear, v. 3, 97.

So "masterly," adv., W. T. v. 3. 65; Othello, i. 1. 26; "hungerly," adv., ib. iii. 4. 105; "exteriorly," adv., K. J. iv. 2. 257; "silverly," adv., ib. v. 2. 46. "Fellowly," Temp. v. 1. 64, and "traitorly," W. T. iv. 4. 822, are used as adjectives. Perhaps a vowel is to be supplied in sound, though omitted, in "unwield(i)ly," Rich. II. iv. 1. 205; "need(i)ly," R. and J. iii. 2. 117; and they may be derived from "unwieldy" and "needy." Add "orderly," Rich. II. i. 3, 9; "manly," Macbeth, iv. 3, 235.

- 448. -Ment. We seldom use this suffix except where we find it already existing in Latin and French words adopted by us. Shake-speare, however, has "intendment," "supplyment," "designment," "denotement," and "bodement."
 - 449. -Ness is added to a word not of Teutonic origin: "Equalness."—A. and C. v. I. 48.
 - 450. -Y is found appended to a noun to form an adjective.
 - "Slumbery agitation."—Macbeth, v. 1. 12.

"Unheedy haste."-M. N. D. i. 1. 237

In "Batty wings," M. N. D. iii. 2. 365, "batty" seems to mean "like those of bats." "Wormy beds," ib. iii. 2. 384, is "worm-filled." "Vasty," in "the vasty fields of France," Hen. V. Prologue, 12; I Hen. IV. iii. 1. 52, is perhaps derived from the noun "vast," Tempest, i. 2. 327; Hamlet, i. 2. 198. "Womby vaultages," Henry V. ii. 4. 124: i.e. "womb-like."

Y appended to adjectives of colour has a modifying force like -ish: "Their paly flames."—Hen. V. iv. Prol. 8.

"His browny locks."—L. C. 85.

451. Suffixes were sometimes influenced by the Elizabethan licence of converting one part of speech into another. We should append -ation or -ition, -ure or -ing, to the following words used by Shakespeare as nouns: "solicit," "consult," "expect," &c.; "my depart," 2 Hen. VI. i. I. 2; 3 Hen. VI. iv. I. 92, ii. I. 110; "uncurable discomfort," 2 Hen. VI. v. 2. 86; "make prepare for war," 3 Hen. VI. iv. I. 181; "a smooth dispose," Othello, i. 3. 403; "his repair," 3 Hen. VI. v. I. 20; "deep exclaims," Rich. III. i. 2. 52, iv. 4. 135; "his brow's repine," V. and A. 490; "a sweet retire," Hen. V. iv. 3. 86; "false accuse," 2 Hen. VI. iii. I. 160; "your ladyship's impose," T. G. of V. iv. 3. 8; "the sun's appear," B. and F. F. Sh. v. I; "from suspect," 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 189; "manage," M. of V. iii. 4. 25; "commends," ib. ii. I. 90; "the boar's annoy," Rich. III. v. 3. 156; "the disclose," Hamlet, iii. I. 174; "commends," Rich. II. iii. 3. 126.

Almost all of these words come to us through the French.

Note "O heavenly mingle."—A. and C. i. 5. 59.

"Immoment toys."-Ib. v. ii. 166.

PROSODY

452. The ordinary line in blank verse consists of five feet of two syllables each, the second syllable in each foot being accented.

"We bóth | have féd | as wéll, | and wé | can bóth Endúre | the wínt | er's cóld | as wéll | as hé."

7. C. i. 2. 98-9.

This line is too monotonous and formal for frequent use. The metre is therefore varied, sometimes (1) by changing the position of the accent, sometimes (2) by introducing trisyllabic and monosyllabic feet. These licences are, however, subject to certain laws. It would be a mistake to suppose that Shakespeare in his tragic metre introduces the trisyllabic or monosyllabic foot at random. Some sounds and collections of sounds are peculiarly adapted for monosyllabic and trisyllabic feet. It is part of the purpose of the following paragraphs to indicate the laws which regulate these licences. In many cases it is impossible to tell whether in a trisyllabic foot an unemphatic syllable is merely slurred or wholly suppressed, as for instance the first e in "different." Such a foot may be called either dissyllabic or quasi-trisyllabic.

453. The accent after a pause is frequently on the first syllable. The pause is generally at the end of the line, and hence it is on the first foot of the following line that this, which may be called the "pause-accent," is mostly found. The first syllable of initial lines also can, of course, be thus accented. It will be seen that in the middle of the line these pause-accents generally follow emphasized monosyllables. (See 480-6.)

"Cômfort, | my liége! | why loóks | your grâce | so pâle?"
Rich. II. iii. 2. 75.

Examples of the "pause-accent" not at the beginning.

(1) 'Feed and | regárd | him nót. | Aré you | a mán?"
Macbeth, iii. 4 58

Sometimes the pause is slight, little more than the time necessary for recovery after an emphatic monosyllable.

(2) "Be in | their flow | ing cúps | fréshly | remémber'd."

Hen. V. iv. 3. 55.

So arrange

"In thése | flátter | ing stréams, | and máke | our fáces."

Macèeth, iii. 2. 33.

"These" may be emphasized. (See 484.)

(3) "Whó would | beliéve | me. O'! | péril | ous mouths."

M. for M. ii. 4. 172.

(4) "Afféc | tion, poóh! | You spéak | —líke a | green gírl."

Hamlet, i. 3. 101.

"Wé shall | be cáll'd | — púrgers, | not múr | derérs." 3. C. ii. 1. 180.

(5) "The life | of cóm | fort. Bút | for thée, | féllow." Cymb. iv. 3. 9.

The old pronunciation "fellow" is probably not Shakespearian.

In (3) (4) and (5) "O," "speak," "call'd," and "thee" may, perhaps, be regarded as dissyllables (see 482-4), and the following foot a quasi-trisyllabic one. There is little practical difference between the two methods of scansion.

(6) "Sénseless | línen! | Háppier | therein | than I."

Cymb. i. 3, 7.

Here either there is a pause between the epithet and noun, or else "senseless" may possibly be pronounced as a trisyllable, "Sénse (486) | less línen." The line is difficult.

"Therefore, | mérchant, | I'll lím | it thée | this dáy,"
C. of E. i. 1. 151.

seems to begin with two trochees, like Milton's famous line:

"U'ni | vérsal | reproách | far wórse | to béar."—P. L. vi. 34. But "therefore" may have its accent, as marked, on the last syllable.

The old pronunciation "merchant" is not probable. Or "there" may be one foot (see 480): "There | fore merchant | ."

(7) "Ant. Obéy | it ón | all cáuse. | Párdon,—párdon.

A. and C. iii. 11. 68.

is, perhaps, an instance of two consecutive trochees. (There seems no ground for supposing that "pardon" is to be pronounced as ir

French.) But if the diphthong "cause" be pronounced as a dissyllable (see 484), the difficulty will be avoided.

We find, however, a double trochee (unless "my" has dropped out) in

"Sec. Cit. Cæ'sar | has hád | great wróng | Hás he, | másters?"
7. C. iii. 2. 115.

Even here, however, "wrong" may be a quasi-dissyllable (486).

(8) Between noun and participle a pause seems natural. Often the pause represents "in" or "a-" (178).

"Thy knée | bússing | the stónes."-Coriol. iii. 2. 75.

"The smile | mocking | the sigh."—Cymb. iv. 2. 54.

"My wind | choling | my broth."-M. of V. i. 1. 22.

In these lines the foot following the emphasized monosyllable may (as an alternative to the "pause-accent") be regarded as quasi-trisyllabic.

453 a, Emphatic Accents. The syllable that receives an accent is by no means necessarily emphatic. It must be emphatic relatively to the unaccented syllable or syllables in the same foot, but it may be much less emphatic than other accented syllables in the same verse. Thus the last syllable of "injuries," though accented, is unemphatic in

"The in | jurles | that they | themselves | procure."

Lear, ii. 4. 303.

Mr. Ellis (Early English Pronunciation, part i. p. 334) says that "it is a mistake to suppose that there are commonly or regularly five stresses, one to each measure." From an analysis of several tragic lines of Shakespeare, taken from different plays, I should say that rather less than one of three has the full number of five emphatic accents. About two out of three have four, and one out of fifteen has three. But as different readers will emphasize differently, not much importance can be attached to such results. It is of more importance to remember, (1) that the first foot almost always has an emphatic accent; (2) that two unemphatic accents rarely, if ever, come together ("for" may perhaps be emphatic in

"Hear it | not, Dún | can; fór | it is | a knéll,"

Macheth, ii. I. 63);

and (3) that there is generally an emphatic accent on the third or fourth foot.

The five emphatic accents are common in verses that have a pauseaccent at the beginning or in the middle of the line.

"Náture | seems déad, | and wick | ed dréams | abúse."

"The hánd | le tóward | my hánd. | Cóme, let | me clútch thee."—Ib. ii. 1. 34.

And in antithetical lines:

"I háve | thee nót, | and yét | I sée | thee stíll."

Macbeth, ii. 1. 35.

"Bring with | thee airs | from héaven | or blásts | from héll."

Hamlet, i. 4. 41.

- 454. An extra syllable is frequently added before a pause, especially at the end of a line:
- (a) "'Tis nót | alóne | my ínk | y clóak, | good móther."

 Hamlet, i. 2. 77.

 but also at the end of the second foot:
- (b) "For mine | own safeties; | you may | be right | ly just."

 Macbeth, iv. 3. 30.

 and, less frequently, at the end of the third foot:
 - (c) "For góod | ness dáres | not chéck thee; | wear thoú | thy wrongs."—Macbeth, iv. 3, 33.

and, rarely, at the end of the fourth foot:

(d) "With all | my hón | ours ón | my bróther: | whereón."

Temp. i. 2. 127.

"So déar | the lóve | my peó | ple bóre *me* : | nor sét."

1b. i. 2. 141.

455. The extra syllable is very rarely a monosyllable, still more rarely an emphatic monosyllable. The reason is obvious. Since in English we have no enclitics, the least emphatic monosyllables will generally be prepositions and conjunctions. These carry the attention *forward* instead of *backward*, and are therefore inconsistent with a *pause*, and besides to some extent emphatic.

The fact that in *Henry VIII.*, and in no other play of Shake-speare's, *constant exceptions are found to this rule*, seems to me a sufficient proof that Shakespeare did not write that play.

"Go gíve | 'em wél | come; you | can spéak | the Frénch tongue."—Hen. VIII. i. 4. 57.

"Féll by our sérv ants, by those mén we lov'd most."

10. ii. 1. 122.

"Be súre | you bé | not lóose; | for thóse | you mák friends."—Hen. VIII. ii. r. 127.

"To si | lence én | vious tóngues. | Be júst | and feár not."

Ib. iii. 2. 447.

So Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 67, 78, 97; and seven times in iii. 2. 442-451; eight times in iv. 2. 51-80.

Even where the extra syllable is not a monosyllable it occurs so regularly, and in verses of such a measured cadence, as almost to give the effect of a trochaic* line with an extra syllable at the beginning, thus:

"In || áll my | míser | íes ; but | thóu hast | fórced me
Out || óf (457 a) thy | hónest | trúth to | pláy the | wóman.
Let's || drý our | éyes : and | thús far | héar me, | Crómwell:
And || whén 1 | ám for- | gótten, | ás I | sháll be,
And || sléep in | dúll cold | márble | whére no | méntion
Of || mé must | móre be | héard of, | sáy I | táught thee.
Say, || Wólsey, | thát once | tród the | wáys of | glóry
And || sóunded | áll the | dépths and | shóals of | hónour,
Found || thée a | wáy, out | óf (457 a)his | wréck, to | ríse in
A || súre and | sáfe one, | thóugh thy | máster | míssed it."

Hen. VIII, iii. 2. 430-9.

It may be safely said that this is not Shakespearian.

"Boy" is unaccented and almost redundant in

"I párt | ly knów | the mán : | go cáll | him híther, boy." (Folio) Rich. III. iv. 2. 41.

(Hither, a monosyllable, see 189.) And even here the Globe is, perhaps, right in taking "Boy exit" to be a stage direction.

In "Bid him | make haste | and meet | me at | the North

In "Bid him | make haste | and meet | me at | the North gate,"—T. G. of V. iii. 1. 258.

"gate" is an unemphatic syllable in "Nórthgate," like our "Néwgate." So

"My mén | should cáll | me lórd : | 1 ám | yoúr *good-man.*"

T. of Sh. Ind. 2. 107.

"A hált | er grát | is ; nó | thing élse, | for Gód's-sake."

M. of V. iv. 1. 379.

"Parts," like "sides," is unemphatic, and "both" is strongly emphasized, in

"Ráther | to shów | a nób | le gráce | to bóth parts."
Coriol. v. 3. 121.

* The words 'trochaic' and "iambic' are of course used, when applied & Saglish poetry, to denote accent, not quantity.

So "out" is emphatic in

"We'll have | a swash | ing and | a mart | ial outside."

A. Y. L. i. 3. 122.

The 's for "is" is found at the end of a line in

"Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's Ta'en of your many virtues."—Hen. VIII. ii. 3. 59.

456. Unaccented Monosyllables. Provided there be only one accented syllable, there may be more than two syllables in any foot. "It is he" is as much a foot as "'tis he;" "we will serve" as "we'll serve;" "it is over" as "'tis o'er."

Naturally it is among pronouns and the auxiliary verbs that we must look for unemphatic syllables in the Shakespearian verse. Sometimes the unemphatic nature of the syllable is indicated by a contraction in the spelling. (See 460.) Often, however, syllables must be dropped or slurred in sound, although they are expressed to the sight. Thus in

"Províde thee | two próp | er pál | freys, bláck | as jet,"
T. A. v. 2. 50

"thee" is nearly redundant, and therefore unemphatic.

"If" and "the" are scarcely pronounced in

"And in it | are the lords | of York, | Bérkeley, | and Séymour."—Rich. II. ii. 3. 55.

"Mir. I év | er sáw | so nóble. |

Prosp. It goes on, I see."—Temp. i. 2. 419.

"Bút that | the séa, | mounting | to the wél | kin's chéek."

Ib. i. 2. 4.

("The" need not be part of a quadrisyllabic foot, nor be suppressed in pronouncing

"The cúr | iósi | ty of ná | tions tó | depríve me."

Lear, i. 2. 4.

Compare, possibly,

"But I have ever had that cúriós(i)ty."—B. and F. (Nares).)

So "to," the sign of the infinitive, is almost always unemphatic, and is therefore slurred, especially where it precedes a vowel. Thus:

"In séeming | to augmént | it wastes | it. Bé | advis'd."

"In séeming | to augmént | it wastes | it. Bé | advis'd."

Hen. VIII. i. 1. 145.

where "in" before the participle is redundant and unemphatic.

"For trúth | to (t') over(o'er)péer. | Ráther | than fóol | it só.'
Coriol. ii. 3, 128.

So the "I" before "beseech" (which is often omitted, as Timp. ii. 1.), even when inserted, is often redundant as far as sound goes.

"(I) beseéch | your májes | ty, gíve | me léave | to gó."

2 Hen. VI. ii. 3. 20.

"(I) beséech | your grác | es bóth | to pár | don mé."

Rich. III. i. 1. 84. So Ib. 103.

Perhaps

"(I) pray thee (prithee) stay | with us, | go not | to Witt | enberg,"

Hamlet, i. 2. 119.

"I práy | thee stáy | with us, | go nót | to Wittenberg." See 469.

"Let me sée, | let me sée ; | ís not | the léaf | turn'd dówn?" F. C. iv. 3. 273.

So (if not 501)

"And I' | will kiss | thy foot : | (I) prithee be | my god."

Temp. ii. 2. 152.

"With you" is "wi' you" (as in "good-bye" for "God be with you"); "the" is th, and "of" is slurred in

"Two nó | ble párt | ners with you; | the old dúch | ess of Nórfolk."—Hen. VIII. v. 3. 168.

To write these lines in prose, as in the Folio and Globe, makes an extraordinary and inexplicable break in a scene which is wholly verse.

For the quasi-suppression of of see

"The bás | tard of O'r | leáns | with hím | is join'd,
The dúke | of Alén | çon flí | eth tó | his síde."

I Hen. VI. i. 1. 92, 93.

In the *Tempest* this use of unaccented monosyllables in trisyllabic feet is very common.

"Go máke | thysélf | like a nýmph | o' the séa; | be súbject To no síght | but thíne | and míne."—Temp. i. 2. 301.

Even in the more regular lines of the *Sonnets* these superfluous syllables are allowed in the foot. Thus:

"Excúse | not sí | lence só; | for 't lies | in thée."—Sonn. 101. And even in rhyming lines of the plays:

"Cáll them | agaín, | sweet prínce, | accépt | their suít; I'f you | dený | them, áll | the lánd | will rúe 't."

Rich. III. iii. 7. 221.

This sometimes modifies the scansion. "Hour" is a dissyllable, and 't is absorbed, in

"You knów | I gáve't | you hálf | an hoù | r since."

C. of E. iv. 1. 65,

Almost any syllables, however lengthy in pronunciation, can be used as the unaccented syllables in a trisyllabic foot, provided they are unemphatic. It is not usual, however, to find two such unaccented syllables as

"Which most gib | inglý, | ungráve | ly hé | did fáshion."

Coriol. ii. 3. 233.

457. Accented monosyllables. On the other hand, sometimes an unemphatic monosyllable is allowed to stand in an emphatic place, and to receive an accent. This is particularly the case with conjunctions and prepositions at the end of the line. We still in conversation emphasize the conjunctions "but," "and, ""for, &c. before a pause, and the end of the line (which rarely allower in final monosyllable to be light, unless it be an extra-syllable) necessitates some kind of pause. Hence

"This my mean task
Would be as heavy to me as odious, but
The mistress which I serve quickens what's dead."

Temp. iii. 1. 5.

"Or ere

It should the good ship so have swallow'd and The fraughting souls within her."—Ib. i. 2. 12.

"Freed and enfranchised, not a party to The anger of the king, nor guilty of

(If any be) the trespass of the queen."—W. T. ii. 2. 62, 63. 60 Temp. iii. 2. 33, iv. 1. 149; W. T. i. 2. 372, 420, 425, 432,

49, 461, &c.

The seems to have been regarded as capable of more emphasis han with us:

"Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves."—Temp. iv. 1. 67.

"With silken streamers the young Phoebus fanning."

Hen. V. iii. Prol. 6.

"And your great uncle's, Edward the Black Prince."

Ib. i. 1. 105, 112.

"And Prosp'ro (469) the prime duke, being (470) so reputed."—Temp. i. 2. 72.

Your breath first kindled the dead coal of war."—K. J. v. 2. 83
"Omitting the sweet benefit of time."—T. G. of V. ii. 4. 65.

•

"So doth the woodbine, the sweet honeysuckle."

M. N. D. iv. 1. 47.

"Then, my queen, in silence sad, Trip we after the night's shade."-Ib. iv. 1. 101.

"His brother's death at Bristol the Lord Scroop."

1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 271. "So please you something touching the Lord Hamlet." Hamslet, i. 3. 89.

"Thou hast affected the fine strains of honour."

Coriol. v. 3. 149, 151.

In most of these cases the precedes a monosyllable which may be lengthened, thus:

"Your bréath | first kindled | the déa | d(484) cóal | of war." So Temp. i. 2. 196, 204; ii. 2. 164; iv. 1. 153.

Compare

"Oh, weep for Adonais. The quick dreams." SHELLEY, Adonais, 82.

But this explanation does not avail for the first example, nor for "That heals the wound and cures not the disgrace." - Sonn. 34.

"More needs she the divine than the physician."-Mach. v. 1. 82.

(Unless, as in Rich. II. i. 1. 154, "physician" has two accents: "More néeds she | the divíne | thán the | physí | cián,")

On the whole there seems no doubt that "the" is sometimes allowed to have an accent, though not (457 a) an emphatic accent. Scan thus:

"A dévil (466), | a bór | n (485) dév | il (475), ón | whose nature."- Tempest, iv. 1. 188.

avoiding the accent on a.

The in

"Then méet | and join, | Jove's light | nings, the | precursors," Tempest, i. 2. 201.

seems to require the accent. But "light(e)nings" is a trisyllable before a pause in Lear, iv. 7. 35 (see 477), and perhaps even the slight pause here may justify us in scanning-

" Jove's light | (e)nings, | the precursors."

Walker 457 a. Accented Monosyllabic Prepositions. Crit. on Shakespeare, ii. 173-5) proves conclusively that "of" in out of" frequently has the accent. Thus:

- "The fount out of which with their holy hands."-B. and F.
- "Into a relapse; or but suppose out of."-MASSINGER.
- "Still walking like a ragged colt,
 And oft out of a bush doth bolt."—DRAYTON.

Many other passages quoted by Walker are doubtful, but he brings forward a statement of Daniel, who, remarking that a trochee is inadmissible at the beginning of an iambic verse of four feet, instances:

"Yearly out of his wat'ry cell,"

which shows that he regarded "out of" as an iambus. Walker conjectures "that the pronunciation (of monosyllabic prepositions) was in James the First's time beginning to fluctuate, and that Massinger was a partisan of the old mode." Hence, probably, the prepositions received the accent in

"Such mén | as hé | be né | ver át | heart's éase."
7. C. i. 1. 208.

"Therefóre (490), | out *of* | thy lóng | expér | ienc'd tíme."

R. and J. iv. 1. 60; Coriol. i. 10. 19.

'' Vaunt cour | iers to | oak-cléav | ing thún | der-bolts."

Lear, iii. 2. 5.

So Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 431, 438.

"To bring | but five | and twén | ty; tó | no móre."

Lear, ii. 4. 251.

"Lor. Who únd | ertákes | you tó | your end. | Vaux. Prepare there."—Hen. VIII. ii. 2. 97.

For this reason I think it probable that "to" in "in-to," "un-to," cometimes receives the accent, thus:

"That év | er lóve | did máke | thee rún | intó."
A. Y. L. ii. 4. 35.

"Came thén | intó | my mind, | and yét | my mind."

Lear, iv. 1. 36.

"Fán you | intó | despáir. | Have the pów | er stíll."

Coriol. iii, 3, 127.

"I had thóught, | by mák | ing thís | well knówn | *untó* you."

**Lear, i. 4. 224; **M. of *V. v. 1. 169.

"By this | vile cón | quest sháll | attain | untó."

7. C. v. 5. 38; Rich. III. iii. 5. 109.

"Discuss | unto | me. A'rt | thou off | icer?"

Hen. V. iv. 1. 38. (But this is Pistol.)

With in " without" seems accented in

"That won | you with | out blows."-Coriol. iii. 3. 133.

458. Two extra syllables are sometimes allowed, if unemphatic, before a pause, especially at the end of the line. For the details connected with this licence see 467-9, and 494, where it will be seen that verses with six accents are very rare in Shakespeare, and that therefore the following lines are to be scanned with five accents.

"Perúse | this létter. | Nóthing | almóst | sees míracles."

Lear, ii. 2. 172.

"Múst be | a fáith | that réa | son with | out miracle."

Ib. i. 1. 225. "Like óne | that méans | his pró | per hárm | in mánacles."

"Was dúke | dom lárge | enóugh : | of témp(o) | ral róyalties."—Tempest, i. 2. 110.

"I dare | avouch | it, sir. | What, fif | ty followers!"

Lear, ii. 4. 240. "You fool | ish shep | herd, where | fore do | you follow

her?"—A. Y. L. iii. 5. 49.
"Of whom | he's chief, | with all ; the size | that vérity."

"Ely. Incline | to it, | or nó. | Cant. He séems | indifferent."—Hen. V. i. 1. 72.

"As if | I lov'd | my litt | le should | be dieted."

Coriol. i. 9. 52.

Coriol. v. 2. 18.

"Why, só | didst thóu. | Come théy | of nó | ble fámily?"

Hen. V. ii. 2. 129.

"That né | ver máy | ill óff | ice ór | fell jéalousy."

"That hé | suspécts | none; ón | whose fóol | ish hónesty."

Lear, i. 2. 197.

"Within | my tént | his bónes | to-níght | shall líe Most líke | a sóld | ier, órd | er'd hón | (ou)rablý." F. C. v. 5. 79.

Compare

"Young mán, | thou cóuld'st | not díe | more hón | (ou)rable."

Ib. v. 1. 60.

If "ily" were fully pronounced in both cases, the repetition would be intolerable in the following:—

- "Cor. But what | is like | me for | merly. |

 Men. That's worthily."—Coriol. iv. 1. 53.
- "The rég | ion of | my héart : | be Kent | unmannerly."

 Lear, i. 1. 147.
- "Lóok, where | he cómes! | Not póp | py nór | mandrágora."—Othello, iii. 3, 330.
- "A's you | are old | and réverend, | you should | be wise."

 Lear, i. 4. 261.
- "To cáll | for récompense : | appear | it tó | your mínd."
 Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 8.
- "Is nót | so ést | imable, próf | itáb | le neíther."

 M. of V. i. 3. 167.
- "Agé is | un-née | essary; ón | my knées | I bég." Lear, ii. 4. 157.
- "Our múst | y sû | perftúity. | Sée our | best élders."

 Coriol. i. 1. 230.
- 459. The spelling (which in Elizabethan writers was more influenced by the pronunciation, and less by the original form and derivation of the word, than is now the case) frequently indicates that many syllables which we now pronounce were then omitted in pronunciation.

460. Prefixes are dropped in the following words:-

'bolden'd for "embolden'd."-Hen. VIII. i. 2. 55.

'bove for "above."—Macbeth, iii. 5. 31.

'bout for "about." - Temp. i. 2. 220.

'braid for "upbraid."-P. of T. i. 1. 93.

'call for "recall."-B. and F.

'came for "became." -- Sonn. 139.

'cause for "because."-Macbeth, iii. 6. 21.

'cerns for "concerns."

"What 'cerns it you."—T. of Sh. v. 1. 77.

'cide for "decide."-Sonn. 46.

'cital for "recital."

"He made a blushing 'cital of himself."—I Hen. IV. v. 2.62. 'collect for "recollect."—B. J. Alch. i. I.

'come for "become."

"Will you not dance?

How 'come you thus estranged?"—L. L. L. Y. 2. 213. 'coraging for "encouraging."—ASCH. 17.

'count for "account."

"Why to a public 'count I might not go."

Hamlet, iv. 7. 17

'dear'd for "endear'd."—A. and C. i. 4. 44.

'fall for "befall."—Ib. iii. 7. 40. So in O. E.

'friend for "befriend."—Hen. V. iv. 5. 17.

gain-giving for "against-giving," like our "misgiving."— Hamlet, v. 2. 226.

'gave for "misgave."—Coriol. iv. 5. 157 (perhaps).

So "My minde 'gives me that all is not well" (Nares). But the dropping of this essential prefix seems doubtful. "Gave" would make sense, though not such good sense. In

"Then sáy | if théy | be trúe. | This (mis-)shá | pen knáve,"

Temp. v. 1. 268.

Walker with great probability conjectures "mis-shap'd." In

"Told thee no lies, made thee no mistakings, serv'd,"

Temp. i. 2. 248.

it is more probable that the second "thee," not mis-, is slurred.

'get for "beget." - Othello, i. 3. 191.

'gree for "agree."—M. of V. ii. 2. 108; T. G. of V. ii. 4 183; A. and C. ii. 6. 38.

'haviour for "behaviour."-Hamlet, i. 2. 81.

'joy for "enjoy."—2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 365.

'larum for "alarum."

"Then shall we hear their 'larum and they ours."

Coriol. i. 4. 9

Folio, "their Larum."

'las for "alas." - Othello, v. I. 111.

'lated for "belated."—A. and C. iii. 11. 3.

'less for "unless."-B. J. Sad Sh. iii. I.

longs for "belongs."-Per. ii. Gow. 40: Coriol. v. 3. 170.

longing for "belonging."—Hen. VIII. i. 2. 32; W. T. iii. 2. 104; Hen. V. ii. 4. 80.

miss for "amiss."—V. and A.

'mong (pronounced) for "among."

"Be bright | and jóv | ial amông | your guests | to-night. '
Macbeth, iii. 2. 28.

" Cel. That lived | amongst mén. | Giv And

And well | he might | do so. '
A. Y. L. iv. 3. 124.

'nighted for "benighted."—Lear, iv. 5. 13.
'nointed for "anointed."—W. T. iv. 4. 813.
'noyance for "annoyance."—Hamlet, iii. 3. 13.
'pairs for "impairs."—B. E. 91. So in O. E.
'pale* for "impale," "surround."

"And will you 'pale your head in Henry's glory,
And rob his temples of the diadem."—3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 103

'parel for "apparel."—Lear, iv. 1. 51. 'plain for "complain." (Fr. plaindre.)

"The king hath cause to plain."

Lear, iii. 1. 39; Rich. II. i. 3. 175.

'rag'd for "enraged."—Rich. II. ii. 1. 70.

'ray for "array."—B. J. Sad Sh. ii. "Battel ray."

N. P. 180. O. E.

'rested for "arrested."—C. of E. iv. 2. 42. Dromio uses whichever form suits the metre best.

"I knów | not át | whose súit | he ís | arrés | ted wéll; But he's | in a súit | of búff | which résted | him, thát can | I téll."—C. of E. iv. 2. 43.

So should be read

"King. Or yield up Aquitaine.
Princess. We (ar)rest

We (ar)rest your word."

L. L. ii. 1. 160.

It has been objected that 'rested is a vulgarism only fit for a Dromio, But this is not the case. It is used by the master Antipholus E. (C. of E. iv. 4. 3).

'say'd for "assay'd."—Per. i. 1. 59. Comp. B. J. Cy.'s Rev. iv. 1.

'scape for "escape" freq.

'scuse for "excuse."—Othello, iv. 1. 80; M. of V. iv. 1. 444.
'stall'd apparently for "forestalled."—B. J. Sejan, iii. 1; for

"install'd."—Rich. III. i. 3. 206.

'stonish'd for "astonish'd."

"Or'stonish'd as night-wanderers often are."—V.andA.825. 'stroy'd for "destroy'd."

"'Stroy'd in dishonour."-A. and C. iii. 11. 54.

'tend for "attend."—Hamlet, iv. 3. 47.

'turn for "return;" 'lotted for "allotted."

unsisting for "unresisting" (explained in the Globe Glossary as "unresting").

[&]quot;Did I impale him with the regal crown?"-3 Hen. VI. iii 3, 189.

"That wounds the unsisting postern with these blows."

M. for M. iv. 2. 92.

This explains how we must scan

"Prevént | it, resist ('sist) | it, lét | it not | be so."

Rich. III. iv. 1. 148.

"A sóoth | sayer bíds | you bewáre ('ware) | the ídes | of Márch."—%. C. i. 2. 19.

"Envíron'd ('viron'd) | me abóut | and hów | led in | mine éars."—Rich. III. i. 4. 59.

"At an | y time | have recourse ('course) | unto | the princes."—Ib. iii. 5. 109.

"Lest I' | revenge ('venge)—whát? | Mysélf | upón | mysélf?"—Ib. v. 3. 185.

The apostrophe, which has been inserted above in all cases, is only occasionally, and perhaps somewhat at random, inserted in the Folio. It is therefore not always possible to tell when a verb is shortened, as "comes" for "becomes," or when a verb may, perhaps, be invented. For instance, "dear'd" may be a verbal form of the adjective "dear," or a contraction of the verb "endear'd."

"Comes (becomes) dear'd (endear'd) by being lack'd."

A. and C. i. 4, 44.

Sometimes, perhaps, the prefix, though written, ought scarcely to be pronounced:

"How fáres | the king | and 's fóllow | ers? (Con) | fíned | togéther."—Temp. v. 1. 7.

"O (de)spiteful love! unconstant womankind,"

T. of Sh. iv. 2. 14.

unless the "O" stands by itself. (See 512.)

"(Be)lónging | to a mán. | O bé | some óth | er mán."

R. and J. ii. 2. 42.

461. Other Contractions are:

Barthol mew (T. of Sh. Ind. i. 105); Harford for "Haverford" (Rich. III. iv. 5. 7); dis ple for "disciple" (B. J. Fox, iv. 1; so Spenser, F. Q. i. 10. 27); ignomy for "ignominy" (M. for M. ii. 4. 111, 1 Hen. IV. v. 4. 100 [Fol.]; genman (UDALL); gentl man (Ham. [1603] i. 5); gent (Spenser) freq. for "gentle" (so in O. E.); early (Chapman, Odyss.) for "easily;" par'lous for "perilous" (Rich. III. ii. 4. 35); inter gatories for "interrogatories" (M. of V. v. 1. 298); canstick for "candlestick,"—

"I had rather hear a brazen canstick turned."

1 Hen. IV. iii. 1. 131.

Marle (B. J. E. out &c. v. 4) for "marvel;" whe'er for "whether" (O. E.); and the familiar contraction good-bye, "God be with you," which enables us to scan Macbeth, iii. I. 44. We also find in's for "in his;" th'wert for "thou wert;" you're for "you were;" h'were for "he were." So "she were" is contracted in pronunciation:

"Twere good | she were spo | ken with: | for she | may strew."—Hamlet, iv. 5. 14.

Y'are for "you are;" this' for "this is:"

"O this' the poison of deep grief; it springs All from her father's death."—Hamlet, iv. 5. 76.

" This' a | good block."-Lear, iv. 6. 187.

So we ought to scan

"Lear. This is a | dull sight. | Aré you | not Ként? | Kent. The same."—Lear, v. 3. 282.

"Sir, this is | the gént | lemán | I tóld | you óf."
T. of Sh. iv. 4. 20.

"Sir, this is | the house. | Pléase it | you that | I call?"

10. 1.

This, for "this is," is also found in M. for M. v. 1. 131 (Fol. this 'a); Temp. iv. 1. 143; T. of Sh. i. 2. 45. Many other passages, such as T. G. of V. v. 4. 93, M. for M. iv. 2. 103, T. of Sh. iii. 2. 1, require is to be dropped in reading. This contraction in reading is common in other Elizabethan authors; it is at all events as early as Chaucer, Knighte's Tale, 233.

Shall is abbreviated into 'se and 's in Lear, iv. 6. 246; R. and J. 1. 3. 9. In the first of these cases it is a provincialism, in the second a colloquialism. A similar abbreviation "I'st," for "I will," "thou'st" for "thou wilt," "thou shalt," &c., seems to have been common in the early Lincolnshire dialect (Gill, quoted by Mr. Ellis). Even where not abbreviated visibly, it seems to have been sometimes audibly, as,

" If thát | be trúe | I shall sée | my bóy | agáin."

K. J. iii. 4. 78.

"I shall give | worse pay | ment."-T. N. iv. 1. 21.

" He ís, | Sir Jóhn : | I féar | we shall stáy | too lóng."

1 Hen, IV. iv. 2. 8?

With seems often to have been pronounced wi, and hence combined with other words. We have "w'us," (B. and F. Elder Brother, v. I) for "with us," and "take me w' ye" (ib.) for "with ve."

Beside the well-known "doff" "do-off," and "don" "do-on," we also find "dout" for "do-out" (Hamlet, iv. 7. 192); "probal" for "probable" (Othello, ii. 3. 344).

WORDS CONTRACTED IN PRONUNCIATION.

462. Sometimes the spelling does not indicate the contracted pronunciation. For instance, we spell *nation* as though it had three syllables, but pronounce it as though it had two. In such cases it is impossible to determine whether two syllables coalesce or are rapidly pronounced together. But the metre indicates that one of these two processes takes place.

Syllables ending in vowels are also frequently elided before vowels in reading, though not in writing. Thus:

"Prosp. Against | what should | ensue. |

Mir. How cáme | we ashore?"
Temp. i. 2. 158.

"You give | your wife | too unkind | a cause | of grief."

M. of V. v. I. 175.

"No (i)mpéd | imént | betwéen, | bút that | you múst."

Coriol. ii. 3. 236.

"There wás | a yíeld | ing; thís | admíts | no (e)xcúse."

1b. v. 6. 69.

Here even the Folio reads "excuse."

"It is | too hárd | a knót | for mé | to untie."

T. N. ii. 2. 42.

The is often elided before a vowel, and therefore we may either pronounce this is, this' (461), or write th' for the, in

"O worthy Goth, this is the incarnate devil."—T. A. v. 1. 40.

Remembering that "one" was pronounced without its present initial sound of w, we shall easily scan (though "the" is not elided in many modern texts)—

"Th' one swéet | ly flátt | ers, th' óth | er féar | eth hárm."
R. of. L. 172.

"One hálf | of mé | is yours, | th' other | half yours."

M. of V. iii, 2. 16.

"Ránsom | ing hím (217) | or píty | ing, thréate | ning th' other." - Coriol. i. 6. 36.

And this explains

- "And of | his old | expér(i) (467) | ence th(e) on | ly darling." A. W. ii. 1. 110.
- "Has shook | and trém | bled at | the ill néigh | bourhood." Hen. V. i. 2. 154.
- "Where should | this mu | sic be? | I' the air, | or the earth?" Temp. i. 2. 387, 389.

(Folio "i' th' air, or th' earth.")

- 463. R frequently softens or destroys a following vowel (the vowel being nearly lost in the burr which follows the effort to pronounce the r).
 - "Whén the | alárum | were strúck | than i | dly sit." Cor. ii. 2. 80.
 - " Ham. Perchance | t'will walk | again. Hor. I warrant | it will."-Hamlet, i. 2. 3.
 - "I' have | cast off | for ever; | thou shalt, | I warrant thee." Lear, i. 4. 332.
 - "I bét | ter broók | than floúrish | ing péo | pled tówns." T. G. of V. v. 4. 3.
 - "Whiles I | in Ire | land nourish" | a might | y band." 2 Hen. VI. iii. 1. 348.
 - " Place bárrels | of pítch | upón | the fát | al stáke." I Hen. VI. v. 4. 57.
 - "'Tis márle | he stább' | d you nót."
 - B. J. E. out &c. v. 4; Rich. III. i. 4. 64.
 - " A barren | detest | ed vale | you sée | it is." T. A. ii. 3. 92; 2 Hen. VI. ii. 4. 3.

So "quarrel," Rich. III. i. 4. 209.

This is very common with "spirit," which softens the following i, or sometimes the preceding i, in either case becoming a monosyllable.

"And then, | they say, | no spirit | dares stir | abroad." Hamlet, i. 1. 161.

So scan

"Hów now, | spírit, whither | wander | you?"-M. N. D. ii. 1 1 ("Whither" is a monosyllable. See 466.)

^{*} Compare nourrice, nurse.

This curtailment is expressed in the modern "sprite." So in Lancashire, "brid" for "bird." Hence we can scan

"In aid | whereof, | we of | the spirit | ualty."

Hen. V. i. 2, 132.

Instances might be multiplied.

464. R often softens a preceding unaccented vowel. This explains the apparent Alexandrine

"He thínks | me nów | incáp | ablé ; | conféd(e)rates."

Temp. i. 2. 111, iv. 1. 140.

- 465. Er, el, and le final dropped or softened, especially before vowels and silent h.* The syllable er, as in letter, is easily interchangeable with re, as lettre. In O. E. "bettre" is found for "better." Thus words frequently drop or soften -er; and in like manner -el and -le, especially before a vowel or h in the next word:
 - (1) "Repórt | should rénd | er him hoúr | ly tó | your eár." Cymb. iii. 4. 153.
 - "Intó | a góod | ly búlk. | Good tíme | encoúnter her."

 W. T. ii, 1. 20.
 - "This létt | er he ear | ly bade | me give | his father."
 R. and F. v. 3. 275.
 - "You'll bé | good cómpany, | my síst | er and yoú."

 MIDDLETON, Witch, ii. 2.
 - "Than e'er | the mast | er of arts | or giv | er of wit."

B. J. Poetast.

- (2) "Trável you | far ón, | or áre | you át | the fárthest?"

 T. of Sh. iv. 2. 73.
 (3) "That máde | great Jóve | to húmb | le him tó | her hánd."
 - - "I' am | a géntie | man óf | a cóm | paný."

 Hen. V iv. 1. 39, 42.

"Needle," which in Gammer Gurton rhymes with "feele," is often pronounced as a monosyllable.

"Deep clerks she dumbs, and with her needle (Folio) composes."

P. of T. v. Gower, 5; Cymb. i. 1. 168.

^{*} The same tendency is still more noticeable in E. E. See Essay on the Metres of Chaucer, by the Rev W. W. Skeat (Aldine Series).

"Or when she would with sharp needle (Folio) wound The cambric which she made more sound By hurting it."-P. of T. iv. Gower, 23.

In the latter passage "needle wound" is certainly harsh, though Gower does bespeak allowance for his verse. Mr. A. I. Ellis suggests "'ld" for "would," which removes the harshness.

"And grip | ing it | the néedle | his fing | er pricks."

R. of L. 319.

"Their néedles | to lán | ces, ánd | their gént | le héarts." K. 7. v. 2. 157.

"To thréad | the póst | ern óf | a smáll | needle's éye." Rich. II. v. 5. 17.

"Needle's" seems harsh, and it would be more pleasing to modern ears to scan "the post | ern of a | small née | dle's éye." But this verse in conjunction with P. of T. iv. Gower, 23, may indicate that "needle" was pronounced as it was sometimes written, very much like "neeld," and the d in "neeld" as in "vild" (vile) may have been scarcely perceptible.

"A sample | to the young | est, to | the more | mature." Cvmb. i. I. 48.

"The comm on people by numb ers swarm to us." 3 Hen. VI. iv. 2. 2; T. A. i. 1. 20

And, even in the Sonnets:

"And trouble | deaf heav | en with | my boot | less cries. Sonn. 29.

"Uncle Már | cus, sínce | it is | my fá | ther's mind." T. A. v. 3. 1

"Duke F. And gét | you from | our court. | Me, uncle? | Ros. You, cousin?" Duke F. A. Y. L. i. 3. 44.

466. Whether and ever are frequently written or pronounced whe'r or where and e'er. The th is also softened in either, hither, other, father, &c., and the v in having, evil, &c.

It is impossible to tell in many of these cases what degree of "softening" takes place. In "other," for instance, the th is so completely dropped that it has become our ordinary "or," which we use without thought of contraction. So "whether" is often written "wh'er" in Shakespeare. Some, but it is impossible to say what, degree of "softening," though not expressed in writing, seems to have affected th in the following words:-

Brother.

"But for | our trust | y brôther | -in-law, | the abbot." Rich. II. v. 3. 137.

Either.
"Either léd | or drív | en ás | we point | the wáy." 7. C. iv. 1, 23; Rich. III. i. 2, 64, iv. 4, 82.

"Are hired | to béar | their staves; | either thou, | Macbéth." Macbeth, v. 7. 18; M. N. D. ii. 1. 32.

Further.

"As if | thou never (né'er) | walk'dst fürther | than Fins | bury." I Hen. IV. iii. 1. 257.

Hither.

"'Tis hé | that sént us ('s) | hither nów | to slaught | er thée." Rich. III. i. 4. 250.

So the Quartos. The Folio, which I have usually followed in other plays, differs greatly from the Ouartos in Rich. III. Its alterations generally tend to the removal of seeming difficulties.

Neither.

" Neither have | I mon | ev nor | commod | itv." M. of V. i. I. 178.

Rather.

"Råther than | have måde | that såv | age dúke | thine héir." 3 Hen. VI. i. 1. 224. So Othello, iii. 4. 25; Rich. II. iv. 1. 16. Thither.

" Thither go | these news | as fast | as horse | can carry 'em." 2 Hen. VI. i. 4. 78.

Whether.

"Good sir, | say whéther | you'll ans | wer mé | or nó." C. of E. iv. 1. 60.

Perhaps "Which he | deserves | to lose. | Whether he was (h' was: 461) | combined."-Macbeth, i. 3. 111.

"But sée, | whether Brút | us bé | alive | or déad." 7. C. v. 4. 30; Rich. III. iv. 2. 120.

"A héart | y wélcome. | Whether thou | beest hé | or nó."

Tempest, v. I. 111.

Whither.

"What means | he now? | Go ask | him whither | he goes." I Hen. VI. ii. 3. 28.

" Glouc. The king | is in | high rage. | " Corn. Whither is | he going?"—Lear, ii. 4. 299

So scan

"Hów now, | spírit! winder | wander | you?" M. N. D. ii. 1. 1. This perhaps explains:

"To find the (462) other forth, and by advent uring bóth."—M. of V. i. 1. 143.

But see 501.

Having.

"Hów could he sée to dó them? Háving made óne." M. of V. iii. 2. 124.

" Having lóst | the fair | discóv | ery óf | her wáy." V. and A. 828.

"Our grán | dam éarth | having this | distémp | eratúre." I Hen. IV. iii. 1. 34.

So Rich. III. i. 2. 235; T. of A. v. I. 61; A. W. v. 3. 123; Cymb. v. 3. 45.

In all of these verses it may seem difficult for modern readers to understand how the v could be dropped. But it presents no more lifficulty than the v in "ever," "over."

Evil.

It is also dropped in "evil" and "devil" (Scotch "de'il").

"The évils | she hátch'd | were nót | efféct | ed, só." Cymb. v. 5. 60

"Of hórr | id héll | can cóme | a dévil | more dámn'd." Macbeth, iv. 3. 56.

"Ezil-éyed | untó | you ; y' áre (461) | my príson | er, bút." Cymb. i. 1. 72.

So Rich. III. i. 2. 76. Of course, therefore, the following is not an Alexandrine:

"Reproach | and diss | olu | tion hang | eth over him." Rich. II. ii. 1. 258.

Similarly the d is dropped in "madam," which is often pronounced "ma'am," a monosyllable.

The v is of course still dropped in hast for havest, has for haveth or haves. In the Folio, has is often written ha's, and an omission in other verbs is similarly expressed, as "sit's" for "sitteth" (K. 7. ii, 1. 289).

- 467. I in the middle of a trisyllable, if unaccented, is frequently dropped, or so nearly dropped as to make it a favourite syllable in trisyllabic feet.
 - (1) "Iudí | cious púnish | ment! 'Twás | this flésh | begót." Lear, iii. 4. 76; M. for M. i. 3. 39

"Our rév | (e)rend cárdi | nal cárried. | Líke it, | your gráce."—Hen. VIII. i. 1. 100, 102, 105. &c.

"With whóm the Ként ishmén will will ingly ríse." 3 Hen. VI. i. 2. 41.

"Which are | the mov | ers of | a lánguish | ing déath."

Cymb. i. 5. 9. "My thóught | whose múr | der yét | is bút | fantástical."

Macheth, i. 3. 139.
"That lov'd | your father: | the rési | due of | your fortune."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 196.

"Prómising | to bríng | it tó | the Pór | pentíne."

C. of E. v. 1. 222.

So I Hen. VI. iv. 1. 166.

(2) Very frequently before ly:

"The méa | sure thén | of óne | is éasi | ly tóld." L. L. L. v. 2. 190.

"His shórt | thick néck | cannót | be eás | ily hármed."

V. and A. 627.

"Préttily | methóught | did pláy | the ór | atór."

I Hen. VI. iv. 1. 175.

(3) And before ty:

"Such bóld | hostili | ty, téach | ing his ('s) dú | teous lánd."

I Hen. IV. iv. 3. 44.

"Of gód- | like ámi | ty, whích | appéars | most stróngly."

M. of V. iii. 4. 3.

"A'riel | and all | his quali | ty.

"Prosp. Hast | thou, spirit?"-- Tempest, i. 2. 193.

"Of smóoth | civíli | ty yét | am I in | land bréd."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 96.

Compare Butler, Hudibras, part ii. cant. 3. 945:

"Which in | their dárk | fatál | 'ties lúrk | ing At dés | tin'd pér | iods fáll | a-wórk | ing."

This explains the apparent Alexandrines:

"Thóu wilt | prove hís. | Táke him | to prí | son, bfficer."

M. for M. iii. 2. 32.

"Some tricks | of dés | perát | ion, áll | but máriners."

Temp, i. 1. 211.

'One dówle | that's ín | my plúme, | my féll | ow ministers."

Temp. iii. 2. 65, v. 1. 28; M. for M. iv. 5. 6; Macb. is 5. 49.

"This is the gént lemán I tóld your ládyship."

T. G. of V. ii. 4. 87.

- "A virt | uous gént | lewóm | an, mild | and beautiful." T. G. of V. iv. 4. 184.
- "And té | diousnéss | the limbs | and out | ward flourishes." Hamlet, ii. 2. 91.

Sometimes these contractions are expressed in writing, as "par'lous," Rich. III. ii. 4. 35. This is always a colloquial form.

- 468. Any unaccented syllable of a polysyllable (whether containing i or any other vowel) may sometimes be softened and almost ignored. Thus-
 - "Hóld thee, | from thís, | for éver. | The bárb | arous Scýthian."-Lear, i. I. 118.

"Sáy by | this tó | ken I' | desíre | his cómpany."

M. for M. iv. 3. 144.

"With them | they think | on. ed. Things | without | all rémedy."-Macbeth, iii. 2. 11.

"Men. You must | return | and mend | it. Sen. Thére's | no rémedy."

Coriol. iii. 2. 26; T. N. iii. 4. 367.

em "All bró | ken ímple | ments óf | a rú | ined hóuse." T. of A. iv. 2. 16.

"Join'd with | an énemy | procláim'd; | and fróm | his cóffers." Hen. V. ii. 2. 168; M. for M. ii. 2. 180; Mach. iii. 1. 105.

"The mess | engers from | our sis | ter and | the king." Lear, ii. 2. 54.

"'Tis dóne | alréa | dy, and | the méss | enger góne." A. and C. iii. 6. 31; A. W. iii. 2. 111

Passenger is similarly used.

"In our last conference, pass'd in probation with er you."-Macbeth, iii. I. 80.

"This is | his maj | esty, say | your mind | to him." es

- A. W. ii. I. 98. "I that | am rude | ly stamped, | and want | love's majesty." Rich. III. i. 1. 16.
- Majesty is a quasi-dissyllable in Rich. III. i. 3. 1, 19, ii. 1. 75; Rich. II. ii. 1. 141, 147, iii. 2. 113, v. 2. 97, 3. 35; Macbeth, iii. 4. 2, 121.
- "Our pur | pose néc | essary and | not én | vious." ess 7. C. ii. 1. 178.
- "Lét us | be sácrific | ers ánd | not bút | chers, Caíus." Ib. ii. 1. 168,

o "The inn | ocent milk | in it | most inn | ocent mouth."

W. T. iii. 2. 101.

"There táke | an in | ventorý | of áll | I háve."

Hen. VIII. jii. 2. 452.

ua "Go thóu | to sánctua | ry [sanctu'ry or sanct'ry], ánd | good thóughts | posséss thee."—Rich. III. iv. 1. 94.

"Shall fly | out of (457 a) | itsélf; | nor sléep | nor sánctuary."

Coriol. i. 10. 19.

'Some réad | Alvár | ez' Hélps | to Gráce, Some Sánctua | ry óf | a troub | led sóul."

Colvil's Whig-Supplication, i. 1186 (Walker).

"When liv | ing light | should kiss | it; 'tis | unnatural."

Macbeth, ii. 4. 10; Hen. V. iv. 2. 13.

"Thoughts spécu | latíve | their ún | sure hópes | reláte."

Macbeth, v. 4. 19.

"And né | ver líve | to shów | the incrédu | lous world."
2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 153.

"Hów you | were bórne | in hánd, | how cróss'd, | the instruments."—Macheth, iii. 1. 81, iv. 3. 239.

469. Hence polysyllabic names often receive but one accent at the end of the line in pronunciation,

Proper names, not conveying, as other nouns do, the origin and reason of their formation, are of course peculiarly liable to be modified; and this modification will generally shorten rather than lengthen the name.

"To your | own con | science, sir, | before | Polixenes."
W. T. iii, 2, 47.

"That ére | the sún | shone bright | on. O'f | Hermione."

1b. v. 1. 95.

"The rár | est óf | all wó | men. Gó, | Cleómenes."

Ib. 112.

"To our | most fáir | and prínce | ly cóus | in Kátharine." Hen. V. v. 2. 4.

"My bróth | er ánd | thy ún | cle, cálled | António."

Temp. i. 2. 66.

"My lord | Bassán | io, sínce | you have found | António."

M. of V. i. I. 59: so often in this play.

"Then all | a-fire | with me | ; the king's | son Férdinand."

Temp. i. 2. 212.

I rát | ifý | thís my | rich gíft. | O Férdinand."—Ib.iv. 1.8.

"Then par | don me | my wrongs. | But how | should Prospero?"—Ib. v. 1. 119.

WORDS CONTRACTED IN PRONUNCIATION. 353

"I'll af | ter, more | to be | revenged | on Eglamour." T. G. of V. v. 2. 51.

"Whát it | contáins. | I'f you | shall sée | Cordélia." Lear, iii. 1, 46.

"Upón | such sácr | ific | es, mý | Cordélia,"

Ib. v. 3. 20, 245.

So throughout the play.

"When thou | liest how | ling. What! | the fair | Ophélia." Hamlet, v. 1. 265.

"At Gré | cian sword | contémn | ing. Téll | Valéria." Coriol. i. 3. 46.

"Here, if | it like | your hon | our. Sée | that Cháudio." M. for M. ii. 1. 33, iii. 1. 48.

"So then | you hope | of par | don from | lord A'ngelo?" Ib. iii. 1. 1, iv. 3. 147, i. 4. 79.

"I sée | my són | Antiph | olús | and Drômio."

C. of E. v. 1. 196.

"The form | of déath. | Meantime | I writ | to Rômeo." R. and 7. v. 3. 246.

"Looks it | not like | the king? | Mark it, | Horátio." Hamlet, i. 1. 43.

"They love | and dote | on ; call | him bount | (e)ous Buckingham."-Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 52; Rich. III. iv. 4. 508, ii. 2. 123.

" Vaux. The great | ness of | his per | son. Náy, | Sir Nícolas." Buck. Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 100.

"But I' | beséech | you, whát's | becóme | of Kátharine?" Ib. iv. 1. 22.

"Sáw'st thou | the mél | anchól | y Lord | Northúmberland?"-Rich. III. v. 3. 68.

"Thérefore | presént | to hér, | as some | time Márgaret." Ib. iv. 4. 274.

"And you | our no | less lov | ing son | of A'lbany." Lear, i. 1. 43.

" Exásp | erátes, | makes mád | her sís | ter Góneril." Ib. v. 1. 60.

'' As fit | the brid | al. Beshréw | me múch, | Emilia." Othello, iii. 4. 150.

"Is come | from Cæ's | ar; there | fore hear | it, A'ntony." A. and C. i. 1. 27, i. 5. 21. &c.

"Than Clé | opátr | a, nór | the queen | of Ptôlémy." Ib i. 4. 6. "With them, | the two | brave bears, | Warwick | and Montague."—3 Hen. VI. v. 7. 10.

Less frequently in the middle of the line:

" My lórd | of *Búckingham*, | if mý | weak ór | atóry." *Rich. III.* iii. 1. 37.

"Cóusin | of Búck | ingham ánd | you ságe, | grave mén."

10. iii. 7. 217.

"Lóoking | for A'ntony. | But áll | the chárms | of lóve."

A. and C. ii, 1. 20.

"Did sláy | this Fórtinbras; | who, bý | a seál'd | compáct (490)."—Hamlet, i. 1. 86.

"Thrift, thrift, | Horátio, | the fú | nerál | bak'd méats."

16. i. 2. 180.

"He gave | to Alexánder; | to Ptólem | y hé | assigned."

Ib. iii. 6. 15.

"Thou árt | Hermione; | or ráth | er, thoú | art shé."
W. T. v. 3. 25.

"To sóft | en A'ngelo, | and thát's | my píth | of búsiness."

M. for M. i. 4. 70.

Enobárbus in A. and C. has but one accent, wherever it stands in the verse:

"Bear háte | ful mémo | ry, póor | Enobár | bus did."

A. and C. iv. 9. 9, &c.

"Of your | great pré | decéssor, | King E'dward | the Thírd."

Hen. V. i. 2. 248.

It may here be remarked that great licence is taken with the metre wherever a list of names occurs:

"That Harry duke of Hereford, Rainold lord Cobham, Sir Thomas Erpingham, Sir John Ramston, Sir John Norbery, Sir Robert Waterton, and Francis Quoint." Rich. II. ii. 1. 279, 283, 284.

"The spirits

Of valiant Shirley, Stafford, Blunt, are in my arms."

I Hen. IV. v. 4. 41

"Whither away, Sir John Falstaffe, in such haste?"

1 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 104.

"John duke of Norfolk, Walter Lord Ferrers."

Rich. III. v. 5. 13.

"Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, Lord Furnival of Sheffield."

1b. iv. 7, 166.

"Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir William Stanley."-Ib. iv. 5. 10.

In the last examples, and in some others, the pause between two names seems to license either the insertion or omission of a syllable.

470. Words in which a light vowel is preceded by a heavy vowel or diphthong are frequently contracted, as power, jewel, lower, doing, going, dying, playing, prowess, &c.

"The which | no soon | er hád | his prówess | confirm'd."

Macbeth, v. 8. 41.

Comp. "And he that routs most pigs and cows,
The form | idáb | lest mán | of prówess."

Hudib. iii. 3. 357.

Perhaps

"Which both | thy dú | ty ówes | and our | power cláims."

A. W. ii. 3, 168.

(This supposes "our" emphasized by antithesis, but "and our pów | er cláims" (ELLIS) may be the correct scanning.)

Being.—"That with | his pér | emptór | y "sháll" | being pút."

Coriol. iii. 1. 94, 2. 81.

"The sóv | ereigntý | of eí | ther béing | so great."

R. of L. 69.

This explains the apparent Alexandrines:

"And béing | but a tóy | that is | no grief | to give."

Rich. III. ii. I. 114.

"Without | a párall | el, thése | being áll | my stúdy."
Tempest, i. 2. 74.

Doing.—"Can láy | to béd | for éver: | whiles you, | doing thús."

1. 1. 284.

Seeing.—" Or sleing | it of | such child | ish friend | liness."

Coriol. ii. 3. 183.

"I'll in | mysélf | to sée, | and in thée | seeing ill." Rich. II. ii. 1. 94.

"That you | at súch | times séeing | me né | ver sháll."

Hamlet, i. 5. 173.

-ying.—" And proph | esying | with ac | cents ter | rible."

Macbeth, ii. 3 62

This may explain

." Lóck'd in | her món(u) [468] | ment. Shé'd | a proph(e)- | sying féar."—A. and C. iv. 14. 120.

So with other participles, as

"They, knówing | dame E'l | eanór's | aspir | ing húmour." 2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 97.

The rhythm seems to demand that "coward" should be a quasi monosyllable in

"Wrong right, | base nóble, | old young, | coward val | iant."
T. A. iv. 1. 29.

"Noble" a monosyllable. (See 465.)

"Yét are | they páss | ing cówardly. | But I' | beséech you."

Coriol. i. I. 207.

- 471. The plural and possessive cases of nouns in which the singular ends in s, se, ss, ce, and ge, are frequently written, and still more frequently pronounced, without the additional syllable:
 - "A's the | dead cár | casses óf | unbúr | ied mén."

 Coriol. iii, 3, 122.

"Thínking | upón | his sér | vices tóok | from you."

Ib. ii. 2. 231.

"Their sénse | are [Fol. sic] shút."—Macbeth, v. 1. 29.

"My sénse | are stopped."--Sonn. 112.

"These verse."—DANIEL.

- "I'll tó | him; hé | is híd | at Láwr | ence' céll."
 R. and F. iii. 2. 141.
- "Great kings of France and England! That I have laboured, Your might | inéss | on bóth | parts bést | can wítness."

 Hen. V. v. 2. 28.

"Place" is probably used for "places" in

- "The frésh | springs, brine- | pits, bár | ren pláce | and fértile."— Tempest, i. 2. 338.
- "These two | Antiph | olis [Folio], | these two | so like."

 C. of E. v. 1. 357.

"Are there balance?"—M. of V. iv. 1. 255.

" (Here) have I, thy schoolmaster, made thee more profit
Than oth | er prin | cess [Folio] can | that have | more time."—Temp. i. 2. 173.

"Sits on his horse back at mine hostess door."

K. J. ii. 1. 289 (Folia).

"Looked pále | when théy | did héar | of *Clár* | ence (Folio) déath."—*Rich. III.* ii. 1. 137, iii. 1. 144.

Probably the s is not sounded (horse is the old plural) in

- " And Duncan's horses (a thing most strange and certain)."

 Macbeth, ii. 4. 14.
- " Lies in their purses, and whoso empties them."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 130.

Even after ge the s was often suppressed, even where printed.

"How many ways shall Carthage's glory grow!"

SURREY'S Æneid IV. (Walker).

But often the s was not written. So

"In violating marriage sacred law."

Edward III. (1597 A.D.) (LAMB.)

The s is perhaps not pronounced in

"Conjéct | (u)ral márr | iage(s); mák | ing párt | ies stróng."

Coriol. i. 1. 198.

"Are brá | zen im | ages of | canon (491) | iz'd sáints." 2 $Fen.\ VI.$ i. 3. 63.

"The im | ages of | revolt | and fly | ing off!"

Lear, ii. 4. 91.

"O'ff with | his son | George's head."-Rich. III. v. 3. 344.

"Létters | should nót | be knówn, | riches póv | ertý."
Tempest, ii. 1. 150.

This may perhaps explain the apparent Alexandrines:

"I próm | is'd yóu | redréss | of thése | same griévances." 2 Hen. IV. iv. 2. 113.

"This déi | ty in | my bós | om twén | ty consciences."

Temp. ii. 1. 278.

"And stráight | discláim | their tóngues? | Whát are | your offices?"—Coriol. iii. 1. 35.

"Popíl | ius Lé | na spéaks | not ôf | our púr | poses." J. C. iii. 1. 23.

"She lév | ell'd át | our púr | poses, ánd | being (470) róyal,"

A. and C. v. 2. 339.

(or " | our púrpose(s), | and bé | ing róyal.")

"A thíng | most brú | tish, I' | endówed | thy púrposes."

Tempest, i. 2. 357.

"Nor whén | she *púrposes* | retúrn. | Beséech | your híghness."

Cymb. iv. 3. 15.

"As blánks, | benévo | lences ánd | I wót | not whát."
Rich. II. ii. 1. 250.

"My sérv | ices which | I have ('ve) dóne | the Sign | iorý."

Othello, i. 2. 18.

"These pipes | and thèse | convéy | ances óf | our blóod."

Coriol. v. 1. 54.

"Profésses | to persuáde | the kíng | his són's | alíve."
Temp. ii. 1. 236.

Either "whom I" is a detached foot (499) or s is mute in
"Whom I', | with this | obéd | ient stéel, | three inches of it
(inch of 't)."—Tempest, ii. I. 285.

472. Ed following d or t is often not written (this elision is very old: see 341, 342), and, when written, often not pronounced.

"I hád | not quóted him. | I féar'd | he díd | but trífle."

Hamlet, ii. 1. 112.

"Reg. That ténded (Globe, 'tend') | upón | my fáther. Glou. I knów | not, mádam."—Lear, ii. 1. 97.

"Since nót | to bé | avóided | it fálls | on mé."

1 Hen. IV. v. 5, 13.

"But júst | ly ás | you háve | excéedad | all prómise."

A. V. L. i. 2. 156.

"For tréas | on éxe | cuted in | our láte | king's dáys."

I Hen. VI. ii. 4. 91.

"And só, | ríveted | with faith | untó (457) | your flésh."

M. of V. v. 1. 162.

"Be sóon | colléct | ed and all | things thought | upón."

Hen. V. i. 2. 305.

" I's to | be frighted | out of féar : | and in | that mood."

A. and C. iii. 13. 196.

"Was ápt | ly fítted | and nát | (u)rally | perfórm'd."
T. of Sh. Ind. 1. 87.

"Is nów | convérted: | but nów | I wás | the lórd."

M. of V. iii. 2. 169.

"Which I' | mistrústed | not: fáre | well thére | fore, Héro."

M. Ado, ii. 1. 189.

"All ún | avóided | is the dóom | of dést | iný."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 217.

but here "destiny" (467) may be a dissyllable, and -ed sonant.

This explains the apparent Alexandrine:

"I thús | negléct | ing wórld | ly énds | all dédicated."

Temp. i. 2. 89.

"Shouting | their ém | ulá | tion. Whát | is gránted them?"

Coriol. i. I. 218.

So strong was the dislike to pronouncing two dental syllables together, that "it" seems nearly or quite lost after "set" and "let" in the following:

"I húmb | ly sét it | at your will; | but fór | my mistress.'

Cymb. iv. 3. 13.

** To hís | expér | ienced tóngue ; | yet lét it | please bóth."

Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 68.

"You are a | young húnt | sman, Már | cus: lét it alone." T. A. iv. 2. 101.

"You sée | is kíll'd | in hím : | and yét it | is dánger."

Lear, iv. 7. 79.

So perhaps "Of éx | cellént | dissémb | ling; and | let it blok."

A. and C. i. 3. 79.

But more probably, "dissémbling; | and lét | it lóok."

473. Est in superlatives is often pronounced st after dentals and liquids. A similar euphonic contraction with respect to est in verbs is found in E. E. Thus "bindest" becomes "binst," "eatest" becomes "est." Our "best" is a contraction for "bet-est."

"Twó of | the swéet'st | compán | ions ín | the world."

Cymb. v. 5. 349.

"At your | kind'st léisure."-Macbeth, ii. 1. 24.

"The stérn'st | good night."—Ib. ii. 2. 4.

" Secret'st."—İb. iii. 4. 126.

"This is | thy éld'st | son's són."—K. J. ii. 1. 177.

So Temp. v. 1. 186.

"Since déath | of mý | dear'st móth | er."—Cymb. iv. 2. 190.
"The lóy | al'st hús | band thát | did é'er | plight tróth."

Ib. i. 1. 96.

A. W. ii. 1. 163, "greaf'st." "The sweet'st, dear'st."—W. T. iii. 2. 202. "Near'st."—Macb. iii. 1. 118. "Unpleasant'st."—M. of V. iii. 2. 254. "Strong'st."—Rich. II. iii. 3. 201. "Shorf'st."—Ib. v. 1. 80. "Common'st."—Ib. v. 3. 17. "Faithfull'st."—T. N. v. 1. 117.

This lasted past the Elizabethan period.

"Know there are rhymes which fresh and fresh apply'd Will cure the *arrant'st* puppy of his pride."

POPE, Imit. Hor. Epist. i. 60.

The Folio reads "stroakst," and "made" in

"Thou stróakedst | me ánd | madest múch | of mé, | would'st give me."—Tempest, i. 2. 333.

But the accent on "and" is harsh. Perhaps "and má | dest."

VARIABLE SYLLABLES.

474. Ed final is often mute and sonant in the same line. Just as one superlative inflection-est does duty for two closely connected adjectives (398):

"The generous and gravest citizens."—M. for M. iv. 6. 13. and the adverbial inflection ly does duty for two adverbs (397):

"And she will speak most bitterly and strange."

M. for M. v. 1. 36.

so, when two participles ending in -ed are closely connected by "and," the ed in one is often omitted in pronunciation.

"Despls'd, | distréss | ed, hát | ed, márt | yr'd, kílled."
R. and F. iv. 5. 59.

"We have with a tear en'd and prepar d choice."

M. for M. i. I. 52.

"To this | unlbok'd | for, ún | prepár | ed pómp."

K. F. ii. 1. 560.

In the following the -ed sonant precedes:

"That were | embátt | ailéd | and ránk'd | in Kent."

K. 7. iv. 2. 200.

"We are | impréss | ed and | engag'd | to fight."

I Hen. IV. i. 1. 21.

"For this | they have | engross | ed and | pil'd up."
2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 71

"Thou cháng | ed ánd | self-cóv | er²d thíng, | for sháme." Lear, iv. 2. 62.

At the end of a line ed is often sounded after er:

"Which his | hell-góv | ern'd árm | hath bútc | heréd."
Rich. III _ 2. 74

See J. C. ii. 1. 208; iii. 1. 17; iii. 2. 7, 10; iv. 1. 47; v. 1. 1. So Rich. III. iii. 7. 136; iv. 3. 17; v. 3. 292; M. N. D. iii. 2. 18, &c. This perhaps arises in part from the fact that "er" final in itself (478) has a lengthened sound approaching to a dissyllable.

Ed is very frequently pronounced in the participles of words

ending in fy, "glorify," &c.

"Most pút | rifi | ed córe, | so fáir | without."

Tr. and Cr. v. 9. 1.

"My môrt | ifi | ed spírit. | Now bíd | me rún."

7. C. ii. 1. 324.

"Váughan | and áll | that háve | miscárr | iéd." Rich, III. v. 1. 5.

"The French | and E'ng | lish thére | miscár | riêd."

M. of V. ii. 8. 29.

"That came | too lag | to see | him bû | rida."—Ib. ii. 1. 90. So frequently in other Elizabethan authors. Also when preceded by rn, rm, "turned," "confirmed," &c., and in "followed:"

"As théy | us tó | our trénch | es fôll | owêd."

Coriol. i. 4. 42.

On the other hand, -ed is mute in

"By whát | by-páths | and ín | diréct | crook'd wâys." 2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 185.

In "Warder. We dó | no óth | erwise | than wé | are will'd.

Glou. Who will | ed you? | Or whose | will stands |
but mine,"—I Hen. VI. i. 3. 11.

it would seem that the latter "willed" is the more emphatic of the two, and it will probably be found that in many cases where two participles are connected, the more emphatic has ed sonant. Thus the former "banished" is the more emphatic of the two in

"Hence bán | ishéd | is bánish'd fróm | the wórld."

R. and J. iii. 3. 19.

475. A word repeated twice in a verse often receives two accents the first time, and one accent the second, when it is less emphatic the second time than the first. Or the word may occupy the whole of a foot the first time, and only part of a foot the second. Thus in

"Fåre (480) | well, gen | tle mís | tress: fåre | well, Nån."

M. W. of W. iii. 4. 97.

"Fáre (480) | well, gén | tle cóus | in. Cóz, | farewell."

K. F. iii. 3, 17.

"Of gréat | est júst | ice. Wrí | te (484), write, | Rináldo."

A. W. iii. 4. 29.

"These ví | olént | desíres | have vío | lent énds."

R. and J. ii. 6. 9 "With hér | that hát | eth thée | and hátes | us áll."

Here the emphasis is on "ends" and "us all."

"Duke. Still (486) | so crú | el ?
Oliv. Still | so cón | stant, lórd."—T. N. v. I. 113.

"Com. Knów (484), | I práy | you.

Coriol. I' | "ll knów | no fúrther."—Coriol. iii. 3. 87.

"Déso | late, dés | olate, will | I hénce | and die."
Rich. II. i. 2. 73.

The former "Antony" is the more emphatic in

"But were | I Brutus

And Bru | tus A'n | tony, | there were | an A'ntony."

7. C. iii. 2. 231.

So, perhaps, the more emphatic verb has the longer form in

"He rous | eth up | himself | and makes | a pause."

R. of L. 541.

This is often the case with diphthongic monosyllables. See 484. Compare

- "Nów | it schéy | neth, nów | it réyn | eth fáste."

 CHAUCER, C. T. 1537.
- 476. On the other hand, when the word increases in emphasis, the converse takes place.

"And lét | thy blóws, | doubly | redoub | (e)léd."

Rich. II. i. 3. 80.

- "Virg. O, héavens, | O, héav | ens.
 Coriol. Náy, | I prí | thee, wóman."
 Coriol. iv. 1, 12.
- "Wás it | his spírit | by spír | its táught | to write?"
 Sonn. 86.
- "And with | her pérson | age, hér | tall pér | sonáge."
 M. N. D. iii. 2. 292.
- "Marcius | would have | all from | you—Mar | citis, Whom late | you have named | for consul."

Coriol. iii. 1.'195

Even at the end of the verse Marcius has but one accent, as a rule. But here it is unusually emphasized.

- "And wher he run or fly they know not whether."

 V. and A. 304.
- "King. Be pát | ient, gént | le quéen, | and I' | will stáy. Queen. Whó can | be pát | iént | in thése | extrémes."

 3 Hen. VI. i. 1. 215-6.
- "Yield, my lord | protect | or, yi | eld, Winch | ester."
- "Citizens, Yield, Már | cius, yt | eld. Men, Hé | ar (480) mé, | one wórd."
- Coriol. iii. 1. 215.
 "A dévil (466), | a bór | n (485) dé | vil, in | whose náture."
 Tempest, iv. 1. 188
- So arrange "You héavens (512), |
 Give me | that pát | ience, pát | iénce | I néed."

 Lear, ii. 4. 274.

("Patient" was treated as a trisyllable by the orthoepists of the time.)

"Being hád, | to trí | umph bé | ing (on the other hand) láck'd, | to hópe."—Sonn. 52.

Similarly "Which art | my néar'st | and déar | est én | emý."

I Hen. IV. iii. 2. 123.

On the other hand, perhaps, "sire," and not "cówards," is a dissyllable in

"Cowards fá | ther cówards, | and báse | things sí | re base."

Cymb. iv. 2. 26.

So, perhaps, "Pánting | he líes | and bréath | eth in | her fáce."

V. and A. 62.

Here "lies" is unemphatic, "breatheth" emphatic.

For diphthongic monosyllables see 484.

The same variation is found in modern poetry. In the following line there is, as it were, an antithetical proportion in which the two middle terms are emphatic, while the extremes are unemphatic:

"Tower be | yond tow | er, spi | re bé | yond spire."—TENNYSON.

LENGTHENING OF WORDS.

477. R, and liquids in dissyllables, are frequently pronounced as though an extra vowel were introduced between them and the preceding consonant:

"The parts | and gra | ces of | the wres | t(e)ler."

A. Y. L. ii. 2. 13

"In séc | ond ácc | ent óf | his órd | (i)nánce."

Hen. V. ii. 4. 126.

The Folio inserts i here, and e, Ib. iii. Prologue, 26. In the latter passage the word is a dissyllable.

"If you | will tár | ry, hó | ly pílg | (e)rím."—A. W. iii. 5.43.

"While shé | did cáll | me rás | cal fíd | d(e)lér."

T. of Sh. ii. 1. 158.

"The life | of him. | Knów'st thou | this coun | t(e)rý?"
T. N. i. 2. 21. So Coriol. i. 9. 17; 2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 206

"And these | two Drom | ios, one | in semb | (e)lance."

C. of E. v. 1. 358; T. G. of V. i. 3. 84.

"You, the | great toe | of this | assemb | l(e)\$."

Coriol, i. 1. 159

"Cor. Be thús | to thém. |

Patr. You dó | the nó | b(e)lér."—Ib. iii. 2. 6.

"Edm. Sír, you | speak nó | b(e)lý. | Reg. Whý is | this réason'd?"—Lear, v. 1. ?8 (?) "Go séarch | like nó | b(e)lés, | like nó | ble súbjects."
P. of T. ii. 4. 50.

The e is actually inserted in the Folio of *Titus Andronicus* in "brethren:"

"Give Mú | cius búr | ial wíth | his bréth | erén."
T. A. i. 1. 347.

And this is by derivation the correct form, as also is "childeren."

"These are | the par | ents of | these chil | d(e)ren."

C. of E. v. 1. 360.

"I gó. | Wríte to | me vér | y shórt | (e)lý."

Rich. III. iv. 4. 428.

"A rót | ten cáse | abídes | no hánd | (e)líng."
2 Hen. IV. iv. 1. 161.

"The friends | of France | our shrouds | and tack | (e)lings."
3 Hen. VI. v. 4. 18.

"Than Ból | ingbróke's | retúrn | to E'ng | (e)lánd."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 17.

"And méan | to máke | her quéen | of E'ng | (e)lánd."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 263.

So in E. E. "Engeland."

"To be in an | ger is | impi | ety;

But whó | is mán | that is | not án | g(e)r?"

T. of A. iii. 5. 56.

in which last passage the rhyme indicates that angry must be pronounced as a trisyllable.

"And stréngth | by límp | ing swáy | disá | b(e)léd."—Sonn. 66. So also in the middle of lines—

"Is Cáde | the són | of Hén | (e)rý | the Fífth?"
2 Hen. VI. iv. 8. 36.

This is common in *Hen. VI.*, but not I think in the other plays—not for instance in *Rich. II*.

"That cróaks | the fá | tal én | t(e)ránce | of Dúncan."

Macheth, i. 5. 40.

"Cárries | no fá | vour ín't | but Bért | (e)rám's."

A. W. i. 1. 94.

"O mé! | you júgg | (e)lér! | you cán | ker blóssom."
M. N. D. iii. 2. 282.

"Tis mónst | (e)róus. | Iá | go, whó | begán it?"

Othello, ii. 3. 217.

"And thát | hath dázz | (e)léd | my réa | son's líght."

T. G. of V. ii. 4. 210.

"Béing | so frús | t(e)ráte. | Téll him | he mócks."

A. and C. v. 1. 2.

"Lord Dóug | (e)lás, | go yóu | and téll | him só."

I Hen. IV. v. 2. 33.

"Gráce and | remém | b(e)ránce | be tó | you bóth."

W. T. iv. 4. 76.

"Of quick | cross light | (e)ning? | To watch, | poor perdu."

Lear, iv. 7. 35

"Thou kíll'st | thy míst | (e)réss : | but wéll | and frée."

A. and C. ii. 5. 27.

"To táunt | at sláck | (e)néss. | Caníd | ius wé."

So also probably "sec(e)ret," "monst(e)rous" (Macbeth, iii. 6. 8), "nob(e)ly," "wit(e)ness," T. G. of V. iv. 2. 110, and even "cap(i)tains" (French "capitaine:" Macbeth, i. 2. 34, 3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 30, and perhaps Othello, i. 2. 53).

Spenser inserts the e in some of these words, as "handeling,"

F. Q. i. 8. 28; "enterance," ib. 34.

478. Er final seems to have been sometimes pronounced with a kind of "burr," which produced the effect of an additional syllable; just as "Sirrah" is another and more vehement form of "Sir." Perhaps this may explain the following lines, some of which may be explained by 505–10, but not all:

"Corn. We'll téach | you—— Kent. Sír, | 'I'm | too óld | to léarn. Lear, ii. 2. 135.

(But? "I' am.")

"Lénds the | tongue vóws ; | these blá | zes dáugh | tér."

Hamlet, i. 3. 117

"And thére | upón, | gíve me | your dúugh | tér."

Hen. V. v. 2, 475.

"Bru. Spread fúr | thér. |

Menen. One wó | rd (485) móre, | one wórd.'

Coriol. iii, 1, 311.

"Líke a | ripe sís | tér: | the wóm | an lów."

A. Y. L. iv. 3. 88.
"Of our | dear souls. | Meantime, | sweet sis | ttr."
T. N. v. 1. 396.

"I práy | you, úncle (465), | gíve me | this dág | gér."
Rich. III. iii, 1, 110.

"A bróth | er's múr | dér. | Práy can | I nót."

Hamlet, iii. 3. 38

"Frighted | each oth | er. | Why should | he follow?" A. and C. iii. 13. 6.

"And só | to árms, | victór | ious fá | thér."

2 Hen. VI. v. 1. 211.

"To céase. | Wast thou | ordáin'd, | dear fá | thér?"

Ib. v. 2. 45. "Corn. Where hast | thou sent | the king? |

To Do | vér."-Lear, iii. 7. 51. Glouc. "Will I' | first work. | He's for | his más | tér."-Cymb. i. 5. 28.

"Lear. Thán the | sea-móns | tér. |

Práy, sir, | be pátient."—Lear, i. 4. 283. But perhaps "patient" may have two accents. In that case "ter" is a pause-extra syllable.

In the two following lines s follows the r:

"To spéak | of hór | rórs, | he cómes | befóre me."

Hamlet, ii. 1. 84. "Públius, | how nów? | How nów, | my más | térs?"

T. A. iv. 3. 35; and perhaps Macbeth, iii. 4. 133.

"And give | him half: | and for | thy vig | bur." Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 272.

"Téll me, | how fáres | our lov | ing moth | er?"

Rich. III. v. 3. 82. "Cass. Good night, | my lord. |

Good night, | good broth | ér." Brut. 7. C. iv. 3. 237.

"He whóm | my fáth | er námed? | Your E'd | gár." Lear, ii. 1. 94.

(? "ná(484) | med? Yoú | r (480) E'dgar.")

"I'll fól | low you | and téll | what an | swer."

3 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 55.

"I have six | ty sáil : | Cæ'sar | none bét | tér." A. and C. iii. 7. 50

"This wood en slá very, than to súff ér." Temp. iii. 1. 62.

Sometimes this natural burn on r influences the spelling. Genesis and Exodus (Early English Text Society, Ed. Morris) we have "coren" for "corn," "boren" for "born." Thus the E. E. "thurh" is spelt "thorugh" by early writers, and hence even by Shakespeare in

"The false | revolt | ing Nor | mans tho | rough thee." 2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 87. So M. N. D. ii. I. 3, 5; Coriol. v. 3. 115.

In the following difficult lines it may be that r introduces an extra syllable:

"I'gnomy | in rán | som ánd | free pá | rdón
A're of | two hóu | ses, láw | ful mé | rcý."

M. for M. ii. 4. 111, 112.

It would of course save trouble to read "ignominy," against the Folio. But compare

"Thy ig | nomý (Fol.) | sleep with | thee in | thy gráve."
I Hen. IV. v. 4. 100

"Hence, brók | er láck | ey! I'g | nomý | and sháme."

Tr. and Cr. v. 10. 33.

and in T. A. iv. 2. 115 (where the Folio reads "ignominy") the i is slurred.

"No mán | knows whíther. | I crý | thee mé | rcy."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 515.

"It is | my són, | young Hár | ry Pé | rcý."

Rich. II. ii. 3. 21.

"Thou, Rích | ard, shált | to the dúke | of Nôr | fôlk." 3 Hen. VI. i. 2. 38.

So we sometimes find the old comparative "near" for the modern "nearer."

"Bétter | far óff | than néar | be né'er | the néar."

Rich, II. v. 1, 88,

"The néar | in blood |

The néar | er blóody."—Macbeth, ii. 3. 146.

"Nor near nor farther off . . . than this weak arm."

Rich, II. iii. 2. 64.

And "far" for "farther," the old "ferror."

"Fár than | Deucá | lion óff."-W. T. iv. 4. 442.

479. The termination "ion" is frequently pronounced as two syllables at the end of a line. The *i* is also sometimes pronounced as a distinct syllable in soldier, courtier, marriage, conscience, partial, &c.; less frequently the *e* in surgeon, vengeance, pageant, creature, pleasure, and treasure.

The cases in which *ion* is pronounced in the middle of a line are rare. I have only been able to collect the following:

"With 6b | servá | tión | the whích | he vénts."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 41.

"Of Hám | let's tráns | formá | tiôn: | so cáll it."

Hamlet, ii. 2. 5.

"Be chósen | with pró | clamá | *tións* | to-dáy."
T. A. i. 1. 190.

Gill, 1621, always writes "ti-on" as two syllables. But there is some danger in taking the books of orthoepists as criteria of popular pronunciation. They are too apt to set down, not what is, but what ought to be. The Shakespearian usage will perhaps be found a better guide.

 $Ti\delta n$, when preceded by c, is more frequently prolonged, perhaps because the c more readily attracts the t to itself, and leaves ion uninfluenced by the t.

"It wére | an hón | est áct | ión | to sáy so."

Othello, ii. 3. 145; Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 340.

"Her swéet | perféct | ións | with óne | self kíng."
T. N. i. 1. 39

"Yet have | I fiérce | afféct | ións | and thínk."

A. and C. i. 5. 17.

"With sore | distract | ión | what I' | have done."

Hamlet, v. 2. 241.

"To ús | in our | eléct | ión | this dáy."—T. A. i. 1. 235.

In "That shall | make ans | wer to | such quest | ions.

It is enough. | I'll think | upon | the quest | ions,"

2 Hen. VI. i. 2. 80, 82.

it seems unlikely that "questions" is to be differently scanned in two lines so close together. And possibly, "it is (it's) enough," is one foot. Still, if "questions" in the second verse be regarded as an unemphatic (475) repetition, it might be scanned:

"It is | enough. | I'll think | upon | the questions."

The Globe has

"Jóin'd in | commlss | ion with him; | but éither (466) |
Had bórne || the action of yourself, or else
To him || had left it solely."—Coriol. iv. 6. 14.

But better arrange as marked above, avoiding the necessity of laying two accents on "commission." So Folio—which, however, is not of much weight as regards arrangement.

I is pronounced in "business" in

"To sée | this bús | inéss. | To-mór | row nést."
Rich. II. fi. 1. 217; Rich. III. fi. 2. 144; M. of V. iv.
1. 127; Coriol. v. 3. 4.

"Divín | est cré | atúre, | Astræ' | a's daughter." I Hen. VI. i. 6. 4.

So probably

"Than thése | two cré | atúres. | Whích is | Sebástian?" T. N. v. 1. 231

"But he's | a tried | and val | iant sold | ier." - 7. C. iv. 1. 28

"Your sis | ter is | the bét | ter sól | diér."-Lear, iv. 5. 3.

"Máking | them wóm | en óf | good cárr | iáge."

R. and 7. i. 4. 94. "Márri | age is | a mát | ter óf | more wór | th."

I Hen. VI. v. 5. 55, v. 1. 21.

"To wóo | a máid | in wáy | of márr | iáge."

M. of V. ii. 9. 13.

"While I' | thy ám | iá | ble chéeks | do cóy."

M. N. D. iv. I. 2.

"Young, vál | iánt, | wíse, and, | no dóubt, | right róyal." Rich. III. i. 1. 245; Tempest, iii. 2. 27.

"With th' án | ciént | of war | on our | procéedings."

Lear, v. 1. 32.

"You have done our plé asúres much grace, fair ládies."—T. of A. i. 2. 151.

So "Take her | and use | her at | your plé | asure," B. and F. (Walker).

"We'll léave | and think | it is | her plé | asúre."-Ib.

"But 'tis | my lord | th' Assist | ant's ple | asure."-Ib.

"He dare | not sée | you. A't | his plé | asúre."—Ib.

"You shall | have ransom. | Let me | have súr | geons." Lear, iv. 6. 196.

"If on | ly to go | '(484) warm | were gorg | eous."

"Your mind | is toss | ing on | the 6 | ceán." M. of V. i. I. 8; Hen. V. iii. I. 14.

"The new | est state. | This is | the ser | geant." Macbeth, i. 2. 3.

Similarly "But they | did say | their pray | ers and | address'd them."—Ib. ii. 2. 25; Coriol. v. 3. 105.

"Hath túrn'd | my féign | ed práy | er ón | my héad." Rich. III. v. 1. 21, ii. 2. 14.

Even where "prayer" presents the appearance of a monosyllable, the second syllable was probably slightly sounded.

For i and e sonant in "-ied," see 474.

479 a. Monosyllabic feet in Chaucer. Mr. Skeat (Essay on Metres of Chaucer, Aldine Edition, 1866) has shown that Chaucer often uses a monosyllabic foot, but the instances that have been pointed out are restricted to the first foot.

"May, with all thyn floures and thy greene."—C. T. 1512.

"Til | that deeth departe schal us twayne."-Ib. 1137.

"Ther | by aventure this Palamon."-Ib. 1518.

"Now | it schyneth, now it reyneth fast."-Ib. 1537.

"Al | by-smoterud with his haburgeon."—Ib. 77.

It will be shown in paragraphs 480-6 that Shakespeare uses this licence more freely, but not without the restrictions of certain natural laws.

480. Fear, dear, fire, hour, your, four, and other monosyllables ending in r or re, preceded by a long vowel or diphthong, are frequently pronounced as dissyllables. "fire" was often spelt and is still vulgarly pronounced "fier." So "fare" seems to have been pronounced "fa-er;" "ere," "e-er;" "there," "the-er," &c.

It is often emphasis, and the absence of emphasis, that cause this licence of prolongation to be adopted and rejected in the same line:

Fair.—" Ferd. Or night | kept cháin'd | belów. Prosp.

Fáir | ly spóke." Tempest, iv. 1. 31.

(or perhaps (484) "belów. | Fáir | ly spóke.")

Fare.—"Poison'd, | ill fá | re, déad, | forsóok, | cast óff."

K. 7. v. 7. 35.

'Loath to | bid fá | rewéll, | we táke | our léaves." P. of T. ii. 5. 13. 'Lúcius, | my gówn. | Fáre | well, góod | Méssala."

7. C. iv. 3. 231. "Died év | ery dáy | she lív'd (Fol.). | Fáre | thee wéll."

Macbeth, iv. 3. 111.

"Fáre | well, kíns | man! I' | will tálk | with you." 1 Hen. IV. i. 3. 234.

"For worms, | brave Pér | cy. Fá | rewell (so Folio), | great héart."-Ib. v. 4. 87.

"Why then | I wi | ll (483). Fá | rewell, | old Gaunt." Rich. II. i 2. 44.

So F. C. iv. 3. 231; I Hen. IV. iv. 3. 111 (Folio); M. W. of W. in. 4. 97; K. 7. iii. 2. 17. (See 475.)

Ere. -"For I' | inténd | to have | it êr | e (é-er) long."

I Hen. VI. i. 3. 87.

I should prefer to prolong the emphatic here, rather than "our," in
"What should | be spok | en hé | re (hé-er) where | our fate."

Macheth, ii, 3, 128.

Mere. - The pause after "night" enables us to scan thus:

"They have tráv | ell'd áll | the níght (484). | 'Mé | re fétches."—Lear, ii. 4. 90.

There.—"Hath déath | lain with | thy wife. | There | she lies."
R. and F. iv. 5. 36

'Towards Cálais; | now gránt | him thé | re, thé | re seen."

Hen. V. v. Prol. 7.

(I have not found a Shakespearian instance of "Caláis." Otherwise at first sight it is natural to scan "Towards | Caláis.")

"Exe. Like mú | sic.

Cant. Thé | refóre | doth héav'n | divíde." Hen. V. i. 2. 183.

Where.—"I knów | a bánk, | whére | the wíld | thyme blóws."

M. N. D. ii. 1, 249.

"Hor. Whére, | my lórd? | Ham. I'n my | mind's eýe, | Horátio." Hamlet, i. 2. 185.

(But Folio inserts "Oh" before "where.")

Rarely.—"I's not | this buck | led well? | Ráre | ly, rárely."

A. and C. iv. 4. 11.

(The first "rarely" is the more emphatic: or? (483), "well.")

Dear.—"As done: | persév | eránce, | déar | my lord."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 150.

"Déar | my lórd, | íf you, | in yóur | own próof."

M. Ado, iv. 1, 46.

"The king | would spéak | with Córnwall : | the dé | ar fáther."—Lear, ii. 4. 102.

"Oliv. Than mú | sic fróm | the sphé | res. Viol.

Dé | ar lády."
T. N. iii. I. 121.

Fear. — "Féar | me nót, | withdráw, | I héar | him cóming."

Hamlet, iii. 4. 7.

Hear.—"Hear, Ná | ture, hé | ar, dé | ar Gód | dess, héar."

Lear, i. 4. 297

(The emphasis increases as the verse proceeds.)

Near.—"Néar, | why then | anoth | er time | I'll hear it"
T. of A. 2. 184.

Tears.—"Auf. Name not | the God, | thou boy | of te | ars.

Coriol.

Ha!"

Coriol. v. 6. 101.

" Téar | for téar, | and lóv | ing kíss | for kíss."

T. A. v. 3. 156.

Year.—"Twelve yé | ar since, | Mirán | da, twélve | year since."

Tempest, i. 2. 53.

(The repeated "year" is less emphatic than the former.)

And, perhaps, if the line be pronounced deliberately,

"Mány | yéars | of háp | py dáys | befál."—*Rich.II.* i. 1. 21. It might be possible to scan as follows:

"Well strúck | in yé | ars, fá | ir ánd | not jéalous."
Rich, III. i. 1, 92.

But the Folio has "jealious," and the word is often thus written (Walker) and pronounced by Elizabethan authors.

Their (?).—If the text be correct, in

"The commons hath he pill'd with grievous taxes,
And quite lóst | their héarts. | The nó | bles háth | he fin'd
For án | cient quárrels (463), | and quite | lost thé | ir
hearts,"—Rich. II. ii. 1. 247-8.

it is almost necessary to suppose that the second *their* is more emphatic than the first. Else the repetition is intolerable. See 475, 476. But even with this scansion the harshness is so great as to render it probable that the text is corrupt.

Hire.—"A ship | you sent | me for | to hi | re wastage."

C. of E. iv. 1. 95.

Sire.—"And is | not like | the st | re: hon | ours thrive."

A. W. ii. 3. 142.

Door. — "And with | my sword | I'll kéep | this dó | or safe."

T. A. i. 1. 288.

More.—"If more, | the mo | re hast | thou wrong'd | (ed) mé."

(The second "more" is the more emphatic.)

"As máy | compáct | it mó | re. Gét | you góne."

**Who hádst | desérv | ed mb | re thán | a príson."

Temp. i. 2. 362.

Lear, v. 3. 168.

Our (perhaps) — "To list | en bu | r pur | pose. This is (461) | thy office."—M. Ado, iii. 1. 12.

("This is" is a quasi-monosyllable See 461.)

"And bý | me, hád | not δu | r háp | been bád."

C. of E. i. 1. 39.

"First Sen. Which wé | devise | him.

Corn. Ou | r spóils | he kíck'd at."

Coriol. ii. 2. 128.

"First" requires emphasis in

"Sic. In bu | r first | way.

Men. I | 'll bring | him to you.

Ib. iii. 1. 334.

Hour (often).—" A't the | sixth hou | r, át | which time | my lord.

Tempest, v. I. 4.

Your.—" And só, | though yóu | rs, nót | yours*—próve | it só."
M. of V. iii. 2. 20.

"Lart. My hórse | to yóu | rs, nó! |

Mart.

Lart.

Agréed."

Coriol. i. 4. 2.

"And pún | ish thém | to yoú | r héight | of pléasure."

M. for M. v. i. 240.

Unless "pleasure" is a trisyllable. (See 479.)

"Is he párd | on'd ánd | for $y\delta u$ | r lóve | ly sáke."—Ib. 496. There is an emphatic antithesis in

"Whó is | lost tóo. | Take yóu | r pá | tience tó you, And I'll say nothing."—W. T. iii. 2. 232.

"And sháll | have $y\delta u \mid r$ will, | becáuse | our king." 3 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 17.

481. Monosyllables which are emphatic either (1) from their meaning, as in the case of exclamations, or (2) from their use in antithetical sentences, or (3) which contain diphthongs, or (4) vowels preceding r, often take the place of a whole foot. This is less frequent in dissyllabic words. In (1) and (2) as well as (3) the monosyllables often contain diphthongs, or else long vowels.

In many cases it is difficult, perhaps impossible, to determine whether a monosyllable should be prolonged or not. Thus, in

"On this | unworth | y scaff | old to | bring forth,"

Hen. V. Prologue, 10.

many may prefer to scan "| -old to bri | ng forth," and to prolong the following monosyllable rather than to accent "to;" and in

"Came pour | ing like | the tide | into | a bréach,"

Hen. V. i. 2. 149.

^{*} It is a matter of taste which yours should receive the emphasis.

it is possible to prolong the preceding monosyllable, "the tt | de in | to a bréach." Such cases may often be left to the taste of the reader (but for the accent of "into" see 457a). All that can safely be said is, that when a very unemphatic monosyllable, as "at," "and," "a," "the," &c. has the accent, it is generally preceded or followed by a very strongly accented monosyllable, as

"Assume the port of Mars; and at his heels."

Hen. V. Prologue, 6.

It is equally a matter of taste whether part of the prolonged monosyllable should be considered to run on into the following foot or whether a pause be supposed after the monosyllable, as

"Girding | with griev | ous siege | cástles | and tówns."

Hen. V. i. 2. 152.

"As knóts | bý the | conflúx | of méet | ing sáp."
Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 7

482. Monosyllabic exclamations.

Ay.—" Polon. Whérefore | should you | do this? | Reg.

"King. Will you | be rúled | by mé? | Hamlet, ii. 1. 36.

Laert. | A'y, | my lórd." | 15. iv. 7. 60.

"A'y, | what élse? | And bút | I bé | decéiv'd."
T. of Sh. iv. 4. 2.

"Vol. That brought | thee to | this world. |
Vir. A'y, | and mine."
Coriol. v. 3. 125.

(?) "Corn. I's he | pursú | ed (474)?
Glou.

A' | y, mý | good lórd."

Lear, ii. 1. 111.

Nay.—" What sáys | he? Ná | y, nó | thing; áll | is sáid."
Rich. II. ii. 1. 148.

"Cor. How, trái | tor!

Com.; Ná | y, tém | p(e)ratelý; | your prómise."

Coriol. ivi. 3. 67.

Stay.—" Stáy, | the kíng | hath thrówn | his wárd | er dówn."

16. i. 3. 118.

Yea.—" Yéa, | my Lord | How brooks | your gráce | the air?"

10. iii. 2. 2.

Hail.—"Gainst mý | captív | itý. | Háil, | brave friend."

Macheth, i. 2. 5.

- 0 " Cass. O. | 'tis true. | Ho! bíd | my trúm | pet sound." Hest. Tr. and Cr. v. 3. 13. O', | 'tis tréa | son. " Cleo. Mádam, | I trúst | not só." Charm. A. and C. i. 5. 7. "To hide | the slain. | O', | from this | time forth." Hamlet, iv. 4. 65. " Mir. O", | good sir, | I dó. | I práv | thee, márk me." Prosp. Tempest, i. 2. 80. Perhaps "Pol. The dévil | himsélf. | O". | 'tis (it is) | too true." King. "Sélf a | gainst sélf. | O", | prepós | teróus." Rich. III. ii. 4. 63. "Their clea | rer réa | son. O", | 'good | Gonzálo." Temp. v. 1. 68 I have not found "reason" a trisyllable in Shakespeare. "O", | my fóllies! | Then E'd | gar wás | abúsed." Lear, iii. 7. 91. " O", | the diff | erénce | of mán | and mán." Ib. iv. 2. 26. ? "The héart | of wó | man is. | O", | (453) Brútus." 7. C. ii. 4. 40. "Struck Cæ' | sar ón | the néck. | O', | you flátterers." Soft .- "But só | ft / cóm | paný | is cóm | ing hére." T. of Sh. iv. 5. 26 Come. - " Come, | good fell | ow, put | mine ir | on on." A. and C. iv. 4. 3. What.—" Where be | these knaves? | What, | no man | at door!"
 - " Whát, | unjúst! | Bé not | so hót; | the dúke."

 M. for M. v. 1. 315.

 Well.—" Wéll, | gíve her | that ríng, | and thére | withál."

 T. G. of V. iv. 4. 89.
 - "Gon. Rémem | ber whát | I téll | you.

 Osw.

 Wé | ll, mádam."

 Lear, i. 3. 21.

T. of Sh. iv. 1. 125.

483. Monosyllables emphasized by position or antithesis. A conjunction like "yet" or "but," implying hesitation, may naturally require a pause immediately after it; and this pause may excuse the absence of an unaccented syllable, additional stress being laid on the monosyllable.

But.—" Of good | ly thous | ands. Bú | t, for | all this."

Macbeth, iv. 3. 44.

"The Góds | rebúke | me bú | t ít | is tídings."

A. and C. v. 1. 27.

Yet.—" Though I | condémn | not, yé | t, ún | der párdon."

Lear, i. 4. 365.

"Yét (as yet), | I thínk, | we áre | not brought | so lów."
T. A. iii. 2. 76.

"Brut. When Cæ's | ar's héad | is óff. |

Cass. Yt | I féar him."

7. C. ii. 1. 183.

Pronouns emphasized by antithesis or otherwise, sometimes dispense with the unaccented syllable,

"Shów | men dú | tifúl?

Why, só | didst $th\delta$ | u. Séem | they gráve | and léarned? Why, só | didst thóu."—Hen. V. ii. 2. 128.

(Possibly, however, "seem" may be prolonged instead of "thou.")

"When you | shall pléase | to pláy | the thieves | for wives.

I'll wátch | as lóng | for yó | u thén. | Approach."

M. of V. ii. 6. 24.

"Were yó | u ín | my stéad, | would yóu | have héard?"

Coriol. v. 3, 192

You is emphatic from Desdemona to Othello in

" Othello. 'Tís a | good hánd,
A fránk | one.

Desd. Vó | u máy | indéed | say só

Yó | u máy | indéed | say só."
Othello, iii. 4. 44.

So in "Hów in | my stréngth | you pléase. | For yô | u, E'dmund." Lear, ii. 1. 114.

and in the retort of Brutus on Cassius,

"Lét me | tell yó | u, Cáss | ius, yóu | yoursélf Are múch | condémn'd | to háve | an ítch | ing pálm." J. C. iv. 3. 9.

Perhaps aware of Ferdinand's comment on his emotion, "your father's in some passion," Prospero turns to Ferdinand and says, "it is you who are moved" in

" Yo'u | do look, | my son, | in a | mov'd sort."

Temp. 1v. 1. 146.

Otherwise the reading of the line so as to avoid accenting "my" seems difficult.

There is no prolongation, though there is antithetical emphasis, in "Look up | on him, | love him, | he wor | ships vou."

or | ships you."

A. Y. L. v. 2. 88.

The repeated "thence" seems to require a pause in

"Thénce to | a wátch, | thénce | intó (457a) | a wéakness."

Hamlet, ii. 1. 148.

But possibly, like "ord(i)nance," "light(e)ning" (see 477), so "weakness" may be pronounced a trisyllable.

484. Monosyllables containing diphthongs and long vowels, since they naturally allow the voice to rest upon them, are often so emphasized as to dispense with an unaccented syllable. When the monosyllables are imperatives of verbs, as "speak," or nouns used imperatively, like "peace," the pause which they require after them renders them peculiarly liable to be thus emphasized. Whether the word is dissyllabized, or merely requires a pause after it, cannot in all cases be determined. In the following examples the scansion is marked throughout on the former supposition, but it is not intended to be represented as necessary.

A (long). "Júst as | you léft | them, ά | ll prís | 'ners, sír."

Temp. v. 1. 8

"Try mán | y, α | ll góod, | serve trú | ly néver." Cymb. iv. 2. 373.

"Yea, lóok'st | thou pá | le? Lét | me sée | the writing."
Rich. II. v. 2. 57.

"Duke. Like the | old & | ge.
Clown. A're | you réad | y, sir?"
T. N. ii. 4. 50.

"Yéa, his | dread trı | dent sháke. | My brá | ve spírit." Temp. i. 2. 206.

4i. "'Gainst mý | captív | itý. | Háil, | brave friend."
Macbeth, i. 2. 5.

"I'll bé | with (wi') you strái | ght. Gó | a líttle | befóre."

Hamlet, iv. 4. 31.

I should prefer to avoid laying an accent on "the" in

"To fá | il in the ! dispos | ing of | these chances."

Coriol. iv. 7. 40.

"Which is | most fá | int. Nów | 'tis trúe I múst | be hére | confín'd | bv yóu."— Temp. Epilogue, 3

Ay. "Sáy | agáin, | whére didst | thou léave | these várlets?"

Temp. iv. 1. 170.

So in the dissyllable "payment."

"He húmb | ly práys | you spéed | y páy | mént."
T. of A. ii. 2. 28.

Perhaps

"What sá | y yóu, | my lórd? | Aré you | contént."
I Hen. VI. iv. 1. 70.

Perhaps

E. "Senators. Wé | 'll súre | ty him.

Ag | ed sír, | hands óff."

Coriol. iii. 1. 178.

"Men. The cón | sul Córi | olán | us— Bru. Hé | ' cónsul !"—Ib. iii. 1. 280.

Ea. "Péace, | I sáy. | Good é | ven tó | you, friend." A. Y. L. ii. 4. 70.

"Antón | ius dé | ad! I'f | thou sáy | so, víllain."

A. and C. ii. 5. 26.

"Doct. But, though | slow, dé | adlý. |
Queen. 1 won | der, doctor."
Cymb. i. 5. 10.

. "Whý dost | not spéak? | What, dé | af: not | a word?"

T. A. v. 1. 46.

" Spéak, | Lavín | ia, whát | accúrs | ed hánd?"

1b. iii. 1. 66.

"Which was | to plé | ase. Nów | I want Spírits to | enfórce, | nót to | enchant."

Temp. Epilogue, 13.

"Eárth's in | créase, | fóison | plénty,
Bárns and | gárners | néver | émpty."—Ib. iv. 1. 110.

Perhaps " Glou. Aláck, | the níght | comes ón, | and the (457) $bl\acute{e}$ | ak wínds."—Lear, ii. 4. 303.

Perhaps "Trúly | to spé | ak, ánd | with nó | addítion,"

Hamlet, iv. 4. 17.

or "Trúly | to spéak, | and with nó | addít | ión."
"Be frée | and hé | althfill. | So tárt | a fávour."

A. and C. ii. 5. 38.

"The safety and health of this whole state,"

Hamlet, i. 3. 21.

could not be scanned without prolonging both "health" and "whole." Such a double prolongation is extremely improbable, considering the moderate emphasis required. More probably

"sanity" should be read, as has been suggested, for "sanctity," the reading of the Folio.

Ee. "Fórward, | not pér | manént, | swéet, | not lásting."

Harrlet, i. 3. 8.

" Siek | me out, | and thát | way I' | am wife in."

Hen. VIII. iii. 1. 38.

"The cúrt | ain'd slé | ep witch | craft cél | ebrátes."

Macbeth, ii. 1. 51.

"Doth cóm | fort thée in | thy slé | ep; líve, | and flóurish."

Rich. III. v. 3. 130.

"This ig | norant prés | ent and | I fé | el nów."

Macbeth, i. 5. 58.

"Enough | to fétch | him in. | Sée | it done."

A. and C. iv. 1, 14.

"Yét but | thrée. | Cóme one | móre,
Twó of | bóth kinds | máke up | fóur."

M. N. D. iii. 2. 437. "When sté | el gróws | sóft as | the pára | site's sílk."

Coriol. i. 9. 45.
"Soft" is emphasized as an exclamation (see 481), but perhaps on the whole it is better to emphasize "steel" here.

" Ferd. Makes this | place Pár | adíse.

" Prosp. Swéet | now, sílence."
Temp. iv. 1. 124.

 $\it Eo.$ The $\it eo$ in the foreign-derived word "leopard" stands on a different footing:

"Or hórse | or óx | en fróm | the lé | opárd."

1 Hen. VI. i. 5, 31.

So, often, in Elizabethan authors.

"Mén for | their wi | ves: wi | ves fór | their húsbands."
 3 Hen. VI. v. 6. 41.

"Of gréat | est júst | ice. Wrí | te, wríte, | Rináldo."

A. W. iii. 4. 29.

"Hórri | ble sí | ght! Nów | I sée | 'tis trúe."

Macbeth, iv. 1. 122.

"Full fif | teen húndred, | best | des cóm | mon mén."

Hen. V. iv. 8. 84.

I know of no instance where "hundred," like (477) "Henry" receives two accents. Else the "be-" in "besides" might (460) be dropped, and the verse might be differently scanned.

"Each mán's | like mí | ne; you | have shéwn | all Héctors."

A. and C. iv. 8. 7.

"At a póor | man's hóuse: | he ús'd | me ki | ndlý."

Coriol, i, 9, 83. But see 477.

Possibly "friends" may require to be emphasized, as its position is certainly emphatic, in

"Till déath | unlóads | thee. Frí | ends hást | thou nóne."

M. for M. iii, 1. 28.

"No, sáy'st | me só, | friend? | What cóun | trymán?"
T. of Sh. i. 2. 190.

"Yield, my lórd, | protéct | or yí | eld, Wín | chestér."

I Hen. VI. iii. I. 112

("My" is dropped, 497.)

"Mort de | ma ví | e! I'f | they ride | along."

Hen. V. iii. 5. 11.

M. for M. v. I. 314.

0. "Drive him | to Rό | me: 'tis (it | is) time | we twain."

A. and C. i. 4. 73

"Card. Rôme | shall réme | dy thís. |
Glou.
Roam thí | ther, thén."
I Hen, VI. iii, I. 51.

"While hé | himsélf | kéeps in | the có | ld field."
3 Hen. VI. iv. 3. 14

"Tóad that | únder | cóld | stóne

Dáys and | níghts has | thírty | óne."—Macbeth, iv. 1. 6. So scan "Go tó the | creáting | a whó | le tríbe | of fóps."

Lear, i. 2. 14. Oa. "Is $g\delta$ | ads, th δ | rns (485), nét | tles, táils | of wásps."

0i. "Jóint | by jóint, | but wé | will knów | his púrpose."

"What whéels, | racks, fires? | What fláy | ing, bb | illng?"
W. T. iii. 2. 177.

"God sáve | you, sír. | Where have you | been bro | illng?"

Hen. VIII. iv. 1. 56.

"Of théir | cwn chó | ice: óne | is Jún | ius Brútus."

Coriol. i. 1. 220.

"What sáy | you, bó | ys? Will | you bíde | with hím?"
T. A. v. 2. 13.

(1). "Than in | my thought | it lies. | Góod | my lord."

A. W. v. 3. 184.

It might be thought that in the above the prolongation rests on lies (lieth), but that we have also

"Good | my lord, | give me | thy fav | our still."

Temp. iv. 1. 204

"The gó | od góds | will móck | me prés | entlý." A. and C. iii. 4. 15.

"He stráight | declín | ed, dró | op'd, tóok | it déeply."

W. T. ii. 3. 14.

"Tó it, | boy! Már | cus, ló | ose when | I bíd." T. A. iv. 3. 58.

"Hours, min | utes, nó | on, mid | night, and | all eves." W. T. i. 2. 290.

"But ró | om, fái | ry, hére | comes O'b | erón."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 58.

"Bóot | less hóme | and wéath | er-béat | en báck." I Hen. IV. iii. I. 67.

"Pull off | my bb | ot: hard | er, hard | er, so."

Lear, iv. 6, 177.

"But mó | ody | and dú | ll mél | anchóly."

C. of E. v. 1. 79.

Some may prefer to read "dull" as a monosyllable; but I can find no instance of "melancholy" to justify such a scansion.

"Lear. To this | detest | ed gró | om. Gon.

A't | vour chóice, sir.'

Lear, ii. 4. 220,

either "groom" or "your" should be dissyllabized.

"I' do | wánder | évery | whére

Swifter | than the | moon's | sphere."-M. N. D. ii. I. 7.

Ou. "Which élse | would frée | have wrb | ught. A'll | is wéll." Macbeth, ii. 1. 19.

"Should drink | his blood- | mounts | up to | the air." In MARLOW, Edw. II.

Collier (Hist. of British Stage, vol. iii.) thinks "mounts" the emphatic word to be dwelt on for the length of a dissyllable.

"Own" is perhaps emphasized by repetition (or "Are" is ? dissyllable, as "fare," "ere," "where," 480) in

"Hel. Mine own | and not | mine o | wn. A're | you súre? Dem.

M. N. D. iv. 1. 189.

Ov. The last syllable of "destroy" seems prolonged in "To fright | them ére | destró | y. Bút | come in." Coriol. iv 5. 149 U. It may be that "fume" is emphasized in

"She's tíck | led nów. | Her fú | me néeds | no spúrs."
2 Hen. VI. i 3. 153.

(Unless "needs" is prolonged either by reason of the double vowel or because "needs" is to be pronounced "needeth.")

"Trúe | nobíl | ity is | exémpt | from féar."

2 Hen. VI. iv. 1. 129.

Titania speaks in verse throughout, and therefore either "and" must be accented and "hoard" prolonged, or we must scan as follows:

- "The squír | rel's hóard, | and fétch | thee néw | `núts."

 M. N. D. iv. 1. 40.
- "Cord. That wants | the méans | to léad it. |

 Mess. | Néws, | mádam."

 Lear, iv. 4. 20.
- 485. Monosyllables containing a vowel followed by " \dot{r} " are often prolonged.
- A. "Thyr. Héar it | apár | t.

 Cleo.

 Nóne | but fríends: | say bóldly."

 A. and C. iii. 13, 47.

"Hó | ly séems | the quárrel
Upón | his grá | ce's pá | rt; bláck | and féarful
O'n the | oppó | ser."—A. W. iii. 1. 5.

"Well fítt(ed) | in \(\delta \) | rts, gl\(\delta \) | ri\(\text{us} \) | in \(\delta \) | rts, \(\text{L} \) \(\L \) | \(\text{L} \) |

"Strikes his | breast há | rd, ánd | anón | he cásts."

Hen, VIII. iii. 2. 117.

"But could | be willing | to má | reh on | to Cálais."

Hen. V. iii. 6. 150.

"Hárk | ye, lórds, | ye sée | I have gíven | her phýsic." T. A. iv. 2. 162.

"Lóok how | he mákes | to Cæ's | ar, már | k hím."
7. C. iii. 2. 18.

Ei. "I dréamt | last níght | óf the | three wé | ird sisters."

Macbeth, ii. 1. 20 (Folio, "weyard").

"A'nd be | times I' | will to | the we' | ird sisters."

Ib. iii. 4. 133, iv. 1. 136.

Or "will" is perhaps emphasized and the prefix in "betimes" ignored. In either case "weird" is a dissyllable.

"The we' | ird sis | ters hand | in hand."--Macbeth, i. 3. 32.

"A thi | rd thinks | without | expénse | at áll."
 I Hen. VI.

I Hen. VI. i. 1. 76.

"Of Lion | el dúke | of Clárence, | the thi | rd són."

10. ii. 5. 75.

"To king | Edward | the thi | rd, where | as he."—Ib. 76.

O. "Bru. Spread fúr | thér (478).

Men. One w6 | rd móre, | one wórd."

Coriol, iii, 1, 311.

"Máke the | prize líght. | One wôr | d móre, | I chárge thee."—Temp. i. 2. 452.

"Ham. One wôr | d môre, | good lády. Queen.

Whát shall | I dó?"

Hamlet, iii. 4. 180.

"Do móre | than thís | in spó | rt; fá | ther, fáther!"

Lear, ii. 1. 37.

" Wôrse | and worse ! | She will | not come ! | O, vile !"
T. of Sh. v. 2. 93.

"Nót in | the wó | rst ránk | of mán | hood, sáy't."

Macbeth, iii. 1. 103.

"Why só, | brave ló | rds, whén | we join | in léague."
T. A. iv. 2. 136.

"My lb | rd, will | it pléase | you páss | alóng."
Rich. III. iii I. 110.

"Of góod | old A' | brahám. | Lbrds | appéllants." Rích. II. iv. 1. 104.

("A'ppellants" is not Shakespearian.)

"But téll | me, is | young Gebr | ge Stán | ley líving?"

Ib. v. 5. 9.

or, possibly,

"But téll me, | Is young | George Stán | ley líving?"

Ou. "Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,
The fou | rth son: | York claims | it from | the third."
2 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 55.

So, perhaps,

"And long | live Hen | ry fou | rth of | that name."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 112.

("Four" was often spelt "fower." "Henry" is not pronounced "Hén(e)rý" in Richard II.)

"Heart," not "you," ought to be emphatic in

"Nót by | the mát | ter whích | your héar | t prómpts you."

Coriol. iii. 2. 54.

Probably we ought to arrange the difficult line, Macbeth, iv. 1. 105, thus:

"A'nd an | etérn | al eú | rse fáll | on yóu. Let me knów. Why sínks," &c.?

486. Monosyllables are rarely prolonged except as in the above instances. In some cases, however, as in "bath," "dance," a vowel varies very much in its pronunciation, and is often pronounced (though the incorrectness of the pronunciation would now be generally recognized) in such a way as to give a quasi-dissyllabic sound.

"You and | your crá | fts, you | have cráft | ed fáir."

Coriol. iv. 6. 118.

"I'f that | you will | Fránce | win,
Thén with | Scotland | first be | gin."—Hen. V. i. 2. 167.

In a few other cases monosyllables are, perhaps, prolonged:

"You sháll | read ús | the wi | ll. Cæ's | ar's will!"

7. C. iii. 2. 153

"Cas. Cicer | 0 6n | e? Cic | eró | is déad."—Ib. iv. 3. 179.

"I' will | éver | bé your | héad, Só be | góne; | yóu are | spéd."—M. of V. ii. 9. 72.

"Then sháll | the réalm | of A'lb | ión Côme | to gréat | confús | ión."—Lear, iii. 2. 92.

"For our | best áct. | I'f we | shall stá | nd still."

Hen. VIII. i. 2. 85

(Can "all" have dropped out after "shall?")

"The thánk | ings óf | a kí | ng. I' | am, sír."

Cymb. v. 5, 407.

"Hére she | cómes, | cúrst and | sád : Cúpid | ís a | knávish | lád."—M. N. D. iii. 2. 439.

"Well" (481) is prolonged as an exclamation, and perhaps there is a prolongation of the same sound in

"Mêlt | ed ás | the snów | séems to | me nów."

M. N. D. iv. 1. 163.

So, in "The gó | ds, nót | the patríc | ians, máke | it, ánd,"

Coriol. i. 1. 75.

"gods" is probably prolonged by emphasis, and the second "the" is not accented. So "most" in

"With Ti | tus Lárcius, | a mó | st vál | iant Róman."

Coriol. i. 2. 14.

"Larcius" has probably but one accent. However, "a" appears sometimes to have the accent.

So, perhaps,

"Ang. Where práy | ers cró | ss.

Isab. A't | what hóur | to-mórrow?"

M. for M. ii. 2, 159.

"Drachm" (Folio "Drachme") is a dissyllable in

"A't a | crack'd drách | m! Cúsh | ions, léad | en spóons."

Coriol. i. 5. 6.

487. E mute pronounced. This is a trace of the Early English pronunciation.

Es, s. "Your gráce | misták | es: ón | ly tó | be bríef."
Rich. II. iii. 3. 9.

"Who's thère, | that knóck | (e)s só | impér | iouslý?"
I Hen. VI. i. 3. 5.

"Well, lét | them rést : | come híth | er, Cát | &bý."
Rich. III. iii. 1. 157.

"Here cómes | his sérv | ant. Hów | now, Cát | esbý?"

10. 7. 58.

"Till áll | thy bónes | with ách | es máke | thee róar."

Temp. i. 2. 370.

"A'ches | contráct, | and stárve | your súp | ple jóints."
T. of A. i. 1. 257, v. 1. 202.

But this word seems to have been pronounced, when a noun, "aatch." At least it is made by Spenser, Sh. Cal. Aug. 4, to hyme with "matche."

"Send Có | levile | with his | conféd | erátes."
2 Ilen. IV. iv. 3, 79.

So "Worces | ter, get | thee gone! | For I' | do see."

I Hen. IV. i. 3. 15, iii. I. 5, v. 5. 14 (Fol. omits "thee").
"We have; | whereupon (497) | the éarl | of Worc | estér."
Rich, II. ii, 2. 58.

So "Gloucester," I Hen. VI. i. 3. 4, 6, 62, and

"O lóv | ing úncle (465), | kind dúke | of Glóu | cestér."

1 Hen. VI, iii, 1. 142

"This is the flower that smiles on every one
To show | his teeth | as white | as whá | le's bone."

L. L. L. v. 2. 332.

So, in a rhyming passage,

"Whose shád | ow thé | dismíss | ed báche | lor lóves Béing | lass-lórn; | thy póle | -clipt vín | e-yárd And thý | sea-márge, | stérile | and róck | y-hárd." Temp. iv. 1. 68.

"She név | er hád | so swéet | a cháng | eling."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 23.

Perhaps "Fran. They ván | ish'd stráng | ely.
Seb.
No mát | ter, sínce."
Temp. iii. 3. 40. But see 506.

Possibly "cradles" may approximate to a trisyllable, "crad(e)les" (so "jugg(e)ler," &c. 477), in

"Does thoughts | unveil | in their | dumb crá | dlés."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3, 200.

The e is probably not of French but of Latin origin in "statue:"

"She dréamt | to-night | she sáw | my stát | ué."

7. C. ii. 2. 76.

"E'ven at | the base | of Póm | pey's stát | ué."
(Folio) 1b. iii. 2. 192.

Globe "statua."

So in the plural:

"But líke | dumb stát | ués | of bréath | ing stónes."

Rich. III. iii. 7. 25

Globe, "statuas."

"No marble statua nor high Aspiring pyramid be raised."—HABINGTON (Walker).

488. The "e" in commandment, entertainment, &c., which originally preceded the final syllable, is sometimes retained, and, even where not retained, sometimes pronounced.

"Be vál | ued 'gáinst | your wífe's | commánd | (e)mént."

* M. of V. iv. 1. 451.

"From him | I háve | expréss | commánd | (e)mént."

* I Hen. VI. i. 3. 20.

The e is inserted in

"If to women he be bent

They have at commandement."—P. 1. 418.

"Good sir, | you'll give | them én | tertáin | (e)mént."
B. J. Fox, iii. 2.

2 In both cases the first folio inserts c. In the former the folic reads against.

Perhaps an e is to be sounded between d and v in

"A'nton | y Wóod | (e)ville, | her bróth | er thére."
Rich, III. i. 1. 67.

489. E final in French names is often retained in sound as well as spelling:

"The mél | anchól | y Jáq | ues grieves | at thát."

A. Y. L. ii. 1. 26.

"O mý | Parôll | es, théy | have márr | ied mé."

A. W. ii. 3. 289.

"His grace | is at | Marseill | es, to | which place."

Ib. iv. 3. 9; T. of Sh. ii. 1. 377.

"Dáughter | to Châr | lemáin, | who wás | the són."
Hen. V. i. 2. 75.

"Guiénne, | Champág | ne, Rhé | ims, O'r | leáns."
1 Hen. VI. i. 1. 60.

"This prince | Montáig | ne, if | he bé | no móre.

"He cán | not sáy | but thát | Montáig | ne yét."

DANIEL (on Florio).

"Now E'sp | eránc | e, Pér | cy, ánd | set ón."

1 Hen. IV. v. 2. 97.

"Cáll'd the | brave lórd | Pónton | de Sáu | traillés."

I Hen. VI. i. 4. 28. "Díeu de | battái | lles! Whére | have théy | this méttle?"

"Dieu de | battán | lles! Where | have they | this mettle?"

Hen. V: iii. 5. 15.

So in "Vive:"

""
Vive | le roi,' | as I' | have bánk'd | their tówns."

K. J. v. 2. 104.

Thus, perhaps, we may explain the apparent trisyllabic "marshal" by a reference to "mareschal:"

"Great már | (e)shál | to Hén | (e)rý (477) | the Síxth."

1 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 70.

"With wing | ed háste | tó the | lord már | (e)shál."

I Hen. IV. iv. 4. 2.

On the other hand, the influence of the r (see 463) seems to make "marshall" a quasi-monosyllable in

"Lord márshal, | commánd | our óff | icérs | at árms."
Rich. II. i. 1. 204.

The i in the French "capitaine" is invisibly active in

"A. wise | stout cáp | (i)táin, | and sóon | persuáded." 3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 30; Macbeth, i. 2. 34.

ACCENT.

490, Words in which the accent is nearer the end than with us.

Many words, such as "edict," "outrage," "contract," &c., are accented in a varying manner. The key to this inconsistency is, perhaps, to be found in Ben Jonson's remark that all dissyllabic nouns, if they be simple, are accented on the first. Hence "edict" and "outrage" would generally be accented on the first, but, when they were regarded as derived from verbs, they would be accented on the second. And so, perhaps, when "exile" is regarded as a person, and therefore a "simple" noun, the accent is on the first, but when as "the state of being exiled," it is on the last. But naturally, where the difference is so slight, much variety may be expected. Ben Jonson adds that "all verbs coming from the Latin, either of the supine or otherwise, hold the accent as it is found in the first person present of those Latin verbs; as from célebre, célebrate," Without entering into the details of this rule, it seems probable that "edict," "precépt," betray Latin influence. same fluctuation between the English and French accent is found in CHAUCER (Prof. Child, quoted by Ellis, E. E. Pronunc. i. 369), who uses "batáille," C. T. 990, and "bátail," ib. 2099: "Fortúne," ib. 917, and "fórtune," ib. 927; "daungér," and "dáunger." Abjéct (Latin).—"Wé are | the quéen's | abjécts, | and múst | obéy." Rich. III. i. 1. 106.

But if the monosyllable "queen" be emphasized, we may scan
"Wé are | the qué | en's ábjects, | and múst | obéy."

Accéss (Latin). - W. T. v. I. 87.

Aspéct (Latin). -A. and C. i. 5. 33; T. N. i. 4. 28.

Charácters,—"I sáy | without | charác | ters fáme | lives lóng," Rich. III. iii. 1. 81; Hamlet, i. 3. 59.

Comméndable.

"Thanks fáith, | for sílence | is ónly | comménd | ablé In a néat's | tongue dríed | and a máid | not vénd | iblé." M. of V. i. 1. 111.

This shows how we must scan

"Tis swéet and (497) | comménd | able in | your ná | ture, Hámlet."—Hamlet, i. 2. 87.

But, on the other hand,

"And pówer, | untó | itsélf | most cóm | mendáble."

Coriol, iv. 7. 51

Commèrce (Latin). - So arrange

"Péaceful | commèrce | from dí | vidá- | ble shóres."
Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 105.

Confiscate (Latin). - C. of E. i. 1. 21; but "confiscate," ib. i. 2. 2.

Consórt (Latin).—"What sáy'st | thou? Wilt | thou bé | of our | consórt?"—T. G. of V. iv. 1. 64.

' Edmund. Yes, madam,

He was | of that | consort.

Reg. No már | vel, thén." Lear, ii. 1. 99.

Contráry (Latin).—" Our wills | and fátes | do só | contrá | ry rún."

Hamlet, iii. 2. 221.

Contráct (Latin).

"Márk our | contráct. | Márk your | divórce, | young sít."
W. T. iv. 4. 428; A. W. ii. 3. 185; 1 Hen. VI. iii.
I. 143, v. 4. 156; Rich. III. iii. 7. 5, 6; Temp.
ii. I. 151.

Compact (Latin, noun).—Rich. III. ii. 2. 133; J. C. iii. 1. 215.

Différent (Latin).—" And much | différ | ent from | the mán | he wás."—C. of E. v. 1. 46.

Here, however, by emphasizing the monosyllable "much," the word "different" may be pronounced in the usual way.

Edict (Latin) .- 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 258, and

"It stánds | as án | edict | in dés | tiný."

M. N. D. i. 1. 151.

Effigies (Latin unaltered).

"And ás | mine éye | doth hís | efft | gies witness."

A. Y. L. ii. 7. 193.

Envý (verb; noun, énvy).

"I's it | for him | you dó | envý | me só?"—T. of Sh. ii. 1. 18.

Executions.—Hen. V. i. 2. 203 is not an instance, for it means "executioners." In its legal sense, Ib. iv. 2. 51, it is accented as with us.

Exile (Latin). -R. and J. v. 3. 211 (frequent).

Instinct (noun, Latin).

"Háth, by | instinct, | knówledge | from óth | ers' éyes."

2 Hen, IV, i 1 86.

"Bý a | divíne | instluct | men's mínds | mistrúst."
Rich. III. ii. 3. 42; Coriol. v. 3. 35.

Intó .- See 457 a.

Miséry.—Some commentators lay the accent on the penultimate in

"Of súch | misér | y dóth | she cút | me óff,"

M. of V. iv. 1, 272,

but much more probably "a" has dropped out after "such." The passage

"And búss | thee as | thy wife. | Miser | y's love,"

K. 7. iii. 4. 35.

proves nothing. The pause-accent is sufficient to justify "misery." Nothing.—See Something, below.

Obditrate (Latin).—3 Hen. VI. i. 4. 142; M. of V. iv. 1. 8; T. A. ii. 3. 160; R. of L. 429.

"A'rt thou | obdil | rate, flin | ty, hard | as stéel?"

V. and A. 198.
Opportune (Latin).—"And most | opport | une to | our need |

I háve."—W. T. iv. 4. 511.
"The móst | oppórt | une pláce, | the stróng'st | suggéstion."

Temp. iv. 1. 26.

Outráge.—I Hen. VI. iv. I. 126. Perémptory (perhaps).

"Yea, mís | tress, áre | you só | perémp | tóry?"

iP. of T. ii. 5. 73.

This accentuation is not found elsewhere in Shakespeare: but the author of *Pericles of Tyre* may have used it. It is possible, however, to scan

"Yea, mís | t(e)réss (477), | are you | so pé | rempt(o)rý?"

Porténts.—"Thése are | porténts: | but yét | I hópe, | I hópe."

Othello, v. 2. 45.

So I Hen. IV. ii. 3. 65; Tr. and Cr. i. 3. 96.

Hence "fear" is not a dissyllable in

"A pród | igý | of féar, | ánd a | portent."

I Hen. IV. v. I. 20.

If "and" is correct, we must probably scan as follows:

"And thése | doth she applý | for wárn | ings ánd | porténts." 7. C. ii. 2. 80.

Precepts (Latin).—Hen. V. iii. 3. 26; but "précepts," Hamlet, ii. 2. 142.

Presclence retains the accent of science, indicating that the word was not familiar enough as yet to be regarded as other than a compound:

"Forestall | presci | ence and | estéem | no act."

7'r. and Cr. i: 3. 199.

Record (noun, Latin).—Rich. III. iii. 1. 72, iv. 4. 28; T. N. v. 1. 253.

Sepülchre (Latin).—"Bánish'd | this fráil | sepül | chre óf | our flésh."—Rich II. i. 3, 194.

"Or, at | the léast, | in hérs | septil | chre thine."
T. G. of V. iv. 2. 118.

"May líke | wise bé | sepúl | chred in | thy shade."

R. of L. 805; and, perhaps, Lear, ii. 4. 134. Siníster (Latin).—"Tis nó | sinís | ter nór | no áwk | ward cláim."

Hen. V. ii. 4. 85.

So, but comically, in

"And thís | the crán | ny ís, | ríght and | sinister,
Through whích | the féar | ful lóv | ers áre | to whísper."

M. N. D. v. 1. 164.

Sojourn'd (perhaps) in

"My héart | to hér | but ás | guest-wise | sojóurn'd."

10. iii. 2. 171.

But (?) emphasize "her," and scan

"My héart | to hér | ' bút | as gúest- | wise sójourn'd."

Something (sometimes perhaps). "My inward | sóul
At nó | thing trémb | les: át | something | it grieves."
Rich. II. ii. 2. 12.

Compare perhaps

"And I' | nothing | to back | my suit | at all."

Rich. III. i. 1. 236.

But, if "I" be emphasized, "nothing" may be pronounced as usual.

"I féar | nothing | what máy | be sáid | agáinst me."

Hen. VIII. i. 2. 212.

But "fear" may be a dissyllable, 480.

Sweetheart.—Hen. VIII. i. 4. 94: heart being regarded as a noun instead of the suffix -ard.

Triumphing (Latin) sometimes.

"As 't were | triumph | ing at | mine en | emies."
Rich. III. iii. 4. 91.

Untó. - See 457 a.

Welcome.—" Nor friends, | nor foes, | to mé | welcome | you are." Rich. II. ii. 3. 170.

This particular passage may be explained by a pause, but "welcome" is common in other authors.

Wherefore (in some cases), though it can often be taken as "thérefore," and explained by a preceding pause.

"O'ft have | you (ôft | en have | you thanks | therefore)."

Tr. and Cr. iii. 3, 20.

"And wé | must yéarn | therefbre."-Hen. V. ii. 3. 6.

" Hate mé! | Wherefore? | O mé! | what néws, | my lóve."

M. N. D. iii, 2, 272.

Perhaps

"Fór the | sound mán. | Déath on | my státe, | wherefore?"

Lear, ii. 4. 113.

But better

"Death on my state! (512)

Whérefore | should hé | sit hére? | This áct | persuádes
me,"

491. Ised, when ending polysyllables, generally has now a certain emphasis. This is necessary, owing to the present broad pronunciation of *i*. Such polysyllables generally have now two accents, the principal accent coming first. But in Shakespeare's time it would seem that the *i* approximated in some of these words to the French *i*, and, the -ed being pronounced, the *i* in -ised was unemphatic. Hence the Elizabethan accent of some of these words differs from the modern accent.

Advertised.—"As I' | by friends | am well | advert | ised."
Rich. III. iv. 4, 501.

"Wherein | he might | the king | his lord | advertise."

Ilen. VIII. ii. 4. 178.

"I wás | advért | ised théir | great gén | eral slépt."

Tr. and Cr. ii. 2. 111.

So M. for M. i. 1. 42.

Chástised.—"And whén | this árm | of míne | hath chás | tiséd."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 331.

"This cause | of Rome, | and chás | tised | with arms."

T. A. i. 1. 32.

This explains:

Canónized.—" Canón | izéd, | and wór | shipp'd ás | a sáint."

K. J. iii. 1. 177.

"Whý thy | canón | iz'd bónes, | héarsed | in déath."

Hamlet, i. 4. 47

"Are brá | zen ím | age(s) [471] óf | canón | iz'd sáints." 2 Hen. VI. i. 3. 63.

Authórized. -- "Authór | iz'd bý | her grán | dam. Sháme | itsélf."

Macbeth, iii. 4. 66.

"Author | izing | thy tres | pass with | compare." -- Sonn. 35.

"His rúde | ness só | with hís | authór | iz'd youth."

L. C. 104.

So once:

Solémnised.—"Of Já | ques Fál | conbrídge | solém | niséd."
L. L. ii, 1, 42.
But in M. of V. "sólemnised."

492. Words in which the accent was nearer the beginning than with us. Ben Jonson (p. 777) says all nouns, both dissyllabic (if they be "simple") and trisyllabic, are accented on the first syllable. Perhaps this accounts for the accent on confessor, &c. The accent on the first syllable was the proper noun accent; the accent on the second (which in the particular instance of confessor ultimately prevailed) was derived from the verb.

Archbishop.—"The már | shal ánd | the árch | bishóp | are stróng."

2 Hen. IV. ii. 3. 42, 65.

Cément (noun).

"Your tém | ples búrn | ed in | their cé | ment and."

Coriol. iv. 6. 85.

So the verb, A. and C. ii. 1. 48; iii. 2. 29.

Cômpell'd (when used as an adjective).

"This côm | pell'd fór | tune, háve | your mouth | fill'd úp."

Hen. VIII. ii. 3. 87.

"I tálk | not of | your sóul : | our cóm | pell'd síns."

M. for M. ii. 4. 57.

Cómplete.—"A máid | of gráce | and cóm | plete máj | estý."

L. L. L. i. 1. 137

So Hamlet, i. 4. 52; Hen. VIII. i. 2. 118; Rich. III. iii. 1. 189.

Cônceal'd.—" My côn | ceal'd là | dy tó | her cán | cell'd lóve."

R. and J. iii. 3. 98

Cónduct.-- The verb follows the noun "safe-cónduct" in

"Safe-con | ducting | the reb | els from | their ships."
Rich. III. iv. 4. 483.

But the noun is conduct in T. A. iv. 3. 65.

Confessor.—Hen. VIII. i. 2. 149; R. and J. ii. 6. 21, iii. 3. 49.

"O'ne of | our có (sic) | vent ánd | his cón | fessór."

M. for M. iv. 3, 133

Côngeal d.—"O'pen | their côn | geal d mouths | and bléed | afrésh,"—Rich, III, i. 2, 56,

Cónjure (in the sense of "entreat").—T. G. of V. ii. 7. 2; frequent.

Cónsign'd.—"With dís | tinct bréath, | and cón | sign'd kíss | es
tó them."—Tr. and Cr. iv. 4. 47.

See "distinct" below.

Córrosive.—"Cáre is | no cúre, | but rá | ther cór | rosive."

I Hen. VI. iii. 3. 3; 2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 403.

Délectable.—" Máking | the hárd | way sóft | and dé | lectáble."
Rich. II. ii. 3. 7.

Détestable.—" And I' | will kiss | thy $d\acute{e}$ | $test\acute{a}$ | ble bónes." $K. \not \exists$. iii. 4. 29; T. of A. iv. 1. 33.

Distinct.—"To offend | and júdge | are dís | tinct off | icés."
See "consign'd" above.

M. of V. ii. 9. 61.

Enginer. See Pioner below.

Fórlorn.—"Now fór | the hón | our óf | the fór | lorn Frénch."
I Hen. VI. i. 2. 19.

Húmane.—"It is | the húm | ane wáy, | the oth | er course."

Coriol. iii. 1. 327.

Máintain.—"That hére | you máin | tain sév | eral fác | tións."

I Hen. VI. i. 1.71.

Máture.—So apparently in

"Of murder | ous léchers: | ánd in | the má | ture time."

Lear, iv. 6, 228.

This is like "náture," but I know no other instance of "máture." *Méthinks* (sometimes).

"So your | sweet hue | which mé | thinks stíll | doth stánd."

Sonn. 104.

I cannot find a conclusive instance in Shakespeare, but this word is often (Walker) thus accented in Elizabethan writers.

Mútiners. - Coriol, i. 1. 255. See Pioners below.

Myself (perhaps, but by no means certainly, in)

"I mý | self fight | not ónce | in fór | ty yéar."

I Hen. Vl. 1. 3. 91.

But certainly himself, myself, &c. are often found in Elizabethan authors, especially in Spenser:

"Mourns inwardly and makes to himselfe mone."

SPENS. F. Q. ii. 1. 42.

The reason for this is that self, being an adjective and not a noun, is not entitled to, and had not yet invariably received, the emphasis which it has acquired in modern times.

And so, perhaps:

"And bánd | ing thém | selves in | contra (490) | ry párts,"
I Hen. VI. iii. I. 81.

Northampton.—"Last night | I héar | they láy | at North- |
ampton."—Rich. III. ii. 4. 1.

O'bscure (adj.; as a verb, obscure).

"To ríb | her cére | cloth in | the bb | seure gráve."

M. of V. ii. 7. 51.

"His méans | of déath, | his bb | scure fu | nerál."

Hamlet, iv. 5. 213.

Observant.—" Than twén | ty síll | y dúck | ing bb | servants." Lear, ii. 2. 109.

Perséver—"Ay, dó, | persév | er, count | erféit | sad lóoks."

M. N. D. iii. 2. 236; A. W. iii. 7. 31; K. J. ii. 1. 421;

Hamlet, i. 2. 92.

This is the Latin accent in accordance with Ben Jonson's rule.
"Bounty, | persév | (e)rance, mér | cy, lów | linéss."
Macbeth, 1v. 3. 93.

Pérspective. - A. W. v. 3. 48; Rich. II. ii. 2. 18.

The double accent seems to have been disliked by the Elizabethans. They wrote and pronounced "muleters" for "muleteers," "enginer" (*Hamlet*, iii. 4. 206) for "engineer," "pioners" for "pioneers," This explains:

Ploners.—"A worth | y ploner. | Once more | remove, | good friends."—Hamlet, i. 5. 162.

Plébeians (almost always).

"The pléb | eiáns | have gót | your fél | low-tríbune."

Coriol. v. 4. 39; i. 9. 7, &c.

This explains

"Lét them | have cúsh | ions bý you, | You're pléb | ciáns."
16. iii, 1. 101.

Exceptions: Hen. V. v. Chorus, 27; T. A. i. 1. 231.

So "Epicurean" in Elizabethan authors and A. and C. ii. 1. 21 The Elizabethans generally did not accent the e in such words.

Pursuit. -- " In pur | suit of | the thing | she would | have stay."

Sonn. 143

"We trí | fle tíme. | I prí | thee púr | sue sentence."

M. of V. iv. 1. 298.

Púrveyor.—" To bé | his púr | veybr : | but hé | rides wéll."

Macbeth, i. 6. 22.

Quintessence.—" Téaching | áll that | réad to | knów

The quint | essence | of ev | ery sprite."—A. Y. L. iii. 2. 147.

Récordér (?).—"To bé | spoke tó | but by | the ré | cordér."
Rich, III, iii, 7, 30,

So also Walker, who quotes from Donne's Satires, v. 248, Ed. 1633:

"Recorder to Destiny on earth, and she."

But this line might be scanned otherwise.

Rélapse:-"Kílling | in ré | lapse of | mortal | itý."

Hen. V. iv. 3. 107.

Rhéumatic.—"O'erworn, | despis | ed, rhéu | matic, | and óld."

V. and A. 135; M. N. D. ii. 1. 105.

So "These prág | matíc | young mén | at théir | own wéapons," B. J.

Sécure. — "Upón | my sé | cure hour | thy ún | cle stóle."

Hamlet, i. 5. 61; Othello, iv. 1. 72.

Séquester'd.—" Whý are | you sé | questér'd | from áll | your tráin?"
T. A. ii. 3. 75.
Súccessor (rare).

"For béing | not própp'd | by án | cestrý | whose gráce Chalks súcc | essórs | their wáy, | nor cáll'd | upón," &c. Hen. VIII. i. 1. 60.

Súccessive (rare).—" Are nów | to háve | no súcc | essíve | degrées."

M. for M. ii. 2. 98.

Towards (sometimes).

"And sháll | contín | ue our grác | es tó | wards hím."
Macbeth, i. 6. 30.

"I gó, | and tó | wards thrée | or four | o'clóck."
Rich. III. iii. 5. 101.

Compare "Should, líke | a swáll | ow préy | ing the wards storms."

B. J. Poetast. iv. 7.

"O' the plágue, | he's sase | from think | ing tó | ward London."

B. J. Alchemist, i. 1.

So, perhaps,

"I am | informed | that he | comes to | wards London." 3 Hen. VI. iv. 4. 26.

"And to | ward Lon | don they | do bend | their course." Rich, III. iv. 5. 14.

U'tensils (perhaps).

"He has brave itensils; for so he calls them."

Temp. iii. 2. 104.

Without. - See 457 a.

The English tendency, as opposed to the Latin, is illustrated by the accentuation of the first syllable of "ignominy," and its consequent contraction into "ignomy" (I Hen. IV. v. 4. 100, &c.).

VERSES.

493. A proper Alexandrine with six accents, such as-"And now | by winds | and waves | my life | less limbs | are tossed,"-DRYDEN.

is seldom found in Shakespeare.

494. Apparent Alexandrines. The following are Alexandrines only in appearance. The last foot contains, instead of one extra syllable, two extra syllables, one of which is slurred (see 467-9):-

"The núm | bers of | our host | and make | discovery (discovery)."—Macheth, v. 4. 6.

"He thínks | me nów | incáp | ablé; | conféderates." Tempest, i. 2. 111.

"In vir | tue thán | in vén | geance : théy | being pénitent." Ib. v. 1. 28.

"And more | divers | itý | of sounds | all horrible."-Ib. 235.

"In bitt | ernéss. | The comm | on ex | ecutioner." A. Y. L. iii. 5. 3.

"I sée | no môre | in you | than in | the brdinary."-Ib. 42.

"Were rich | and hon | ourable; | besides | the gentlemen." T. G. of V. iii. 1. 64.

"Which since | have stead | ed much; | so, of | his gentleness." - Temp. i. 2. 165; Rich. III. v. 3. 245; Hen. V. ii. 2. 71.

For the contraction of "gentleman" to "gentl'man," or even "genman," see 461.

- "Are you | not grieved | that A'r | thur is | his prisones (468)?"—K. J. iii. 4. 123.
- "And I' | must frée | ly have | the half | of anything."

 M. of V. iii. 2. 251.
- "To másk | thy mónst | rous vísage. | Seek nóne | conspiracy."—J. C. ii. 1. 81.
- "Had hé | been váng | u(i)sher, ás, | bý the | same côvenant."—Hamlet, i. 1. 93.
- "My lórd, | I cáme | to sée | your fá | ther's fúneral."

 1b. i. 2. 176.
- "Untáint | ed, ún | exám | in'd, frée, | at *llberty.*"
 Rich. III. iii. 6. 9.
- "And só | doth míne. | I múse | why she's | at liberty."

 Ib. i. 3. 305.

 So, perhaps,
 - "From tóo | much lí | bertý, | my Lú | cio, *llberty.*"

 M. for M. 2. 129.
 - "A'bso | lute Mí | lan. Mé, | poor mán, | my llbrary."
 Tempest, i. 2. 109.
- "Shall sée | advánt | ageá | ble fór | our dignity."

 Hen. V. v. 2. 88.
 unless "advántage | able fór | ."
- 495. Sometimes the two syllables are inserted at the end of the third or fourth foot—
 - "The flux | of company. | Anon | a care | less herd."

 A. Y. L. ii. 1. 52.
 - "To cáll | for récompense; | appéar | it tó | your mínd."
 Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 3.
 - "Is nót | so éstima | ble, pró | fitá | ble néither."

 M. of V. i. 3. 167.
 - "O'erbéars | your ófficers; | the ráb | ble cáll | him lórd."

 Hamlet, iv. 5. 102.
 - "To mé | invét*erate*, | héarkens | my bróth | er's súit."

 Temp. i. 2. 122.
 - "With all | prerógative. | Hénce his | ambít | ion grówing."

 **Th. i. 2, 105.
 - "In báse | appliance(s) (471). | This out | ward sáint | ed députy (468)."—M. for M. iii. 1. 89.
 - "Than wé | bring mén | to cómfort them ('em). | The fáult's | your ówn."—Tempest, ii. 1. 134-5.

- 496. In other cases the appearance of an Alexandrine arises from the non-observance of contractions—
 - "I dáre | abíde | no lónger (454). | Whíther (466) should | I flý?"—Macheth, iv. 2. 73.
 - "She lé | vell'd át | our pûr | pose(s) (471), 2nd, | béing (470) royal."—A. and C. v. 2. 339.
 - "All mórt | al cónse | quence(s) (471) háve | pronóunced | me thús."—Macbeth, v. 3. 5.
 - "As mís | ers dó | by béggars (454); | neither (466) gáve | to mé."—Tr. and Cr. iii. 3. 142.
- 497. Apparent Alexandrines. The following can be explained by the omission of unemphatic syllables:—
 - "Hor. Háil to | your lórdship. |
 - Ham. I am (I'm) glád | to sée | you wéll."

 Hamlet, i. 2. 160.
 - "Whereof | he is the (he's th') head; | then if | he says | he loves you."—Ib. i. 3. 24.
 - "Thou art swórn | as déeply | to (t') efféct | what wé | inténd."—Rich. III. iii. 1. 158.
 - "I had thought, | my lord, | to have learn'd | his health | of you."—Rich. II. ii. 3. 24.
 - "That tráce him | in his (in's) líne. | No bóast | ing líke | a fóol."—Macbeth, iv. 1. 153.
 - "In séeming | to augmént | it wástes | it. Bé | advís'd."

 Hen, VIII, i. 1, 145.
 - "When mír(a) | cles háve | by the gréat | est béen | deníed."

 A. W. ii. 1. 144.
 - "Persuádes | me it is (t's) oth | erwise; | howe'er | it bé."
 Rich. III. ii. 2. 29.
 - "A worth | y off (i)cer | i' the war, | but in | solent."
 - **I prómise | you I' am ('m) | afráid | to héar | you téll it."

 **Ib. i. 4. 65.
 - "Come, sis | ter, cóusin | I would ('ld') sáy, | pray pár | don mé."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 105.
 - "That made | them do it ('t). | They are ('re) wise | and hon | (ou)rable."—7. C. iii. 2. 218.
 - "With all | prerog(a)tive; | hence his | ambit | ion growing."—Tempest, i. 2. 105.
 - "Mine éyes | even sóc | iablé | to the shów | of thíne."

 1b. v. 1, 63.

" As gréat | to mé | as láte; | and support | ablé."

Temp. v. 1. 146

unless "supportable" can be accented on the first.

"Ostentation" is perhaps for "ostention" (Walker), and "the" is "th'," in

"The ostentation of our love which, left unshown."

A. and C. iii. 6. 52.

"Is" ought probably to be omitted in

"With gól | den chéru | bims (is) frétted; | her án | diróns."

Cymb. ii. 4. 88.

"So sáucy | with the hánd | of shé | here—whát's | her náme?"—A. and C. iii. 13. 98.

"Come Lám | mas éve | at níght | shall she bé | fourtéen."
R. and J. i. 3. 17.

" Of offic (467) | er, (465) and off | ice set | all héarts | in the (i th') state."—Tempest, i. 2. 84.

"Uncoup | le (465) in the (i' th') west | ern vall | ey, let | them go."—M. N. D. iv. 1. 112.

"Côme to one mark; as many ways meet in one town."—Hen. V. i. 2. 208.

"Verbátim | to rzhéarse | the méth | od óf | my pén."

I Hen. VI. iii. 1. 13.

The following is intended to be somewhat irregular:

"Now bý | mine hón | our, bý | my lífe, | by my tróth."
Rich. II. v. 2. 78.

We must probably scan as an ordinary line,

"That séeming | to be móst \ which w\ | ind\(\text{ind\(\delta\)} \) | least \(\arta\) re.\" T. of \(Sh\). v. 2. 175.

since it rhymes with an ordinary line,

"Our stréngth | as weak, | our wéak | ness pást | compáre."
The following can be explained by the quasi-omission of unem-

phatic syllables :

"Awáy! | though párt | ing bé | a dréad | ful córr(o)sive."

2 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 403.

"Córrosive," as in I Hen. VI. iii. 3. 3, is accented on the first, and here pronounced "corsive."

"Bút with | a knáve | of cómm | on híre, | a gónd(o)lier."

Othello, i. 1. 126.

"Our" is not a dissyllable, but "ag'd" is a monosyllable in

"But lóve, | dear lóve, | and óur | ag'd fá | ther's right."

Lear, iv. 4. 28

So perhaps

"An dg'd | intér | pretér | though young | in years." T, of A, v, β , θ

- 498. Alexandrines doubtful. There are several apparent Alexandrines, in which a shortening of a preposition would reduce the line to an ordinary line. "Upon," for instance, might lose its prefix, like "gainst" for "against."
 - "To lóok | upon my sóme | time más | ter's róy | al fáce."
 Rich. II. ii. 5. 75.
 - "Forbíds | to dwéll np | on ; yét | remêm | ber thís." Rich. III. v. 3. 239.
 - "Upon our | house('s) (471) thátch, | whíles a | more frost | y péople."—Hen. V. iii. 5. 24.
 - "Upon the sís | terhóod, | the vó | tarists óf | St. Cláre."
 M. for M. i. 4. 5.
 - "Brut. "Is like | to láy upon us (on's). |
 Cass. I'm glád | that mý | weak wórds."
 F. C. i. 2. 176.
 - "Is góne | to práy | the hó | ly kíng | upon his (on's) áid."

 Macbeth, iii. 6. 30.
 - So "to" (or "in," 457a) in "into" may be dropped in
 - "Fall into | the com | pass of | a præ' | munire."

 Hen. VIII. iii. 2. 340.
 - "The watches | on únto | mine éyes | the out | ward watch."

 Rich. II. v. 4. 52.
 - (?) "Ráther | a dítch | in E'gypt
 Be géntle | grave únto | me. Ráther | on Ní | lus' múd."

 A. and C. v. 2. 58.
 - "Gentle" is a quasi-monosyllable, see 465; "rather," see 466. So Walker reads "to" for "unto" in
 - "Unto a póor, | but wórth | y gént | lemán. | She's wédded,"—Cymb. i. 1. 7.

and observes, "Unto and into have elsewhere, I think, taken the place of to."

Perhaps the second line of the rhyming couplet is purposely lengthened in

- "1' am | for the áir; | thus night | I'll spénd Un'to | a dis | mal ánd | a fát | al énd."—Macb. iii. v. 21.
- In "Better to leave undone, than by our deed
 Acquire too high a fame when him we serve's away,"

 A. and C iii, 1, 15

we might arrange

"Better léave | undóne, | than bý | our déed | acquire."

Or the latter line might be (but there is not pause enough to make it probable) a trimeter couplet. (See 501.)

"At Má | rián | a's hóuse | to-níght. | Her cáuse | and yours,"

M. for M. iv. 3, 145.

must be an Alexandrine, unless in the middle of the line "Mariana" can be shortened like "Marian," as "Helena" becomes "Helen" (M. N. D. i. 1. 208). Compare

"For Már | iana's sáke : | but ás | he adjúdg'd | your bróther."

M. for M. v. 1. 408.

The following seem pure Alexandrines, or nearly so, if the text be correct:—

- "How dáres (499) | thy hársh | rude tóngue | sound thís | unpléas | ing néws."—Rich. II. iii. 4. 74.
- "Suspic | ion, áll | our líves, | shall bé | stuck fúll | of éyes."

 I Hen. IV. v. 2. 8.
- "A chér | ry líp, | a bón | ny éye, | a páss | ing pléas | ing tóngue."—Rich. III. i. 1. 94.
- "Tó the | young Ró | man bóy | she hath sóld | me ánd | I fáll."—A. and C. iv. 12. 48.
- "And these | does she | apply | for warn | ings and | portents."—J. C. iii. 1. 23.

This is the Shakespearian accent of "portent" (490), but perhaps "and" should be omitted.

"Oút of | a gréat | deal óf | old ír | on I' | chose fórth."

I Hen. VI. i. 2. 101.

It is needless to say that Shakespeare did not write this line, whether it be read thus or

"Oút of | a great déal | of old | iron I' | chose forth."

In "'Tis hé | that sént | us híth | er nów | to slaugh | ter thée,"

Rich. III. i. 4, 250.

"hither" (466) may be a monosyllable, and then we can read

"'Tis hé | that sént us | ."

The latter line in the following couplet seems to be an Alexandrine:

"Of whát | it is | not: thén, | thrice-grác | ious quéen, Móre than | your lórd's | depárt | ure weep | not: móre's | not séen."—Rich. II. ii. 2. 25, v. 4. 110. Sometimes apparent Alexandrines will be reduced to ordinary lines, if exclamations such as "O," "Well," &c. be considered (512) as detached syllables.

"Vol. That théy | combine | not thére. |
Cor. (Tush, tush!)
A góod demánd."
Coriol, iii. 2, 45.

"Coriol. The óne | by the óther. |
Com. (Well,) | O'n to | the márk | et pláce."
Ib, iii, 1, 112.

"Sic. 'Tis hé, | 'tis hé: | (O,) he's grówn | most kínd | of láte."—Ib. iv. 6. 11.

" Upón | the Brít | ish párty. | (0,) untíme | ly déath." Lear, iv. 6. 25.

In the last two examples "O" might coalesce with the following vowel. But see also 503 and 512.

- 499. Apparent Alexandrines are sometimes regular verses of hve accents preceded or followed by a foot, more or less isolated, containing one accent.
 - "(Shall I) With bated breath and whispering humbleness Say this. || Fair sir, | you spit | on mé | on Wéd | nesday lást."—M. of V. i. 3. 126.
 - " Háve I || No friend | will ríd | me óf | this lív | ing féar?" Rich. II. v. 4. 2.
 - The "No" is emphatic, and there is a slight pause after "I."
 - "Whíp him, || Were't twén | ty óf | the gréat | est tríb | utáries."—A. and C. iii. 13. 96.
 - "Come, cóme, || No móre | of thís | unpróf | itá | ble chát."
 I Hen, IV. iii, I, 63.
 - "There cannot be those numberless offences
 "Gáinst me, || that I' | cannot | take péace | with: nó |
 black énvy."—Hen. VIII. ii. 1. 85.
 - "A's you | are cért | ainlý | a gén | tlemán, || theretó, Clerk-líke | expéri | énced."—W. T. i. 2. 391.
 - "Besldes, || I líke | you nót. | I'f you | will knów | my hóuse." A. Y. L. iii. 5. 74.
 - "Which to | dený | concérns | móre than | aváils,

 For ás || thy brát | hath béen | cast óut | líke to | itsélf."

 W. T. iii. 2. 87.

"Số it | should nów, Wére there | necéss | itý | in your | requést, || although 'Twere néed | ful I' | deníed it."—Ib. i. 2. 22.

"Máking | práctis'd | smíles

A's in | a lóok | ing gláss, | and thén | to sígh, || as 'twére

The mort | o' the déer."—W. T. i. 2. 117.

The context might perhaps justify a pause after "well" in

"Flor. To have | them re | compensed | as thought | on. Cam. Well, | my lord."

W. T. iv. 4, 532.

But better "To have them (t' have 'em) ré | compénsed."

"His train | ing súch

That hé | may fúrn | ish ánd | instrúct | great téachers, And név | er séek | for áid | óut of | himsélf. || Yet see," &c. —Hen. VIII. i. 2. 114.

"Whát, girl! | though gréy
Do sóme | thing míng | le wíth | our yóung | er brówn,
| yet há' we

A bráin," &c.—A. and C. iv. 8. 21.

"A cértain númber,

Though thánks | to áll, | múst I | seléct | from áll. || The rést

Shall béar," | &c. - Coriol. i. 6. 81; i. 7. 2.

"And the buildings of my fancy.
Only—

There's one thing wanting which I doubt not but."

Ib. ii. 1. 216.

Collier transposes "only" and "but" to the respectively following lines. The line

"So to esteem of us and on our knees we beg," ought probably to be arranged thus:

"Só to | estéem | of ús, | and ón | our knées We bég | as ré | compénse | of óur | dear sérvices (471)." W. T. ii. 3. 150.

So "Whom I' | with this | obé | dient stéel, | three inches (471) of it."—Temp. ii. 1. 283; i.e. "three inch of't."

So transpose "'tis," i. e. "it is," to the preceding line in "York. I féar, | I féar,- |

('Tis) Nothing bút | some bónd | that hé | is ént | er'd into."—Rich. II. v. 2, 65.

"I do" must be omitted (456) before "beseech you" in "(I do) beséech | you, pár | don mé, | I máy | not shów it.

16. 70.

50 Cymb. 1. 6. 48.

- 500. Trimeter Couplet. Apparent Alexandrines are often couplets of two verses of three accents each. They are often thus printed as two separate short verses in the Folio. But the degree of separateness between the two verses varies greatly. Thus perhaps—
 - "Whére it | may sée | itsélf; || thís is | not stránge | at áll."

 Tr. and Cr. iii. 3, 111.
 - "That hás | he knóws | not whát. || Náture, | what thíngs | there áre."—Ib. iii. 3. 127.

And certainly in the following:-

- "Anne. I would | I knéw | thy héart. || Glou. 'Tis fig | ured in | my tóngue.
 - Anne. I féar | me bóth | are fálse. || Glou. Then név | er mán | was trúe.
 - Anne. Well, wéll, | put úp | your swórd. || Glou. Say thén | my péace | is máde."—Rich. III. i. 2. 193.
- "Jul. I wóuld | I knéw | his mínd. || Luc. Perúse | this pá | per, mádam.
 - Jul. 'To Jú | lia.' Sáy, | from whóm? || Luc. Thát the | conténts | will shéw.
 - Jul. Say, sáy, | who gáve | it thée?"—T. G. of V. i. 2. 33-7.
- "Luc. Go tó; | 'tis wéll; | awáy! || Isab. Heaven kéep | your hón | our sáfe."—M. for M. ii. 2. 156.
- "Isab. Sháll I | atténd | your lórdship? | A. At án | y tíme | 'fore nóon."—Ib. 160-9; ii. 4. 104, 141.
- "Ros. The hóur | that fóols | should ásk. || B. Now fáir | befáll | your másk.
 - Ros. Fair fáll | the fáce | it cóvers. || B. And sénd | you má | ny lóvers."—L. L. L. ii. 1. 123.
- "Ang. Why dóst | thou ásk | agáin? || Prov. Lést I | might bé | too rásh.
 - Prov. Repént | ed ó'er | his dóom. || Ang. Go tó, | let thát | be míne!
 - Ang. And you | shall well | be spared. || Prov. I crave | your hon | our's pardon."—M. for M. ii. 2. 9-12; Othello, iii. 3. 28-31; Temp. iii. 1. 31, 59.

Shakespeare seems to have used this metre mostly for rapid tialogue and retort. But in the ghost scene in *Hamlet*:

"Ghost. To whát | I sháll | unfóld. ||

Ham. Speak; I' | am bound | to héar."

Hamlet i. 5. 6.

- 501. The trimeter couplet, beside being frequent in dialogue, is often used by one and the same speaker, but most frequer:ly in comic, and the lighter kind of serious, poetry. It is appropriate for Thisbe:
 - "Most rád | iant Pý | ramús, || most líl | y-whíte | of húe."

 M. N. D. iii. 1. 94, 97.

And for Pistol, when he rants:

- "An óath | of míck | le míght; || and fú | ry sháll | abáte."

 Hen. V. ii. 1. 70, 44; ii. 3. 4, 64; v. 1. 93.
- "He is | not vé | ry táll : || yet fór | his yéars | he's táll."

 A. Y. L. iii. 5. 118.
- "And 'I'll | be sworn | 'tis trúe: || trávell | ers nc'er | did lie."— Temp. iii. 2. 26.
- "Coy lóoks | with héart- | sore síghs; || one fád | ing mó- | ment's mírth."—T. G. of V. i. 1. 30.
- "He would | have gív'n | it you, || but I' | being in | the way
 Did in | your name | receive it : || pardon | the fault, | 1
 pray."—Ib. 39, 40.
- "A frée- | stone cól | our'd hánd; || I vér | ilý | did thínk."

 A. Y. L. iv. 3, 25.
- "Then lét's | make háste | awáy, | and lóok | untó | the máin."—2 Hen. VI. i. 1. 208.
- "Am I' | not witch'd | like hér? | Or thou | not fálse | like hím?"—Ib, iii. 2. 119.
- "Why ring | not out | the bells | aloud | throughout | the town?"—I Hen. VI. i. 6. 12.
- "As Æ'th | ióp | ian's tóoth, || ór the | fann'd snów | that's bólted."—W. T. iv. 4. 375.
- "This paus | inglý | ensúed. | Néither | the king | nor's heirs."—Hen. VIII. i. 2. 168.
- "The monk | might be | deceiv'd; || and that | 'twas dang(e) | rous for him."—Ib. 179.
- "Anón | expéct | him hére; || but if | she bé | obdúrate (490)." Rich. III. iii. 1. 39.

This metre is often used by the Elizabethan writers in the translation of quotations, inscriptions, &c. It is used for the inscriptions the caskets:

"Who choos | eth mé | shall gáin || what mán | y mén | desíre.

Who choos i eth mé i must give | and haz | ard all | he hath."—M. of V. ii. 7. 5. 9.

In the pause between a comparison and the fact such a couplet may be expected.

"A's | Æné | as díd

The óld | Anchí | ses béar, || so fróm | the wáves | of Tíber Did I' | the tír | ed Cæ'sar."—J. C. i. 2. 114.

"To háve | what wé | would háve, , , we spéak | not whát | we méan."—M. for M. ii. 4. 118.

Sometimes the first trimeter has an extra syllable, which takes the place of the first syllable of the second trimeter.

"Shall thére | by bé | the swéeter. || Reá | son thús | with lífe."—M. for M. iii. 1. 5.

"Envél | ope you, | good Próvost! || Whó | call'd hére | of láte?"—Ib. iv. 2, 78.

"Mátters | of néed | ful vál*ue*. || Wé | shall wríte | to yóu."

**Ib. i. 1. 56.

Sometimes the first trimeter, like the ordinary five-accent verse, has an extra syllable. In the following examples the two verses are clearly distinct. They might almost be regarded as separate lines of three accents rather than as a couplet:

- "Hypér | ion tó | a sátyr. | So lóv | ing tó | my móther."

 Hamlet, i. 2, 140.
- "For énd | ing thée | no sóoner. || Thou hást | nor youth | nor áge."—M. for M. iii. 1. 32.
- "That I' am touch'd | with madness. | Make not | imposs | iblé."—Ib. v. 1. 51. (But? 494.)
- "Ariel. And dó | my spírit | ing gently. ||
 Prosp. Do só, | and áfter | two dáys."
 Tempest, i. 2. 298.
- "Belów | their cób | bled shóes, ||
 Théy say | there's gráin | enough."

 Coriol. i. 1. 200.
- 502. The comic trimeter. In the rhyming parts of the Comedy of Errors and Love's Labour Lost, there is often great irregularity in the trimeter couplet. Many of the feet are trisyllabic, and one-half of the verse differs from the other. Often the first half is trochaic and the second iambic.
 - "Ant. E. Whérefore? | fór my | dínner : || I háve | not dín'd | to-dáy."—C. of E. iii. I. 40.
 - "Ant. E. Dó you | héar, you | mínion? || You'll lét | us in, I hôpe."—Ib. 54.

In the following, the former half is iambic and the latter anabestic:

"Thou wouldst | have cháng'd | thy fáce || for a náme, | or thy náme | for an áss."—C. of E. iii. 1. 47.

And conversely:

"It would make | a man mad | as a buck || to bé | so bought | and sold,"—Ib. 72.

There are often only five accents.

"Bal. Gŏod méat, sĭr, | ĭs cómmŏn: | that é | very chúrl | affórds.

Ant. E. And wélcome | more common; | for thát | is nothing | but words."—Ib. iii. 1. 24, 25.

Sometimes it is hard to tell whether the verse is trisyllabic with four accents, or dissyllabic with five.

"Have át | you with | a próverb— | Shall I' | set in | my stáff?"

16. 51.

may be scanned with six accents, but the line to which it rhymes seems to have four:

"And só | tell your máster. | O Lórd, | I must láugh,"

16. 50.

16. 50.

"Have at you | with another; | that's when | can you tell,"

16. 52.

and it is therefore possible that we ought to accent thus:

" Have at you | with a proverb- | Shall I set | in my staff?"

503. Apparent trimeter couplets. Some apparent trimeter couplets are really ordinary dramatic lines.

For example, in the last line but two of 501 (M. for M. v. i. 51), "impossible" may easily be one foot with two superfluous syllables. It is often a matter of taste which way to scan a line, but it must be borne in mind, that the trimeter couplet is rarely used to express intense emotion. Hence in an impassioned address like that of Henry V. at Harfleur, we should probably read

"Defý us | to our wórst: | for ás | I ám | a sóldier,"

Hen. V. iii. 3. 5.

or, better (479), "for as 'I'm | a sól | diér."

So "And well come, Somerset; | I hold | it com | ardice." 3 Hen. V1. iv. 2.?

Or, less probably. "Sómersét" may have two accents and "cówardice" (470) one.

" As chil | dren fróm | a béar, | the Vóls | ces shúnning him."

Coriol. i. 3. 34.

"So tédiously | away. | The poor | condém | ned E'nglish."

Hen. V. iv. Prol. 221; but ib. 28 is a trimeter couplet.

"And húgg'd me | in his árm | and kínd | ly kíss'd | my cheek."—Rich. III. ii. 2. 24.

"Than thát | míx'd in | his chéek. | 'Twas júst | the díff(e)rence."—A. Y. L. iii. 5, 122.

"He is ('s) my bróth | er tóo. | But fitt | er tíme | for thát."

M. for M. v. 1. 498.

"And nót | the pún(i)sh. | ment; thérefore, | indéed | my fáther."—A. for M. i. 3. 39.

The following are doubtful, but probably ordinary lines:

"I knów him | as mysélf, | fór from | our in | fancy." T. G. of V. ii. 3. 62.

Or "infancy" may have only one accent (467).

"Máy a | free fáce, | put ón, | deríve | a llberty."
W. T. i. 2. 112.

'Either" may be a monosyllable (see 466) in

"Your sénse | pursúes | not míne : | either you | are ignorant.
M. for M. ii. 4. 74.

"For in | equál(i)ty : | but lét | your réa | son sérve."

16. v. 1. 65.

In "Alexas did revolt; and went to Jewry on Affairs of Antony,"—A. and C. iv. 6. 12.

"on" may be transposed to the second line; or, considering the licence attending the use of names and the constant dropping of prefixes, we might perhaps read "Aléxas | did (re)vólt | ."

In "Cálls her a nón paréil; I né ver sáw a wóman,"

Temp. iii. 2. 108.

though it is against Shakespearian usage to pronounce "non-pareil" a dissyllable, as in Dorsetshire, "a núnprel apple," yet Caliban here may be allowed to use this form. I believe "nonp'rel type" is still a common expression.

Sometimes an exclamation, as "O," gives the appearance of a trimeter couplet:

"For the | best hope | I have. | (O,) do not wish | one more."—Hen. V. iv. 3. 33.

See also 498 ad fin.

504. The verse with four accents is rarely used by Shake speare, except when witches or other extraordinary beings are introduced as speaking. Then he often uses a verse of four accents with rhyme.

"Double, | double, | toil and | trouble,

Fíre | búrn and | cáuldron | búbble."—Macbeth, iv. 1. 20.
The iambic metre in such lines is often interchanged with the trochaic:

Iambic * { "He whó | the swórd | of héav'n | will béar | Should bé | as hó | ly ás | sevére : Páttern | ín him | sélf to | knów, Gráce to | stánd and | vírtue | gó."

M. for M. iii. 2, 274-8.

(The last line means "he ought to have grace for the purpose of standing upright, and virtue [for the purpose of] walking in the straight path." "Go" is often used for "walk," "To" is omitted

before "go.")

Sometimes in the same couplet we find one line iambic and the other trochaic:

"And hére | the mái | den sléep | ing sound

O'n the | dánk and | dírty | ground. —M. N. D. ii. 2. 74-5.

It would be, perhaps, more correct to say that both lines are trochaic, but in one there is an extra syllable at the beginning, as well as at the end. So apparently

"Thís is | hé my | máster | sáid,
(De)spísed | thé A | thénian | máid."—M. N. D. 72-3:

but the prefix "de-" might (460) be dropped.

So "(De)spísed | ín na | tív | i | tý Shall úp | ón their | chíldren | bé."—*Ib.* v. i. 420.

There is difficulty in scanning

"Prétty | soul, she | durst not | lie Near this lack-love, this kill-courtesy."—Ib. 76-7.

It is of course possible that "kill-curt'sy" may have the accent on the first: but thus we shall have to accent the first "this" and "love" with undue emphasis. It is also more in Shakespeare's manner to give "courtesy" its three syllables at the end of a line. I therefore scan

"(Near this) láck-love, j thís kill | cóurte | sý."

^{*} The words "iambic" and "trochaic" here and elsewhere refer to accent not quantity.

Perhaps, however, as in *Macbeth*, iii. 5. 34, 35, and ? 21, a verse of five accents is purposely introduced.

- **505.** Lines with four accents are, unless there is a pause in the middle of the line, *very* rare. The following, however, seem to have no more than four accents:
 - "Let's éach | one sénd | únto | his wife."-T. of Sh. v. 2. 66.
 - "No worse | than I' | upon some | agreement."—Ib. iv. 4. 33.
 - "He shall | you find | réady | and willing."-Ib. 34.
 - "The match | is made, | and all | is done."—Ib. 46.
 - "Go fóol, | and whóm | thou kéep'st | commánd."

Ib. ii. 1. 259.

The frequent recurrence of these lines in the *Taming of the Shrew* will not escape notice.

"And pút J yoursélf J únder | his shrówd." (? corrupt.)

A. and C. iii. 13. 71.

"A lád | of lífe, | an imp | of fáme."

Hen V. iv. 1. 45 (Pistol).

"We knew not

The dóc | trine óf | ill-dóing, | nor dréam'd

That any did."—W. T. i. 2. 70

"Go téll | your cousin | and bring | me word."

I Hen. IV. v. 1. 109.

"For aught | I knów, | my lórd, | they dó."
Rich, II. v. 1. 53.

But perhaps the lines may be arranged:

' Aum. For áught | I knów, My lórd, | they dó. |

York. You will | be there, | I know.

Aum. If God | prevent | (it) not, | I purpose | so."

"With" may be, perhaps (457), transposed to the former of the following verses, thus:

"With ád | orá | tions, fér | tile té | ars, (480) with Gróans (484) | that thún | der lóve, | with sighs | of fire."

T. N. i. 5. 274.

But the enumerative character of the verse (509) may justify it as it stands.

It is difficult to scan

"Lock'd in her monument. She had a prophesying fear,"

A. and C. iv. 14. 120

without making the latter portion a verse of four accents.

(Perhaps

"Lóck'd in | her món(u) | ment. Shé'd | a próphe | sying féar,' making "sying" a monosyllable like "being," "doing." See 470.)

"Should from | yond cloud | spéak di | vine thíngs."

Coriol, iv. 5, 110.

But I should prefer

"If Jupiter
Should, from | yond cloud, | spéak di | vine thíngs | and sáy
'Tis trúe,'— | (507) I'd nót | belíeve | them móre
Than thée, | all-nó | ble Március."

Shakespeare would have written "things divine," not "divine things" at the end of a verse. (See 419, at end.)

"Is nót | much míss'd | bút with | his friends." - Coriol. iv. 6. 13.

"Befóre | the kings | and quéens | of France."

I Hen. VI. i. 6. 27.

"And éven | these thrée | days háve | I wátch'd."

11. i. 4. 16.

"Here through | this gate | I count | each one."—Ib. 60.

"Think not | the king | did bán | ish thée,"

Rich

Rich. II. i. 3. 279.

rs not found in the Folio, which also varies, ib. i. 3. 323; iii. 7. 70. Perhaps

"They thus | direct | ed, we | will follow

"They thús | diréct | ed, wé | will fóllow
I'n the | main báttle | whose púissance | on éi | ther
síde."—Rich. III. v. 3. 298.

(But the second line is harsh, and perhaps part of it ought to be combined with the first in some way. "Puissance" is a dissyllable generally in Shakespeare, except at the end of the line. I know no instance in Shakespeare where, as in Chaucer, "battle" is accented on the last. Remembering that ed is often not pronounced after t and d, we might scan the first line thus, with three accents:

"They thús | diréct(ed), | we'll fóllow.")

If "ed" is not pronounced (472) in "divided," that may explain

"The archdéa | con háth | divíded it."-I Hen. IV. iii. 1.72.

The following may seem a verse of four accents:

"Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss."—I Hen. VI. v. 5. 64. But "contrary" is found in Hamlet, iii. 2. 221. And as "country" (see 477) is three syllables, so, perhaps, "contrary" is four:

"Whereas | the cont | (e)rar | y bring | eth bliss."

A verse of four accents is exceedingly discordant in the formal and artificial speech of Suffolk, in which this line occurs.

Somewhat similarly, Shakespeare has "cursoráry" for "cursory:"

"I have but with a cursorary eye."-Ilen. V. v. 2. 77.

In "Anthony Woodville, her brother there,"—Rich. III. i. 1. 67. "Woodville" is probably to be pronounced a trisyllable, a semi-vowel inserting itself between the d and v—"Wood-e-ville." The e final (see 488) wou.d not be sounded before "her."

"Valiant" is a trisyllable in

"Young, vál | iánt, | wíse, and | no dóubt | right róyal."

Rich. III. i. 2. 245.

- 506. Lines with four accents, where there is an interruption in the line, are not uncommon. It is obvious that a syllable or foot may be supplied by a gesture, as beckening, a movement of the head to listen, or of the hand to demand attention, as in
 - "He's tá'en. | [Shôut.] | And hárk, | they shout | for jóy." F. C. v. 3. 32.
 - "Knéel thou | down, Philip. | (Dubs him knight.) | But ríse | more gréat."—K. J. i. 1. 161.
 - "Márry | to— (Enier O'thello.) | Come, cáp | tain, wíll | you gó?"—Othello, i. 2. 53.

Here, however, as in

"A wise | stout cáp | (i)táin, | and sóon | persuáded." 3 Hen. VI. iv. 7. 30.

"Our cáp | (i)táins, | Macbéth | and Bán | quo? Yés."

Macbeth, i. 2. 34.

we may scan

"Mårry | to——Cóme, | cáp(i) | tain, will | you gó," but very harshly and improbably.

"Cass. Flåtter | ers!" (Turns tó Brutus.) | Now, Brú | tus, thánk | yoursélf."—J. C. v. 1. 45.

An interruption may supply the place of the accent:

"And fálls | on th' óth | er——(Enter Lády Macbeth.) | How nów, | what néws?"—Macbeth, i. 7. 28.

The interval between two speakers sometimes justifies the mission of an accent, even in a rhyming passage of regular lines:

"Fairy. Aré not | you hé? | 'Puck. | Thou spéak'st | aright, I ám | that mér | ry wán | derer óf | the night."

M. N. D. ii. 1. 42

"Mal. As thóu | didst léave | it. 'Serg. | Dóubtful | it stóod."

Macbeth, i. 2. 7.

"Cass. Messá | la! Mess. | What sáys | my gén | erál?" %. C. v. 1. 70.

"Dun. Who cómes | here? 'Mal. | The wórth | y tháne | of Róss."—M eth i. 2. 45.

"Sic. Without | assistance. | | Men. I think | not so."
Coriol. iv. 6. 33.

The break caused by the arrival of a new-comer often gives rise to a verse with four accents.

"Than your | good words. | | But who | comes here?"
Rich. II. ii. 3, 20.

"Stánds for | my bóunty. | ' | But whó | comes hére?"

1b. 67.

"Agáinst | their wíll. | ' | But whó | comes | hére?"

1b. iii. 3. 19.

So, perhaps, arrange

"High be our thoughts!
I know my uncle York hath power enough
To sérve | our túrn. | ' | But whó | comes hére?"

16. iii, 2, 90.

It is possible that in some of these lines "comes" should be pronounced "cometh." "Words," "turn," and "will" might be prolonged by 485, 486.

- 507. Lines with four accents where there is a change of thought are not uncommon. In some cases the line is divided into two of two accents each, or into one line of three accents, and another of one.
 - (1) Change of thought from the present to the future:

"Háply | you sháll | not sée | me móre; | or íf, A máng | led shádow. | ' | Perchánce | to-mórrow You'll serve | anóther | máster."—A. and C. iv. ii. 27.

"I'll sénd | her stráight | awáy. | ' | To-mbrrow
P'll' to | the wárs: | shé to | her síng | le sórrow."
A. W. ii. 3, 313

"Fresh kings | are cóme | to Tróy. | ' | To-mórrow
We múst | with áll | our máin | of pówer | stand fást."
Tr. and Cr. ii, 2, 272.

- (2) From a statement to an appeal, or vice versa:
 - "You have | not sought it. | ' | How comes | it then?"
 I Hen. IV. v. 1. 27.
- Unless "comes" is "cometh." See 506 at end.
 - "Lórd of | his réason. | ' | Whát though | you fléd?"
 A. and C. iii. 13. 4.
- (I do not remember an instance of "ré | asón." See, however, 479.)

 Perhaps "Come hith | er, count. | ' | Do you (d' you) knôw | these women?"—A. W. v. 3. 165.

But possibly:

- "Come híth | er, cóu | nt (486). Dó | you knów | these wómen?"
- "But stáy. | Here cómes (Fol.) | the gár | denérs."
 Rich. II. iii. 4. 24.

("gårdeners" may have but one accent.)

"Néver | believe | me. ' | Bóth are | my kínsmen."

Ib. ii. 2. 111.

The pause may account for

- "As hé | would dráw it. | ' | Long stáy'd | he só."

 Hamlet, ii. 1. 91.
- (As ed is pronounced after i and u, so it might be after y in "stayed," but the effect would be painful.)
 - "Which hás | no néed | of you. Begóne,"

is the best way of arranging A. and C. iii. 11. 10.

- "And léave | eightéen. | ' | Alás, poor | príncess."

 Cymbeline, ii. 1. 61.
- "A princ | e's courage. | ' | Away, | I prithee."
 - *Cymb.* iii. 4. 187.
- " Lét us | withdráw. | ' | 'Twill bé | a stórm."

 Lear, ii. 4. 290.
- (3) Hence after vocatives:
 - "Titus, | ' | I (am)'m cóme | to tálk | with thée."
 T. A. v. 2. 16.
 - "Géntle | men, ' | impórt | une mé | no fúrther."
 T. of Sh. i. 1. 48.
 - "Géntle | men, ' | that I' | may soon | make good."—Ib. 74.
 - "Géntle | men, ' | contént | ye, 'I'm | resólved."—Ib. 90.
 - "Géntle | men, "! will you | go mús | ter mén?"
 Rich, II. ii. 2, 108.

"Gentle | men, ' | go mús | ter úp | your mén."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 118

"Good Már | garét. | Rún | thee tó | the párlour."

M. Ado, iii. 1, 1.

Either a pause may explain

"But téll | me, ' | is young | Géorge Stán | ley líving?"

Rich. III. v. 5. 9
or "George" (485) may be a quasi-dissyllable.

- 508. A foot or syllable can be omitted where there is any marked pause, whether arising from (1) emotion, (2) antithesis, or (3) parenthesis, or (4) merely from the introduction of a relative clause, or even a new statement.
 - (1)

 "Wére't | my fítness

 To lét | these hánds | obéy | my blóod, | —' |

 They're ápt | enóugh | to dís | locáte | and téar

 Thy flésh | and bónes."—Lear, iv. 2. 64.

"O' | dislóy | al thíng
That should'st | repáir | my youth, | —' | thou héap'st
A yéar's | age on | me."—Cymb. i. 1. 132.

There is an intended solemnity in the utterances of the ghosts in "Let fáll | thy lánce. | ' | Despáir | and díe."

Rich. III. v. 3. 143.

and "Think on | lord Hastings. | ' | Despair | and die."-Ib. 148.

(2)

"Scarce án | y jóy

Did év | er só | long líve. | ' | No sórrow

But kíll'd | itsélf | much sóon | er."—W. T. v. 3. 53.

(3)

"He quít | his fórt | unes hére
(Which you | knew gréat) | ' | ánd to | the házard."

16. iii. 2. 169.

(4) "Mark whát | I sáy, | ' | which you | shall find."

M. for M. iv. 3. 130.

Perhaps "Is my kíns | man, ' | whóm | the kíng | hath wróng'd,"

Rich. II. ii. 2. 114.

in a very irregular passage, part of which is nearly prose.

"I'nto | his title | 'which | the | we find."

1 Hen. IV. iv. 3. 104.

"That shé | did gíve me, | ' | whose pó | sy wás."

M. of V. v. 1. 148.

"Cáll our | cares féars, | ' | which will | in tíme."

Coriol. iii. 1. 137

"'Tis súre | enóugh | -- án you | knew hów."

T A. .v. 1. 95.

A pause may, perhaps, be expected before an oath, as in

"As you shall give th' advice. By the fire That quick ens E gypt's slime."—A. and C. i. 3. 68.

(But "vice" or "by" may be prolonged.)

"That mý | most jéal | ous ánd | too dóubt | ful héart May líve | at péace. | ' | He sháll | concéal it."

T. N. iv. 3. 28; Macbeth, i. 5 6. "To wátch, | poor pérdu!

With this | thin helm. | ' | Mine ene | my's dog,

Though he | had bit | me, should | have stood | that night Agáinst | my fíre."-Lear, iv. 7. 36.

"Last night | 'twas on | mine arm, | ' | I kiss'd it." Cvmb, ii. 3, 151,

(Certainly not "I kiss | ed it.")

"Would then | be nothing. | ' | Truths would | be tales." A. and C. ii. 2. 137.

"Póint to | rich énds. | ' | Thís my | mean tásk."

Temp. iii. 1. 4.

"Must give | us páuse (484). | ' | Thére's the | respéct." Hamlet, iii. 1, 68.

509. Lines with four accents are found where a number of short clauses or epithets are connected together in one line, and must be pronounced slowly:

> "Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray." Rich. III. iv. 4. 75

"Witty, courteous, liberal, full of spirit."

3 Hen, VI, i. 2, 43.

The last line is very difficult. "And," or a pause equal to "and," after "witty," would remove the difficulty.

It is remarkable that Shakespeare ventures to introduce such a line even in a rhyming passage:

"Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, all

That happiness and prime can happy call." A. W. ii. 1. 184.

"Ho! héarts, | tongues, figures, | scribes, bárds, | poéts

Think, spéak, | cast, write, | sing núm | ber, ho! His love to Antony."—A. and C. iii. 2. 17.

"Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps."-W. T. i. z. 329.

(Here, however, "goads" and "thorns" may be prolonged. See 484, 485.)

"With thát | harsh, nó | ble, sím | ple— | nóthing."

Cymb. iii. 4. 135.

The following occurs amid regular verse:

"These drums! these trumpets! flutes! what."

A. and C. ii. 7, 138,

"When you do dance, I wish you

A wave of the sea, that you might ever do Nóthing | but thát; | move stíll, | still só."

W. T. iv. 4. 142.

Here *still*, which means "always," is remarkably emphatic, and may, perhaps, be pronounced as a quasi-dissyllable. So "til" is a monosyllable foot in Chaucer, C. 7: 1137.

- 510. Apparent lines of four accents can sometimes be explained by giving the full pronunciation to contractions, such as s for eth, 'd for ed, 'll for will, 've for have, 't for it, &c.; or they are lines of three accents with a detached foot.
 - "Silv. Whát's (is) | your will? |

Prot. That I' | may com | pass yours."

T. G. of V. iv. 2. 92.

"And were | the king | on't (of it), | what would | I do?"

Temp. ii. I. 145.

"In whát | you pléase. | T/// (will) | do whát | I cán."

10. iv. 4. 47.

"You've ádd | ed wó | rth (485) ún | to ít | and lústre."
T. of A. i. 2. 154.

"Dríve him | to Rö | me; 't (it) | is tíme | we twáin."

A. and C. i. 4. 73.

"Whence com | est thou? | What would | est thou? | Thy name?"—Coriol. iv. 5. 58.

But the pauses between the abrupt questions may be a sufficient explanation.

"And ne'er (név | er) á | true óne. | In súch | a night."

M. of V. v. 1. 148.

The first "a" may be emphatic, meaning "one." Else 508.

"Our thighs | páck'd (ed) | with wáx, | our mouths | with honey."—2 Hen. IV. iv. 5. 77.

"So múch | as lán | k'd (ed) nót. | 'Tis pít | y óf him."

A. and C. i. 4. 71.

"'s" = "his" in

"Vincént | ió | 's (his) són | brought úp | in Flórence."
T. of Sh. i. r. 14.

In "Sal. My lord, I long to hear it at full,"

2 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 6.

"hear" is a dissyllable (485), or "the" omitted after "at." Compare "atte" in E. E. for "at the."

I feel confident that "but would" must be supplied in

"And what poor duty cannot do, noble respect Takes it in might, not merit,"—M. N. D. v. 1. 91.

and we must read :

"And what poor duty cannot do, but would, Noble respect takes not in might but merit."*

"And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags Of hoarding abbots; imprisoned angels Set at liberty. The fat ribs of peace Must by the hungry now be fed upon,"—K. J. iii. 3. 8.

ought probably to be arranged:

"Of hoarding abbots; Imprisoned angels set at liberty. The fat ribs of peace Must," &c.

Or (Walker) invert "imprisoned angels" and "set at liberty."

Arrange thus:

"Your Coriolanus

Is nót | much miss'd,

Bit voith | his friends. | The cóm | monwéalth | doth stánd,

And só | would dó, | were hé | more áng | ry át it."

Coriol. iv. 6, 13,

Similarly

"Most cért | ain. Slst | er, wélcome.

Práy you | (see 512)

Be év | er knówn | to pát | ience, mý | dear'st síster."

A, and C. iii. 6. 97.

So arrange

"That won you without blows.

Despising (499),

For you, the city, thus I turn my back."

Corros. iii. 3. 133.

I think I have met with this conjecture in some commentator.

" Cel. Look, whó | comes hére? |
Silv. My érr | and is | to you.
Fair youth (512), |
My gént | le Phœ' | be bíd | me gíve | you thís."

"Got'twéen | asléep | and wáke. Wéll, then (512),

Legít(i) | mate E'd | gar, I' | must háve | your lánd." *Lear*, i. 2, 15.

"As péarls | from día | monds drópp'd. In brief (511)."—Lear, iv. 3. 24.

Hen. V. ii. Prologue, 32, is corrupt.

"I live with bread like you:

Feel want, taste grief, need friends: subjected thus,

How can you say to me I am a king?"—Rich. II. iii. 2. 175.

511. Single lines with two or three accents are frequently interspersed amid the ordinary verses of five accents. They are, naturally, most frequent at the beginning and end of a speech.

These lines are often found in passages of soliloquy where passion is at its height. Thus in the madness of *Lear*, iv. 6. 112–29, there are eight lines of three accents, and one of two; and the passage terminates in prose. And so perhaps we should arrange

"Would use his heav'n for thunder; nothing but thunder! Merciful heaven (512),

Thou rather with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt Split'st the unwedgeable and gnarled oak

Than the soft myrtle. But man, proud man,

Drest in a little brief authority," &c.

M. for M. ii. 2. 110-19.

A. Y. L. iv. 3. 6.

So in the impassioned speech of Silvius:

"If thou remember'st not the slightest folly That ever love did make thee run into, Thou hast not loved,"—A. Y. L. ii. 5. 36.

which is repeated in l. 39 and 42.

The highest passion of all expresses itself in prose, as in the fearful frenzy of Othello, iv. 1. 34-44, and Lear, iv. 6. 130.

Rarely we have a short line to introduce the subject.

" York. Then thus:

Edward the third, my lords, had seven sons."

2 Hen. VI. ii. 2. 9, 10.

" Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver :

'Henry Bolingbroke,
On both his knees,'" &c.—Rich. II. iii. 3. 32.

Ross. (So) That now

Sweno, the Norways' king, craves composition." Macbeth, i. 2. 59.

" For Cloten .

There wants no diligence in seeking him. "Cymb. iv. 3. 19.

Sometimes the verse (which is often written as prose in the Folio) closely resembles prose. It is probable that the letter 7. C. ii. 3. 1-10 is verse, the last two words, "thy lover, Artemidorus," being irregular. So A. Y. L. iii. 2, 268-74.

The irregular lines uttered by Cassius, when he is cautiously revealing the conspiracy to Casca, looking about to see that he is not overheard, and also pausing to watch the effect of his words on Casca, are very natural.

" Unto some monstrous state.

Now could I, Casca, name to thee a man

Most like this dreadful night,

That thunders, lightens, opens graves, and roars."

7. C. i. 3. 71-74.

It will also not escape notice that "now could I, Casca," and "that thunders, lightens," are amphibious sections. See 513.

The following pause may be explained by the indignation of Macduff, which Malcolm observes and digresses to appease:

"Why in that rawness left you wife and child

Without leave-taking?

I pray you (512)

Let not my jealousies be your dishonours."

Macbeth, iv. 3, 28,

A pause is extremely natural before Lear's semi-confession of infirmity of mind:

" A'nd, to | deal pláinly,

I féar | I am | not in | my perf | ect mind."

Lear, iv. 7. 62.

A stage direction will sometimes explain the introduction of a short line. The action takes up the space of words, and necessitates a broken line, thus:

" Macb. This is a sorry sight. [Looking on his hands.] Lady M. A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight."

Macbeth, ii. 2. 21

Macbeth may be supposed to draw his dagger after the short line:

"As this | which now | I draw,"—Macbeth, ii, 1, 41.

So after Lady Macbeth has openly proposed the murder of Duncan in the words—

"Oh, never Shall sun that morrow see,"—Macbeth, i. 5. 62.

she pauses to watch the effect of her words till she continues:

"Your face, my thane, is as a book where men," &c.

The irregular lines in the excited narrative of the battle-

"Like valour's minion, carv'd out his passage Till he faced the slave,"—Macheth, i. 2. 20 (so ib. 51).

are perhaps explained by the haste and excitement of the speaker. This is illustrated by

"Except they meant to bathe in recking wounds,
Or memorize another Golgotha,
I cannot tell.
But I am faint, my wounds cry out for help."
Macbeth, i. 2. 41.

In "As cannons overcharged with double cracks; | so they | Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe,"—Ib. i. 2. 37.

there may be an instance of a short line. But more probably we must scan "As cánnons | o'erchárged | ."

Such a short line as

"Only to herald thee into his sight, Not pay thee,"—Macbeth, i. 3. 103.

is very doubtful. Read (though somewhat harshly):

"On'ly | to hér(a)ld (463) | thee in | to 's sight, | not páy thee."
So "Lét's (us) | awáy; | our téars | are nót | yet bréw'd,"

Macbeth, ii. 3. 129, 130.

and the following lines must be arranged so as to make l. 132 an interjectional line.

There is a pause after "but let" in

" But let-

The frame | of things | disjoint, | both the | worlds suffer."

Macbeth, iii. 2. 16; iv. 3. 97.

and in the solemn narrative preparatory to the entrance of the Ghost:

"Last night of all,
When youd same star that's westward from the pole."
Hamlet, i. 1. 35.

"And are upon the Mediterranean flote So Bound sadly home for Naples, Supposing that they saw the king's ship wreck d

Temp. i. 2, 235.

So M. N. D. iii. 2, 49.

" Lastly.

If I do fail in fortune of my choice Immediately to leave you and be gone."-M. of V. ii. 9. 14

" Yet I.

A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak."

Hamlet, ii. 2, 593

"I, his sole son, do this same villain send To heaven."—Ib. iii. 3. 78.

"Dost thou hear?"—Temp. i. 2, 106. In

"thou" is unemphatic, and scarcely pronounced. Or else these words must be combined with the previous, thus:

"Hénce his | ambit | ion grów | -ing-Dóst | thou héar?"

512. Interiectional lines. Some irregularities may be explained by the custom of placing ejaculations, appellations, &c out of the regular verse (as in Greek φεῦ, &c.).

" Yes.

Has he | affections in him?"-M. for M. iii. 1. 107.

" Alack

I love myself. Wherefore? for any good?"

Rich. III. v. 3. 187.

" What.

Are there no posts despatch'd for (480) Ireland?"

Rich. II. ii. 2. 103.

So arrange

North. Why?

I's he | not with | the quéen? | Nó, my | good lórd." Percv. Ib. ii. 3. 512.

" Fie.

There's no such man: it is impossible."

Othello, iv. 2. 134.

"And such a one do I profess myself, For, sir,

It is as sure as you are Roderigo."

Othello, i. 1. 55; Lear, i. 1. 56.

Perhaps we ought thus to arrange

" O. 'sir.

Your presence is too bold and péremptory.'

I Hen. IV. i. 3. 17.

This is Shakespeare's accentuation of "peremptory."

" Farewell. [Exit Banquo.]

Let every man be master of his time."—Macbeth, iii. 1. 40.

" Sir,

I have upon a high and pleasant hill."—T. of A. i. 1. 63.

" Sirrah,

Get thee to Plashy, to my sister Gloucester."

Rich. II. ii. 2. 90.

So Rich. III. i. 2. 226; i. 4. 218.

" Great king,

Few love to hear the sin they love to act."—P. of T. i. 1. 91.

"My dismal scene I needs must act alone. Come, vial."—R. and J. iv. 3. 20.

"Come, Hastings, help me to my lodging. O! Poor Clarence."—Rich. III. ii. 1. 133.

" For Hecuba!

What's Héc | ubá | to hím, | or he | to Hécuba (469)?"

Hamlet, ii. 2. 584.

"If thou hast any sound or use of voice, Speak to me."—Ib. i. 1. 129.

So ib. 132, 135; and "O vengeance," ib. 610; "A scullion!" ib. 616.

So we should read

" I'll wait upon you instantly. (Exeunt.) [To FLAV.] Come hither. Pray you,

How goes," &c.—T. of A. ii. 1. 36.

Similarly "Nay, more," C. of E. i. 1. 16; "Stay," T. N. iii. 1. 149; "Who's there?" Hamlet, i. 1. 1; "Begone," J. C. i. 1. 57; "O, Cæsar," J. C. iii. 1. 281; "Let me work," J. C. ii. 1. 209; "Here, cousin," Rich. II. iv. 1. 182; "What's she?" T. N. i. 2. 35; "Draw," Lear, ii. 1. 32; "Think," Coriol. iii. 3. 49.

So arrange

"Viol. Hold, || there's hálf | my cóffer. |

Anton. Will you | dený | me nów?"

T. N. iii. 4. 38.

" Se, || I am sát | isfied, | gíve me | a bówl | of wíne."
Rich, III. v. 3, 72.

"Ratcliffe, || about | the mid | of night | come to | my tent."

Rich. III. -77, 209.

The excitement of Richard gives rise to several interjectional lines of this kind in this scene.

A short line sometimes introduces a quotation:

"If Cæsar hide himself, shall they not whisper, Lo, Cæsar is afraid?"—7. C. ii. 2. 101.

"Did scowl on gentle Richard. No man cried "God save him."—Rich. II. v. 2. 28.

Perhaps we should arrange as follows:

"He'll spend that kiss
Which is my heaven to have.
Come [applying the asp to her bosom]
Thou mortal wretch,
With thy sharp teeth this knot intrinsicate
Of life at once untie."—A. and C. v. 2. 306.

This seems better than scanning the words from "which" to "wretch" as one line, either (1) as an ordinary line, with "come, thou mor | tal wretch," or (2) as a trimeter couplet, making "come" a dissyllable.

So it is better to arrange:

"Buckingham,
I prithee pardon me

That I have giv'n no answer all this while."

2 Hen. VI. v. 1. 32

Merely with a special view to mark a solemn pause Shakespeare writes:

"So, as a painted tyrant Pyrrhus stood, And, like a neutral to his will and matter, Did nothing.
But, as we often see," &c.—Hamlet. ii. 2. 504.

Such irregularities are very rare.

" Sirrah,

A word with you. Attend those men our pleasure?" is the right way to arrange *Macb*. iii. 1. 45, 46. Shakespeare could not possibly (as Globe) make "our pleasure" a detached foot.

The ejaculation seems not a part of the verse in

"Hath séiz'd | the wáste | ful kíng. | [O,] what pít | y ís it."

Rich. II. iii. 4. 55.

"And hé | himsélf | not présent. | [O,] forefénd | it, Gód!"
Rich, II. iv, 1. 129.

See also 498, at end; 503.

- 513. The Amphibious Section. When a verse consists of two parts uttered by two speakers, the latter part is frequently the former part of the following verse, being, as it were, *amphibious*—thus:
 - "S. The E'ng | lish fórce, | so pléase you. ||
 M. Táke thy | face hénce. || Séyton, | I'm síck | at héart."

 Macbeth, v. 3. 19.
 - "M. Néws, my | good lórd, | from Róme. ||
 Ant. Grátes me: | the súm. ||
 Cleo. Nay, héar | them, A'n | toný."—A. and C. i. i. 19.

"B. Who's thére? |
M. A friend. ||

- B. Whát, sir, | not yết | at rést? | The kíng's | abéd."
 Macbeth, ii. 1. 10.
- "Kent. This ôff | ice tó you.||

 Gent. I' will | talk fúr | ther with || you. ||

 Kent. Nó, | do not."—Lear, iii. 1. 42.
- "Gent. Which twáin | have bróught | her tó.||
 Edg. Hail, gént | le sir. |
 Gent. Sir, spéed | you, whát's | your will?"

 Lear, iv. 6, 212.
- "Prosp. Agáinst | what shóuld | ensue.||
 Mir. How cáme | we ashbre?||
 Prosp. By Pró | vidénce | divíne."
 Temp. i. 2, 158,
- "Claud. And hug | it in | my arms. ||

 Is. There spake | my brb | ther, || there | my fa | ther's grave."

 M. for M. iii, 1. 86.
- "E. How fáres | the prínce? ||

 Mess. Well, mád | am, ánd | in héalth. || Duch. Whát is |
 thy néws, then?"—Rich. III. ii. 4. 40.
- "Brut. That óth | er mén | begín. || Cas. Then léave | him óut. || Casca. Indéed | he is | not fit." 3. C. ii. 1. 153.

Probably---

"Macb. And bréak it | to our hôpe. || I will | not fight | with thée. || Macd. Then yield | thee, cóward."—Macbeth, v. 8. 22.

Compare also *Macbeth*, i. 4, 43, 44; ii. 3, 75, 101-2; iii. 1, 18 19, 2, 12-13, 4, 12, 15, 20, 151; 7. C. D. 4, 16, 17; Coriol. iii. 2, 6; Othello, iii. 3, 282, &c.

In the following instance the first "still" is emphatic:

"Oliv. As hówl | ing áft | er músic. ||
Duke. Still | so crú || el !

Oliv. Stíll | so cón | stant, lórd."

Sometimes a section will, on the one side, form part of a regular line, and, on the other, part of a trimeter couplet.

"Hor. Of mine | own éyes. || Mar. I's it | not like | the king || Hor. As thou | art to | thyself."—Hamlet, v. 1. 58, 59.

"Ophel. In hón | ourá | ble fáshion. | Pol. Ay, fásh | ion yów | may cáll it. || Go to, go to."—Ib. i. 3. 112.

Ham. Nó, it | is strúck. || Hor. Indéed, | I héard | it nót; || then it | draws néar | the séason, —Ib. i. 4. 4.

In the last example, "indeed," when combined with what follows is a detached interjection (512).

514. Interruptions are sometimes not allowed to interfere with the completeness of the speaker's verse.

This is natural in dialogue, when the interruption comes from a third person:

"Polon. Práy you | be round | with him. |

(Ham. [Within] Mother, mother, mother!)
Queen. I'll war | rant you."

Hamlet, iii. 4. 5, 6.

Or, when a man is bent on continuing what he has to say:

" Ham. Rashly—and that should teach us

There's a divinity that shapes our ends, Rough-hew them how we will—

(Hor. That's certain.)

Hani.

Up from my cabin," &c.

Hamlet, v. 2. 11, 12

"Shy. This is (461) kind | I offer— (Bass. This were kindness.)

Shy. This kind | ness will | I show.

M. of V. i. 3. 143.

"King R. Ratcliffe-- | (Rat. My lord.)

King R. The sún | will nót | be séen | to-day.'
Rich. III. v. 3. 281.

"Brutus. Awáy, | slight mán. | (Cassius. Is't possible?) Brutus. Héar me, | for I' | will speak." 7. C. iv. 3. 37, 38.

Or, when a speaker is pouring forth his words, endeavouring to break through the obstacle of unintelligence, as Kent trying to make himself intelligible to the mad Lear:

"Kent. Nó, my | good lórd; | I ám | the vér | y mán—
(Lear. I'll see that straight.)

Kent. Thát from | your fírst | of díf | ference and | decáy

Have fóll | ow'd your | sad stéps, | —
(Lear. You're welcome hither.)

Kent.

Nor nó | man élse."

i.e. "I and no one else." Then, in despair of making himself understood, Kent continues:

"All's cheerless, dark, and deadly."

Sometimes the interlocutor's words, or the speaker's continuation, will complete the line:

"Cæsar. So múch | as lánk | ed nót. | (Folio has lank'd.)
Lep.
"Tis pít | y óf him.
Cæsar. Lét his | shames quíckly."—A. and C. i. 4. 71.

If there are two interlocutors, sometimes either interlocution will complete the line:

"Gent. Than is | his úse. |
Widow. Lord, hów | we lóse | our páins!
Helena. All's wéll | that énds | well yét."

A. W. v. I. 24, 25.

"Bru. Good Márc | ius | hóme | again. |
Sic. The vé | ry tríck on't.

Men. This is | unlíkely."

Coriol. iv. 6. 71.

515. Rhyme. Rhyme was often used as an effective termination at the end of the scene. When the scenery was not changed, or the arrangements were so defective that the change was not easily perceptible, it was, perhaps, additionally desirable to mark that a scene was finished. The rhyme in T. N. ii. 2. 32 is perhaps a token that the scene once concluded with these lines, and that the nine lines that follow are a later addition.

Rhyme was also sometimes used in the same conventional way, to mark an aside, which otherwise the audience might have great

difficulty in knowing to be an aside. Thus, in a scene where there are no other rhyming lines, Queen Margaret is evidently intended to utter Rich. III. iv. 4. 16, 17; 20, 21, as asides, though there is no notice of it. One of the lines even rhymes with the line of another speaker:

- "Q. Eliz. When didst thou sleep, when such a deed was done?
 - Q. Marg. When holy Harry died, and my sweet son."
 Rich. III. iv. 4. 24, 25.

Queen Margaret does not show herself till line 35, as also in *Rich. III.* i. 3. till line 157, though in the latter scene the asides do not rhyme.

515 a. Prose. Prose is not only used in comic scenes; it is adopted for letters (M. of V. iv. 1. 149-66), and on other occasions where it is desirable to lower the dramatic pitch: for instance, in the more colloquial parts of the household scene between Volumnia and Virgilia, Coriol. i. 3, where the scene begins with prose, then passes into verse, and returns finally to prose. It is also used to express frenzy, Othello, iv. 1. 34-44; and madness, Lear, iv. 6. 130; and the higher flights of the imagination, Hamlet, ii. 2. 310-20.

SIMILE AND METAPHOR.

516. Similarity.—In order to describe an *object* that has not been seen we use the description of some object or objects that have been seen. Thus, to describe a lion to a person who had never seen one, we should say that it had something like a horse's mane, the claws of a cat, &c. We might say, "A lion is like a monstrous cat with a horse's mane." This sentence expresses a likeness of things, or a *similarity*.

517. Simile.—In order to describe some relation that cannot be seen, e.g. the relation between a ship and the water, as regards the action of the former upon the latter, to a landsman who had never seen the sea or a ship, we might say, "The ship acts upon the water as a plough turns up the land." In other words, "The relation between the ship and the sea is similar to the relation between the plough and the land." This sentence expresses a similarity of relations, and is called a simile. It is frequently expressed thus:

"As the plough turns up the land, so the ship acts on the

sea."

Def. A Simile is a sentence expressing a similarity of relations.

Consequently a simile is a kind of rhetorical proportion, and must, when fully expressed, contain four terms:

A : B :: C : D.

518. Compression of Simile into Metaphor.—A simile is cumbrous, and better suited for poetry than for prose. Moreover, when a simile has been long in use, there is a tendency to consider the assimilated relations not merely as *similar* but as *identical*. The *simile* modestly asserts that the re-

lation between the ship and the sea is *like* ploughing. The *compressed simile* goes further, and asserts that the relation between the ship and the sea *is* ploughing. It is expressed thus. "The ship ploughs the sea."

Thus the relation between the plough and the land is transferred to the ship and the sea. A simile thus com-

pressed is called a Metaphor, i.e. transference.

Def. A Metaphor is a transference of the relation between one set of objects to another, for the purpose of brief explanation.

- 519. Metaphor fully stated or implied.—A metaphor may be either fully stated, as "The ship ploughs (or is the plough of) the sea," or implied, as "The winds are the horses that draw the plough of the sea." In the former case it is distinctly stated, in the latter implied, that the "plough of the sea" represents a ship.
- 520. Implied Metaphor the basis of language.—A great part of our ordinary language, all that relates to the relations of invisible things, necessarily consists of implied metaphors; for we can only describe invisible relations by means of visible ones. We are in the habit of assuming the existence of a certain proportion or analogy between the relations of the mind and those of the body. This analogy is the foundation of all words that express mental and moral qualities. For example, we do not know how a thought suggests itself suddenly to the mind, but we do know how an external object makes itself felt by the body. Experience teaches us that anything which strikes the body makes itself suddenly felt. Analogy suggests that whatever is suddenly perceived comes in the same way into contact with the mind. Hence the simile—"As a stone strikes the body, so a thought makes itself perceptible to the mind." This simile may be compressed into the full metaphor thus, "The thought struck my mind," or into the implied metaphor thus, "This is a

striking thought." In many words that express immaterial objects the implied metaphor can easily be traced through the derivation, as in "excellence," "tribulation," "integrity," "spotlessness," &c.

N.B. The use of metaphor is well illustrated in words that describe the effects of sound. Since the sense of hearing (probably in all nations and certainly among the English) is less powerful and less suggestive of words than the senses of sight, taste, and touch, the poorer sense is compelled to borrow a part of its vocabulary from the richer senses. Thus we talk of "a sweet voice," "a soft whisper," "a sharp scream," "a piercing shriek," and the Romans used the expression "a dark-coloured voice,"* where we should say "a rough voice."

521. Metaphor expanded.—As every simile can be compressed into a metaphor, so, conversely, every metaphor can be expanded into its simile. The following is the rule for expansion. It has been seen above that the simile consists of four terms. In the third term of the simile stands the subject ("ship," for instance) whose unknown predicated relation ("action of ship on water") is to be explained. In the first term stands the corresponding subject ("plough") whose predicated relation ("action on land") is known. In the second term is the known relation. The fourth term is the unknown predicated relation which requires explanation. Thus—

the plough	turns up the land,	so	the ship	acts on the sea.
Known subject.	Known predicate.		Subject whose predicate is unknown.	Unknown predicate.

Sometimes the fourth term or unknown predicate may represent something that has received no name in the language. Thus, if we take the words of Hamlet, "In my mind's eye," the metaphor when expanded would become—

Aş	the body	is enlightened by the eye,	so	the mind	is enlightened by a certain percep- tive faculty
	Known subject.	Known predicate.		Subject whose predicate is un- known.	Unknown predicate.

For several centuries there was no word in the Latin language to describe this "perceptive faculty of the mind." At last they coined the word "imaginatio," which appears in English as "imagination." This word is found as early as Chaucer; but it is quite conceivable that the English lan guage should, like the Latin, have passed through its best period without any single word to describe the "mind's eye."

522. The details of the expansion will vary according to the point and purpose of the metaphor. Thus, when Macbeth (act iii. sc. 1) says that he has "given his eternal jewel to the common enemy of man," the point of the metaphor is apparently the pricelessness of a pure soul or good conscience, and the metaphor might be expanded thus—

"As a Jewel is precious to the man who wears it, so is a good conscience precious to the man who possesses it."

But in *Rich. II.* i. 1. 180, the same metaphor is expanded with reference to the necessity for its safe preservation:—

"A jewel in a ten-times barr'd-up chest Is a bold spirit in a loyal breast."

523. Personal Metaphor.—There is a universal desire among men that visible nature, e.g. mountains, winds, trees, rivers and the like, should have a power of sympathising with men. This desire begets a kind of poetical belief that such a sympathy actually exists. Further, the vocabulary expressing the variable moods of man is so much richer than that which expresses the changes of nature that the latter bor rows from the former. Hence the morn is said to laugh, mountains to frown, winds to whisper, rivulets to prattle

oaks to sigh. Hence arises what may be called Personal Metaphor.

Def. A Personal Metaphor is a transference of personal relations to an impersonal object for the purpose of brief explanation.

524. Personal Metaphors expanded.—The first term will always be "a person;" the second, the predicated relation properly belonging to the person and improperly transferred to the impersonal object; the third, the impersonal object. Thus-

"As a person frowns, so an overhanging mountain (looks

gloomy).

"As a child prattles, so a brook (makes a ceaseless cheerful clatter)."

525. Personifications.—Men are liable to certain feelings, such as shame, fear, repentance and the like, which seem not to be originated by the person, but to come upon him from without. For this reason such impersonal feelings are in some languages represented by impersonal verbs. In Latin these verbs are numerous, "pudet," "piget," "tædet," "pœnitet," "libet," &c. In Early English they were still more numerous, and even now we retain not only "it snows," "it rains," but also (though more rarely) "methinks," "meseems," "it shames me," "it repents me." Men are, however, not contented with separating their feelings from their own person; they also feel a desire to account for them. For this purpose they have often imagined as the causes of their feelings, Personal Beings, such as Hope, Fear, Faith, &c. Hence arose what may be called Personification.

In later times men have ceased to believe in the personal existence of Hope and Fear, Graces and nymphs, Flora and Boreas; but poets still use Personification, for the purpose of setting before us with greater vividness the invisible operations of the human mind and the slow and impercep-

tible processes of inanimate nature.

Def. Personification is the creation of a fictitious Person in order to account for unaccountable results, or for the purpose of vivid illustration.

526. Personifications cannot be expanded.—The process of expansion into simile can be performed in the case of a Personal Metaphor, because there is implied a comparison between a Person and an impersonal object. But the process cannot be performed where (as in Personifications) the impersonal object has no material existence, but is the mere creation of the fancy, and presents no point of comparison. "A frowning mountain" can be expanded, because there is implied a comparison between a mountain and a person, a gloom and a frown. But "frowning Wrath" cannot be expanded, because there is no comparison.

It is the essence of a metaphor that it should be literally false, as in "a frowning mountain." It is the essence of a personification that, though founded on imagination, it is conceived to be literally true, as in "pale fear," "dark dishonour." A painter would represent "death" as "pale," and "dishonour" as "dark," though he would not represent a "mountain" with a "frown," or a "ship" like a "plough."

527. Apparent Exception.—The only case where a simile is involved and an expansion is possible is where a person, as for instance Mars, the God of War, is represented as doing something which he is not imagined to do literally. Thus the phrase "Mars mows down his foes" is not literally true. No painter would represent Mars (though he would Time) with a scythe. It is therefore a metaphor and, as such, capable of expansion thus:—

"As easily as a haymaker mows down the grass, so easily does Mars cut down his foes with his sword."

But the phrase "Mars slays his foes" is, from a poet's or painter's point of view, literally true. It is therefore no metaphor, and cannot be expanded. 528. Personification analysed.—Though we cannot expand a Personification into a simile, we can explain the details of it. The same analogy which leads men to find a correspondence between visible and invisible objects leads them also to find a similarity between cause and effect. This belief, which is embodied in the line—

"Who drives fat oxen should himself be fat,"

is the basis of all Personification. Since fear makes mer look pale, and dishonour gives a dark and scowling expression to the face, it is inferred that Fear is "pale," and Dishonour "dark." And in the same way Famine is "gaunt;" Jealousy "green-eyed;" Faith "pure-eyed;" Hope "whitehanded."

- 529. Good and bad Metaphors.—There are certain laws regulating the formation and employment of metaphors which should be borne in mind.
- (1.) A metaphor must not be used unless it is needed for explanation or vividness, or to throw light upon the thought of the speaker. Thus the speech of the Gardener, Rich. II. iii. 4. 33.—

"Go then, and like an executioner Cut off the heads of our fast-growing sprays," &c.

is inappropriate to the character of the speaker, and conveys an allusion instead of an explanation. It illustrates what is familiar by what is unfamiliar, and can only be justified by the fact that the gardener is thinking of the disordered condition of the kingdom of England and the necessity of a powerful king to repress unruly subjects.

(2.) A metaphor must not enter too much into detail: for every additional detail increases the improbability that the correspondence of the whole comparison can be sustained. Thus, if King Richard (Rich. II. v. 5. 50) had been content, while musing on the manner in which he could count time by his sighs, to say—

"For now hath Time made me his numbering clock,"

there would have been little or no offence against taste. But when he continues—

"My thoughts are minutes, and with sighs they jar Their watches on unto mine eyes, the outward watch. Whereto my finger, like a dial's point, Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears. Now, sir, the sound that tells what hour it is Are clamorous groans which strike upon my heart, Which is the bell,"—

we have an excess of detail which is only justified because it illustrates the character of one who is always "studying to compare,"* and "hammering out" unnatural comparisons.

(3.) A metaphor must not be far-fetched nor dwell upon the details of a disgusting picture:

"Here lay Duncan,
His silver skin laced with his golden blood;
... there the murderers
Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their daggers
Unmannerly breech'd with gore."—Macbeth, ii. 3. 117.

There is but little, and that far-fetched, similarity between gold lace and blood, or between bloody daggers and breech'd legs. The slightness of the similarity, recalling the greatness of the dissimilarity, disgusts us with the attempted comparison. Language so forced is only appropriate in the mouth of a conscious murderer dissembling guilt.

(4.) Two metaphors must not be confused together, particularly if the action of the one is inconsistent with the action of the other.

It may be pardonable to *surround*, as it were, one metaphor with another. Thus, fear may be compared to an aguefit, and an ague-fit passing away may be compared to the overblowing of a storm. Hence, "This ague-fit of fear is overblown" (*Rich. II.* iii. 2. 190) is justifiable. But

"Was the hope drunk
Wherein you dressed yourself? Hath it slept since?"

Macbeth. i. 7. 36.

^{&#}x27; I cannot do it; yet I'll hommer it out."-Rich. 11. v. 5. 1

is, apart from the context, objectionable; for it makes Hope a person and a dress in the same breath. It may, however, probably be justified on the supposition that Lady Macbeth is playing on her husband's previous expression—

"I have bought Golden opinions from all sorts of people, Which would be worn now in their newest gloss, Not cast aside so soon."

(5.) A metaphor must be wholly false, and must not combine truth with falsehood.

"A king is the pilot of the state," is a good metaphor. "A careful captain is the pilot of his ship," is a bad one. So

"Ere my tongue Shall wound mine honour with such feeble wrong, Or sound so base a parle,"—Rich. II. i. 1. 190.

is objectionable. The tongue, though it cannot "wound," can touch. It would have been better that "honour's" enemy should be intangible, that thereby the proportion and the perfection of the falsehood might be sustained. Honour can be wounded intangibly by "slander's venom'd spear" (Rich. II. i. 1. 171); but, in a metaphor, not so well by the tangible tongue. The same objection applies to

"Ten thousand bloody crowns of mothers' sons
Shall ill-become the flower of England's face,
Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace
To scarlet indignation, and bedew
Her pastures' grass with faithful English blood."

Rich. II. iii. 3. 96.

If England is to be personified, it is England's blood, not the blood of ten thousand mothers, which will stain her face. There is also a confusion between the blood which mantles in a blush and which is shed; and, in the last line, instead of "England's face," we come down to the literal "pastures' grass."

(6.) Personifications must be regulated by the laws of personality. No other rule can be laid down. But exaggerations like the following must be avoided:—

"Comets, importing change of times and states, Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky, And with them scourge the bad revolting stars."

I Hen. VI. i. 1. 2.

The Furies may be supposed to scourge their prostrate victims with their snaky hair, and comets have been before now regarded as scourges in the hand of God. But the liveliest fancy would be tasked to imagine the stars in revolt, and scourged back into obedience by the crystal hair of comets.

NOTES AND QUESTIONS.*

MACBETH, ACT III.

Scene 1

- 3. "Thou play'dst most foully for't." Expand the metaphor into its simile. (Grammar, 521.)
 - 14. "And all-thing unbecoming." See "All" (Grammar). What is there remarkable in this use of all? Comp. iii. 2. 11—"Things without all remedy."
 - 15. "A solemn supper." Modernize. Trace the present meaning from the derivation. Compare
 - "A solemn hunting is in hand."—T. A. ii. 1. 112.
 - 17. "To the which." What is the antecedent to the which? Why do we say the which, but never the who? (Grammar, "Which," 270.)
 - 25. "The better." When do we add the to a comparative? (Grammar, 94.) Can the be explained here?
 - 44. "While then." (See 137.) Compare

"He shall conceal it
Whiles you are willing it shall come to note."
T. N. iv. 3, 29.

Illustrate from Greek and Latin.

- "To be thus thus is nothing but to be safely thus." Explain the grammatical construction of the last clause. (See 385.)
- "Which would be feared." Modernize would. Explain (Grammar, 329) the Elizabethan usage.
 - "'Tis much he dares." Is there any object to "he dares"? (244.)

^{*} The numbers refer to the paragraphs of the Grammar.

"And to that dauntless temper of his mind." Meaning of? 52. (See Grammar, "To.")

"None but he." Illustrate this construction by Shakespeare's use of except. (See Grammar, "But.")

56.

". . . And, under him. My genius is rebuked; as, it is said, Mark Antony's was by Cæsar."

See A. and C. ii. 3, 20-30. Trace the meaning of genius from its derivation.

- 65. "For Banquo's issue have I filed my spirit." Meaning of? Give similar instances of the dropping of the prefix. (See Prosody, 460.)
- 72. "Champion me to the utterance." Meaning of? Trace the meaning of champion and utterance from the derivation. What historical inference may be drawn from the fact that both these words are derived from the French? Mention a similar inference contained in the dialogue between Gurth and Wamba in "Ivanhoe."
- 75. "So please your highness." Parse please. (See 297.)
- 81. "How you were borne in hand, how cross'd, the instruments." Is this an Alexandrine? (See Prosody, 468; and compare

"My books and instruments shall be my company." T. of Sh. i. 1. 82.)

"Like labour with the rest, where the other instruments." Coriol. i. 1. 104.

"I. But now thou seem'st a coward.

Hence, vile instrument."—Cymb. iii. 4. 75.

"Borne in hand." Meaning?

"The Duke

Bore many gentlemen, myself being one, In hand and hope of action."—M. for M. i. 4. 52.

We do not now say "to bear in hope," but "to keep a person in hope, suspense," &c. So a rich hypocrite, pretending illness to squeeze presents out of his expectant legatees, is said to-

> "Look upon their kindness, and take more And look on that, still bearing them in hand, Letting the cherry knock against their lips."

> > B. J. Fox, i. I. init.

- We still say, to "bear in mind," but we generally use "a hand" in this sense
- 83. "To half a soul and to a *notion* crazed." Meaning of *notion* here? Compare
 - "His notion weakens, his discernings Are lethargied."—Lear, i. 4. 248.

Trace the double meaning of the word from the derivation.

- 84. "M. Say 'Thus did Banquo.' Murd. You made it known to us." Scan. (See 454.)
- 87. "Your patience so predominant in your nature." Scan.
- 88. "Are you so gospell'd to pray for this good man." Modernize. (See 282.)
- 91. "M. And beggar'd yours for ever. Murd. We are men, my liege." Scan.
- 95. "The valued file." Trace this and other meanings of file from the derivation. Explain the meaning and use of valued (374). Could we say "a valued catalogue?"
- "The gift which bounteous nature hath in him closed." Parse closed. (See 460.) Compare
 - "Dance, sing, and in a well-mixed border Close this new brother of our order."—ROWLEY.

What is now the difference between "I have him caught," and "I have caught him"? Compare

- "And when they had this done." St. Luke v. 6.
- 100. "Particular addition from the bill that writes them all alike." Meaning of from? (See Prepositions.)
- 103. "Not in the worst rank of manhood, say't." Scan. (See 485)
- 108. "Who wear our health but sickly in his lite Which in his death were perfect. Murd. I am one, my liege."

What is the antecedent to which? Scan the second line.

112. "So weary with disasters, tugg'd with fortune." Parse and explain tugg'd. How does the meaning differ from the modern meaning? Compare

"Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,"
3 Hen. VI. ii. 5. 12.

and, for the construction:

"And, toil'd with works of war, retired himself To Italy."—Rich. II. iv. 1, 96.

113. "That I would set my life on any chance." Expand the metaphor. Compare

"Who sets me else? By heaven I'll throw at all."

Rich. II. iv. 1. 57.

116.

"And in such bloody distance, That every minute of his being thrus!s Against my near'st of life."

Expand the metaphor. What is meant by "my near'st of life?" Illustrate by "home-thrust," and οἰκεῖος.

- 120. "And bid my will avouch it." Trace the meaning from the derivation.
- 121. "For certain friends." Meaning of for here? How did for become a conjunction?
- 122. "Whose loves I may not drop." What is the meaning of may? Derive the modern from the original meaning.

123.

"But wail his fall Who I myself struck down."

What is the antecedent to who? What is there remarkable in the sentence? (Gram. 274.)

127. "Perform what you command us. First Murd. Though our lives—"

What do you suppose the First Murderer intended to say? Why did Macbeth interrupt him?

- 128. "Your spirits shine through you. Within this hour at most." Scan.
- "The perfect spy of the time." Apparently in this difficult passage spy is put for "that which is spied," "knowledge."
- 132. "Always thought." Parse thought. Illustrate the construction from Greek.*

"From the palace." From, how used?

^{*} Liddell and Scott: δοκῶ, ii. 4.

138 "I'll come to you anon. We are resolved, my lord."

Perhaps "t'you anon" is to be considered as one foot.

If not, how can this verse be scanned? (See 500.) What is the emphatic word in the Murderer's reply?

SCENE 2.

- 3. "Say to the king, I would attend his leisure." Modernize the latter words. Trace the different meanings of attend from the derivation. What is the exact meaning of would?
- 9. "Lady M. 'Tis safer to be that which we destroy Than by destruction dwell in doubtful joy.

Enter MACBETH.

How now, my lord! Why do you keep alone?"

Illustrate the character of Lady Macbeth from her words before and after the entrance of her husband. Why and when, for the most part, does Shakespeare use rhyme?

- 11. "With them they think on. Things without all remedy."

 Scan. What is the object of on? (See 242.) How is all used?
- 16. "But let the frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer." Perhaps a pause is intended after "let:" "But let—yes, even the frame," &c. In that case "But let" is an unfinished verse, and the rest is a complete verse. In the Fol. 1623 the first line ends with "disjoint," containing four accents. When does Shakespeare use verses with four accents (505-9)?
- 19. "That shake us nightly; better be with the dead." Scan. How can you justify an accent on the first syllable in the foot "bétter?"
- 21. "Than on the torture of the mind to lie
 In restless ecstasy. Duncan is in his grave."

What suggested the expression "to lie on the torture of the mind"? Trace this, as well as the modern, meaning of ecstasy from the derivation. Compare

"Where violent sorrow seems A modern ecstasy."—Macbeth, iv. 3. 170.

40.

- Give instances of classical words restricted in meaning by modern, compared with Elizabethan, usage. (See Introduction.) Scan the latter line.
- 27. "Gentle my lord." Explain and illustrate the position of my. (See 13.)
- "Be bright and jovial among your guests to-night." Trace the meaning from the derivation. Give words similarly derived. Scan.
- 30. "Let your remembrance apply to Banquo." Scan. (See Prosody, 477.)
- 38. "Nature's copy." Meaning of? Comp. T. N. i. 5. 257.

"'Tis beauty truly blent whose red and white Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on."

"Ere the bat hath flown His cloister'd flight."

What is alluded to?

- 42. "The shard-borne beetle." Shard is scale. Ben Jonson talks of "scaly beetles with their habergeons." And in Cymb. iii.
 2. 20, "The sharded beetle" is opposed to "the full-winged eagle."
- 46. "Seeling night." To seel was "to close the eyelids of hawks partially or entirely by passing a fine thread through them; siller, Fr. This was done to hawks till they became tractable."—NARES.
- 48. "Cancel and tear to pieces that great bond." Comp. Rich. III. iv. 4. 77: "Cancel his bond of life." Macbeth iv. 1. 99: "Shall live the lease of nature." And—

"Through her wounds doth fly Life's lasting date from cancell'd destiny."—R. of L.

Explain the meaning of the expression here, and trace the meaning of cancel from the derivation.

54. "Hold thee still." Modernize. (See 20.)

SCENE 3.

- 3, 4. " To the direction just." Meaning of to? (See 187.)
 - 5. "Now spurs the *lated* traveller apace." Modernize. Illustrate by similar instances the shortening of the word.

10. "Within the note of expectation." This may perhaps mean, "the memorandum or list of expected guests." Compare

"I come by note."—M. of V. iii. 2. 140.

"That's out of my note." - W. T. iv. 3. 49.

Otherwise it may mean "the boundary," "limit." Compare

"Within the prospect of belief."-Macbeth, i. 3. 74.

SCENE 4.

Sit down: at first

And last the hearty welcome."

Compare 1 Hen. VI. v. 5. 102:

"Ay grief I fear me both at first and last."

Meaning of? What distinction is now made between first and at first, last and at last?

5. "Our hostess keeps her state, but in best time We will require her welcome."

Show, from the antithesis implied in but, what is meant by "keeping her state." Compare

"The king caused the queene to keepe the estate, and then sate the ambassadors and ladies, as they were marshalled by the king, who would not sit, but walked from place to place making cheare."—HOLINSHED, quoted by CLARK and WRIGHT.

The "state" was used technically to mean "a canopy."

- 11. "Be large in mirth." Modernize. Illustrate from largess.
- 12. "The table round. There's blood upon thy face. M. 'Tis

 Banquo's then." What name has been given, and why, to
 this arrangement of the parts of verses? Compare lines 15,
 20, 51, 69, which are similarly arranged. (See Prosody,
 513.)
- 13. "'Tis better thee without than he within." Meaning? Comment on the syntax. (See 206, 212.)
- 23. "As broad and general as the casing air." Compare 2 Hen. VI. v. 2. 43:

[&]quot;Now let the general trumpet blow his blast."

Meaning of general? Modernize. What is the difference between "general," "universal," and "common"?

34.

"That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a-making,
'Tis given with welcome: to feed were best at home."

Analyse the sentence, and show the confusion of two constructions. Whence arose the use of a, as in a-making? (See 140.) Scan the last line.

- 36. "From thence." Meaning of? (See 158.)
- 42. "Who may I rather challenge for unkindness." Is who always used for whom? Whence arises the difference between may, in "may I challenge," as here, and "I may challenge"?
- 57. "You shall offend him." Modernize. What is the present rule for the use of shall with respect to the second and third persons? How did the rule arise? (See 317.)
- 61. "This is the very painting of your fear." Modernize. Trace from the derivation the Elizabethan meaning, and hence the modern meaning, as in "His very dog deserted him."
- 64. "Impostors to true fear." Meaning of to? (See 187.)
- 66. "Authorized by her grandam." Compare for the accent—
 "His madness so with his authorized youth."—L. C. 15.
 "Authorizing thy trespass with compare."—Sonn. 35.
- 75. "Ere human statutes purged the gentle weal." How is gentle used? If the weal was already gentle, how did it require to be purged?
- 79. "The times have been That, when the brains were out, the man would die." Modernize that. Illustrate this use. (See 284.)
- 81. "With twenty mortal murders on their crowns." Why twenty? (See above, line 27.)
- 87. "To those that know me. Come, love and health to all." Scan this and the previous line.

"His rudeness so with his authorized youth."-L. C. 15.

^{*} Neither of these passages is conclusive, as authorize coming at the beginning of the verse may have the accent on the first syllable. Add therefore:

LINB

- 91. 'We thirst." Thirst is not used elsewhere by Shakespeare in the sense of "drinking a health." [? "first."]
- 95. "Thou hast no *speculation* in those eyes." Illustrate from this use of *speculation* the general difference between the Elizabethan and the modern use of classical words. (See Introduction.)
- 98. "Only." Probably transposed. (See Grammar, 420.)
- 99 "What man dare." Why not dares? Compare
 "Let him that is no coward
 But dare maintain."—I Hen. VI. ii. 4. 32.

(Dare occurs thus three times in the unhistorical plays, dares thirty times. In the historical plays dare eight, dares seven times.)

105. "If trembling I inhabit, then protest me." No other instance has been given where inhabit means "linger at home." Shakespeare may, however, have derived this use of the word from οἰκουρεῖν ("to be a stay-at-home" as opposed to "going out to war") through NORTH'S Plutarch, 190:—

"The home-tarriers and house-doves," &c.

Trace this and the modern meaning of protest from the derivation. Comp. M. Ado, v. 1. 149:

"I will protest your cowardice."

106. "The baby of a girl." Baby was sometimes used for "doll:"

"And now you cry for't As children do for babies back again."

B. and F. (HALLIWELL).

109. "You have displaced the mirth, broke the good meeting."
What is here contrary to common usage? (See 343.)

"You make me strange
Even to the disposition that I ove."

Comp. C. of E. ii. 2. 151:

"As strange unto your town as to your talk."

Owe is frequently used for ow(e)n, as ope for open. Comp. debeo from de and habeo.

122. Why does not Lady Macbeth continue her expostulations when she is alone with her husband?

LINE 124. "Augurs and understood relations." Comp. below, iv. 3. 173:

"O, relation

Too nice, and yet too true."

The utterances of birds are apparently called relations.

- 126. "What is the night?" Illustrate this use of what. (See 252.)
- 129. "Did you send to him, sir?" Why does Shakespeare here make Lady Macbeth thus address her husband?
- 133. "And betimes I will to the weird sisters." This line must probably be scanned by pronouncing weird as two syllables. (See Prosody.) In the Folio weird is spelt weyard. Comp. ii. 1. 20:
 - "I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters."
- 138. "Returning were as tedious as go o'er." Parse returning and go.
- 141. "You lack the season of all natures, sleep." Illustrate from this and other passages the practical and unimaginative character of Lady Macbeth, as contrasted with her husband. Compare with this v. I. Compare also ii. 2. 67: "A little water clears us of this deed;" and v. I. 35: "Yet here's a spot," and, in the same scene, "What, will these hands ne'er be clean?" In what sense may such lines as ii. 2. 67, iii. 4. 141, be called specimens of "irony"?

Compare also Duncan speaking of the first (not of the second) Thane of Cawdor:

"There's no art

To find the mind's construction in the face.

He was a gentleman on whom I built

An absolute trust."—i. 4. 11.

In the same scene, l. 58, Duncan says of Macbeth, "It is a peerless kinsman."

Other instances of Shakespearian "irony" may be found in *Rich. III.* iii. 2. 67; *Coriol.* iii. 1. 19; I *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 528, compared with 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 5. 51; *A. and C.* i. 2. 32, compared with *Ib.* v. 2. 330, *T. of A.* i. 2. 92, *Rich. III.* i. 2. 112, and *Ib.* iv. 1. 82; *Macbeth*, ii 3. 97-100, and *Ib.* v. 2. 22; *Rich. III.* iii. 1. 110.

SCENE 5.

LINE

- Why does Shakespeare make the witches speak in a different metre from the rest of the play? Illustrate from the Midsummer Night's Dream and the Tempest.
- "Close contriver of all harms." Meaning of close? Comp. Cymb. iii. 5. 85: "Close villain, I'll have thy secret."
- 11. "All you have done Hath been but for a wayward son."

Illustrate this from Lady Macbeth's description of her husband, i. 5. Contrast the character of Macbeth with that of Richard III.

- 24. "There hangs a vaporous drop profound." Perhaps mystericus.
- 32. "And you all know security
 Is mortals' chiefest enemy."

Trace the modern meaning of security from the derivation. What does it mean here? Illustrate from Milton's Allegro.

Scene 6.

- 2. "Only I say." Probably transposed as above.
- 4. "Was pitied of Macbeth." Modernize. Account for this use of of.
- "Who cannot want the thought how monstrous." Scan. (See Prosody, 477.) Compare, for the meaning of want, W. T. iii. 2. 55.
- "I think . . . they should find." Modernize. Explain the difference between the Elizabethan and the modern should. (See 326.)
 - "An't please heaven." Explain an't. (See 101.)
- 21. "He fail'd his presence." Comp. Lear, ii. 4. 143:
 "I cannot think my sister in the least
 Would fail her obligation."

How is fail now used when it takes an object after it?

37. "Received of the most pious Edward." (See line 4.)

1 Thir

- 30. "Is gone to pray the holy king upon his aid." Unless it can be shown that *upon* is sometimes used for *on*, this line, as it stands, is an Alexandrine.
- 35. "Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives." Comp. Timon of A. v. 1.:

"Rid me these villains from your companies."

Also perhaps Tempest, Epilogue: "Prayer which frees all faults."

- 36. "Do faithful homage." Trace the modern and ancient meaning from the derivation.
- 38. "Hath so exasperate the king." Why is the d omitted? (See 343.)
- 40. "And with an absolute 'Sir, not I." Compare "an absolute 'shall."—Coriol. iii. I. Also, "an absolute and excellent horse."—Hen. V. iii. 7; "I am absolute 'twas very Cloten."—Cymb. iv. 2. Trace the different meanings from the derivation.
- 42. "As who should say." (See 257.)



INDEX TO THE QUOTATIONS

FROM SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS.

The references are to the numbered paragraphs, and to the scenes and lines of the "Globe" edition.

References marked thus (†) will not be found quoted in the paragraph referred to but similar references will be found explaining the difficulty of the reference in question.

References in parentheses thus (6) refer to the explanatory notes at the end of the play.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

	Act I.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. Act IV.
Sc.	Line Par. 7 172	i. 192 379 ii. 73 27	iv. 7\(\begin{array}{c cccc} 360 & Sc. & Line & Par. \\ 374 & i. & 20. & 88 \end{array}
i.	94 • • 477	iii. 131 177	iv. 15 336 i. 21 202
ii.	29 407	iii. 142 480	iv. 27 218 ii. 21 247
iii.	7 1 368	iii. 156 271	iv. 29 484 ii. 30 129
iii.	107 372	iii. 168 470	iv. 30 . 419 <i>a</i> iii. 9 489
iii.	208 445	iii. 179 268	v. 43 · · 477 iii. 114 · · 400
iii.	221 279	iii. 185 490	v. 48 . 191 iii. 116 400
iii.	224 81	iii. 223 64	v. 58 . 1 iii. 158 434
		iii. 261 208	v. 98 · · 335 iii. 285 · · 301
	Act II.	iii. 289 489	v. 103 175 iii. 298 400
i.	6 418	iii. 313 507	v. 104 . 198a iii. 299 357
i.	60 97		1 377 04 000
i.	98 468	Act III.	vi. 24 · · 276 vi. 30 · · {76 rgi
i.	110 462	i. 5485	vi. 109 405 v. 46 212
i.	111 . p. 16	ii. 108 434	vi. 115 200 v. 55 87
ì.	124 434	ii. 111 . 468	vi. 117 243
į.	134 349	(00	vii. 30 128
i.	144 497	iv. I 331	vii. 31 492 Act V.
i.	163 473	iv. 2 312	vn. 32 363 i. 24 514
i.	184 509	iv. 6 203	vii. 70 127 i. 25 514

Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par. 466	Sc.	Line 198 .	Pas . 243
iii.	4.	. 45	ш.	79 •	1220	iii.	134 .	. 145	111.	30I .	. 425
iii.	27 .	. 315	iii.	85 .	. 294	iii.	165 .	- 507	iii.	220 .	• 434
iii.	47 •	. 376	iii.	86 .	• 277	iii.	181 .	. 152	111.	237 .	. 145
135	48 .	. 492	m.	113 .	. 226	iii.	184 .	. 484	1		

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA.

	ACT I.	iv.	42 302	ii.	129 364	vii.	134 97
		iv.	43 • • 374		J299	vii.	138 509
i.	19 513	iv.	44 460	ii.	137 · \(508		
i.	27 469	iv.	45 33	ii.	144 331	Δ	ст III.
A.	31 443		(174	ii.	160 89	-	
i.	43 . 128	iv.	71 . {510 514	ii.	169 17	i.	15 {208 498
i.	56 193		73 . \$484	ii.	192 179	i.	33 · · 434
i.	62 177	iv.	73 · - 1510	ii.	215 430	i.	35 • • 405
ü.	38 12	v.	7 482	ii.	226 326	ii.	17 509
ű.	115 337	v.	17 479	iii.	22 24	ii.	29 492
ii.	127 252	v.	21 469	iii.	26 168	iii	14 210
iii.	ı\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	v.	33 · · 490	iii.	36 156	iv.	15 484
iii.	8 244	v.	59 · 1/298	iv.	2 203	iv.	31 285
řii.			59 · · (451	v.	21 339	vi.	28 166
iii.				v.	26 484	vi.	30 404
	23 191		ACT II.	v.	27 477	vi.	31 468
iii.	29 263		ACI II.	v.	38 484	vi.	52 · · 497
iii.	36 12	i.	8 178	v.	44 25	vi.	76 11
iii.	41 {301	i.	20 469	v.	78 364	vi.	97 . 510
iii.	48 412	i.	24 • • 492	v.	94 • • 133	vii.	28 . 477
iii.	55 290	i.	31 405	v.	106 13	vii.	40 . 460
iii.	68 508	i.	38 434	vi.	30 158	vii.	50 . 478
iii.	73 • • 363	i.	48 492	vi.	38 460	xi.	3 . 400
iii.	79 • • 472	i.	51 204	vi.	60 405	xi.	10 507
iii.	95 · · 384	ii.	25 • • 364	vi.	78 236	xi.	48 . 7.24
iii.	97 · · 293	ii	30 404	vi.	86 382	xi.	53 \\200
iii.	100 430	ii	53 111	vii.	18 290	XI.	(220
iv.	6 469	ii.	79 360	vii.	29 221	xi.	54 460
iv.	20 198	ii.	98 • • 1	vii.	83 385	xi.	58 326
iv.	39 · • 433	ii.	124 423	vii.	122 364 .	xi.	68 . • 453

		*		7.1 70			
							Par.
12 377	11.	3 · · 420	lx.	9 469	1.	47 .	. 442
36 315	ii.	7 241	жi.	1 124	i.	48 .	• 449
4 • • 507	1 11	1 64		r 76	i.	51 .	- 414
6 478	11.	1387	xii.	- 48 498	i.	58 .	• 397
10 294	ii.	28 507	xiv.	19 435	i.	68 .	. 315
27 381	iv.	3 482	xiv.	22 243	i.	69 .	. 30
47 • • 485	iv.	11 480	· xiv.	72 · · 494	ii.	58 .	. 498
71 505	vi.	3 315	xiv.	120 [470	ii.	85 .	. 291
77 · · 372	vi.	12 503			ii.	103 .	. 126
96 499	vi.	30 { 18	i i		ii.	140 .	• 377
08 (211		92	XV.	59 241	ii.	166.	· 451
98 • 1497	1	39 • • 423			ii.		. 338
99 • • 132	ł	5 • 344		Аст V.	ii.		. 290
138 290	vii.	16 212					-
196 472	viii.	1 364	i.	2 · · 477	ii.	236 .	${}^{85}_{422}$
A am. T37	viii.	7 484	i.	3 · · 315	ii.	240 .	. 430
ACT IV.	viii.	21 499	i.	21 20	ii.	291 .	. 364
14 484	viii.	22 166	i.	27 126	ii.	зоб.	. 512
34 • • 356	viii.	31 . 419a	i.	31 193	ii.	339 •	·{471 496
	36 · · 315 4 · · 507 6 · · 478 10 · · 294 27 · · 381 47 · · 485 71 · · 505 77 · · 372 96 · · 499 98 · · {211 497 99 · · 132 138 · · 290 196 · · 472 ACT IV. 14 · · 484	12	12 . 377 ii. 3 . 420 36 . 315 ii. 7 . 241 4 . 597 6 . 478 ii. 27 . \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \	12 . 377 ii. 3 . 420 ix. 36 . 315 ii. 7 . 241 xi. 4. 507 ii. 27 . \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \	12. 377 ii. 3. 420 ix. 9. 469 36. 315 ii. 7. 241 xii. 1. 124 4. 597 ii. 27. 164 xii. 48. 498 10. 294 ii. 28. 507 xii. 14. 48. 498 27. 381 iv. 3. 482 xiv. 12. 22. 243 47. 485 iv. 11. 480 xiv. 72. 494 71. 505 vi. 3. 315 xiv. 120. \$470 57. 372 vi. 12. 503 xiv. 120. \$470 98. \$\frac{221}{497}\$ vii. 5. 344 Xiv. 133. 230 138. 290 vii. 5. 344 ACT V. 138. 290 viii. 1. 364 i. 2. 477 406. 472 viii. 1. 364 i.	12. . 377 ii. 3. . 420 ix. 9. . 469 i. 36. . 315 ii. 7. . 241 xi. 1. . 124 i. 4. . 507 ii. 27. . 64 xii. 48. . 498 i. 10. . 294 ii. 28. . 507 xiv. 19. . 435 i. 27. . 381 iv. 3. . 482 xiv. 22. . 243 i. 47. . 485 iv. 11. . 480 xiv. 120. . 494 ii. 71. . 505 vi. 3. . 315 xiv. 120. . 470 ii. 77. . 372 vi. 12. . 503 xiv. 120. . 470 ii. 96. . 499 vi. 30. . 48 xiv. 133. . 230 iii. 138. . 290 vii. 16. 212 ii. ACT V. iii. 196. . 472 viii. 1.	12. 377 ii. 3. 420 ix. 9. 469 i. 47. 36. 315 ii. 7. 241 xi. 1. 124 i. 48. 4. 507 ii. 27. 64 xii. 1. 76 i. 51. 58. 10. 294 ii. 28. 507 xiv. 19. 435 i. 68. 27. 381 iv. 3. 482 xiv. 19. 435 i. 68. 47. 485 iv. 11. 480 xiv. 12. 22. 243 i. 69. 71. 505 vi. 3. 315 xiv. 120. 470 ii. 58. 71. 372 vi. 12. 503 xiv. 120. 470 ii. 85. 71. 372 vi. 12. 503 xiv. 120. 470 ii. 85. 71. 392 vi. 39. 423 xv.

AS YOU LIKE IT.

	Act I.	ii. 121†359 iii.	{66 67} .†281	ii.	¥3 • .	477
i.	2 85	11 704 4060		iii.	7 †	281
i.	3 • • 399	111.	75 • • †69	iii.	8	(2)
i.	20 198	ii. {149} .†244 iii.	76 81			(-)
1.	46 208	ii. 165†295 iii.	117 287	iii.	{10} 12}	414
	(70)	ii. 196†223 iii.	118 202	iii.		
i.	${79 \brace 80}$. 232	ii. 220 (1) iii.	122 455	111.		494
i.	115 †356		124†226	iii.	${29 \brace 30}$.†	232
i.		81. 2401322	· ·		_	
	•	ii. 254 · · 90	Act II.	iii.	42	403
i.	129 81	:: (260) to i.	1†490	iii.	50†	406
ì.	734 · · 315	ii. {260} .†494 i.	6 113	iii.	58	341
i.	139 196	ii. 272†136 i.	8†272	iii.	69	231
i.	154†230	ii. 278 (2) i.	33 • • 270	iv.	-	406
i.	172 †206	ii. 279 216 i.	49†501	iv.		
ii.	6†291	iii. 35 · · (3) i.		14.		57a
		00 10	52 - 495		(36)	
ii	30 †196	iii. 44 · · 465 i.	(68) .t500	iv.	39 43	511
ü.	{94} 05} ·†347	iii. {45} .†287 ii.	(09)			
14.	1041 1941	111. {51} ·T357 ii.	5 - 423	iv.	40 †	343

```
Line
                                               Par.
 Sc.
                  Par.
                             Sc.
                                    Line
                                                          Sc.
                                                                 Line
                                                                            Par.
                                                                                       Sc.
                                                                                              Line
                                                                                                        Par.
                 . 178
                             vii.
 iv.
         44 .
                                    172 .
                                             .1356
                                                           iii.
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                  51 .
                                                                             64
                                                                                               53 .
                                                                                                       .1490
        {49}
51}
                             vii.
                                    193 .
                                             . 490
                                                                 {51 \atop 52}.
                                                                                                       401
 iv.
                    93
                                                           iv.
                                                                          . 260
                                                                                        ıii.
                                                                                               76 .
                                                                                                      1456
                             vii.
                                    196.
                                             . 467
                 . 484
 iv.
         6g .
                                                            v.
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                               88 .
                                                                                                       . 478
                                                                    3 .
                                                                          . 494
                                   (198)
                              vii.
                                             . 1233
 iv.
                 . 493
                                   (1995)
         75 •
                                                            v.
                                                                    5 .
                                                                          . 291
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                              HO.
                                                                                                       . †264
                  1254
                                                                    6
                                   Acr III.
                                                            v.
                                                                          . 120
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                              117 .
                                                                                                       . 326
         88 .
 iv.
                  1315
                                                                           (260
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                  (12)
                                                                                              119 .
                                                                                                       . 115
                                i.
                                             . 202
                                       2 .
                                                                 (13).
                                                                          1264
                 . 1364
  ٧.
          5 .
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                              123 .
                                                                                                       .1494
                                î.
                                               380
                                       4 .
                                                           v.
                                                                  16.
                                                                          .troz
         26 .
                 . †244
  ٧.
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                                       . 460
                                                                                              124 .
                                i.
                                      18.
                                             . (5)
                                                            v.
                 . 1137
                                                                  42 .
                                                                          . 494
  v.
         33
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                              132 .
                                                                                                       . 264
                                             . 224
                               ii.
                                     IO .
                                                            v.
                                                                  48 .
                                                                          . 440
  v.
         34 .
                 . 200
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                              150 .
                                                                                                       .1161
                                                            v.
                                                                  49 .
                                                                          . 458
  v.
         36 .
                  †3
                                     (22)
                                                                                            (161)
                               ii.
                                              1401
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                                       .1513
                                     1345
                                                                                            162
                                                            v.
                                                                  53 •
                                                                          . 247
 vi.
         II.
                 . 159
                              ii.
                                             . (6)
                                     33 •
                                                                  60 .
 vii.
                                                           ٧.
                                                                          . 1405
          I
                  200
                                                                                            ACT V.
                              ii.
                                     50 .
                                             . 125
                                                                  6ı.
                                                                          . 1201
vii.
          3 •
                . 138
                                                           v.
                               ii.
                                             . 169
                                     54 •
                                                                  62 .
                                                                                        ii.
                                                                                                3 •
                                                                                                      .1378
vii.
                  178
                                                           v.
                                                                          . 356
          4 .
                              ii.
                                     62 .
                                             . †11
                                                                                        ii.
                                                                                                7 .
                                                                                                      . 1225
vii.
                                                           v.
                                                                  74 .
                                                                          . 499
         31
                     2
                              ii.
                                                 15
                                                                                        ii.
vii.
         48 .
                                    100 .
                                                           v.
                                                                  94 .
                                                                          .1287
                                                                                               88 .
                                                                                                      . 483
                 . 196
                              ii.
                                    127 .
                                             . 119
                                                                                        ii. 91-94.
vii.
                                                                 τι8.
                                                                                                      .1500
                    83
                                                           v.
                                                                          . 501
         52 .
                              ii.
                                                                                        ii.
vii.
                                    144 .
                                             . 2) ^
                                                                          .1494
                                                                                             IIO .
                                                                                                      . 35€
         68 .
                . 189
                                                                 122 .
vii.
                                    147 .
                                             . 492
                                                                                        ii.
                                                                                             115 .
                                                                                                      . 1274
                   (4)
         73 .
                                                               ACT IV.
                                             .{216
416
                                                                                       iii.
                                                                                                      . †81
vii.
                                                                                               15 .
                 . 1287
         75 .
                              ii.
                                    162 .
                                                                   7 .
                                                                            (9)
                                                                                                      .1490
vii.
        83 .
                . 1456
                                                                                       iv.
                                                                                                5 •
                              ii.
                                    163 .
                                                                 (31)
                                             · 443
                                                                                             {21 \choose 22}
                §†343
                                                                  40
                                                                            (1)
                                                                                       iv.
                                                                                                      . 416
                                                                 (5I)
vii.
         88
                              ii.
                                    182 .
                                             . 328
                1500
                              ii.
                                    187 .
                                             . 1284
                                                                                              56 .
                                                                                       iv.
                                                                                                      . I74
                                                           i.
vii.
                                                                 52 .
                                                                         .1170
        96.
                . 467
                              ii.
                                             . 271
                                   188 .
                                                                                              63.
                                                                                       iv.
                                                                                                      . 1221
                                                                         . † 372
                                                                 60 .
vii.
        99 .
                . 1474
                              ii.
                                   106.
                                             . 1193
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                              72 .
                                                                                                      . 1113
                                                           i.
                                                                         . 1243
                                                                100 .
vii.
       ioi .
                . (1)
                              ii.
                                   236 .
                                             . 1194
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            108 ·
                                                                                                      . 192
                                                          iii.
                                                                   6.
                                                                         . 510
vii.
       104
                . 100
                                   26I .
                                             . † 329
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                                      .1469
                                                          iii.
                                                                                            125 .
                                                                  io.
                                                                         .1178
vii.
       119 .
                . 270
                                  268-74
                                             . 511
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                                      .1189
                                                                                            140 .
                                                          iii.
νii.
                                                                  12 .
                                                                         . 115
       132 .
                     4
                              ii.
                                    269 .
                                            20, 1.
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            150 .
                                                                                                      . 1474
                                                          iii.
                                                                 16.
                                                                         . 382
vii.
       139 .
                . 407
                                 320-2 .
                                             . (7)
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            167 .
                                                                                                      . 400
                                                          iii
                                                                 21 .
vii.
                                                                         . 1457
                . 1471
       143 .
                              ii.
                                   330 .
                                            .1274
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            170 .
                                                                                                      .1403
                                                          iii.
                                                                 25 .
                                                                         . 501
     {146}
148}
vii.
                   83
                              ii.
                                   362 .
                                             . (8)
                                                                                            171 .
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                                      . 354
                                                          iii.
                                                                 34 •
                                                                         . 430
                              ii.
                                   411 .
                                             . 224
                                                                                            178 .
vii
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                                         12
      159 .
                                                          iii.
                                                                 36 .
                   90
                                                                         .1468
                             iii.
                                      3 •
                                                92
     {168}
169}.
                                                                                                      †513
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            201 .
                                                                (50)
vii.
                                                          iii.
                .1513
                                                                         . 412
                             iii.
                                                                (21).
                                     IO
                                              294
                                                                                      iv.
                                                                                            218
                                                                                                     . 361
```

⁽¹⁾ Folio, "and." (2) Compare iv. 1. 20. (3) Hamlet, i. 2. 187 (4) "Wearer's" for "weary." (5) Rich. III. i. 2. 217. (6) See i. 2. 52 (7) Rich. II. v. 5. 55 (8) Ib. v. 1. 28. (9) Macbeth, iv. 3. 176

COMEDY OF EFRORS.

	Act I	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par
Sc.	Line Pur.	ii. 180 158	i. 39 · · 319	i. 79 484
i	16 512		i. 60 466	i. 138 417
i.	33 216	ACT III.		
	-	i. 7 382	i. 65 456	i. 153 178
i.	39 480		i. 95 480	i. 170 24
i.	52 280	i. ${24 \brace 25}$ 502	ii. 7406	i. 181 29
i.	53 · · 271	i. 40 502	ii. ${42 \brace 42}$ 460	i. 196 4 69
i.	64 434	i. 47 502	(43)	i. 198 216
i.	85 251	i. 50 502	iv. 3 · · 460	i. 222 467
i.	86 202		iv. 66 226	
		i. 51 502	iv. 152 329	
í.	105 344	i. 52 · · 502	111 132 1 1 329	i. 268 196
i.	151 453	i. 54 · · 502		i. 282 34¢
ü.	2 490	i. 72 502	Act V.	i. 283 244
ii.	37 2(2)	i. 74 · · 430		i. 308 344
ii.	42 37	i. 90 57	i. 10 20	i. 313 343
ii.	46 344		i. 11 354	
	4 511	ii. 30 175		337
	Act II.	ii. 186 . • 422	i. 25 · · 349	i. 358 · · 47 7
i.	33 12		i. 45 · · 490	i. 360 · · 477
ii.	43-45· · 75	ACT IV.	i. 60\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	i. 379 · · 299
ii.	- 1	i. 12361		i. 388 343
11.	153 263	1. 12 301	(430	3

CORIOLANUS.

	Act I.	i. 108 419	i. 200 501	1. 251 . †1984
	- (303	i. 115†497	i. 201†467	î. 255 · · 492
1.	18{302 367	i. 118†512	i. 207 470	(†482
i.	37†252	1. 123†287	i. 209 · · 24	i. 256 . \begin{cases} \dagger{1}482 \\ \dagger{4}484 \\ \text{or} \\ \dagger{5}12 \end{cases}
i.	40 420	i. 124†460	i. 215 . († p. 13	(†512
i.	74 †467	i. 126†264	1. 215 (2)	i. 263 356
i.	75 486	i. 144 287	i. 217†107	i. 272 .{† p. 13
1.	82 , . 95	i. 158†202	i. 218 472	
i	98 {†101 (1)	i. 159 · · 477	i. 220 484	1. 27δ · {†p. 13
		i. 179 244	i. 223 386	1. 283 †30
*.	101 †420	i. 193†171	i. 230 458	
i.	102 442	i. 195†321	i. 231†244	ii. 2 . {†15) †295
i.	105 . { 134 +494	i. 197†501	i. 236 206	ii. 4. 12
		i. 198 471	i. 247 386	ii. 14 486
L	107 . { †467	i. 199 290	i. 248†468	ii. 22†494

Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.			Par.	Sc.	Line	Par
					i.		. 182	iii.	128 .	. 456
_		V1.	60 .	11457	i.	216 .	. 499	iii.	131 .	.146
		vi.	70 .	.†200	i.	222 .	.†221	iii.	147 .	. 404
		vi.	72 .	.†285	i.	235 .	. 286	1 ;;;	T = 0	5 30
-		vi.	81	• 499	i.	244 .	.1414			140
_		vii.	2 .	• 499	i.	257 .	.†350		_	• 343
			6	.†512	i.	262 .	. 187			.1494
44 •	.1494		7 .	.†500	i.	269 .	.†497			• 470
46 .	. 469			. 430	i.	284 .	.†469	1		.†281
65 .		ix.	6.	• 374	ii.	16.	.†399	1		.†198
60	1 46		7 .	· 492	ii.	{19}	∫ 361			.†492
. 09 .				• 477				1		• 27
72 .			_					111.		· 175
-	.†329				1	_		iii.	\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	. 383
	.†231							iii.	216 .	• 431
	. 144		_			41 .		iii.	231 .	• 471
2 .			_		ii.	44 •	(9)	,;;; .		. 456
6.		1			ii.	80 .	. 463			• 450
8.					ii.	85 .	. 182			. 141
9.					l ii	02	∫ 43		242 .	.†349
12.	. 294									. 23
23 .	.1156				1	_				290
42 .	• 474		_				_			.†500
43 •	• 343	1	_				• 45			. 63
57 •	.1187				ii.		.†243			. 162
58 .	.†457	1	33 *	*13-3	ii.	117 .	. (10)			.1159
6.	. 486		Act II	[.	ii.	128 .	. 480	111.	200 .	. 512
{15}.	. 232				ii.	129 .	. 419		Act II	I.
	·†45I	1			ii.	136.	. (11)	i.	10.	. †151
	(35				iii.	Ι.	• 57	i.	ıı.	.†295
		1.	25 .	1.1	iii.	12 .	. 270	i.	23 .	.†223
		i.	51 ·{,	(7) †p. 13	iii.	16.	. 244	i.	33 •	.1159
		;		(7	iii.	47 •	. 145	i.	35 •	٠ 471
36 .	1462		91 .		iii	<i>[63]</i>	(12)	i.	70 .	.1497
42 -	.†494		105 .	.†379				i.	{90}.	. 316
46 .	. 64		143 .							
(50)	.1512									470
(22),	*15*5 A	č.	160 -	• 430	1034	109 .	. †X	3.	30	.tz59
	24 . 3C . 3C . 3I . 22 . 3S . 34 . 40 . 44 . 46 . 65 . 69 . 72 . 92 . 6 . 8 . 9 . 12 . 23 . 42 . 43 . 57 . 58 . 6 . (15) (24) . 3 . 16 . 19 . 22 . 36 . 42 . 46 . 46 .	24 . 29 3c 1513 31 1512 22 1322 30 296 32 . 41 34 503 40 420 44 1494 46 469 65 400 69 \(\frac{46}{136} \) 72 182 92 1329 \(\frac{118}{120} \) 1231 \(\frac{12}{120} \) 1231 \(\frac{12}{120} \) 144 \(\frac{2}{120} \) 480 \(\frac{6}{120} \)	24 . 29 vi. 3c	24 29 vi. 55 3c .†513 vi. 60 3c .†512 vi. 70 3c .†512 vi. 70 3c .29f vi. 72 3c .29f vi. 81 3c .29f vi. 60 3c .29f vi. 60 4c .420 viii. 6 4c .469 ix. 6 4c .469 ix. 6 4c .436 ix. 77 4c .136 ix. 77 4c .136 ix. 47 4c .136 ix. 43 4c .132 ix. 45 4c .144 ix. 52 4c .148 ix. 57 4c .480 ix. 57 4c .474 ix. 58 4c .474 x. 19 4c .474 x. </td <td> 24</td> <td> 24</td> <td>24 . 29 Vi. 55 . 1423 i. 188 . 3c . 1513 Vi. 60 . {305 i. 202 i. 216 i. 216 i. 226 vi. 70 . 1200 i. 222 vi. 70 . 1200 ii. 223 ii. 216 ii. 216 ii. 223 vi. 81 . 499 ii. 244 viii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 6 . 1512 ii. 262 viiii. 7 . 1500 ii. 269 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 260 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 264 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 284 viii. 16 . ix. 7 . 492 ii. 16 ii. 16 vix. 7 . 497 viii. 29 . 477 vii. 29 . 29 vix. 36 . 219 iii. 29 . 29 vix. 36 . 219 iii. 29 . 29 vix. 43 . 1497 iii. 30 vix. 45 . 484 iii. 35 vix. 50 . 1511 ii. 50 vit. 11 vix. 50 vit.</td> <td> 24</td> <td>24 . 29 vi. 55</td> <td> 24</td>	24	24	24 . 29 Vi. 55 . 1423 i. 188 . 3c . 1513 Vi. 60 . {305 i. 202 i. 216 i. 216 i. 226 vi. 70 . 1200 i. 222 vi. 70 . 1200 ii. 223 ii. 216 ii. 216 ii. 223 vi. 81 . 499 ii. 244 viii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 2 . 499 vii. 6 . 1512 ii. 262 viiii. 7 . 1500 ii. 269 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 260 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 264 viiii. 8 . 430 ii. 284 viii. 16 . ix. 7 . 492 ii. 16 ii. 16 vix. 7 . 497 viii. 29 . 477 vii. 29 . 29 vix. 36 . 219 iii. 29 . 29 vix. 36 . 219 iii. 29 . 29 vix. 43 . 1497 iii. 30 vix. 45 . 484 iii. 35 vix. 50 . 1511 ii. 50 vit. 11 vix. 50 vit.	24	24 . 29 vi. 55	24

Sc.	Line	Pat.	Sc.	Line	Par.		Act IV.	Sc.	Line	Par.
i.	ioi .	• 492	ii.	44 "	. 12	0-	T: D	V1.	13 .	. 505
L	103 .	.1376	ii.	50 .	.†287	Sc.	Line Par. 3 · · 295	vi.	30 .	• 497
i.	HI2 .	. 498	ii.	51 .	. 290		-	vi.	33 •	. 506
i.	122 .	. 262	ii.	52 .	. 204	i.	${7 \choose 8}$ · · 333	vi.	34 •	. 219
ì.	137 .	. 508	ii.	${53 \brace 54}$.	. 145	i.	12 476	vi.	35 •	- 4II
i.	144 .	{ t12		(54)	• 45	i.	14 † 494	V1.	39 •	·1244
		} †501	ii.	54 •	. 485	i.	21 319	vi.	40 .	(†159 (†295
i.	146.	.†243	ii.	55 •	. 279	i.	27 †495	vi.	45 •	. 440
î.	161 ·	.†150	ü.	71 .	• 54	ĩ.	47 143	vi.	53 •	. 348
i.	{161} 162}	.†400	ü.	75 •	· 453	i.	53 · · 78	vi.	63 .	. 5I
i.		477	ii.	76.	.†494	1,	55 87	vi.	68 .	.†473
i.	170 .	. 411	ii.	81 .	. 470	ii.	2 410	vi.	{7°}.	. 5X4
1. i.	195 .	. 470	ii.	83 .	. 216	ii.	5 1140	vi.		
i.	202 .	. (13)	ii.	91.	.4159	ii.	13†287	vi.	73 •	. 9
i.	208 .	.†r36	ii.	105 .	. 278	ii.	31†342	vi.	79 •	.†513
i.		_	ü.	116.	.†365	ii.	36 + 513	vi.	85 .	492
1.	215 .	. 476	ii.	119.	. 264	ii.	48 188	vi.	103 .	.†251
i.	${215 \choose 216}$.	. 81	ii.	125 .	. 216		((14)	VI.	104 .	.†505
i.	221 .	.†494	ii.	138 .	.†512	iii.	9 • {295	vi.	{112} 115}.	. 361
i.	235 •	.†500	ii.	142 .	.†513	iii.	13 • .†335	vi.	118.	. 486
i.	251 .	.†466	iii.	2 .	.†467	iii.	48(13)	vi.	131 .	. 164
i.	259 •	.†399	iii.	4 •	. 382	v.	14(15)	vi.	139 ·	.1513
	(261)		iii.	6.	{†494	v.	58 510	vi.	148 .	∫ 2I5
1.	2 625.	• 24			14513	v.	63 †349			14469
i.	280 .	. 484	iii.	8.	•†494	v.	98 287	vii.	4 •	• 90
i.	298 .	†118a	iii.	19.	. 202	v.	99†285	vii.	8 .	. †11
i.	301 .	.†242	iii.	49 •	. 512	v.	110 505	vii.	14 .	• 479
i.	311 .	{478	iii.	62 .	. 63	v.	113†203	vii.	40 .	{†356 484
	-	1485	iii.	67 .	. 482	v.	133 187	vii.	41 .	.†136
i.	319 •	• 343	iii.	87 .	• 475	v.	149 484	vii.	51.	. 490
i.	327 •	• 492 • †469	iii.	93 •	. 151	v.	156 †344	vii.	57 •	•†473
i.	329 .	. 480	iii.	96.	.†113	v.	157 460			
	334 •		iii.	97 •	• 54	v.	174 182		Act V	•
ii.	6.	{ 477 513	iii.	104 .	• 430	v.	197 . {p. 13	i.	3 •	.†468
ii.	12 .	.†129	iii.	122 .	471		_	1	$\{\frac{5}{6}\}.$. 290
ii.	26 .	. 468	iii.	124 .	.†442	V.	203 181			-
		(†500	iii.	127 .	·457a	v.	205 †90	i.	34 •	434
ĭi.	39 •	⊰ or	iii.	133 .	\$457a	v.	214†430	1.	39 ·	.†506 †280
		1494	ļ.		(510	vi.	11 498	i.	40 4	1300

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	I Sc.	Line	Par.
1.	54 - 471	iii.	21 .	.†161	iii.	${143 \atop 144}$.	. 1278	١.	(22)	7.00
i.	62 (17)	iii.	${32 \brace 35}$	400		(144)	.,_,	vi.	${22 \choose 23}$.	1244
ii.	5 †494	1	35)	- 490	iii.	{149}.	· 457			
ii.	- 8 r ₃		(54)		1	(151).	- 437	vi.	23 .	.1494
		iii.	$\{54\}$. †442	iii.	154 .	. †497	vi.	35 •	.1448
ii.	18 458	1	47.50		iii.	170 .	. 460	vi.	40 .	. 290
ii.	22 †92	iü.	67 .	. 469	iii.	186 .	.419a	vi.	41 .	.1495
ii.	41 183	iii.	82 .	†p.13	iii.	189 .		vi.		
ii.	65 (15)	iii.	95 •	. 423	1		· †I		43 •	.†285
ii.		iii.			iii.	192 .	. 483	vi.	44 •	. 227
			96 .	•†490	iv.	39 •	. 492	vi.	6г.	.†513
ii.	89 294	iii.	100 .	.1349	iv.	55 •	.1469	vi.	6g .	. 462
ü.	90 †16	iii.	105 .	• 479	iv.	64 .	. 143	vi.	71 .	.†479
ii.	95 †151	iii.	108.	.1494	vi.					
ıii.	4 • • 479					4 •	. 238	vi.	78 .	. 420
		111.	115 .	. 478	vi.	5 •	. 208	vi.	IOI .	. 480
iii.	{7/8}t279	iii.	121 .	• 455	vi.	II.	.1440	vi.	128 .	tp. 13
iii.	II 200	iii.	125 .	. 482	vi.	15.	. 166	vi.	138.	.†457
	,		3 .					,		437

(r) Folio, "and." (4) Othello, i. 2. 22.

(2) M. for M. iv. 6. 13. (5) A. and C. i. 4. 40.

(3) F. C. iii. 2. 16. (6) See above, i. 1. 272. (8) Hamlet, v. 2. 95. (9) M. of V. iv. 1. 406.

(7) See A. Y. L. ii. 2. 8. (10) Hamlet, i. 1. 162.

(11) Conversely, 1 Hen. VI. v. 4. 7.

(12) M. of V. i. 1. 98.

(13) Tempest, i. 2. 200. Ref. (15) F. C. iv. 3. 138.

(14) Folio, "appeared."

(17) 3 Hen. VI. iii. 2. 46

(16) F. C. iii. 3. 22

CYMBELINE.

	Act I.	iv. 36 382	v. 44 · · 356	vi. 209 1
i.	24 81	iv. 39 · · 405	vi. 6 3.4	Аст II.
i.	48 465	iv. 53 · · 427	vi. 8 337	i. 61 507
i.	65 279	iv. 101 434	vi. 36 · · 375	iii. 24 247
i.	72 466	iv. 112 90	vi. 40 224	iii. 29 . I
i.	96 473	iv. 118 189	vi. 48 499	iii. 59 · · 297
i.	105 244	iv. 125 368	vi. 59 · .{ 53 85	iii. 68 13
j,	124 382	v. 9 467	7 39 (85	iii. 80 76
i.	132 508	v. 10 484	vi., 66 290	iii. 101419 <i>a</i>
i.	168 465	v. 17 · · 370	vi. 84 244	iii. 111 148
iii.	7 · · 453	v. 25 · · 93	vi. 116 8	iii 151 508
üi.	29 224	v. 28 478	vi. 117 247	iii. 153{118
w.	16158	V. 32 212	vi.(Fol.)147. 340	(299
iv.	17 412	V. 41 93	vi. 165, . 18	iv. 19 · 434

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc.	Line Par.
iv.	57 336	v. 148 290	ii. 229 · · 435	iv.	149 404
iv.	88 497	vi. 17 · · 143	ii. 233 · · 215	iv.	$179 \cdot \begin{cases} 95 \\ 367 \end{cases}$
	ACT III.	vi. 19 351	ii. 252 12	iv.	200 . 154
i.	38 357	vi. 21 336	ii. 254 · · 74	v.	2 230
î.	73 356	vi. 25 · · 351	ii. 283 · · 3 3 5	v.	41 120
ii.	65 429	vi. 42 · · 301	ii. 331 · · 7	v.	51 . , 326
	(230	vi. 48 · · 360	ii. 347 · · 341	v.	60 466
ii.	79 · - 352	vi. 63 · · 295	ii. 371 · · 335	v.	85 84
iii.	28 • • 333	vi. 70 126	ii. 273 · · 484	v.	139 356
iii	71 144	vi. 92 · · 174	iii. 9 · · 453	v.	169 28
iii.	99 • • 336	Act IV.	iii. 13 · · 472	v.	186 238
nii.	102 198	i. 16 256	iii. 15 · · 471	v.	228 215
iii.	(Fol.) 103. 340	ii. 26 476	iii. 19 511	v.	230 238
iii.	85 226	ii. 35 · · 333	iii. 20 · · 297	v.	233 · · 335
iv.	135 509	(295	iii. 21 400	v.	252 419
iv.	. 143 †335	ii. 47 · . 296	iv. 6 433	v.	255 291
ıv.	144 12		iv. 15 161	v.	297 230
_	148 \295		iv. 23 · · 403	v.	,,
₩.	(290	1	iv. 35 86		
iv.		ii. 71 · · 274	iv. 48 174	v.	
iv		1 21	ACT V.	v.	0.0
iv	. 187 507	ii. 129 151	i. 8 327	V.	0.0
V	. 21 343	ii. 146 · · 47	ii. 22 · · 336	V.	
V		ii. 190{347	iii. 45 · . 466	v.	
V		473	iv. 60 22	v	
1	7. 71 285	ii. 207 · · 86	iv. 120 · · 295	v	
7	v. 8 ₃ · · 45	ii. 223 246	iv. 147 290	A	. 469 . • 434

HAMLET.

	Act I.	1. 45	†329	i.	.77 •	.†312		το8 .	
i.	I 512	i. 53	+458	i.	81.	.†130	i.	114 +	. 8
	6 191	i. 55	181	i.	84 .	. 92	i.	115 .	.†468
	26 30	i. 56	312		86 .	\$ 469	Į.	116.	. 304
i,	31-33 { 1382	i. 57	• • 3	1.	00 .	·1490	i.	117 .	. 113
	33 361	; \$58	513	i.	93 •	{†453	i.	119 .	. 204
1.	35 511	1 159	1 2.2	1			i.	122 .	. †69
i.	40 +513	i. 70	364	1	98 .			(129)	
ě.	${42 \brace 43}$ 469	1	304	i.	108}.	. 127	1.	132	. 519

(-						
Sc.	Line Par.	Se.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.
1.	136 429	n.	140 .	. 501	111.	63.	.†242	v.	60	. 176
1.	143 1470	ii.	141 .	. 312	iii.	66 .	.†470	v.	бτ.	. \\ (6)
i. i.	154 · p. 13	ii.	142 .	• 349	iii.	70 .	.†276	v.	65 .	. †89
		ii.	151 .	. 194	iii.	73 ·	. 245			∫ 290
i.	161 463	ii.	159 .	.†364	iii.	74 •	. (5)	v.	90 .	1442
i.	168 †364		160 .	• 497	iii.	85 .	.†501	v.	120 .	.1512
ii.	11 (1)	ii.	171 .	.†277	iii.	89 .	• 457	v.	139 .	. 149
ii.	14 †189	ii.	172 .	• 443	iii.	95 •	. †89	v.	1 63.	• 492
ii.	17 244	ii.	176.	• 494	iii.	ioi .	{†513 453	v.	173 .	• 470
ii.	20 342	ii.	179 .	. 192	iii.	112 .		v.	175 .	. 178
ii.	21p.16	ii.	180 .	. 469	iii.		. 513	v.	178 .	.†350
ü.	22†242	ii.	183 .	.†131	iii.	117 .	. 478	v.	180.	. 17
ú.	23p.16	ii.	184 .	.†506	iii.	119 .	. 164	v.	186.	Stoot
ii.	27 †343	ii.	185 .	- 480	iii.	126.	• 5			1297
ii.	35 148	ii.	193 .	.1307		131.	• 57		Acr I	I.
ii.	37 186	ii.	198.	. 450	iii.	133 .	. 22			
ii.	38 412	ii.	207 .	• 3	iv.	3 .	.1297	i.	II .	. II
ii.	42-9 . 235	ii.	216.	. 304	iv.	${4 \brace 5}$.	• 5₹3	i.	36 .	. 482
ii.	68 294	ii.	217	.1107	iv.	6.	• 5	1.	42 .	. 208
ii.	78 . {†p.12	ii.	218 .	. †38	iv.	18.	†170	i.	58 .	·{ 24 400
ii.	81 460	ii.	219 .	.†339	iv.	21 .	90	i.	64 .	. 168
ii.	87 490	ii.	222 .	.†343	iv.	30 .	• 3	ì.	82 .	. 275
ıi.	90 246	ii.	${228}$ ${230}$.	.†513	iv.	35 •	.†315	i.	84 .	. 478
ii.	((2)	ii.	232 .	. 468	iv.	47 •	· 491	i.	91.	. 507
ii.	92 · ·{492 95 · ·188 <i>a</i>	iii.	232 .	. 109	iv.	51 .	.†307	i.	${92 \brace 93}$.	. 178
ii.	994191	iii.	8 .	. 484	iv.	52 .	. 492	i.		
ii.	198) +000	iii.	27 .	.†376	iv.	54 •	. 216	i.	95 •	.†109
11.	(101)		,	S484		57 •	· 75	i.	114.	· 472
ii.	$\begin{Bmatrix} 101 \\ 103 \end{Bmatrix}$. 188 a	iti.	21 .	·{ (4)	iv.	73 •	.{423	-	(118)	. 121
ił.	105 206	iii.	24 .	• 497	v.	6.	. 500	i.	{119}.	. 390
ii.	111 82	iii.	30 .	. 199	v.	II.	. 149	ii.	2.	. 50
ii.	112 149	iii.	43 •	. 82	v.	τ3 .	.†343	ii.	5 •	• 479
ii.	119 . \$456	iii.	45 .	.†315	v.	18.	. 350	ii.	7 .	. 325
	(1409	iii.	47-51	. 415	v.	19.	. 24	ii.	10	. 179
ii.	120†315	iii.	51 .	. 200	v.	21 .	р. 16	ii.	II.	. 167
ii.	124 188	iii.	59 •	§ 490	v.	32 .	.†322	ii.	12 ;	. 132
ii.	126 123			11368	v.	48 .	. 277	ii.	26 .	{ 247 †468
ii.	137 15	iii.	62.	• 95	v.	53 •	. 417	1		(1408

											403
Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.		Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.
ii.	27 .	. 174	ii.		512	ü.	28 .	. 165	iii.	62 .	• 95
ii.	36.	· 434	ii.		(6a)	ii.	${3^2 \brace 44}$.	. 300	iii.	75 -	. 329
11.	42 .	. 69	ii.		511	ii.			iii.	78 .	· 511
ü.	б7.	.†399	ii.	бог	220	ii.	53 •	• 97	iii.	91.	. 24
ii	71 .	.†468	11.	боз	122		68 .	. 229	iv.	3 •	.†285
ii.	80.	.†297	ii.	607	22	ii.	69 .	. 174	iv.	5 •	.†513
ii.	8r .	• 374	ii.	610	512	ii.	71 .	.†164	iv.	7 •	. 200
ii.	83 .	.†343	ii.	622	†366	ii.	73 •	. (9)	iv.	25 .	.4513
ii.	91 .	. 467		Act III.		ii.	93 •	.†137	iv.	∫40 }	. 279
ii.	100 .	.4404	i.	_		ii.	98 .	· 177		(41)	- 2/9
ıi.	113 .	·t159			399 †513	ii.	III .	. 229	iv.	50 .	. I42
ii.	127 .	. 145	i.	{IO . {	†468	ii.	131 .	. 58	iv.	51 .	. 430
ii.	139 .	. бо	i.	13	173	ii.	176.	. †55	· iv.	66 .	• 355
ii.	740 .	. 438	i.	S23)	+~~~	ii.	177 .	. 336	iv.	94 •	.†498
ii.	148 .	. 483	1.	${23}_{24}$.	†513	ii.	178 .	.388a	iv.	95 •	.1159
ii.	151 .	. 240	i.	29	(7)	ii.	184 .	- 355	iv.	98 .	. (13)
ii.	154 .	. \$284	i.		1470	ii.	190 .	.†364	iv.	122 .	. 24
ii.	{157}.	. 371	i.	${28 \brace 37}$.	†315	ii.	${200 \atop 201}$.	. 415	iv.	{133}.	. 500
ii.	176.	.†275	i.	38	†368	ii.	207 .	. 194	iv.	144 .	. †80
ii.	196.	.†274	i.		180	ii.	214 .	.{333	iv.	173 .	. 297
ii.	206 .	.†276	i.	49 • •	482				iv.	180 .	. 485
ii.	287 .	. 128	i.	${52 \brace 53}$	187	ii. ii.	220 .	• 339	iv.	195 .	.1150
ii.	30x .	. 174				ii.	221 .	. 490	iv.	202 .	·†335
ii.	305 .	• 439	1.		508	ii.	227 .	.†364	iv.	20б.	. 492
ii.	343 •	• 37	i.		t ₄₆₉	11.	252 .	. 216	iv.	207 .	• 342
ii.	398 .	. 297	i.		346	ii.	268 .	{†165 (11)	iv.	209 .	. 143
ii.	402 .	. 42	i.	_	†121	ii.	312 .	.†439			
ii.	483 .	.†472	i.		†223	ii.	317 .	• 354			
ii.	504 .	. 512	1.		†515a	ii.	350 .	. 423		Аст Г	V.
ii.	508 .	. 22	1.		342	ii.	377 •	. 425	i.	io .	.†399
ii.	510 .	. 24	i.	164	22	ii.	394 •	. †89	ii.	12 .	11356
ii.	{535}.	• 371	i.	168	(8)	ii.	408 .	.7501			11170
	(540)		i.	173	24	iii.	3 .	. 425	iii.	7 •	{†46 6 {†497
ii.	537 •	.1164	i.		453						
ii.	549 •	.†230	i.		1152	iii.	14 .	·{(12)	iii.	22 .	38
ii.	567 .	· 331	i.	181	68	iii.	20 .	.†272	iii.	46 .	. 143
ii.	578 .	.†129	i.		337	iii.	33 •	. 165	iii.	$\{56\}$. 143
ii.	580 .	. 229	ii.		221	iii.	38 .	.{425 478			
ij.	581 .	.1490	l ii.	22	158		90 .	1478	iii.	70 .	· 371

Şc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	1	AcT	v.	Sc.	Line	Par
1V.	9-12 .	.†500	vi.	n.	·†349	Sc.	Line	Par.	ii.	63 .	. 81
iv.	${17 \choose 31}$.	. 484	vi.	13.	. 405	i.	8ı .	. 184	ii.	108.	. (15)
iv.	39 •	.1466	vi.	25 .	.†244	i.	85 .	. 262	ii.	120 .	. 128
			vii.	13.	• 273	i.	87 .	. 329	ii.	162 .	.†314
iv.	44 •	.†359	vii.	16.	.1145	i.	100 .	• 93	ii.	183 .	. 319
iv.	65.	. 482	vii.	17 .	. 460	i.	(107)		ii.	206.	.†285
v.	3 •	.†319				1.	(131).	.†299	ii.	226 .	. 460
٧	5 •	.†335	vii.	${25 \brace 26}$.	· 425	i.	244 .	\$228	ii.		
ψ.	76 .	. 46I	vii.	28 .	. \$89	i.		1(14)		241 .	• 479
v.	83 .	.1501	vii.	48 .	. 6		252 .	.†322	ii.	${245 \brace 246}$.	- 298
		(1469	vii.	50 .	.†325	i.	253 •	.†148	ii.	258 .	. 316
٧.	84 .	1497	vii.	_		i.	258 .	.†513	ii.	266 .	.1494
v.	${97 \brace 98}$.	.†513		55 •	.†513	i.	261 .	• 430	ii.	270 .	+513
	-		vii.	59 •	.tiii	i.	265 .	. 469	ii.		
٧.	99 •	.†178	vii.	60 .	. 482	i.	268 .	. 360		276 .	-1297
v.	102 .	• 495	vii.	61 .	.†133	i.	281 .	.†513	ii.	277 •	. 81
v.	125 .	. 187	vii.	63.	§ 115	i.	296 .	. †89	ii.	307 •	.†479
v.	128 .	. 146			1+285	i.	298 .	. 241	ii.	323 324	. 513
v.	129 .	.1513	vii.	85 .	. 307	i.	-	. 162	ii.	337 •	. (16)
v.	133 .	. 187	vii.	120 .	{†323	1.	317 .	. 102	ii.	341 .	. 238
v.	141 .	.t501			11329	ii.	{II}.	. 514	ii.		. 166
**		1	vii.	132 .	.†244	ii.	27 .	. 414		342 .	
v.	{143-4} 152-3	.1513	vii.	{152} 160}.	.1285				ii.	343 •	.1513
						ii.	28 .	.†511	ii.	347 •	. 110
v.	(199)	. 181	vii.	159 .	.†110	ii.	29 •	.†438	ii.	373 •	.†513
		S423	vii.	178 .	. 202	ii.	51 .	. †89	ii.	406 .	. 180
v.	213 .	1492	vii.	179 .	†p. 13	ii.	63.	·{204	ii.	409 .	.+360
v.	217 .	. 283	vii	181 .	.1495	ii.	64 .	.1216	ii.	411 .	. 364

⁽¹⁾ W. T. v. 2. 82.

(6) Macbeth, iii. 5. 32.

(6a) Compare "free," Hamlet, iii. 2. 252.

(7) Macbeth, iii. 5. 7.

(8) Macbeth, iv. 3. 170.

(c) Folio, "hatl."

- (ro) Folio, "favourites."
- (11) Hamlet, iv. 7. 145. (12) Folio, "depends and rests." (13) Rich. III. iii. 1. 82.
- (14) Folio, "1t," not "its."
- (15) L. L. L. v. v. 113-4
- (16) Above, 283 .-- Macbeth, ii. 2. 56-7.

⁽²⁾ Macbeth, iii. 1. 15.

⁽³⁾ Rich. III. i. 2. 3.

⁽⁴⁾ Folio, "sanctify:" probably "sanity."

⁽⁵⁾ Perhaps a corruption arising from a repetition of "oft" misspelt "oft," "ost" most."

1 HENRY IV.

	ACT I.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
Sc	Line Par.	iii. 65 490	i. 177{73 432	iii. 92 160
i.	21 474	iii. {103-}	i. 257 466	iii. 104 508
i.	28 87	iv. 127 . 175	ii. 56 419	iii.{(Fol.)} . 480
ii.	53 237	iv. 166 . 178	ii. 60 243	iv. 2489
ıi.	65 419	iv. 182 301	ii. 88 24	iv. 27 07
ni.	157 419	iv. 222 24	ii. 100 168	27
ii.	174 22	iv. 233 220	ii. 118 231	A 37
iii.	15 487	iv. 241 220	ii. 1 20 168	Act V
iii.	17 512	iv. 278 402	(216	i. 20 490
iii.	125 105	iv. 300 216	ii. 123{216	i. 27 · · 507
ıii.	146 426	iv. 312 363	ii. 124 268	i. 50 255
iii.	159 349	iv. 411 363	ii. 141 431	i 65 22
iii.	183 374	iv. 442 243	ii. 149 67	i. 72 342
iii.	234 480	iv. 573 299	ii. 168 276	i. 90 2
iii.	271 457	14. 3/3 299	iii. 50 . {198a	i. 109 · · 505
			(220	i. 116 92
	ACT II.	ACT III.	iii 180 301	ii. 8 498
	. (400	i. 5 487		ii. 30 338
i.	6 {411	i. 17 343		ii. 33 · · 477
i.	11 400	i. 34 466	Act IV.	ii. 62{271 ₄₆₀
i.	12 299	i. 48 220	i. 24 200	**
i.	34 182	i. 60 363	i. 52 · · 98	•
i.	59 227	i. 63 499	i. 110 290	2, , ,
i.	80 { 22	i. 67 484	i. 127 346	3
	(200	i. 72 505	ii. 56 24	iv. 41 469 iv. 87 480
ii.	14 122	i. 74 · · 44	ii. 83 461	
ii. ii.	28 333	i. 100 220	iii. 38 124	iv.{(Fol.)} {461
iii	30 . 24	i. 131 461	iii. 44 · · 467	iv. 125 270
111	28 219	i. 133 55	iii. 68 17	V. 13 · · 472
iii.	${43- \atop 67}$. 231	i. 152 374	iii. 75 · · 220	v. 14 487
		•		
		2 HEN	RY IV.	
	ACT I.	i. 99 260	i. 209 17	ii. 212 68
Ind.	37 · · 2	i. 111 330	ii. 23 319	
1	2 00#	:0	:	ii. 213 . {178

i. 138 . . 425

i. 192 . . 130

i. 199 · · 343

L.

i.

3 . . 295

86 . . 490

87 . 295

нн

ii. 66 . . 254

85 . . 335

253

ii.

ü. 130 .

ii. 213 .

ii. 245 .

iii 27 .

.{178 243

230

263

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par
iii.	39 · · 354	iv. 305 199	i. 98 305	v. 77 · · 510
iii.	59 260	ACT III.	i. 107 305	v. 91 198
iii.	80 371	i. 20 89	i. 117 284	v. 126 202
iii.	91 87	i. 22 264	i. 161 477	v. 153 468
	ACT II.	ii. 57 · · 309	i. 183 81	v. 165 343
i.	70 187	ii. 199 335	i. 198 383	
i.	186 295	ii. 206 . 132	i. 225	Act V.
i.	191 30	ii. 213 32	(301	i. 84 202
i.	200 378	ii. 300 330	3 - 4/2	ii. 24 · · 28
ii.	59 • • 331	ii. 304 220	/5 40/	ii. 66 371
iii.	42 492	ii. 310 405		ii. 85 301
iii.	65 492	ACT IV.	iv. 39 · · 377	ii. 128
iv.	83 335	i. 32 287	iv. 111 51	iii. 03 128
iv.	174 268	i. 71 17	31	95
			V. 71 · · 474	111. 98 343
		HENI	RY V.	
	Act 1.	ii. 21†440	ii. 165 446	ii. 2 315
Prol.	$\binom{6}{10}$ 481	ii. 5 8 †89	ii. 167 486	ii. 23 †406
		ii. 66 419	ii. 172 †89	ii. 31†342
"	12 · · 450	ii. $\begin{cases} 65 \\ 69 \end{cases}$.†265	ii. 183 480	ii. 43 · · †17
"	18 †3	(09)	ii. 199†467	ii 44 · · (5)
i.	1 †20	75 - 409	ii. 203 490	in 70 · . 1469
i.	9 419	ii. {79}	ii. 208 497	íi. 71†468
i.	15 89	ii. 88 217	ii. 248 469	ii. $\{7^2\}$ †236
i.	35†406	ii. 93†223	ii. 256 . {†349	(73)
i.	43 †199	ii. 94 · .†440	ii. 263†244	, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,
i.	(17	ii. 98†343	ii. 270 (2)	23 : 1144-
1.	47 · {†283	(105)	ii. 292 †460	ii. 100 309
i.	53 • • 414	ii. {105} 457	ii. 305 · · 472	ii. 102 (6)
i.	57 · · 403	ii. 108†137	ii. 307 203	ii. 104 321
i.	72 458	ii. 110 89	ACT II	ii. 116†470
i.	75 • •†468	ii. 114 154	Prol. 18 , 349	ii 123†450
1.	81†196	ii. 132 463	,, 26 (3)	ii. 128 . 483
1.	86 433	ii. 145 †69	,, 32 · · (5a)	ii. 129 458
ii.	12 . , 136	ii. {149} 481	i. 9 64	ii. 132†136
ii.	16 . { 193	ii. 153†283	i. 66 428	ii. 139 398
	(1-)	" (462	i. 104†216	ii. 151†439
u.	28 (247	ii. 154 { ⁴⁰²	i 107 (4)	ii. 159 . , 272

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
ii.	159 †467	i. 14 · · 479	i. {190} i 1378	vi. 3†468 vi. 9 (9)
ii.	168 468	***	(193)	
iii.	6 490	iii. 9†474 iii. 12 †89	i. 197 · · 417	vi. 12 · · †440 vi. 18 · · 344
	((4)	iii. 26 490	i. ${256 \brace 257}$ †469	vi. 24 166
iii.	11 {104	(-9)	i. 305 315	vi. 37 364
iii.	12 38	iii. {26} 174	i. 319 169	vii. 58 · · 347
iv.	1 335	iii. 46 †76	ii. 13†468	vii. 76 200
iv.	20 †107	v. 11 484	ii. 23†501	vii. 81 †89
iv.	25†301	v. 12†126	ii. 32†359	vii. 88 †87
iv.	31 364	v. 22 · · 89	ii. 62†150	vii. 121†364
iv.	{46} 47}. 415	v. 24 498	iii. 2 343	vii. {127} (4)
iv.	50 225	v. 35 · .†285	iii. 9†469	
iv.	53 · · 51	v. 60†148	iii. 18 . {†254	vii. 131 . { 402 †249
iv.	64 225	vi. 157 249	(1500	(130)
iv.	{77 78} 414	vi. 165 203 vi. 170†492	iii. 26 297	vii. \\ \frac{165}{171} \cdot \cdot \((4) \)
		vi. 179†492 vii. 9†171	00 00	(174)
iv.	80 †460	VII. 9	iii. {35} 415	vii. 142†158
iv.	85 490		iii. 42 24	vii. 184†111
iv.	90 • • 349	Act IV.	iii. 44 · · 348	vii. 188 377
iv.	101{311	Prol. 8 450	iii. 55 · · 453	vii. 189†399
iv.	103 350	,, 21 264	iii. 59 · ·†474	viii. 44 · · (4)
iv.	105 †95	,, 28 251	iii. 63 290	viii. 84 (10)
iv.	120 (4)	,, 36 440	iii. 70 . { (8)	viii. 116†462
iv.	122 †468	,, 38 · · 374	(10.13	viii. 122 (4)
iv.	124 450	,, 48 +66	iii. 77 · · 297	. 37
iv.	126 477	i. 16†297	iii. 84{348	Act V.
		i. 26 303	iii. 86 451	$Prol. \begin{Bmatrix} 3 \\ 26 \end{Bmatrix}$ †462
	ACT III.	i. 29†513	iii. 95 87	- 480
Pro	1. 6 457	i. 38457 <i>a</i>	iii. 107 492	087
120	10 444	i. {39} 465	iii. 113 319	24 202
"	11†193	i. 45†505	iii. 120 315	,, ,,
12	18 89	i. 89†299	iii. 131†513	,, 45 †141
33	21†466	i. 113 300	iii. 132 †46	i. 31 · · 353
33	30 1189	i. 118 276	i v. 23†201	i. 93 501
**	32 †297	i. 126 †87	iv. 76 248	ii. 4 · · 469
i.	9 †490	i. 128†281	iv. 81†172	::
È.	13†228	i. 181 429	v. 17 290	ii. 19 . {412
				H H 2

Sc, ii.	Line	Par 471	Sc.	Line	Par 440	Sc.	Line	Par. .†361	Sc.	Line 475 ·	Par . 478
ii.	${34 \brace 46}$.	. 287	ii.	78 .	.†361	ii.	{368}.	. 315	ii.	482 .	.1368
ii.	68 .	. 329	ii.	92 .	. †13	ii.	398 .	· 432	Epil	. 11	93

- (1) Folio, "makes." (2) Perhaps, "hence," from home.—Macbeth, iii. 3. 36 (3) Macbeth, ii. 2. 56-7. (4) Folio, "and." (5) Macbeth, iii. 5. 33 (52) Malone, "while we force." Perhaps, more probably, "we'll" is to be repeated (6) J. C. i. 3. 22. (7) Hamlet, i. 2. 182. (8) A. V. L. iii. 1. 16 (9) A. W. v. 3. 297. (10) Perhaps "sides" (486) is prolonged.

1 HENRY VI.

	Act I.	v. 31 48	i. 28. 414	i. 175 467
i.		v. 36 29	i. 34 · · 120	iii. 33 · · 170
	2 529	vi. 4 · · 47	i. 51 484	iii. 46 170
i.	60 489	vi. 12 50	i. 81 492	V. 1, 51 231
i.	71 492	vi. 16 34	i. 112 484	v. 30 319
i.	76 485	vi. 26 42		vi. 6-9 231
i.	{9 ² } 456	vi. 27 50		vii. 34 · · 172
	1931	, ,	ii. 9 335	vii. 70 489
i.	115 440	Act II.	ii or TEO	vii. 72 2
i.	126 . †p. 34	i. 30 36	3 " "	111. /2
ii.	1 217	i. 46 29		Act V.
ii.	19 492	i. 53 · · 27	ii. 123 · .{217	
ii.	54 156	i. 70 17	ii. 124 24	i. 21 · 479
ii.	74 1	i. 71 32		iii. 41 164
ii.	77 89	iii. 28 46		iii. 82{230
ii.	101 498	iii. 58 32		iii. 98 52
iii.	5 487	iv. 15 1	111. 31 92	iii. 177 247
iii.	11 474	iv. 91 47	111. 72 416	iii. 183 342
iii.	20. 488	iv. 98 37	17. 17 111	iv. 8 295
iii.	52 320	, ,,	100 29 0 0 270	iv. 22 168
iii.	87 480	1 0, 0	A - 737	iv. 25 13
iii.	90 382	33	i. 28 287	iv. 57 463
iii.	91 492	v. {75} 48	i. 38 17	iv. 75 105
		v. 89 36		
iv.	10 . †5	v. 96 34	/0 404	3
iv.	16 505			v. 18 122
iv.	28 489	AcT III.	i. 126 490	v. 55 · · 479
iv.	54 - 430	i, 13 · · 49	i. 166 467	1 v 64 505

2 HENRY VI.

	Act I.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
0-	T: 1	-55-	1. 217 20	1. 113 175
Sc.	Line Par.	iv. 31 382	i. 254 · . 264	i. 117 213
		iv. 78 466	i. 301 337	i. 129 484
í.	19 247	ACT II.	i. 348 463	i. 135 · · 443
i.	6 1 168	i. 3{347	ii. 3 405	ii. 59 402
i.	150 296	i. 3 · .{347	3	
i.	166 376	i. 22 226		
i.	183 121	i. 68 . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	ii. 31 190	ii. 103 169
i.	206 477	(335	ii. 84 · · 343	vi. 3 168
i.			ii. 89 156	vi. 23 268
-	208 501	i. 93 · · 86	ii. 100{117	vii. 111 193
i.	225 289	i. 94 349	(291	viii. 36 477
i.	233 280	i. 99 128	ii. 119 501	
i.	247 · · 333	i. 109 220	ii. 139 451	
ii,	17 363	ii. 6510	ii. 178 3	ix. 33 193
ii.	36 80		ii. 257 160	Acr V.
ii.		ii. { , ?} 511	ii. 258 490	
11.	57 • • 289	ii. 55 · · 485	ii. 286 40	i. 16168
íi	58 {116	iii. 20 456		i. 32 512
ii.		iv. 3 463	ii. 295 298	i. 60 · · 335
	69 209	iv. 52 475	ii. 365 460	i. 143 432
ii.	79 89	7,3	ii. 401 158	i. 153 264
ii.	80-2 479	iv. 63 446	ii. 403{492	. 33
ii.	97 • • 470	ACT III.	497	
iii.	6. [491	i. 9 132	Act IV.	i. 211 478
111.	63 {491	i. 66 57	i. 3260	ii. 45 · · 478
iii.	153 484	i. 126 326	i. 85 338	ii. 86 451
iii.	167 409	i. 160 451	i. 87 478	iii. I 247

3 HENRY VI.

	Act I.	iv. 10 226	i. 80 430	v. 42 3c6
i.	215 , . 476	iv. 103 460	i. 83 247	v. 60 381
i.	224 466	iv. 115 218	i. 106 295	vi. 42 229
ii.	38 478	iv. 142 490	i. 110 451	vi. 56419a
ii.	41 467	iv. 150 126	ii. 142 428	vi. 86 244
ii.		ACT II.	ii. 157 156	
ii.	47 · ·{ 95	i. 2 295	iii. 27 · · 192	Act III.
	(776	i. 16 263	iii. 40 423	i. 10 {151
ii.	75 - 289	i. 46{116	iii. 56 . 441	1. 10 . 1348
iv.	6 . 242	1. 40 1280	▼. 3 178 I	i. II 20

470

Sc.	Line	Par.	1	Act IV	7.	Sc.	Line	Par.	I Sc.	Line	Par
i.	31 .	. 189			70	iv.	25 .	. 492	iv	-	477
í.	51 .	. 255	Sc.	Line		v.	2 .	• 355	iv.	34 •	• 37
ii.	_	. 40	i.	92 .		vii.	30 .	. 477	iv.	35 •	. {375
ii.		. 194	i.	115.	. 25			(506	v.	9.	. 251
ii.	143 .	. 223	i.	131 .	· 451	vii.	32 .	. 170	-v.	-	. 13
iii.	14 .	• 394	1				ACT V	7.	vi.	_	. 430
iii.	25 .	. 171	ii.	2 .	465	i.	20 .	· 45I	vi.		-
iii.	87 .	. 265	ii.	7 .	. 503	i.		. 430	vii.		484
	0	(440	iii.	2 .	. 220	i.	97 .	• 373	vii.		. 148
iii.	189 .	.{440	iii.	14 .	. 484	ii.	45 •		vii.	7 •	. 113
iii.	225 .	. 226	iii.	55 •		iii.	8 .		vii.	10.	. 469
									1	21 .	· 371
ш.	226 .	. 291	iv.	12 .	. 146	iii.	14 .	.198a	vii.	34 •	. 289

HENRY VIII.

	Аст І.	i. 126 55	iv. 49 18	ii. 405 90
ſ.	18 228	iii. 50 24	iv. 86 187	ii. 431 168
	60 402	iv. 57 · · 455	iv. 112 295	ii. 435 · · 424
	100-5 467	A YY	iv. 144 90	ii. 438 424
	(164	ACT II.	iv. 153 . { 18 344	ii. {442} 455
i.	145 164	i. 33 · · 341		ii. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\
	(497	i. 42 · · 376	iv. 178 491	ii. 447 · · 455
i.	159 1	i. 52 469	iv. 204 395	ii. 452 468
i.	179 200	i. 67 · . 455	iv. 242 90	
1.	196 394	i. 85 · · 499		ACT IV.
ii.	18 420	i. 97 · · 455	ACT III.	ACT IV.
ii.	32 460	i. 100 469		i. Order of
ii.	55 460	i. 122 455	i. 38 · · 484	(Coron.)
ii.	85 486	i. 127 455	i. 45 · · 2	i. 22 469
ii.	86 371	iii. 15 290	i. 102 236	i. 56 484
ii.	95 · ·{ 4	iii. 16 397	i. 134 · .419a	i. 88 113
	95 • • 1372	iii. 37 226	i. 141 342	i. 91 376
ii.	174 499	iii. 59 · · 455	ii. 117 485	ii. 32 200
ii.	118 492	iii. 87 492	ii. 160 325	ii. 43 · · 173
iì.	140 145		ii. 249 · · 433	ii. 51-80 455
ii.	149 • • 49.2	iv. { Stage Directn.} 194	ii. 340 498	ii. 55 301
ii.	168 501	iv. 14 350	ii. 347 · · 93	ii. 96 180
ii.	179 501	iv. 30 343	ii. 360 87	ii. 126 95
ii.	197 399	iv. 41 301	ii. 368 424	ii. 148 9s

ACT V. Sc. Line Par. i. 19 414 i. 34 400 i. 50 400	Sc. Line Par. i. 106 . 381 i. 169 . 356 i. 174 . 405 ii. 126 . 244	Sc. Line Par. iii. 18 · 419 iii. 66 · 364 iii. 131 · 216 iii. 168 · 456	Sc. Line Par. iii. 173 · · 430 iii. 175 · · 338 iv. I · · 320			
	KING	JOHN.				
ACT 1. i. 119 269 i. 134 350 i. 144 185 i. 161 506 i. 183 87 i. 242 261	i. 371 294 i. 396 92 i. 42i 492 i. 471 294 i. 512 267 i. 560 474 i. 567 193 i. 568 216	iv. 29 492 iv. 35 490 iv 55 166 iv. 78 461 iv. 123 494 iv. 145 220	ii. 258 390 iii. 94 36 iii. 95 352 ACT V. iii. (39 359) ii. 42 337			
ACT II. 1. 33 · . 348 i. 34 · . 17 i. 73 · . 342 i. 109 · . 267 i. 177 · . 473	i. (571 399 i. 575 228 i. 597 191 ACT III. i. 39 269 i. 92 128 i. 177 491	ACT IV. i. 61 342 i. 68-70 326 i. 86 158 ii 27 422 iii 33 174 iii. 50 224	ii. 46 · . 447 ii. 83 · . 457 ii. 91 · . 236 ii. 104 · . 489 ii. 138 · . 350 ii. 146 · . 294 ii. 157 · . 465 iv. 7 · . 433			
i. 216 . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	i. 295 412 i. 299 239 i. 327 196 iii. 8 510 iii. 17	ii. 75 252 ii. 148 . {156 \\ 250 ii. 165 410 ii. 189 200 ii. 199 87 ii. 200 474 ii. 257 447	iv. 50 . 126 vi. 26 . 186 vi. 44 . 131 vii. 22 . 264 vii. 35 . 480 vii. 55 . 226 vii. 60 . 243 vii. 61 . 81			
JULIUS CÆSAR.						

	Act I.	i. ${50 \atop 52}$ 229	i. 79†263	ii. 41 16
ì.	3 • 349			ii. 48 343
i.	{5}, 232	i. \bigg\{55\} 218	ii. 9†315	ii. 71 180 ii. 76 26
i.	42 †85	i. 57 512	ii. 28†513	ii. 191 229
i.	48 129	i. 63 22	1.5-5	ii. 110 198
i.	50 283	i. 66+466	ii. ${32 \brace 33}$ 280	ii. 114 502

Sc. Line Par	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par
ii. 124†228	iii. 120 257	i. 313 382	i. 159 (6)
ii. 142 . 325	iii. 124 2	i. 326†359	i. 171†475
ii. 160 . p. 16	iii. 134 240	i. 331 208	i. 173 †469
ii. 162 †55	iii. 138†335	ii. 37 · .†494	i. 196 (7)
ii. 173 · · 350	iii. 144 128	ii. 38†349	i. 208 225
ii. 174 · · 280	iii. 148†335	ii. 42†322	i. 209 344
ii. 181 . †198a	iii. 154 333	ii. 76 487	i. 215 490
ii. 193†176		ii. 80 . { 490 †497	i. 231 +469
ű. 197 (1)	Act II.	ii. 101 511	
ii. 205 421	i. ${1 \choose 5}$ 73 <i>a</i>	ii. 114†344	i. 274 · .†283
ii. 208 144	i. 50 343	ii. 117 65	i. 281 512 i. 289 (8)
ii. 212 42I	i. 75 · .†307	ii. 119†356	i. 289 (8) i. 295†270
ii. 231 12	i. 81 494	ii. 129†203	,
i i. 2 56 90	i. 83 290	iii. { ⁸ } 235	ii. $\{ 7 \}$ 474
ii. 284 . {†102 (2)	i. gr†123		ii. 29†335
	i. 106 112	iv. 3 (5)	ii. $\{70\}$ 372
(307)	i. 108 378	iv. ${1 - {33} \choose {33}}$ †233	(73)
ii. 312 233	i. 123 253	(76)	ii. 84 301
ii. 314 244	i. 125 390	iv. {15} 513	ii. 96 287
ii. 316 279	i. 135†356		ii. 115 · · 453
iii. 4†442	i. 136 370	ACT III.	ii. 125†281
iii. 14 6	i. {152}†513	i. 17 · · 474	ii. 187 11
iii. 21 264	(153)	i. 18 485	ii. 192 487
iii. 22 (3)	i. 157 172 i. 160 (3)	i. 23 · · 471	ii. 231 475
3, 10	(-66)	i. 30 247	ii. 254 202
iii. 42 86	i. {100}	i. ${39 \brace 40}$ 281	ii. 266†453
iii. 47†223	i. 194†466		ii. 275 · . 414
	i. 196 158	i. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	iii. 13†230
	i. 208 474	i. 92†287	iii. 20 220
	i. 209 512	i. 95†118	
iii. ${71 \choose 73}$ 511	i. 216 263	i. 100†204	ACT IV.
iii 77 . †p. 13	i. 224 · · 397	i 121 11	i. 2t469
iii. 82†137	i. 230 · · 430	i 137†469	i. 12 3
iii. 87 . 315	i. 238 343	i 140 . {†133 †349	i. 23 466
iii. ${91 \choose 92}$. 236	(†497	i. 143 189	i. 28 479
-	i. 285 . or	i. 344 169	i. 41 199
iii. {101} (4)	i. 291†513	i. 155†280	i. 47 · · 474
iil. 117 . 279	i. 309 1244	i. 157 . 236	ii. 5 303

Sc.	Line	Par †291	Sc. Line Pa		(25)	Sc.		Pa r. 50 6
ii.		.†494	iii. 231 48	80	/36)1213	iii.		178
iii.		. 483	iii. 237 · . 47	l i.	44 · · 482 45 · · 506	iii.	${46 \brace 47}$ t.	513
iii.		. † 356	iii. 241 29		{47 48}+513	iii.		212
iii.	, ,	. 514	iii. 261†32		60 2	iii.	96 { [†]	159 16
íii.	164)		iii. $\binom{263}{234}$ 51	i.	70 506	iii.		466
iii.	(65).	.†244	iii. 270†28	1	72 114	iv.		13 420
iii.	73 · 95 ·	. 350	iii. 271 36	6	${74 \brace 77}$. 234	iv.	30	466
iii.	102 .	. (9)	iii. 280 (10	1.	80 379 83†263	iv.		295 136
iii.	{III} ·	{ †263 †264		i.	87 †107	v.		283
mi.	142 .	.†497	Act V.	i.	96 †442	v.	22†.	414
iii. iii.	153 .	.†469 • 380	i. 1 47	4 i.	108 †500	v.	•••	232
iii.	157 .	.†466	i. ${26 \choose 27}$ †51		7 • .†495	v.		123 57a
iii.	179 •	. 486	i. 33 · · 41	iii.	25 295	v.	69 :	118

(1) 1 Hen. IV. iii. 2. 16. (2) Folio, "and." (3) Rich. III. v. 3. 156 (4) Play on "bond."—Macbeth in. 2. 49; Rich. III. iv. 4. 77. (5) Rich. III. iv. 4. 444. (6) M. cf V. iii. 2. 61. (7) A. Y. L. i. 3. 35 (9) Folio, "Pluto's." See Introduction, p. 16, note. (10) Tempest, i. 2. 213.

LEAR.

	ACT 1.	(87)	i. 150 1501	1. 205 (1)
١.	36†315	i. \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \	i. 153†364	i. 207 294
	{43} 67} 469	i. 99 · · 384	i. {156}†458	i. 213†401
	46†501	i {106} +500	i. 162†513	i. {214} †11
	50†319	1 (109)1300	i. 163 200	i. 217 †38
	54 †469	i. {118 134 151}†468	i. 178†382	i. 223 . {†279 †290
i.	56†512	(151)	i. 181 +469	i. 225 458
	74 • .†284	i. 137 . { †497 or †501	i. 183†212 : (193)	i. 226 . {†500 †468
	77 • .†342		i. {193}†247	
i.	78 †469	i. 139†497	i. 198†469	i. 227 387
L	80 trr	i. 147 458	i. 203†207	i. 228tsor

.,			
Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
i. {220}†252	1v. 194 · . +203	i. 63 . 267n	iii. 21 †55
i. 239†343	iv. 197 (4)	i. 68†439	iv. 2†468
: (240)	iv. 204 213	i. 72 · · 294	iv. 27 · · 377
i. {240}†469	iv. 223 . {†434 †512	i. $\binom{72}{74}$ †251	iv. 35 87
i. 251†287		i. 77†306	iv. 42 401
i. 262 375	. 43/0	i. 91†401	iv. 64 †37
i. 264 · · 77		i. 94 · · 478	iv. 65 (4)
i. 271 13	3- 0 . 220	2, 1,	iv. 68†188
i. 272 414		i. 97 · . {472 (5)	iv. 90 480
i. 304†442	430	i. {97} 490	iv. 91 471
ii. 4 · · 456			iv. 101 +513
ii. 14{484	iv. 270 439	i. 100 301	iv. 102 480
(†93	iv. 272{354}	i. 111 482	iv. 107 69
ii. 15 . {510 †512	iv. 282†223	i. 113†174	iv. 111 †11
(28)	1	i. 114 483	iv. {113} 490
ii. { 30}†232	iv. 283 · { 478 † 513	i. 126†468	iv. {114} 490
(125)	iv. 297 · · 480	i. 129†479	iv. 134 · · 490
ii. 44{(2)	iv. 299†511	ii. 54 · · 468	iv. 145 366
ii. 77 · . 381	iv. 305 · · 439	ii. 80 24	iv. 148†513
ü. 87†348	iv. 306 423	ii. 82 12	iv. 157 · · 458
ii. 89 134	iv. 324 · · 438	ii. 86†511	iv. {170}†513
ii. 93 · · 343	iv. 328 3	ii. 88 200	iv. 210 †95
ii. 106†220	iv. 332 463	ii. 106 (4)	iv. 215†417
(tn	iv. 347†501	11. 107 412	iv. 220 484
ii. 161 . { TP. 13	iv. 349 440	ii. 109 492	(240)
ii. 164 419	iv. 362 480	ii. 112†490	iv. {245} 458
ii. 197 · · 458	iv. 365 483	ii. {127}†378	iv. 251 . 457a
iii. 1 178	iv. 366 437	ii. 128 290	iv. 253†513
iii. 21 482	v. 14†401	ii. 135 · · 478	iv. 254 · . †494
iii. 23†501	v. 35 · .†319	ii. 139 290	iv. 255†128
iv. 26†274	v. 36 299	ii. 150 †9	iv. 271 479
iv. 40†281	v. 51†329	ii. 153†494	iv. 274 · · 476
iv. $\binom{63}{64}$ 280		ii. 154 399	iv. $\binom{275}{277}$ fcl. 247
	Act II.	ii. 155 †11	
	i. 28 †469	ii. 172 458	iv. 279†281
iv. 112 . { (4)	i. 32 512	ii. 177†468	iv. 290 507
(363	i. 37 · · 485	iii. 5†307	iv. 293 . {400
iv. 114 182	i. 41 178	iii. 7 11	. (+100
iv. 115 303	i. 47 · · 287		1484
iv. 138 24	i. 57 †136	iii. {19}+468	iv. 300 1470

	ACT III.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc.	Line Par.		Line Par.
		iv. ${{\tau_{34}}\atop{139}}$ 260	ii.	62 474		196 479
Sc.	Line Par.	v. 8 24	ii.	63 438		212†513
i.	2 †494	v. 23†423	ii.	64 508		214 . p. 13
i.	5 • • †399	v. 40 290	ii.	79 • 443		219 237
i.	II · · 434	vi. 96 191	ii.	{9 ² } ₉₃ }†513	vi. {	224 †513
i.	${22 \choose 24}$ 266	vi. 105 290	й.	94 • • †494		226 372
i.	33 190	vi. 117 294	iii.	8†274		229†189
		vi. 121 254	iii.	16 264		
1.	(30)	vii. 17 †90	iii.	24 510	vi.	246{315
i.	38 438	vii. 30 .fol. 335	iii.	41 . †68 <i>a</i>	vi.	253†319
i	59 460	vii. 45 290	iii.	44 • .†458	vi.	256 498
í.	42 • • 513	()	iv.	8 307	vi.	259†513
i.	46 \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	vii. ${50 \atop 51}$ 478	iv.	9 • • 93	vi.	266{337
i.	52 186	vii. 54 · · (8)	iv.	17 428		193
	_	vii. 61 428	iv.	20 484		282 492
i.	${53 \atop 55}$. (6)	vii. 65 · · 433	iv.	26 . {P. 16		284 294
ii.	5 · ·457a	vii. 69†319	iv.	28 497	vi.	288†342
ii.	8 (7)	vii. {89} 260	v.	3 · · 479	vii.	4 • • 395
ii.	54 · 419a	(90)	٧٠.		vii.	9 †76
ii.	59†201	vii. 91 482	v.	13{460	vii.	17 • • 430
ii.	61 †13	vii. 103†457	v.	24 †470	vii.	35 • • 477
ii.	64 †11	ACT IV.	vi.	3 2	vii.	36 · \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\
ii.	65 . { †38		vi.	8 232	vii.	52†480
ii.	(1376	i. 36 · 457 <i>a</i> i. 47 · ·†274	vi.	14†275	vii.	62 511
ii.	74 · · 96 92 · · 486		vi.	21 375	vii.	65†468
iii.	14 290	i. 51 . { 460 † 457	vi.	${32 \brace 41}$. 232	vii.	67 †406
iii.	19 111	i. 52 182	vi.		vii.	78†457
iii.	22†343	i. 54 · . 226	vi.	38 446	vii.	- († ₇₆
iv.	12†468	i. 73 · .†322	vi.	38 446		79 • -{472
iv.	15†107	i. 78†129	vi.	45 • • 145	vii.	83†513
iv.	25†244	ii. 2 305	vi.	54 • • 344		Act V
iv.		ii. 6†494	vi.	58 24		(13
iv.		ii. 10 395	vi.	61†200	i.	20 . {222
iv.		ii. {22} 235	vi.	68†468	i.	26 . 290
iv.	76 467	(23)	vi.	71 440	i.	28 477
iv.	92 +93		vi.	77 • • 417	i.	32 • • 479
iv.	105+230	(er)	vi.	112-31 . 511	i.	45†173
iv.	112 †127	ii. ${51 \atop 53}$ 260	vi.	177 484	i.	60 . 469
iv.	122 291	ii 60 t16	vi.	187 461	i.	67 . 411
				, 401		. 411

```
Sc.
     Line
            Par.
                       Sc.
                           Line
                                   Par.
                                               Sc. Line Par.
                                                                      Sc. Line
                                                                                   Par.
id.
                       iii.
                            102 .
      2
            . 1218
                                   .1513
                                                                      iii.
                                               ini. 181 .
                                                                           247 .
                                                                                   .1274
                                                           . IQQ
iii.
                       iii.
      20 .
           . 460
                           120 .
                                   . 382
                                               iii.
                                                                      iii.
                                                   202 .
                                                           . 51
                                                                           25I .
                                                                                   . 212
iii.
                       iii.
                                   . 254
                                               iii.
                                                   204 . . 178
      22 ,
            . 315
                           125 .
                                                                      iii.
                                                                           255 .
                                                                                  · 441
iii.
                                               iii. 208 . . †499
      48 .
            . 263
                       iii.
                           138 . . †361
                                                                                   (287
                                                                           262 .
                                                                                  . (290
            { 218
{ †159
                                               iii. 213 . .†223
                       iii.
                           143 .
                                   .1285
iii.
      50 .
                                                                      iii.
                                               iii. 222 .
                                                           .1513
                                                                           266 .
                                                                                  . 268
                       iii. 144 · . +397
iii
      97 .
            . 254
                                               iii. 234 ·
                                                           • 333
                                                                      iii
                           1148) St242 or
                                                                           274 .
                                                                                 . 24
iii.
     98 .
                           149 1 1272
            - 447
                                               iii. 239 ·
                                                           .1513
                                                                      iii.
                                                                           282 .
                                                                                 . 461
iii.
     100 .
           . 255
                       iii. 168 . . 480
                                               iii. 245 · · 469
```

(1) A. W. v. 3, 297. (4) Folio, "and" (&) for "an." (5) Folio, "tended." (6) Hen. V. iv. 3, 35-6. (7) Macbeth, iv. 1, 59. (8) Ib. v. 7, 1, 2. (9) But Folio, "importanced."

LOVE'S LABOUR LOST.

ACT I. i. 43 176 i. 65 422 i. 80 220	i. 123 500 i. 133 111 i. 156 442 i. 160 460	iii. 219 165 iii. 224 344 iii. 345 412 ACT V.	ii. 365 187 ii. 440 294 ii. \{\frac{463}{464}\} 432
i. 86 5 i. 107 177 i. 137 492	i. 174 109 i. 177 364 ACT III.	ii. 8 202 ii. 9 283	ii. 494 184 ii. 522 19 ii. 750 333 ii. 752 144
ACT II. i. 2. 274 i. 18. 51 i. 28. 168	i. 153 13 <i>d</i> ACT IV. iii. 108 368 iii 118 368	ii. 69 344 ii. 190 467 ii. 213 460 ii. 274 430	ii. 778 \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\
i. 42 · · 491 i. 45 · · 485 i. 107 · · 2	iii 118 368 iii. 150 145 iii. {167} 349	ii. 332 487 ii. 349 200 ii. 355419 <i>a</i>	ii. 923 178 ii. 925 90 ii. 926 300

MACBETH.

	Act I.	ii.	10. 18	5 _[ii.	43 • • 275	ii.	59 • •	433
i.	1†504	ii.	13 17	ii.	45 506	ii.	64	1501
i.	12†466	ii.	20 51	ii.	46 323	iii.	32	485
ii.	3 • • 479	ü.	34 • • 47	7 ii.	51 511	1	45 • •	
ii.	5 • • 484	ii.	37 51		53 1460	iii.	${53 \brace 55}$.	236
ii.	7†506	ii.	41 51	ı ii.	58 . { 283	iii.	57	

e. Time Day I	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	C. T. D
So. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. vii. 8 283	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. i. 100 158
111. 04 (181	vii. 23 3	iii. 64†492	i. 103 485
iii. 94†164	vii. 25†283	iii. 75 · · 513	i. 105 468
iii. {102}. · 511	vii. 26†130	(101)	i. 107 162
iii. 107†466	vii. 28 506	iii. {101} 513	i. 108 . †497
iii. 109 251	vii. 34 · · 329	iii. 109†511	i. 112†193
iii. 111 466	vii. 50†356	iii. {117} 529	i. 118 473
iii 100 45	vii. 77 12	(121)	i. 121 150
iii. 120	ACT II.	, , ,	
iii. {127}. \\ \dagger{127}. \\ \dagger{1513}	i. 5 212	iii. {129} 511	i. 122 . {310 385
iii. 129 . {†461 †468		iii. 143 1	i. 123 . {274 †218
	i. {10} 513	iii. 146 . {†335	
iii. 139 · · 467	i. 17†470	111. 140 . \ 478	i. 132 . {\\ \dagger{168}{378}
iii. 144 · .†295	i. 19	iv. 4 290	i. 139†497
iii. 147†236	404	iv. 10 458	(12
iii. 154 · · 202	1. 20 405	iv. 14 471	ii. 11 . {†107
iv. 3 · ·†343	i. 24 · · 473	iv. 17†107	
iv. 8 93	i. {30 }t513	v. 32 · .†513	ii. 13 · · 513
iv. 9 295		Act III.	ii. 28 460
iv. 11{ 3 107 iv. {43}	i. 32 · {311 / 1369		ii. 30†477
iv. $\binom{43}{44}$ 513	i. 36 · · 3	i. 14 · · 12	ii. 32 284
v. 19 329	i. 41 511	i. 17 . {191 †270	ii. 33 · · 453
v. 21†244	i. 51 484	\$ 35 594	ii. 49 (2)
v. 26†212	i. 57 · .†414	i. 25 · ·{102	ii. 51†511
v. 28†491	i. 6r 333	i. 40 512	ini. 2 308
v. 30 . {†336	ii 4 · · 473	i. 44 · .{137	iii. 4 187
(p. 12	ii. 7†283	1	iii. 6 290 iv. 2 458
v. 40 · 477	ii. 21 511	i. $\begin{cases} 45 \\ 46 \end{cases}$ 512	(12)
v. 45 · .†490	ii. 24 283	i. 49 · · 385	iv. {15} 513
v. 49 · · 467	ii. 25 · · 479	i. 51 †329	
v. 50 †3	ii. 28 107	i. 52 185	iv. 34 . (†24
200 1 1 1 1 2 0	ii. 29 · · 199	i 54 · · 118	(†414
	ii. 30†500 ii. 40†467	i. 65 460	iv. 36 {41 158
v. 62 511 vi. 3 †471	ii. 40†467 ii. 57(pun) (1)	i. 74 · · 244	
vi. 17†419	ii. 63†511	i. \{\80\\81\} 468	iv. 37 · .†494
vi. 19†185	ii 73 · · 357		
vi. 30 . 492	iii. * 93		iv. 57 · . 315 iv. 58 · . 453
,- ,49*	1	i. 95 · · 374	iv. 58 453

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc.	Line Par.	Sc.	Line Par.	Sc.	Line Par.
iv.	61 †16	1.	153 • • 497	111.	152 15	iv.	6 494
iv.	64 187	ii.	23 • • 399	iii.	154 . 200	iv.	8 17
iv.	66 491	ii.	27 282			iv.	12 17
iv.	121 468	ïi.	${35 \brace 36}$ †513	iii.	171 {274	iv.	19 468
iv.	126 {473			iii.	173 131	v.	${7 \brace 9}$ †343
***		ii.	37 · · 154	iii.	177 †477		
iv.	131 81	ii.	64†513	iii.	184 94	v.	13 107
iv.	133 . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	ii.	70 · · 357	iii.	185 . {287	v.	30 1512
	(405	ii.	73 †466		4	v.	31 323
i∀.	138 384	ii.	81 . {279	iii.	191 †403	v.	49 †24
iv.	139 405		(412	iii.	194 · · 329	vi.	5 • • †359
v.	1 447	iii.	10 189	iii.	210†200	vi.	7 †364
v.	10†271	iii.	11 252	iii.	212 314	vii.	2 {254
v.	21 498	iii.	16 403	iii.	{215}†513		(4)
v.	31 460	iii.	{17 ₁₈ }†513		(219)	vii.	4 • •†513
vi.	2 420	iii.	(10)	iii.	222 279	vii.	18 466
vi.	8 477			iii.	235 · · 447	vii.	22 1506
vi.	19†322	iii.	${30 \atop 33}$ · 454	iii.	239 • • 468	vii.	28 405
vi.	21 460	iii.	47 • • 315		Act V.	viii.	4 • • 409
vi.	27 170	iii.	48 202			viii.	7 . 4192
vi.	30 1498	iii.	17325	i.	12 450	viii.	9 • • 3
vi.	38 †342	111.	49 . {1325	i.	29 foi. 471	viii.	13 200
vi.	41 †220	iii.	74 • • 277	i.	66 266	viii.	18 423
vi.	42 257	iii.	80 217	1.	75 · • 252	viii.	22 513
vi.	48. 4190	iii.	82†283	ii.	4 • • 92	viii.	34 208
		iii.	91 †513	ii.	20 †55	viii.	40 130
	Act IV.	iii.	93 • • 492	ii.	22 356		(127
i.	6 484	iii.	97 †498	iii.	5 · · 496	viii.	41 . 1270
i.	20 504	iii.	106 287	iii.	7 • •†191	viii.	48 (5)
i.		iii.	111 . fol. 480	iii.	13 • .†335	viii.	
	-	iii.	125 148	iii.	19 513	1	64 405
i.	65 344	iii.	133 • • 429	iii.	25 113	viii.	65†329
i.	89†468	iii.	137 †463		(37)	viii.	66trr3
i. :	{105} 136}· · 485	iii.	139†513	iii.	{40}†231 57	viii.	72 286
i.	145 • .†343	iii.	148 429	iv.	2†284	viii.	${74 \choose 75}$. 80
1.	-43 * *1343	111.	140 429	1	- 0 01204	1	(73)

⁽¹⁾ Compare Macbeth, v. 8. 48. (3) Lear, iii. 2. 8. (4) Ib. iii. 7. 54.

⁽²⁾ Rich. III. iv. 4. ?7, (5) Compare ü. 2. 57.

INDEX 479

MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

	Act 1.	Sc. Line Par. ii. 102 266	Sc. Line Par i. 86 513	Sc. Line Par.
Sc.	Line Par.	()		iii. 185 6
1. :	42 491	ii. { 110 } 511		
i.	52 474	ii. 115 340	i. 107 512	
i.	54 67	ii. 119 394	i. 121 · · 375	iv. 28 290
i.	56 501	ii. 156 500	i. 240 86	v. 6467
i.	69 290	ii. 159 486	ii. 32 · · 467	vi. $_{13}$. $\begin{cases} 398 \\ 474 \end{cases}$
ii.	4 228	ii. 160 500	ii. 38 298	vi. 14 192
ii.	24 64	ii. 180 468	ii. 86 396	
ii.	129 494	iii. 42 174	ii. 100 226	ACT V.
ii.	163 419	iv. 57 · · 492	ii. 126 93	i. 2 222
ii.	189 367	iv. 74 · · 503	ii. 138 77	(1
iii.	21 87	iv. 80 342	ii. 165 244	i. 36 . 397
ıii.	39 • -{467	iv. 102 186	ii. 172 309	. 474
iii.	49 17		ii. 224 145	i. 50 369
iv.	5 • • 498	iv. 104 · · 500	ii. {274 } 504	i. 51 . {501 503
iv.	26 230	, ,	(270)	i. 65 503
iv.	28 394	iv. {111 . 478	Act IV.	i. 74 114
iv.	70 \\ 423	iv. 118 501		i. 131 461
	(409	iv. 133 390	ii. 78 501	i. 145 . p. 16
iv.	79 • • 469	iv. 141 500	ii. 90 403	i. 237 127
		iv. 153 86	ii. 92 460	
	ACT II.	iv. 170 5	ii. 95 122	i. 240{423 480
i.	15 394	iv. 171 361	ii. 97 276	i. 255 41
i.	28 151	iv. 172 453	ii. 103 461	i. 305 265
i.	33 • • 469		ii. 111 278	i. 314 484
ii.	9 500	ACT III.	ii. 150 127	i. 315 482
	(478	; , §177	ii. 172 93	i. 347 196
ii.	12 . \ 500	i. 1	ii. 220 325	i. 368 233
ii.	16 11	i. 5 501	iii. 78 301	i. 400 260
ii.	33 • • 244	i. (Fol.) 20 . 340	iii. 130 508	i. 408 498
ıi.	46 422	i. 28 484	iii. 133 492	i. 494 · · 29
ii.	52 312	i. 32 · · 501	iii. 138 349	i. 496 480
ii.	60 408	i. 43 · · 357	iii. 144 468	i. 498 503
ü.	98 492	i. 48 469	iii. 145 498	i. 534 · · 51

MERCHANT OF VENICE

	Аст 1.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.
0		ii.	109		i.	19 .	.†218	vi.	52 .	.1126
Sc.	Line Par.	iii.	4 + -1	270	i.	42 .	. †89	vii.	ı.	.1439
ì.	5 . {†511	iii.	7 . {†	307	i.	43 •	.1406	vii.	${4 \brace 6}$.	. 264
i.	8 479	iii.	((4)	ii.	{ 23 }.	.†356			
i.	17 †69	iii.	12	(5) (6)	ii.			vii.	${5 \choose 7}$. 501
i.	22 453			(0)		45 ·	. 165	vii.	43 •	. 349
i.	26†118	iii.	${43 \brace 44}$.	151	ii.	$\{ {}^{92}_{97} \}$.	.†231	vii.	53 •	. 187
i.	35 • • 38	iii.	${54 \brace 55}$ 1	174	ii.	104 .	. 175	vii.	71 .	. 275
i.	38†295				ii.	го8.	. 460	viii.	25 .	.†368
i.	50 1500	iii.		178	ii.	115.	. 220	viii.	29 .	. 474
١.	54 • • † 490	iii.		295	ii.	124 .	• 349	viii.	33 •	.1230
i.	55 . , †89	iii.		110	ii.	161.	.†226	viii.	42 .	11159
i.	69 469	iii.	~	220	ii.	169.	. 185		(13)	(109
	74 · · 191	iii.		291 469	ii.	{190}. {189}.	. 231	ix.	(15).	11479
i.	82 . {p.13	iii.		372	ii.	189.	.†212	ix.	14 .	. 511
i.	93 · • 257	iii.		169	ii.	194 .	.†401	ix.	26 .	. 145
i.	98 399	iii.		290	iv.	1.	. 161	ix.	28 .	-1495
i.	111 490	iii.	-	499	iv.	4 •	∫ 220	ix.	51.	.†501
i.	126 356	iii.		249	iv.		11174	ix.	61 .	• 492
	(2) 466	iii.		426	iv.	5 · 6 .	.†307 .†343	ix.	68 .	• 345
i.	143 · or	iii.		514			·1343 (7)	ix.	90.	• 451
	(†500	iii.	146 †	219	iv.	10.	(troi	IX.	Act II	· 76
i.	144 • • 430	iii.	150	148	iv.	24 .	. 171	i.	2 .	. 76
i.	148 20	iii.	162	256	iv.	40 .	. 315	i.	8.	.1173
i.	150 . { 110	iii.		333	v.	17 .	.1140	i.	57 •	.1984
i.	54 356	iii.		349	v.	22 .	{ (7) †101	i.	110 .	. 198
i.	160 (3)	iii.	176	495 13	v.	25	(174	ii.	2.	. 372
i.	163 68 <i>a</i>	****	1,0	13		37 •	₹ 4₹	ii.	16.	. 462
i.	166†187		Act II.		v.	47 •	1430	ii.	{18} (20)	{ 480 † 476
i.	175†244	i.		264	v. vi.	52 .	. 319	ii.		
i.	178 466	i.		tio	vi.	2 .	.†500		19 .	$\begin{cases} (7a) \\ 333 \end{cases}$
i.	185 †168	i.		490	vi.	23 .	.1297	ii.	21 .	.†215
i.	7-9†232	i.		291	vi.	30 .	· 483	ii.	29 .	. 200
i.	66 †140	i.	{r ₃ }, .	189				ii.	6r .	. 361
i.	75 · 320		(14)		vi.	40 .	. 314	ii.	63	(8)
i.	100 . 322	i.	16 :	198 l	vi	44 -	. 323	ű.	64 .	.†136

Sc. Line Par,	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
ii. $\binom{76}{81}$ 123	ii. 279 144	i. 57 · .†399	i. 431 356
ii. 93 . {(9)	ii. 283 194	i. 76 382	i. 444 · · 460
	ii. 295 398	i. 77 · · 344	i. 445 · . (12)
ii. 96 381	ii. 310 †30	i. 90 †87	i. 451 488
ii. 97 · · 294	ii. 321 209	i. 104 192	(†2011
ii. 109 113	iii. $\binom{9}{10}$ 281	i. {109}1513	ii. 15 . {(13)
ii. 111 511	iii. 15 92	i. {109}†513	A 37
ii. 115†506	iii. 25 · · 354	i. 127 · · 479	Act V.
ii. 117 136	iii. 30†28 7	i. 128(11)	i. {1 &c.} . 161
ii. 120†323	iv. 3467	i. 134 376	
ii. 124 466	iv. 14 25	i. 149 . 315	i. 11 34#
ii. 127 46	iv. 21 157	i. 164†263	i. 20 510
ii. {155}†501	iv. 22 †93	i. 166 414	i. 25 . , 169
	iv. 25 451	i. 182 314	i. 56 159
ii. 164 127	iv. 30 397	i. 224 · . 233	i. 77 · {†349
ii. 165 4c4	0 0,,	i. 242 180	((14)
ii. 169 472	1.	i. 255 · · 471	i. 94 · .†276
ii. {169} 38	iv. 46 †2	i. 261 370	i. 103 · · 200
ii. 178†420	iv. 52 · { 375 †251	i. 272 490	i. 148 · . 508
ii. 180 . †343	iv. 72 32	i. 275†200	i. 159 (. (12)
ii. 193 158	iv. 75†283	i. 283 266	i, 166 . {†73 (15)
ii. 205 341	v. 3†200	_	
ii. 211†133	v. 73 †87		i. 169 · . 472
ü 221†494	v. 89 172	i. 309 · · †93	i. 175 · . 462
₩ 224 · . 287		i. 312-4 .†513	i. 176 (12)
ii. 226 16	AcT IV.	i. 327 · · 14	i. 177 · .†230
(008)	i. 1†500	i. 332 · .†342	i. 200 218
ii. {220}†513	i. 5†442	i. 351 368	i. 201 per- haps † 356
1. 230†360	i. 8 490	i. 355 163	
i. 233 · · †30	i. 9†285	i. 368 348	i. 203 †51
()	i. 22 · · 134	i. 379 · · 455	i. 204 · {†297 †3 60
ii. {234 . 1469	i. 35 · · 295	i. 382†133	i. 205†494
ii. 252 · · 494	i. 47 · .†244	i. 387 · . †59	i. 272 · · †38
ii. 254 · · 473	i. 51 (10)	i. 389 · . 394	i. 297 171
ii. 275 · .†322	i. ${54 \brace 55}$ 217	i. 402 174	i. 298 461
	(33)		

⁽¹⁾ Macbeth, v. 2, 5.
(2) C. of E. i. 2, 88.
(3) P. of T. iv. Prologue, 45, (4) R. and 9: ii. 3, 54.
(5) Coriol. i. 1, 16.
(6) A. Y. L. ii. 7, 57.
(7) Folio, "nakes."
(10) Folio, "maters." So Tempest, ii. 1, 5. Compare "Where be thy mastres, man? I would speak with her."—B. and F. Coxcomb, 2, 8 ad fin.
(11) Compare "invaluable."
(12) Folio, "and."
(13) Macbeth, ii. 3, 2.
(14) T. A. v. 3, 70.
(15) Folio, "too blame."

MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

ACT I. Sc. Line Par. i. 287 64 391 iii 1 237	Sc. Line Par. i. 242 \bigg\{ \bigg\{ 204 \\ 298 \\ ii. 50 \cdot \cdot 25 \\ ii. 278 \cdot \cdot 41 \end{array}	Sc. Line Par. iv. 97 . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	Sc. Line Par. iv. 57 · {28 350 iv. 87 · 207 v. 26 · 38
iv 80 175 ACT II. i 113 299	ACT III. i. 113 189 iv. 14 284	Аст IV. ii. 80 349	ACT V. v. 72 · · 2 v. 231 · · 37

MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM.

ACT I.	i. 182 †5	Act II.	i. 83 347
1. 4 290	i. 184 83	(7)	i. 91{(3)
i. 39 · · 133	i. 188 237	i. $\begin{cases} 1 \\ 3 \\ 5 \end{cases}$ $\begin{cases} 478 \\ 466 \end{cases}$	(247
i. 45 · †p.13	i. 205 425		i. 92 . †p. 13
i. 69 · .†466	i. 212 †69	i. 7 484	i. 95†228
i. 71 †90	i. 225†365	i. 9†356	i. 105 492
i. {74}+281	i. 226 21	i. 14 · ·†349	i. 106†478
i. 76 †1	i. 229†118	i. 19†369	i. 112 290
i. 81 201	i. 231†178	i. 21†287	i. 127†462
i. 100†295	i. 232 (1)	i. 23 · · 487	i. 138 349
i. 103†271	i. 237 · · 450	i. 24 · ·†329	i. 146†405
i. 104†170	i. 245 66	i. 30 · {†121 †283	i. 149 132
i. 111†275	i. 251†356	(1203	i. 158 145
i. 117†149	ii. $\binom{2}{93}$ †230		i. 160 †107
i. 123 30		1	i. 161 312
i. 126 421	ii. 25 †1	i. 35 · .†468	i. 164 430
i. 141†301	ii. 27 · · †93	i. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	i. 171†136
i. 151 490	ii. 52 (2)	i. 42 . 506	i. 179 . {†242
i. 156 1469	ii. ${73 \atop 77}$ †283	i. 48 †16	i. 191†295
i. 160 · tp. 13	ii. 86 104	i. 56 · · 332	i. 201 1406
i. 164 156	ii. 90 · · †25	i. 58 484	i. 202†466
i. 173 · · 430	ii. 95 · · †221	i. 67 290	1. 220 . 287
. (775)	ii. 105†492	i. 72 314	i. 227 †223
i. {176} ·†343			

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Lin Par.	Sc. Line Par.
i.	232†457	li 26 217	ii. 351 460	i. 189{(8)
i.	237†122	ii. {43-}†233	ii. {358}. ~ 275	
i.	244 • .†355	ii. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	ii. 360 †69	ii. 9 409 ii. 16 †335
j	249 480	ii. 45 · ·†323	ii. 365 450	ii. 21 (2)
i.	253 · ·\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	ii. 49 · ·†511	ii. 368†228	ii. 29 405
i.	266 180	ii. 78 (2)	ii. 373 · · †90	29 403
i.	267†369	ii. 8x†466	ii. 377 · . †89	Acr V.
i.	268 315	ii. 90†168	ii. 384 450	i. 1†244
ii.	35†193	ii. 97 · · 247	ii. 385 203	i. 2†307
ii.	36†343	ii. 99 · · 142	ii. 386†490	i. 5†279
ii.	44 • • †76		ii. 402 374	i. 21 378
ii.	65 †365	ii. 119 18	ii. 437 484	i. 27 · · †47
ii.	{73-} 504	1(6)	ii. 438 333	i. 34 431
	(77)	ii. 123 · .{336	ii. 439 486	i. 43 179
ii.	79 • • (4)	ii. 124 417	ii. 442 52	i. 59†477
ii.	118 †470	ii. 153 356		i. 76 †97
ii.	153 . { (2)	ii. 169 †53	ACT IV.	i. 91 510
iî.	J169	ii. 171 . 470		i. 98 399
	154 . \ 29	ii. 236 492 ii. 202 430	i. 2 479	i. 143 . †291
ii.	156 †466	ii. 204†465	i. 21 (7)	i. $\{144\}$
		ii. 206†178	i. 40 484	(149)
	Act III.	ii. 225 †38	i. 47 · · 457	i. 164 490
i.	2 †1	ii. 237 · · 492	i. 57 · · †89	i. 168 · . 374
i.	14†461	ii. 272 490	i. 67 284	i. 195 (2)
î.	21 †11	ii. 279†456	/- /- / /	i. 225 82
i. i.	33 221	ii. 282 477	1	i. 227 430
i.	44 · · 174 84 · · 333	ii. 290 451	i. 74†127 i. 101 457	i. 252 409 i. 255 †24
		ii. 292 476	i. 100 284	33 1-4
i.	{95 - } 501	ii. 302 19	i. 128 174	1 .
i.	126 348	ii. 314†133	i. 133 284	i. 325 273 i. 379 438
,	(185)	ii. 321†469	i. 137†129	i. 381 441
3	(29 3∫ 1/4	ii. 331†218	(-,-)	i. 387 284
ii.	3 · · (5)	ii. 334 · · †52	1. /142//201	i. 403†226
ii.	15 †159	ii. 337 · · 409	i. 150? . 197	. (412)
ii.	18 474	ii. 339†168	i. 163 486	i. {422}. · 342

⁽¹⁾ Hamlet, iii. 2. 177.

⁽⁴⁾ A. W. v. 3. 297. (7) L. L. L. v. 1. 103-4

⁽²⁾ Folio, "and."

⁽⁵⁾ Hamlet, iii. 2. 188. (8) Folio varies.

⁽³⁾ Folio, "hath."
(6) Folio, "comes.

INDEX 484

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.							
ACT I. Sc. Line Par. i 126 118 i. 303 284 i. 307 90 i. 311 194 i. 318 297 i. 320 57 li. 4 347	Sc. Line Par. i. 375 14 ii. 13 . 62 ii. 20 404 iii. 53 . 93 iii. 57 423 iii. 81 327 iii. 88 3 iii. 119 331	Sc. Line Par. ii. 27 · 494 iii. 56 · 404 iii. 86 · 120 iv. 9 · 400 iv. 18 · 400 iv. 44 · 81	Sc. Line Par. i. 220 . 187 i. 225 . 191 i. 227 . 423 i. 251 . 378 ii. 1 . 295 ii. 33 . 81 ii. 63 . 295				
i. 4 · · 347 i. 22 · · 296 iii. 32 · · 122 lii. 49 · · 148	ACT III.	Act IV. i. 24 212 i. 40 368 i. 46 480	ACT V. i. 22 379 i. 116 193				
ACT II. i. 189 472 i. 208 321 i. 244 187 i. 261 360 i. 272 175 i. 311 166	i. 4 · · · 200 i. 12 · · . \{199\\ 480 i. 42 · · 349 i. 60 · · · 46 i. 72 · · · 158 i. \{79\\ 80\\ \} · · 193 i. 93 · · · 118	i. 144	i. 212 57 i. 249				
	OTHE	ELLO.					
ACT 1. i. 26 447 i. 38 361 i. 44 315 i. 55 512 i. 99 439 i. 100 191 i. 124 435 i. 126 437	ii. 18	iii. 165	i. 67 400 i. 70 440 i. 83 333 i. 87 440 i. 149 268 i. 159 301 i. 260 241 ii. 3 15 iii. 49 297 iii. 144 342				
i. 132 158	iii. 91. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	i. 13 · · 343	iii. 145 · · 479				

iii.

iii. 140.

iii. 147 .

129 .

i. 151 . . 22

i. 158 . . 348

180 . . 30

172 . . 335 . 201 . 419 . 428 . 69 . 330

. 440

. 89

19. . 368

24 .

31 . . 243

i.

i.

iii. 152 . . 444

. 295

. 349

. 404

iii. 188 .

iii.

iii. 203 .

190.

i. 208 . . 234

i. 251 . . 419

ii. 285 · · 3

iii. 38 . , 198

cc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	ACT IV.	Sc. Line Par.
iii. 213 163	iii. 211 /3	Sc. Line Par.	ii. 108 295
iii. 216 163	iii. 212 174	i. 28 353	ii. 130. p. 16
iii. 217 477	iii. 238 42	i. {34} 511	ii. 134 512
iii. 301 443	iii. 265 295	(43)	iii. 32{122
iii 319 81	iii. 282 { 73	i. 43 247	111. 32 · (144
iii 344 461	(513	i. 72 492	Acτ V.
iii 351 440	iii. 384 · · 299	i. 80 460	
	iii. 417 279	1. 82 440	i. 14 361
ni. 368 440	iv. 22 93	i. 125 247	i. 64 299
ACT III.	iv. 25 466	i. 188 24	i. 111 460
	iv. 44 · · 483	ii. 3 211	ii. 4 . 419 a
iii. ${28-31}$ 500	iv. 105 447	ii. 11 349	ii. 45 490
iii. 66 29	iv. 150 469	ii. 13 12	ii. 52 59
iii. 157 251	iv. 195 294	ii. 99 274	ii. 197 . 319
	, ,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,	, ,,,	7, . 3.4
	DEDI	CLES.	
	PERI		
Аст І.	iv. 39 264	iii. 80 179	i. 25 172
,	iv. 92 42	v. 13 · · 480	iv. 2. \\ 80
Jower 11 285	iv. 33 264	v. 17 · . 350	1v. 2 · (364
,, 38 377			
i. 14 244	ACT II.	ACT III.	Act V.
i. 41 · · 247	Gower, 8 244	Gower, 14 290	i. 125 . 187
i. 59 . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	,, 25 404	,, 35 · · 345	i. 170 145
1. 59 (460	28 222	i. 45 128	i. 208 224

RICHARD II.

Act IV.

Gower, 23 . 465

i. 23 · · 37

,, 28 . . 332

,, 36 . . 332

,, 37 · · 5 ,, 40 · ·\{201 460

31 . . 24

91 . . 512

93 . . 460

153 . . 229

31 . . 350

92 . . 238

i.

ii.

ii.

	Аст I		i.	90 . 104 .	. 269		172 .	·		[(a)18].	
i.	12.	.1494		129 .			180 .		1	30.	
i.	20 .	. 480	i.	145 .	. 162		190 .	_	1	36 .	
i.	22 .	. 12	i.	150 .	. 174	1	•		1		
			i.	160.	.†315	i.	204 205	(489	1	39 -	
	${26 \brace 50}$.			162.	. 73a	ii.	6.	.1364	ii.	40 .	11307
i.	85 .	. 290	i.	171 .	. 529	ii.	7 .	.†264		42 .	

(4) Lines 18 and 19 are perhaps to be transposed. Comp., however, W. T. iii. 2, 165

Sc. Line Far.	1 Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	C- Time D
ii. 44 480	iii. 232 380	i. 106 156	Sc. Line Par.
ü. {47 ₅₀ }†369	iii. 233 191	i. {107} 295	ii. 9 27
	iii. 243 356	i. 108 265	ii. {12} 193
	iii. 247 · . 65	i. 129 5	
ii. 73 · · 475	iii. 259 380	i. 134 · · 434	ii. 15{293
iii. 9 · · 44	iii. 264†263	: (141)	ii. 18 492
iii. 15 110	iii. 269 291	(147)	ii. 25 · · 498
iii. 17 26;	1	i. 148 482 i. 157 268	ii. 27 †494
(to		i. 157 268 i. 158†130	ii. 29 497
	111. 201 +04	i. 159†151	ii. 30 · ·{ t2 280
iii. 26†51	iv. 11 +512	i. 169†408	ii. 34 · · †69
iii. 34 · · 13	iv to tree		ii. 41 †468
iii. 36†26	iv. 22 . +268	(244	ii. 46 291
iii. 43 · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	iv. (30)	i. {202} Fol.} {338}	ii. 52 244
iii. 76 †2.	1V 42 20	i. 211†137	ii. 57 · . { 22
iii. 80 47	137 40 4757	i. 217 479	(240
iii. 82 49	iv. 49 · · 348	i. 218†405	i. 58 . { 457 497
iii. 95 10	iv. 53 · · {†1	i. 222 13	ii. 59 · ·†343
iii. 118 48:	(12	i. 232†329	ii. 61†511
iii. 123†51:	ACT II.	i. 239 . 17	ii. 75 · · †3
iii. {125}†15		i. 242†251	ii. 76 †497
iii. {127}†15:	i. 3 · · 305 i. 9 · · 199	i. {247 ₂₄₈ } 480	ii. 80†243
iii. 127 †490	, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	i. 247†497	ii. 88 †465
iii. 136 89	i. {9} 260	i. 248†463	3 3
(48.		i. 250 . {† 113	ii. 91 ·
iii. 151 { o	1. 10 290	(471	ii. 96†513
iii. 164†21		i. 251 24 i. 254 . (Fol.	ii. 98 155
iii. 166 44	i. 19 22 i. 27 †28	i. 254. (Fol. omits "noble.")	ii. 103 512
i ü , 175 46	i. 27 †28 i. 29 20	i. 258 · { 466 †336	ii. 105 497
iii. 183†31	i. 49 11		ii. {108} . 507
iii. 196 490	i. 52 146	i. 266 p. 12 i. 268 375	(111)
iii. 201 8.	i. 79 203		ii. 114 508
iii. 205 †28	i 00 . t24	i. {279} 469	ii. 119 .{(Fol.) Castle
iii. 208 { or†46		i. 289†361	
iii. 209 490	i. 94 · · 470	i. 291 315	CT3 43
iii. 211†377	i. 99 268	i. 300 364	ii, 128 244
lil 217 1400	i. 102 440	ñ. x51	iii. 5 • • 333

Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
iii. 7 · · 492	i. 16 †89	iii. 89 218	1 08 (†22
iii. 10 162	i. 29†497	iii. 98 529	
iii. 15†460	ii. 2 482	iii. 103†506	i. 33 · .†287
iii. 18†494	ii. 3†497	iii. 118 †89	i. 49 · $\binom{(c)}{105}$
iii. 20 506	ii. 4 25	iii. 120†49 7	i. 57 220
iii. 21 478	ii. 5†356	iii. 126†451	i. 62 90
iii. 23†513	ii. 8 1 ₉₄	iii. 146 †24	i. 89†4 9 5
iii. 24 · · 497	ii. 34 . †p. 12	iii. 168 335	i. 93 82
iii. 25 512		iii. 184†468	i. 94 290
iii. 26†513	ii. $\begin{cases} 55 \\ (\delta) \end{cases}$ †460	iii. 191†356	
iii. 29 . {†497 or	ii. 64 478	iii. 192 230	i. 96{296
111. 29 . (+501	ii. 80†319	iv. 11†513	i. 104 485
iii. 33†466	ii. 113 468	iv. 14†291	i. 112 484
iii. 55 456	ii. 130†46 7	iv. 24{Fol.335 505	i. 117 · .†190
iii. 62 397	ii. 131 †22		i. 120†291
iii. 67 506	ii. 140 294		i. 123†120
iii. 80 20	ii. 141†335	iv. ${35 \choose 38}$ 268	i. 129 95
iii. 87 292	ii. 163 200	iv. 55 512	i. 139 · .†349
iii. 100†384	ii. 168 378	iv. 57 · · 89	i. 148 460
iii. 104†491	ii. 175{193	iv. 63†506	i. 151 · .†467
iii. 107 181	(510	iv. 67†315	i. 171†50%
iii. 123†287	ii. 179 · · 59 ii. 183 · ·†356	iv. 74 · · 498	i. 178†480
iii. 124†469	ii. 185 134	iv. 77419a	i. 182 512
iii. 127 1322	ii. 186 174	iv. 80 145	i. 185 . p. 290
iii. 130{338 433	ii. 198 5	iv. 83†243	i. 205 447
	-	iv. 102 133	i. 217 216
iii. 138 204	ii. 204 . {156 †268	iv. 104†291	i. 224†494
15	iii. 9 48 7		i. 237 192
	iii. 12 281	4 777	i. 238 287
	iii. 17†244	Act IV.	i. 256†244
	iii. 19 506	Sc. Line Par.	i. 264 (c) †103
iv. 11 . 294	iii. 31†512	i. 15 466	i. 270 340
	iii. 35 511	i. 17 · .{390	i. 300†218
Act III.	iii. 45 272	i. 18†196	i. 308 189
i. 3 · .{59	iii. 61 414	i. 19†500	i. 326†512
	iii. 64 157	3	i. 329†497
i. 9 · {419 a †494	iii. 70†468	i. $\binom{21}{22}$ 281	i. 334 · .†244

⁽b) Read "from off a 'nointed;" or, as Folio, "From an anointed."
(c) Folio, "and if."

	Аст V.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. hi. 72 1372	Sc. Line Par.
Sc	Line Par.	ii. 55? {("it" om.)	iii. 88 387	v. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\
i.	31 †356	ii. 56 197	iii. 97 190	v. 52 · · 498
i.	37 · • 41	ii. 57 · · 484	(†50I	v. 54 164
i.	38 285	ii. 59 · · 368	iii. 101 . or	v. 54-7 \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \ \ \ \ \ \ \
i.	44 225	ii. {65} 400	(†497	v. 54-7 · · \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\
i.	46 75	(70)	iii. 103 †329	v. 56 425
i.	47 200	ii. 75 155	iii. 113{"Fol. and"}t103	v. 61 290
١.	62†268	ii. 78 497		v. 62 366
i.	64 52	ii. 97 468	iii. 137 . {†149 466	v. 64†218
١,	77 291	ii. 99 · · 53	iv. I 414	v. 66 28
i.	80 473	ii. 101†512	iv. 2 . {†244	v. $\binom{67}{60}$ 1506
i.	88 478	ii. 115 122	iv. 2 . {1244 499	v. (69)1500
i.	90 82	iii. 4 †190	iv. 8 257	v. 69 254
i.	91 1470	iii. 5 144	v. 3 151	v. 70 †406
i.	94 • • 372	iii. 10 272	v. 5 . 529 n.	v. 75 · · 498
		iii. 17 473	v. 8 169	v. 76 297
ü.	${12 \choose 15}$ †285	iii. 21†499	v. 17 465	v. 83†275
ii	r8 8o	iii. 27 356	v. 18†243	vi. 6 +494
ii.	28 512	iii. 34 181	v. 22†151	vi. 26 460
ii.	48 1406	iii. 50†349	v. 25 1406	vi. 27 133
ii.	53 • • 505	iii. 52 296	v. 27 284	vi. 40 246

RICHARD III.

	Acr I.	ii.	3 · · (1)	ii. 155 1490	ii. 236 490
i.	16 468	ii.	23 • • † 490	ii. {156} . 84	ii. 245 · · 479
i.	22 397	ii.	26 . p. 449	ii. 163†283	ii. 250 305
i.	58 †151	ii.	27 225		ii. 255 †1
i.	67 505	ii.	31 †69		ii. 259{295
i.	75 • . †494	ii.	52 †451	ii. 170 284	
		ii.	56 492	ii. 179 92	ii. 261 159
i.	82†287	ii.	67 • • 474	ii. {193}	iii. 1 468
i.	84 456			1 (203)	
i.	92 · p. 372	ii.	\\ \begin{pmatrix} 68 \\ 70 \end{pmatrix} \tau 233	ii. 211†349	iii. 5 {" live-}(2)
i.	94 • • 498	ii.	71 †123	ii. 215†468	iii. 6174
i.	103 456		76 466	ii. 216 342	
i.	106 490			ii. 217 . (1a)	iii. 19 { (3)
	137 200	ii.	{89}1500	ii. 226†512	
		::	117 †446		iii 36 { Fo!. or
	157 †270			ii. 232 356	
Ϊλ	2 †307	ii.	154 . 1239	ü. 235 466	iii. 63 168

Sc. Line Par. iii. 65-8 376	Sc. Line Par. iv. 25 203	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. ii. 95 151
iii. 82 (3 <i>a</i>)	iv. 27 375	iv. ${257 \brace 258}$ 277	ii. 113 (9)
iii. 88 159	iv. 30†295	iv. ${272 \brace 273}$ 234	ii. 120†297
iii. 90 406	iv. 37 69		ii. 123 469
iii 111 5	iv. 45†264	iv. 288 494	ii. 127†497
(†03	: 6 \$\\ 1\\ 424	Act II.	ii. 129 367
111. 113 · (178	iv. 46 . {\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\		ii. 130 419
iii. 127 161	iv. 58†297	i. {11} 16} 133	ii. 133 490
iii. 142 2	iv. 59 460	(24)	((10)
iii. 153-4 275	iv. 64 463	i. 27†442	(479
iii. 159†164	iv. 65 497	i. 33 125	iii. 3†500
iii. 162 378	iv. 70†121	i. 37 · · 95	iii. 4 92
1ii 201†468	iv. $\{ 78 \}$ 153	i. 43 · · 293	iii. 8†137
iii. 202 148	(60)	i. 50 171	iii. 16†477
iii. 206 460	iv. 95 · . 319	i. \{55\}\tau_{513}	iii. 17†129
iii. 207 · · 365	iv. 97†405	i. 57 (8)	iii. 29 105
iii. 212 243	iv. {101/150} (7)	i. 59†223	iii. 35 Fol. 333
iii. 214 . {294 385		i. 83 275	iii. 39 29
iii. 216 240	iv. 122 330	i. 90†474	iii. 41 †69
iii. 222 . {\footnote{169}}	iv. 134†335	i. 116†454	iii. 42 490
iii. 246 .†349	iv. 146 148	i. 120†281	35 1 1
iii. ${266-267}$. (5)		i. 129 372	1 1 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7
444 -	iv. ${167 \choose 176}$ 232	i. 134 512	
	iv. 186†157	i. 137{217	
iii. 287 122 iii. 291 22	iv. 187†468	(471	
iii. 292 355	iv. 205†219	ii. 7 287	(22)
iii. 304 . (6) 24	iv. 206 232	ii. 13{\cdot Fol. \cdot 73	$iv. {39 \atop 41} 513$
iii. 305 · · 494	iv. 209 462	ii. 15 479	iv. 46 307
iii. 314 186	iv. 218 (Fol) 512	ii. 24 · · 503	iv. 47 · · 75
iii. 323†507		ii. 27 326	iv. 63 (Fol.) 482
iii. 325 24	iv. 219 (Fol.) †236	ii. 34 · · 356	v. 71 297
iii. 328†438	iv. 241 287	ii. 42†470	1. /1 29/
iii. 347†490	iv. 246 290	ii. 47 · .†275	Act III.
iii. 348 295	iv. 248 (Fol.) †512	ii. 49 438	ĭ. {ç} 174
iii. 354†364	1	ii. $\begin{cases} 65 \\ 68 \end{cases}$ †365	i. 10 . , 243
iv. 5 85	iv. 250 {Fol. }466	ii. 76 118	i. 12†267
iv. 9 297	iv. 251 194	ii. 77†404	i. 26 243
iv. $\begin{cases} 12 \\ 19 \end{cases}$ †259	iv. 254†284	ii. 92†467	i. 32 †467

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par,
i.	37 • • 469	ii. 58 .	{†243	v.	IOI .	492	vii.	184 .	. 187
i.	{39} {†490		1 159	v.	109 .	. 460	vii.	197 .	.1196
	(40) \t501	ii. 63 .	. †76	vi.	5	. 356	vii.	210 .	.1110
i.	44 2		P- 449	vi.	7 .	.†140	vii	227 .	. 469
i.	63 . {(11)	ii. 76 .	. 487	vi.	9.	• 494	vii.	229 .	.†466
i.	64 21	ii. 115 .	.†243	vi.	10.	. 137	vã.	233 •	. 15
i.	68 409	ii. 117 .	. 98	vii.		. (15)	vii.	235 •	. 243
i.	71 †494	ii. {123}.	. 233		3 .	• (15)	vii.	240 .	.(16)
	172	iii. 23.	р. 16	vii.	{5} 6}.	. 490			- (/
i.	(81) 490			vii.	9 .	.†494		Аст I	v.
i.	85 252		• 57	vii.	20 .	.†468	i.	3 •	. 150
i.	p. 449		. 492	vii.	25 .	. 487	i.	4 •	. 180
1.	(470	iv. 29 .	. 178	vii.	26 .	. †88	i.	7 .	.†466
i.	114 . { 470	iv. 36.	.†401	vii.	30 .	. 492	i,	43 •	.1158
i.		iv. 40 .	. 109	vii.	50 .	.†467	i.	60.	.1405
1.	119 201	iv. 41 .	. tr				i.	70 .	.†267
i.	126 . \ 169	iv. 50.	• 397	vii.	${52 \brace 53}$.	. 234	i.	76 .	.†225
i.	136 485	iv. 51 .	.†297	vii.	57 •	.†343	i.	94 •	. 468
i.	(217	iv. 62 .	. 200	vii.	58 .	. 487	••	(1)	. 400
A.	144	iv. 67.	• 97	vii.	70{Fo	ol. \ r. \tag{510}	ii.	$\begin{cases} 2\\3 \end{cases}$.	.†513
i.	146 419	iv. 91 .	. 490		· (vai	r. 51510			
i.	{146}†500	iv. 100 .	. †89	vii.	81 .	.†201	ii.	5 •	. 81
	(147)	iv. 106.	.†473	vii.	89 .	. 414	ii.	{II}.	.†513
i.	148 . {(12)	v. 7 ·	. †89	vii.	112 .	• 439	ii.	27 •	. 92
i.	157 487	v. 13 .	.†513	vii.	113 .	.†494	ii.	35 •	. (17)
i.	158 497	v. 25 .	398	vii.	120 .	· 423	ii.	35 ·	.†494
i.	164 419	v. 25 .	. or	vii.	127 .	. 342	ii.	55 •	.†217
i.	169 †127	v. 28.	. 229	vii.	139 .	.†468	ii.	59 •	. 204
i.	177 235	v. 29 .	. (14)	vii.	{144}.	. 382	ii.	71.	.†512
i.	189 492	v. 32 .	.†158	vii.	(148).		ii.	81.	. 411
i.	191 †497	v. 33 .	. †2	vii.	150 .	. 361	ii.	85.	. 236
i.	198†467	v. 35 .	. 29	VII.	155 .	· 3	ii.	87.	. 424
ii.	10, Fol. var.		.{t5or	vii.	157 .	1205	ii.	98.	
ii.	(t ₂₄₀	V. 47 ·	1297	vii.	159 .	. 51	ii.	-	.†477
11.	14 . { 462	v. 55 ·	. 412	vii.	161.	.1109	ii.	103 .	. 37
ii.	26 281	v. 56.	. 411			-	ii.	104 .	. 466
ii.	29 · · 497	v. 63.	. 107	vii.	165{(ith	ner e is'	11.	120 .	
ii.	53 • • 357	v. 67.	• 97	vii.	175 .	†p. 12	ii.	124 .	{ 497 or
ii.	55 - • 92	v. 69.	. 166	vii.	176.	. 474			((18)
Ħ.	56 150	v. 76.	.1494	vü.	179 .	. 342	iil	. 8 .	. 164

111.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. iv. 209†133	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
iii.	27 (19)	iv. 217 375	iv. 417 †2	iii. {113} 423
ini.	31 431	iv. 221†287	iv. 428 477	(119)
iii.	53 • .†494	iv. 229 69	iv. 458†513	iii. 130 484
iii.	229 69	()	iv. 483 492	iii. 135 291
	(77)	iv. $\binom{231}{234}$ †370	iv. 490 202	iii. $\begin{Bmatrix} 143 \\ 148 \end{Bmatrix}$ 508
iv.	112 . 419	iv. 235†133	iv. 492 232	iii. $156 \cdot \begin{cases} 451 \\ (22) \end{cases}$
iv.	${15 \atop 16}$. 515	iv. 240 439	iv. 501 491	
		iv. 249 196	iv. 504 †17	iii. 185 460
iv.	23 159	iv. 250†133	iv. 508 469	iii. 187 512
iv.	28 490	iv. 254 372	(478	iii. 201 315
iv.	34 118	iv. {255} 158	iv. 515 \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	iii. 202 287
iv.	53 • • †89	14. (260) 150	iv. 539 311	iii. 209 512
iv.	65 240	iv. 263 · · 477	v. 7 466	iii. 210 303
iv.	75 • • 509	iv. 268 247	v. 10 469	iii. 224 201
iv.	77 (20)	iv. 269 t99	v. 14 492	iii. 228 159
iv.	86 24	iv. 274 · . †494	v. 18 311	iii. 230†219
iv.	92 300	iv. 289 · · 353		iii. 239 498
iv.	{99} ₁₀₄ } 148	iv. 292 315	Act V.	iii. 243 118
		iv. 304 341	i. 5†474	iii. 245†468
iv.	118 202	iv. 326†494	i. 21 479	iii. 267 417
iv.	122 443	iv. 331 491	ii. 19†122	iii. 281 514
iv.	135 · • 451	iv. 337†230	iii. 47 140	iii. 292 474
iv.	141†287	iv. 338†329	iii. 48†513	iii. 298 505
iv.	142 (21)	(ora)	iii. 51 159	iv. 11†299
iv.	177 . +439	iv. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	iii. 52†494	V. 3 342
iv.	180 , . 201	iv. 354 177	iii. 68 469	v. 9 507
iv.	183 †466	iv. 358†470		(ma)
iv.	188 365		iii. ${72 \choose 77}$ 512	v. {13} 469
iv.	189 490	iv. ${369-371}$.†228	iii. 82 478	v. 21 337
iv.	199 17	iv. 385†266	iii. 95 378	v. 36 . †p. 12

(1) Hamlet, i. 2. 92, (1a) A. Y. L. iii. 1. 18. (2) Cymb. iv. 4. 132. (3) "Majesty" when a dissyllable will henceforth not be noticed.

⁽³a)? Pun on "noble." (4) Folio, "Ay, madam." (5) Macbeth, v. 8. 48. (6) Folio, "an end." (7) Compare Hamlet, v. 1. 1-235. (8) 7. C. i. 2. 317.

⁽⁹⁾ M. of V. v. 1. 77. (10) Folio omits "weighty." (11) Folio, "thinks't." (12) Folio, "and." (13) Folio, "worshipfully." (14) Lear, iv. 1, 54.

⁽¹⁵⁾ Folio omits "and." (16) Folio, "King Richard." (17) Rich. III, i. 1. 158.

⁽¹⁸⁾ Folio omits "deep." (19) Folio omits "my lord." (20) Macbeth, iii. 2. 49.

⁽²²⁾ F. C. i. 3. 22. (21) A. W. v. 3. 297.

ROMEO AND JULIET.

			3	
	Act 1.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Act IV.
	Line Par.	v. 107 391	i. 128 3	Sc. Line Par.
i.	38 335	V 133 411	i. 158 200	i. 16 294
i.	III 24		ii. 117 447	i. 60457a
ī.	119 264	Act II.	[405	iii. 20 512
i.	140 275	ii. 42 460	ii. 141{405	v. 36 480
ii.	14 118	ii. 76 . , 120	iii. 17 22	v. 59 · · 474
íii.	9 \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	iii. 7 429	iii. 19 474	ACT V.
iii.	17 497	iii. 91 281	iii. 38 264	i. 40 178
iii.	98 440	iii. 93 204	iii. 49 · · 492	iii. 52 · · 400
iv.	19 440	vi. 9 · · 475	iii. 98 492	iii. 143 356
iv.	94 • • 479	vi. 21 492	v. 18 133	iii. 211 490
iv.	99 173		v. 84 206	iii. 214 333
iv.	109 291	ACT III.	v. 136 264	iii. 246 469
v.	61 417	i. 66419a	v. 153 292	iii. 247 114
v.	70 354	i. 122 198	v. 200 13	iii. 275 465

TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Аст І.	i. 50 10	i. 356 22	iii. 36 24
Induction.	i. 74 507	i. 357 · · 247	iii. 189 21
i. 68 109	i. 78 351	i. 369 22	iv. 1 \\\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \
i. 84 132	i. 90 507	i. 377 · · 489	
i. 87 472	i. 150 166		iv. 2{482
i. 89 1	i. 174 465	Act III.	iv. 4 120
i. 96 76	i. 251 368	i. 9. p. 14	iv. 12 301
i. 105 461	i. 252 297	ii. 1461	
i. 110 369	ii. 8 220	ii. 27 356	
i. 119 . 419a	:: (12) \324	ii. 105 28	iv. ${33 \atop 34}$ 505
ii. 13 291	11. (13) }430	ii. 108 297	iv. 46 505
ii. 25 9	ii. 46 461	ii. 156 7	v. 9 30
ii. 84 176	ii. 190 . \\201	ii. 186 465	v. 26482
ii. 107 · · 455	11. 190 . (484	ii. 236 224	
ii. 136 370		ii. 248 297	AcT V.
	Act II.		i. 77 460
Act I.	i. 15 126	Act IV.	ii. 66 504
i. 3 295	i. 18 490	i. 71 175	ii. 72 · · 174
i. 14 510	i. 158 477	i. 125 482	ii. 93 485
i. 32 342	i. 259 505	ii. 14 460	ii. 144 281
i. 48 507	i. (Fol.)355 22	ii. 73 465	ii. 175 497

TEMPEST.

Act I.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. ii. 220 460	Sc. Line Par.
Sc. Line Par.	ii. 109 · · 494	ii. 222†178	ii. ${387 \choose 389}$ 462
i. $\begin{cases} 6 \\ 29 \end{cases}$. 447	ii. 110 458	ii. 226 78	ii. 390 2 7
	ii. 118†312	(†274	ii. 407 (4)
i. 16 13		ii. 231 . {†193	ii. 414 120
i. 17 · · 335	1200	ii. 232†149	ii. 419 45 6
i. 18 90	ii. 122 199	ii. 235 511	ii. 424 · .†285
i. 24 · · 176	ii. 127 · · 454	ii. 243†291	ii. 435†466
i. 49 · · 154	ii. 137 270	ii. 244 220	ii. 439 †11
ii. 4 · · 456	ii. 138 . { (2)	ii. 248†456	ii. 442 232
ii. 11†131	(1407	ii. 249†136	ii. 446†364
ii. 12 · · 457	ii. 141 · ·†454	ii. 255 220	ii. \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \\
ii. 19 . {†179	ii. 142 · .†457	ii. ${257 \brace 259}$ †343	ii. 450 12
ii. 31 · · 342	(0.0	ii. 264†494	ii. 452 485
ii. 41 · · 183	ii. 148{341	ii. 297 . †p.13	(†200
ii. 50 · · 77	ii. 157 462	ii. 298 501	ii. 453 · {†369
(480	ii. \\\ \begin{aligned} \(\frac{157}{158} \right\). \(\frac{513}{158} \right\)	(007)	ii. 456 182
11. 33 (†475		ii. {301} 456	ii. 457 · .†244
ii. ${54 \atop 56}$ †457	ii. 165 494	ii. 327 · · 450	ii. 478†335
ii. 63 · · 343	ii. 168 39 ii. 173 471	ii. 333 · {+473 +330	AcT II.
ii. 65 · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	(-99)	ii. 338 471	i. · 1 401
ii. 66†469	ii. {189}†513	ii. 348†494	i. 1 456
ii. 72 · · 457	ii. 193 467	ii. 352 265	i. 5 (5)
ii. 74 · · 470	ii. 194 · · 187	ii. 353†468	i. 6†494
ii. 84 · · 497	(196)	ii. 357 · · 471	i. 28 206
ii. 85†283	ii. {201} 457	ii. 361 159	i. 75 189
ii. 88 482	(707)	ii. 362 . {†263	i. 96 200
ii. 89 · · 472	ii. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	ii. 363 182	i. 110†263
ii. 97 · · 294	ii. 200 . †p.13	ii. 365 291	i. 127†228
ii. 100†178	ii. 206 484	ii. 366 230	i. 121 305
ii. 102†281	ii. 209 · .†123	ii. 369 (3)	1. 127 264
ii. 103†501	ii. 210 467	ii. 370 · . 487	i. 131 400
ii. 104 · {†462	ii. 211 · · 341	.: 1†283	i. {134}. · 495
ii. 105 · · 497	ii. 212 · ·{24}469	(1401	(135)
(tear	((2)a	ii. 379 · · 342	i. 145 510 i. 150 471
ii. 106 . {1231	ii. 213 · { 429	ii. 380 226	i. 150 · · 471

Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. (Sc. Line Par. 1	Act V.
i. 151 490	i. 31 203	iii. 100†457	Sc. Line Par.
i. 160†494	i. 32†494	iii. 102†500	i. 4 480
i. 163 (6)	i. 42 . { †467		i. 7460
i. 168†281	i. 42 · (†p. 13	Act IV.	i. 9 484
i. 181 . {tio1	i. 57†177	i. 4 · .†274	i. 10 432
(7)	i. 59†500	i. 8 469	i. 15 208
i. 185†140	(250	i. 12†513	i. 16 . {Fol,
i. 202†500	i. 62 · { †478	i. 26 .{†473	(333
i. 207†323 i. 215†469	i. 72 · · 255	i. 27 307	i. 28 · · 390
i. 215 · . †469 i. 217 · . (8)	i. {87 88}†513	i. 31 480	i. ${20^{\circ} \atop 30}$ · 494
i. 220 387	. (262	i. 68 487	i. ${33^{-} \brace 39}$. 261
i. 221 58a	(190	i. $\binom{7^2}{74}$ †350	
i. 236 471	ii. 27 · · 479	; \(\frac{174}{176} \) \(\frac{1260}{1260} \)	i. 38 305
	ii. $\begin{cases} 5^2 \\ 63 \end{cases}$ 361	i. \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	i. 42†467 i. 43 204
(270)	ii. 104 · . 492	i. 94†360	
i. ${278 \brace 283}$ 471	ii. 106 244	i. 98†295	i. 53 †218 i. 63 497
i. 284 · · 470	ii. 108 503	i. 101†473	-3 - 437
i. 287†322	ii. 127 137	i. 110 484	i. 64 .{†291 447
i. 292 145	ii. 147 · · 330	i. 123 422	i. 68 482
i. 296†291	ii. 149†161	i. 124 484	i. ${75^{-}}$
308 374	iii. 2 333	i. 140 †494	i. 75 261
i. 311 . †494	iii. 26 501	i. 143 461	i. 97†467
i. 317†5∞	iii. 40 · · 487	i. 145 · · 439	i. 100 376
i. 319 · .†343	iii. $\binom{46}{47}$ †278	i. 146 483	i. 103†131
i. 321 · {+467	iii. ${53 \atop 56}$ 249	i. {149 153}. · 457	i. 111 466
ii. $\{9\}$ 261		i. 154 260	i. 113†305
ii. 15 96	iii. 56 240	i. 155†442	i. 114 347
ii. 121 (7)	iii. 60 16	i. 168†360	i. 117 (7)
ii. 137†401	iii. 62 264	i. 170 484	i. 119 469
ü. 152 456	iii. 63 431	i. 186 417 i. 188 457	i. {130-}
ii. 164 457	iii. 64 †69	i. 188 457 i. 204 484	i. 135†467
	iii. 65 467	i. 217 209	i. 139 230
Act III.	iii. ${71 \choose 89}$ †342	i. 231*†356	i. 145 497
i. I. {†244		i. 259 . 369	i. 146 425
(300	iii. 80 247	i. 262{†83	i. 149 364
i. 4 508 i. 6 265			(150)
i. 15 (9)	iii. 92 410	i. 264 . {†335 (10)	, (100) 500
3	30	1	i. 214 · · †69
- Kend e	muer sectionome (2	172, end) or "let's alor	ng " (30)

	Line Par. 215†218	Sc. 1	Line I	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par. 279		Line	
	216†335 230 168	1	49{	1		289 . 303 .	,	1	{Epil. 3	
i.	232 ·{ †38 †p. 13	1	68 . p. :	295 340	i.	310 .	.†296	1.	18.	. 200

(1) Folio, "th' outward." (2) "Impertinent."—Lear, iv. 6, 178.

(2a) F. C. iv. 3. 280. (3) "Old."-Macbeth, ii. 3. 2. (4) "Owes."-A. W. v. iii. 97. (5) "Masters."-M. of V. iv. x. 51. "Mastres" is written for "mistress" in B.

and F. Coxcomb, ii. 3.

(6) "Against course and kind."-Munday. (8) See Tempest, i. 2. 200.

(7) Folio, "and."

(9) Theobald, "busy less:" (?) "most busy least." (10) Folio, "lies"

TIMON OF ATHENS.

	AcT I.	Act II.	ACT IV.	iii. {334-} . 361
i.	44 22	i. 23 343		1344
i.	63 512		i. 33 · · 492	iii. 401 325
i.	107 385	ii. 7 392	i. 46 355	iii. 403 431
		ii. 12 200	ii. 13419 <i>a</i>	iii. 454 400
i.	139 28	ii. 28 484		iii. 530 212
í.	147 186	ii. 36 512	ii. 16 468	111. 530 212
i.	206 241		ii. 33 350	
i.	257 • • 487	ii. 119 407	ii. 35 252	ACT V.
i.	284 338		iii. 29 470	ACI V.
ii.	151 479	ACT III.	iii. 131 361	i. 31 . p. 14
ii.	154 510	ACT III.	iii. 180 171	i. 61 466
ii.	156 405	ii. 39 · · 400	iii. 232 172	i. 202 487
ii.	184 480	iii. 23 · · 400	iii. 277 213	iii. 8 497
ii.	251 57	v. 56 · 477	iii. 287 187	

TITUS ANDRONICUS.

		i. 231 · · 492	ACT II.	iii. 285 431
	Act I.	i. 235 · · 479	i, 30 65	iii. 305 200
i.	11 301	i. 288 480		iv. 18 229
i.	20 465	i. 301 145	i. 69 103 iii. 75 492	Act III.
î.	32 · ·{423	i. 325 12	iii. 92 463	i. 38 264
i.	189 253	i. 347 · · 477	iii. 102 322	i. 51 423
i.	190 . 479	i. 368 195	iii. 160 490	i. 66 . 484

INDEX.

_					
	Line		ACT IV.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
1.	151 .	. 417	Sc. Line Par.	iv. 10 105	i. 102 143
i.	269 .	. 191	i. 95 508	iv. 20 301	ii. 16 507
ii.	4 •	• 344	i. 101 472	iv. 65 492	ii. 50 · · 456
ii.	9 .	. 264	ii. 136 485	iv. 76 78	ii. 137 484
ii.	44 -	. 69	ii. 162 485		iii. 1 465
i i.	53 •	. 338	ii. 176 247	Act V.	iii. 99 302
ii.	76 .	. 483	iii. 35 478	i. 40 462	iii. 156 481
ii.	83.	. 295	iii. 58 . 484	i. 46 484	

TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

ACT 1.	Act II.	iii. 44 · · 3	V. 12 25
		iii. 111 500	v. 93 · · 337
Prol. 21 90	ii. 64 294	iii. 120 264	v. 105 433
i. 7 187	ii. 179 285	iii. 127 500	v. 170 336
ii, 139 104	ii. 211 491		
ii. 185 81	iii. 45 202		
ii. 189 104	iii. 94 430	iii. 150 480	v. 195 69
ii. 312 372	iii. 115 51	iii. 155 {129	v. 255 217
	iii. 120 12		v. 272 91
	iii. 120		v. 292 · · 395
iii. 7 481	iii. 135 333	iii. 161 90	
iii. 51 . \ \ 95	iii. 149 162	iii. 162 401	
	iii. 205 . 419a	iii. 188 129	Аст V.
	iii. 252 211	iii. 190 174	
	iii. 266 165	iii. 198 3	i. 30 356
ñi. 89 12	(0	iii. 200 487	i. 63 407
iii. 96 490	iii. 272 · . \\\ \\ \\ \\ \\ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \	iii. 201 274	i. 71 356
iii. 101 343		iii. 247 164	ü. 109 13
iii. 105 490	ACT III.	iii. 247 · -{314	ii. 144 428
iii. 114 322			iii. 13 482
iii. 125 342	i. 71 368	ACT IV.	iii. 21 151
iii. 187 342	i. 151 37	1101 17.	iii. 54 90
iii. 199 490	iii. 3 {495	iv. 4 290	
iii. 288 395	(458	iv 47 · · 492	
iii. 339 188	iii. 20 490	iv. 59 382	vi. 20 \\ \begin{pmatrix} 422 \\ 11 \end{pmatrix}
iii. 340 479	13. 27	iv. 136 8.14	vii. 5 440
111. 340 4/9	(4/4	110 7300 0 0 000	2 440

TWELFTH NIGHT.

			1110111.	
	ACT I.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.
Sc.	Line Par.	v. 3 · .†307	i. {\(\frac{32}{\text{seem''}}\)} (2)	iv. 99 281
i.	10 284	v. 69 13	ii. 3180	iv. 102 218
i.	15 18	v. 84 93	ii. 6356	iv. 110†244
i.	16 †349	v, 108†244	ii. 8†323	V. 1 25
i.	23 62	v. 120†343	ii. 19†368	v. 6†145
i.	24†312	v. 124 254	ii. 21†297	v. 23 (3)
i.	27 144	v. 156 400	ii. 27 230	
i.	32 †477	v. 158†121	ii. 30 †2	Act III.
i.	33 • • 277	v. 159 202	ii. 33 299	; [2-]
,	\$403	v. 171 368	ii. 35 290	i. {10} 145
i.	38{ or tos	v. 196†244	ii. 37 168	i. 44 331
	20	v. 201 158	ii. 42 462	i. 45†118
ì.	39 • -{479	v. 224†420	iii. 34 165	i. 109 84
ii.	{17 ₁₈ }†513	v. 259 · . 224	iii. 89''natural."(a)	i. 114†149
	(10) 5174	v. 265 †1	iii. 95 122	i. 120 349
ii.	21	v. 269 · · 414	iii. 99 349	i. 121 480
ii.		v. 274 · · 505	iii. 107 Fol. 103	i. 123 303
11.	${29 \brace 30}$ †513	v. 281 (1)	(===)	i. 128†312
ii.	33 • • 17	v. 282†343	iii. {107-}. †371	i. 133 66
ii.	35 · ·{254 512	v. 287 · {†220 †223	iii. 122 401	i. 133{ "Fol. "hides."
ii,	43 290	v. 295†121	iii. 143†346	i. 146†513
ii.	48 287	v. {296}†513	iii. 149 295	i. 149 512
ii.	53 414	(297)	iii. 185 106	(+
iii.	1 †24	v. 305 218	iii. 187 419	i. 166 . {†288
iii.	5 182	v. 315 · ·†479	iii. 199 349	i. 172 118
iii.	30 (Glossary)	v. 317 · · 349	iv. 23†447	ii. 9 †137
iii.	112†321	v. 321†396	iv. 26 145	ii. 38†315
iii.	113 53	v. 322 194 v. 324 287	iv. ${29 \atop 30}$ †513	ii. 48 233
	(321	, ,	iv 40 ∫ 38	ii. 57419 <i>a</i>
iv.	6†284	v. {"329 owe"} 290	' (1400	ii. 72 †319
iv.	13 127			iii. 13†469
īv.	16 †490	Act II.	iv. 80 227	iii. 15 Supply
ıv.	20 {200		iv. 89†244	iii. 15{"thanks. How"
iv.	27 200	i. 1. {†316 †406	iv. 90†505	iii. 18 359
	(+400	i. 20 81	iv. 91†497	iii. 26 . 217
iv.	1467	i. 22 21	i v . 94 . {†458 †469	iii. 29 84
ív.	$\{39\}$. 419 a	i. 27 244	iy 96 335	111. 40 404
		(a) A		кк
		7.7		

Sc.	Line Par.	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. Sc. Line Par
iii.	43 193	iv. 415 · . 349	i. 37†281 i. 228 . ,†469
iii.	46 155	iv. 418 64	i. 58 3 i. 231 479
iv.	2 175		i. 73 · .†219 i. 235 · . 77
iv.	85†141	Act IV.	i. 79 †468 i. 237 169
iv.	196 †2	i. 57 . p. 12 (4)	i. 81 450 i. 238 423
lv.	201 † 149	i. 6r 353	i. 86 1 i. 245 200
iv.	[238] [tp.164	i. 63 . (5)	i. 89†379 i. 253 490
	(239) (1p.150	i. 65 136	i. 92 · · 434 i. 256 · · 349
iv.	248 187	ii. 10 200	i. \(\frac{96}{27} \cdot \cdot \cdot \tau \tau \tau \tau \tau \tau \tau \ta
iv.	255 † 196	ii. 37†319	(97)
iv.	${260 \brace 262}$. 419	(†207	i. 104 128 i. 278 . †p. 12
iv.		11. /3 . (†370	: 113
		ii. 86 275	(17)
iv.		ii. 88 319	i. 117 · · 473 i. 293 · · †400
iv.	{290} 291} 280	ii. 92 34	i. 125 285 i. 324†376
iv.	300 368	ii. 99 . 290 (6)	i 127 · · 92 i. 327 · · 16
iv.	323 276	ii. {102} 296	i. 130†243 i. 340 158
	344 366	(104)	i. 135 · · 397 i. 346 · · 350
		iii. 6. p 12	i. 141 · . 93 i. 357 · . 401
iv.	${362 \brace 363}$ †513	iii 17 · •†494	i. 143 · · 303 i. 358 · .†278
iv.	366 193	iii. 21 3	i. 144 · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
iv.	380 5	iii. 28 508	i. 150 . †p. 12 ' \(\)371\(\) sary)
iv.	381 512	iii. 29 137	i. 160 · . 443 i. 368 · . 244
iv.	383 1494	iii. 30 202	i. 174 · · · 86 i. 375 · · · 287
iv.	384 287		i. 198 25 i. 391 . †p. 12
iv.	{392}†513	Act V.	i. 201 · . †400 i. 393 · · 478
	(393),2,2		i. 222 411 ; 200 (287
iv.	410 368	i. 22 . \(\frac{356}{1221} \)	i. 224 · · 492 i. 398 · · \ 96

(r) See K. J. iii. 4. 81.

(2) See Macbeth, . 5. 30.

(3) See below, line 35; A. Y. L. ii. 7. 31.

(4) A. Y. L. iii. 1. 17. (7) K. J. v. 5. 7.

(5) J. C. iii. 1. 207-8. (6) K. J. v. 2. 79.

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

		i.	40 501	iii. 84 477	i .	$\begin{cases} 47^{-} \\ 69 \end{cases}$. 232
A	Acт I.	i.	57 . 187	iii. 88 338		
	25 231	i.	59 89	Act II.		6 299
i.	28 231	i.	61 231	i. $\binom{1}{17}$ 232	iv.	
i.	30 501	::	{33- 37 } . 500			65 45?
i.	34 - 403		(5,)	i. 3. 80		72 · · 335
i.	39 50x	ii.	62 447	i. 35 · · 197	iv.	87 467

⁽b) Compare "I have fairly forgotten it."

Sc. Line Par. iv. 120 231	Sc. Line Par.	Sc. Line Par. ii. 45 166	Sc. Line Par iv. 184 467
iv. {138} 187	i. 84 189	ii. 92 510	iv. 200 3
iv. 183 460	i. 162 28 i. 258 455	ii. 109 368 ii. 118 490	Аст V. ii. 38174
iv. 194 146 iv. 210 477	ii. 19 94	iii. 8 451	ii. 51 469
vi. 38 263	ii. 26 223	iii. 41 438	ii. 84 285 ii. 178 215
vii. 2 492 vii. 5 290	Act IV.	iv. 48 232	iv. 3 463
Act III.	i. 10 425 i. 21 21	iv. 67 24 iv. 70 279	iv. 15 244 iv. 93 461
i. 23 20	i. 64 490	iv. 89 482	iv. 109 354
i. 59 405	ii. 18 295	iv. 170 24	iv. 152 196

WINTER'S TALE.

Act I.	ii. 391 499	i. 195 · · 295	ii. 169 508
i. 26 278	ii. 392 271	ii. 49 · · 175	ii. 177 · · 484
i. 29 334	ii. 402 369	ii. 57 · · 356	ii. 180 11
ii. 13 425	ii. 412 220	ii. $\begin{cases} 62 \\ 63 \end{cases}$ · 457	ii. 187 · · 173
ii. 22 · · 499	ii. 420 · · 457	iii. 14 · · 484	ii. 202 473
ii. 27 { 13	ii. 425 · · 457	iii. 20 412	ii. 217 354
(222	ii. 427 152	iii. 35 12	ii. 232 480
ii. 44 · · 255	ii. 432 · · 457	iii. 104 265	iii. 46 212
ii. 70 · · 505	ii. 437 · · 200	iii. 115 260	iii. 69 178
ii. 112 503	ii. 449 · · 457	iii. 138 348	iii. 116 212
ii. 117 499	ii. 455 · · 265	iii. 142 3 . 297	iii. 121 356
ii. 135 368	ii. 461 457	iii. 150 499	
ii. $\begin{cases} 151 \\ 152 \end{cases}$ 228		iii. 174 369	Act IV.
ii. 154 · · 297	Act II.		i. 2247
ii. 263 279	i. 20 465	A TTT	i. 26 349
ii. 266 228	i. 94 · . \\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\\	Act III.	ii. 26 412
ii. 290 · · 484	(433	i. 167 186	iv. 65 . 419 a
ii. 318 269	3,5	ii. 47 · · 469	iv. 76 477
ii. 329 \\ 484		ii. 87 · · 499	iv. 131 \\ \frac{64}{387}
ii. 352 86	i. 128 270 i. 133 394	ii. 101 . ${}^{228}_{468}$	iv. 142 509
ii. 356 357	i. 162 385	ii. 104 460	iv. 168 399
ii. 372 457	i. 165 249	ii. 166 378	iv. 169 128
		3/-	V V 2

INDEX.

Sc	T	Par.	Sc.	Line	Par.		A Y	7			T.
Sc	Line		Sc.	Line	7		ACT V		Sc.	Line	Par.
iv.	176 .	. 88	iv.	532 .	309				1.	141 .	. 120
		(88)			(499	Sc.	Line	Par.	i.	161 .	. 380
iv.	203 .	p. 14	iv.	539 •	. 270	i.					_
iv.	264 .	. 24	iv.	543 •	• 372	1.	18.	. 356	1.	170 .	. 290
IV.	204 .	. 24	١.	-		i.	19.	. 13	i.	219 .	. 132
iv.	352 .	J 90	iv.	549 •	· 431	i.			i.		
	.554 •	143	iv.	550 .	. 188		23 •	. 244		230 .	• 377
iv.	375 •	. 501	iv.			i.	42 .	• 354	ii.	60.	. 265
		-	1v.	581.	. 264	i.	86 .	. 224	ii.	66 .	. 193
iv.	378 .	. 244	iv.	592 .	. 203				1		• 193
iv.	428 .	. 490	iv.	636 .	. 271	i.	87.	. 400	ii.	94 •	. 415
	-			040 4	* 311	i.	95 •	. 459	ii.	155 .	• 335
iv.	440 .	. 198	iv.	731 .	· yc						
iv.	442 .	. 478			J278	i.	109.	. 214	iii.	25 •	. 469
iv.	466 .	20.4	iv.	783 .	1335	i.	112 .	. 469	iii.	53 •	. 508
IV.	400 .	• 394	iv.			i.			iii.		_
iv.	ci.	1290	10.	795 •	• 324	1.	113 .	. 193	111.	65 .	· 447
	,	1333	iv.	813.	. 460	i.	123 .	. 166	iii	68 .	. 110
iv.	541 .	. 490	iv.	822 .	. 447	i.	138.	0.0	iii.	100 .	. 192
	_		1				1.30 .	249	1	100 .	
iv.	213	. 241	iv.	831.	. 105	' i.	140 .	. 143	iii.	140 .	. 85

VERBAL INDEX.

Δ.	PAK.
	Adverbs, formation of 23-5
PAR.	transposed 420-21
A. abbreviated preposition 140	adverbial compounds 420
adverbial prefix	After (adv.)
A, an, (article)	= "according to" 141
omitted after "like," "as" 83	Again = "on the other hand". 27
"what" 86	Against, used of time 142
" "so" 86	Alar (u) m 463
	Alexandrines, very rare 493
"A many men," "an eight days" . 87 used for "one" . 81 "Many a man" . 85 transposed . 422	apparent 495-9
days" 87	Alive 140
used for "one" 81	All for "any"
"Many a man" 85	Alive
transposed 422	used adverbially 28
'A for "he" 402	"Without all question" . 418
Accent, pause accent 453	All-obeying = all-obeyed . 372
on monosyllabic prepositions 457a	. 0
on other monosyllables,	A11-10
especially "the" 457	Almost="mostly," "generally" (430
emphatic accent, or "stress" 453a	Almost="mostly," "generally" 29 Alone = "above all" 18
Elizabethan, on some words	Along 30
.1 0 1	
	Amphibious section, the 513 An, one, pronunciation of 80
variable, why?490	
Accents, five 452	
six apparently 494–503	
four apparently 504-510	
emphatic	with the subjunctive 102
Acc'ess 490	(
Accuse (noun) 451	= "even"
Active participles, confusion in. 372	= "if" 101
Addict (participle) 342	= "11" 101
Adjectival phrases transposed . 419a	Ang(e)ry 477 Anon. "Ever and anon" 30a Another 88
Adjectives	Anon. "Ever and anon" 30a
both active and passive 3	Another 88
combined together 2	Antecedent, plural with singular
anomalously formed 22	verb 247
transposed 419	An't were
as adverbs	Anything, (adv.) 31
transposition of {419	Archbishop 492
(4190	Arose for "arisen" 343
used for nouns 5	Arrived. "Arrived our const" 198

PAR.	PAR
Arrived. "I am arrived" 295 Article. See "a," "the."	Best. "I were test" 230, 352 Bestow. "I bestow this of you" 175
Article. See "a," "the."	Bestow. "I bestow this of you" 175
indefinite, transposition of . 422	
Artificial, adj. active 3	Bin, plural of "be" 332
Artificial, adj. active	Bin, plural of "be" . 33, 332 Blame. "Too blame" . 73 Bloat = "bloated" . 344 Bloat = "bloated" . 342 Bodement . 448
a contraction of "al(l)so". 106	-Ble, suffix active 3, 445
= "as if" 107	Bloat = "bloated" 342
= "namely" 113	Bodement 448
"So as" 109, 275, 281	Both 12
"As that" 108	Both
That as 280	Brain (verb) 290
## That ## 100 That as	Briefly = "recently" 35
= "which," "where" 112	But 118-30
= "for so" 110	meaning and derivation of . 110
= "though"	transition of 121
"when as"	signifying prevention 122
"as-as" 276	"I doubt not but" 122 "No more but" 127
"soas." omitted in 281	"No more but" 127
	= only
Asp'ect	= only
At. "At friend"	transposed 120, 420
Asp'ect 490 At . "At friend"	with subjunctive = "unless" 120
"At first" = "at the first" go	But-en, E. E. = "without" . 119
-Ation -ition suffix omitted 450	By. adv
Authorize	oren
Auxiliary verbs 208-227	By, adv
Away "I cannot away with"	prep = "about"
A-weary	prop. — about
Awful - "awe struck"	
Auth'orize	
Awful = "awe-struck" 3	C
Awful = "awe-struck" 3	C.
Awful = "awe-struck" 3	
Awful = "awe-struck" 3	
	Call for "recal"
В.	Call for "recal"
В.	Call for "recal" 460 "Came for "became"
B. Back, "To and back" 33 Backward (noun)	Call for "recal" 460 "Came for "became"
B. Back, "To and back" 33 Backward (noun)	Call for "recal"
Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun)	Call for "recal"
Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun)	Call for "recal"
Back, "To and back"	Call for "recal"
Back, "To and back"	Call for "recal"
Back, "To and back"	Call for "recal"
Back. "To and back"	Call for "recal". 460 "Came for "became". 460 Can. "And they can well on horseback". 307 Can'onized. 401 Cansetick = "candlestick". 461 Care. "I care not who know it" 368 Careless (passive). 368 — "uncared for". 3 Catch'd and "caught". 344 -Ce' final for -ce's. 471 Cease = "cause to cease". 221
Back. "To and back"	Call for "recal"
Back. "To and back"	Call for "recal". 460 "Came for "became". 460 Can. "And they can well on horseback". 307 Can'onized. 491 Canse. "I care not who know it" 368 Careless (passive). 368 — "uncared for". 3 Catch'd and "caught". 344 -Ce' final for -ce's. 471 Cease. "cause to cease.". 291 Chance. "How chance?". 37 Chance (particpass.). 295
Back. "To and back"	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun) 57 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "(reb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298–300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 2990, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 344	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun) 57 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "(reb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298–300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 2990, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 344	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun) 57 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "(reb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298–300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 2990, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 344	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun) 57 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "(reb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298–300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 2990, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 344	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun). 5 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "I bar you your rights" 198 Barn (verb). 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298-300 Be-, prefix 438 dropped 290, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal "Fair befal" 297 Behayed. "Have I been be-	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun). 5 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "I bar you your rights" 198 Barn (verb). 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298-300 Be-, prefix 438 dropped 290, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal "Fair befal" 297 Behayed. "Have I been be-	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun). 5 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "I bar you your rights" 198 Barn (verb). 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298-300 Be-, prefix 438 dropped 290, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal "Fair befal" 297 Behayed. "Have I been be-	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun) 77 Bad (noun) 77 Bad (noun) 198 Bar. "I bar you your rights" 198 Bar. (verb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298-300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 299, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal. "Fair befal" 297 Behaved. "Have I been bekawed" 295 Beholding 372 Behonding 372 Being used like "casing" 372	Call for "recal"
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun) 57 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. (verb) 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Be (verb), how used 298–300 Be, prefix 438 dropped 2990, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal "Fair befal" 297 Behaved. "Have I been bekaved" 295 Beholding 372 Being used like "seeing" 378 Being used like "seeing" 378 Beshrew. "Beshrew my soul	Call for "recal". 460 "Came for "became". 460 Can. "And they can well on horseback". 307 Can'onized . 491 Canstick = "candlestick" 451 Care. "Lare not who know it" 368 Careless (passive) . 3 = "uncared for" . 3 Catch'd and "caught" . 344 -Ce' final for -ce's . 471 Cease = "cause to cease" . 291 Chance. "How chance?" . 37 Chanced (particpass.) . 295 Chaucer, varies in accentuation 490 uses French transpositions 477 Chidding , "Childing autumn" . 290 Chose for "chosen" . 343 Cide for decide . 460 Climate = "live" . 290 (verb) . 200
B. Back. "To and back" 33 Backward (noun). 77 Bad (noun). 5 Banish. "I banish you the land" 198 Bar. "I bar you your rights" 198 Barn (verb). 290 Barr(e)ls 463 Barr(e)n 463 Be (verb), how used 298-300 Be-, prefix 438 dropped 290, 460 Beated 344 Because = "in order that" 117 "for because" 151 Be-en, plural of "be" 332 Befal "Fair befal" 297 Behayed. "Have I been be-	Call for "recal". 460 "Came for "became". 460 Can. "And they can well on horseback". 307 Can'onized 491 Canstick = "candlestick". 451 Care. "Leare not who know it" 368 Careless (passive). 3 = "uncared for" 3 Tatch'd and "caught" 344 -Ce' final for -ce's 471 Cease = "cause to cease" 291 Chance. "How chance?" 37 Chanced (particpass.) 295 Chaucer, varies in accentuation uses French transpositions 490 Chid (participle). 343 Child(e)ren Childing autumn 290 Chose for "chosen" 343 Cide for decide 460 Climate = "live" 290

PAR.	PAR.
Command(e)ment 488	Do 303-306
Comm'erce 490	Do
Comm'erce 490 Comp'act (noun) 490	"What's more to do" 359, 405
Comparative in er after dentals	
and liquids 7	"To do salutations". 305
doubled	omitted and inserted 306
	(f Don ") (f James ") Commercial (f J. ")
Com'pell'd	Door (dissyllable) 480 Dreadful = "awe-struck" 3
Complain. "Complain myself" 296	Door (dissyllable) 480
Complete	Dreadful = "awe-struck" 3
Complain. "Complain myself" 296 Complete	Drove for driven 342
phrase compounds 434	Droven for "driven" 344
anomalous 435	
Condition, expressed by parti-	
Condition, expressed by parti-	
Conditional sentences, irregular-	E.
ities of 371	
Confusion of constructions . 409-13	T1 C 1
in superlatives	E final pronounced 487
in superlatives 409 with "whom" 410	of French origin pronounced \\ 488
Conjunctions	
Conjunctions 95-137 "that" a conjunctional affix 287	Each for "both"
	for "each other" 12
conjunctional sentences, el-	Eas(i)ly 467
lipses in	Eas(i)ly
Construction, irregularities of 406-27	
Consult (noun) 451	in participles dropped after
Contemptible="contemptuous" 3	
Contract, for "contracted" 342	
Contraction or slurring of sylla-	Either (monosyllable) 466
bles in pronunciation . 462-73	Ejaculation, not reckoned in the
Couplets, trimeter 500-3	Verse 512 Elision of "the," "to," &c before vowels
orapitally trimeter i i i i i jet j	Elision of "the," "to," &c.
	before vowels 462
	Ellipses
D.	of a verb of speech 382
D.	after "will" and "is" 405
Dare. "He dare," "he dares" 361 Dazz(e)led 477 Dear (dissyllable) 480	of "it"
Dazz(e)led 477	of "it is" 403
Dear (dissyllable) 480	of "there is"
Dear (dissyllable)	of "is"
Degenerate (participle) 342	of "neither" before "nor" 206
Deject (participle) 342	of nominative
for "dejected"	of "one" before "other"
Deject (participle) 342 for "dejected" 342 Denied "First he denied you	of superlative inflection 398
had in him no right" 406	
had in him no right" 406	of a verb of motion 405
Desire. "I desire you of pardon" 174 Devote for "devoted" 342	in Antithetical sentences . 395
Devote for "devoted" 342	in Relative sentences 394
Dialogue in verses of three ac-	Emphasis, different in different
cents 500	accented syllables 4530
Dipthongs dissyllabled . 480, 484	prolongs words 475
Dis-, prefix 439	prolongs monosyllables 479a-486
Disdained = disdainful 374	En (third person plural inflection) 332
Dishabited	prefix 440
	suffix 444
Dislikes "It dislikes me" 207	termination 200
Disnatured 439	Endeavour. "Endeavour thyself" 296
	Eng(e)land 477
Disnose (noun)	Eng(e)land
Divine adi transposed by	(participle) 342
Change and Chalange and	(participle)
Maucer and Snakespeare 413	Entertain(e)ment

	PAR.	PAR.
Env'y (verb)	490	Folio writes "it" for "its" 228
-Er, -el, and -ie final dropped .	465	misprints in
final a discullable		
final, a dissyllable	478	Fool. "Why old men fool (verb) 200
suffix	443	Foot (verb) 290
-Es. Final es dropped after ss,	- 1	Foot (verb) 290 For. "For all this"
ce, ge	47%	= "as regards" 149
third person plural inflec-	.,	
tion if pres india		= "because of"
tion if pres. indic Escaped. "Was escaped"	333	= "because"
Escaped. was escapea	295	
-Est, dropped in superlatives		"I am for" 155 = "instead of"
after dentals and liquids.	473	= "instead of" 148
-Eth (third person plural inflec-	1,5	" For that"
tion)	224	= "to prevent"
Even transport	334	- to prevent
tion)	420	prep 147, 155
But even now	38	For-, prefix 441
Ever	39	For-, prefix
Every	12	Force (verb) 200
Every, one, other, neither (plu-		Foreign idioms 418
ral nouns)	12	Forgot (participle)
Full (managed)		Forgot (participle) 343 "You are forgot" = "have
Evil (monosyllable)	466	You are lorgot = have
Eye = "appear" Except, excepted	293	forgotten yourself" 295
Except, excepted	118	Forth, without verb of motion . 41
Exile	490	= "from" 156
Expect (noun)	451	French, transposition of adjec-
Expire (verb transitive,		
	291	tives 419
Exteriorly	428	Fretten 344
Extra syllable before a pause .	454	Frighten
two pause-extra syllables .	458	From. "From out" 157
		without verb of motion 158
		Froze for "frozen" 343
		73 1 00 1 1 1
		Furnace (verb) 290
F.		Future for subjunctive 348
11 . (1) . 1 (1)		
Fair. "Fair befal"	297	
(noun)	5	G.
Fairies speak in verses of four		0.
accents	504	
Fall (verb transitive)	291	Gave for "misgave" 460
		General (noun) 5
False (verb)	290	
Fame (verb)		C1-1/
Tame (read)	290	Glad (noun) 5
Famous'd (participle)	290 294	Glad (noun) 5 Go. "Go along" = "come
Famous'd (participle)		Glad (noun)
Famous'd (participle)	294 40	= "walk" in Wickliffe 20
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478	= "walk" in Wickliffe 20
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478 23	= "walk" in Wickliffe 20
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478 23 290	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to"
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478 23	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to"
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478 23 290	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very"	294 40 478 23 290	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fastly Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act.)	294 40 478 23 290 480	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fastly Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act.)	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther". Fastly Fearl (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act.) Fell. "Thou hast fell"	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344	= "walk" in Wickliffe . 30 "go to" . 185 Good. "Good my lord" . 13 "good now" . 13 "good cheap" . 1984 Graft (participle) . 342
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fastly Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act.) Fell. "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective)	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act) Fell, "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Fidd(e)ler .	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22 477	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act) Fell, "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Fidd(e)ler .	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22	= "walk" in Wickliffe . 30 "go to" . 185 Good. "Good my lord". 13 "good now" . 13 "good cheap" . 1984 Graft (participle) . 342 Grav'd = "entomb'd" . 294 Guiled. "Guiled shore" . 294
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act) Fell, "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Flod(e)ler Flour(jsh Folio reads "and" for "an"	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22 477	= "walk" in Wickliffe 30 "go to" 185 Good. "Good my lord" 13 "good now" 13 "good cheap" 1984
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act) Fell, "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Flod(e)ler Flour(jsh Folio reads "and" for "an"	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22 477	= "walk" in Wickliffe . 30 "go to" . 185 Good. "Good my lord". 13 "good now" . 13 "good cheap" . 1984 Graft (participle) . 342 Grav'd = "entomb'd" . 294 Guiled. "Guiled shore" . 294
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther". Fastly Fearl (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act.) Fell. "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Fridd(e)ler Flour(i)sh Folio reads "and" for "an" (see Index to Plays)	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22 477 463	= "walk" in Wickliffe . 30 "go to" . 185 Good. "Good my lord". 13 "good now" . 13 "good cheap" . 1988 Graft (participle) . 342 Grav'd = "entomb'd" . 294 Guiled. "Guiled shore" . 294
Famous'd (participle) Far = "very" for "farther" Fault (verb) Fear (dissyllable) "fear me not" = "fear not for me" (Verb act) Fell, "Thou hast fell" Felt (adjective) Flod(e)ler Flour(jsh Folio reads "and" for "an"	294 40 478 23 290 480 200 291 344 22 477 463	= "walk" in Wickliffe . 30 "go to" . 185 Good. "Good my lord". 13 "good now" . 13 "good cheap" . 1984 Graft (participle) . 342 Grav'd = "entomb'd" . 294 Guiled. "Guiled shore" . 294

PAR.	₽AR.
Happily = "haply" 42 Happy (verb) 290 Hardy = "bold" 148 Have, "Should have" 327 "to have" omitted after	Ignomy. 478 Impersonal verbs 297 Import/ess
Happy (verb) 290	Impersonal verbs 297
Hardy = "bold" 148	Import/ess
Itality - bold	In for "an " prefix
Have. "Should have" 327	In "He fell in love"
to have omitted after	- "in the cose of"
would have 411	" " the case of 152
"Thought to have begged" 360	177 round 103
Hear. "Who heard me to deny	= during; in night 101
Hear. "Who heard me to deny it?"	
Heat (participle)	ing"
He for "him" 306, 207	Indicative 346–348
"man"	Simple Present for Complete 346
dence, without verb of motion . 41	Simple Past for Complete
Hen(e)ry 477	Present 347
Hen(e)ry 477 Henry VIII not written by	Present
Shakespeare 455	in -es, th
Her, antecedent of relative 218	Past in u
for "herself" 223	Second Per. Sing. in -ts . 340
"ita"	
for "herself"	"And thou lovest me" 363
Thy here-approach". 43	Infect (participle)
Thy here-approach". 43	Infect (participle) 155, 342 Infinitive 349–360
Iers, used for "her" adj 238	active for passive
Him, dative	active for passive 359 indefinitely used 356
for "he" 208	perfect, "He thought to have
"himself" 223	done it "
= "he whom" 246	done it " 360
Him, dative	used as a noun 355
<i>to</i> weep: 349	"To" omitted; inserted . 349
His, antecedent of a relative . 21	,, omitted and inserted
for "its"	after the same verb . 350
for "its"	,, with noun, used as
Lither, without verb of motion . 41	subject or object . 354 Inflections
monosyllable 466	Inflections
Hitherto, used of space	-Ing, termination 372
Hoist (participle) 342	confused with the old inflec-
Holp for "holpen" 343	tion "en" 93, 372 Inhabited = "housed" 294
Homager	Inhabited = "housed" 294
Jome "Speak him have"	In's for "in his"
Honest (verb)	Interjectional lines 512
Honest (verb) 290 Hour (dissyllable) 480	Interrogative Pronouns, transi-
	tion from to Relative 251, 252
for "however" for "as"	Into, with verbs of rest 150
for "however," for "as". 46	accent of 4574
However (it be) 403	accent of 457a Inward (noun)
Hybrid compounds 428	Irregularities of construction 406-27
	Irregularities of construction 406–27 Is, ellipses after
	ellipse of
	alsed final in nolvsyllables 401
	It
	ellinse of
I.	1t
	"it is " ellipse of The
	"To voice it with claims". 226
I for "me" 209	ann hatis as anteredent 220
tor "me" 209	emphatic as antecedent . 227
unaccented dropped	-ltion, -ation, suffix omitted 451 Its, post-Shakespearian 228
elurred in "minester" 820, 401	its, post-Snakespearian 228
sturred in minister, etc., 407	
If "Ifther"	substitutes for 228, 229 -Ive, suffix passive 3, 445

J.	PAR CAND
	Mean. "What mean ye to
PAR.	weep ?". 356 Meered (particip.) 294 Meiny = "train" 87 derivation of 12 -Ment, suffix 448
Jugg(e)ler	Meered (particip.) 294
Just, adj. = "exact" 14	Meiny = "train" 87
Justicers 443	derivation of 12
	Mere, adj. = "complete"
	Mered (particip.) 204
K.	Might 307-13
	= "could" . are
Know. "I know you what you	Million'd (participle passive) 294
are" 414	Mine how differs from "my"
	used for "my" 238
	Mistagle (- auticial)
L.	
LJ.	Wiolosyllables accented 457
Tools — "to be martine"	unaccented 456
Lack = "to be wanting" 293 Laid (adjective) 22 Lated (verb)	prolonged so as to make up
Laid (adjective)	a foot 479a-486
Lated (verb) 290	Monosyllabic prepositions, ac-
Learn (verb act.)	cent of
Learn (verb act.) * 291	Moods 346-70
Lengthening of words in pro-	Moraler 443
nunciation	More, most = "greater"
Less, suffix	"greatest" 17
Let = "did"	"More better" 11
Like "If you like of me" 177	"Mary fearful"
Likes. "It likes me" 297	"No more but"
Lines, see Verses.	No more but" 127
We think the second of the sec	Moods 340-70 Moraler 443 More, most = "greater" 47 "greatest" 17 "More better" 11 "More fearful" 51 "No more but" 127 Most = "greatest" 17 "Most best" 11 Mouthed (participle passive) 204
Liquids introduce a semi-vowel . 477	Most best"
List. "List a brief tale" 199 'Longs for "belongs" 460	Mouthed (participle passive) . 294 Much = "great" 51
Longs for "belongs" 460	Much = "great" 51
Look. "To look your dead". 200	
Lover a 294	= "is to" 314
-Ly, suffix 447	My, how differs from "mine" 237 "Good my lord Myself (derivation of)
	"Good my lord 13
	Myself (derivation of) 20
M.	
Mad (Verb) 290 Maj(es)ty, (dissyllable) 468 Malice (verb) 290 Many. "Many a man" 81 "A many men" 87 an oun 87 an distributed durable llyused 94	N.
Maj(es)ty, (dissyllable) 468	
Malice (verb) 290	Names, used as adjectives . 22, 430
Many. "Many a man" 81	polysyllabic, receive but one
"A many men" 87	accept 160
a noun 87	Near for "nearer" 469
anadjective adverbially used 81	
anadjective adverbiany used of	Necessited
Mark. "Mark King Richard	Neck. "In the neck of that". 160
how he looks" 414	Need (verb intr.) 293
Marle for "marvel" 461	"What need?" 297
how he looks" 414 Marle for "marvel" 461 May	N'eed (verb intr.) 293 "What need?" 297 Needs (adverb) 25 Negative, double 406
"May not" = "must not" 310	Negative, double 406
used for the subjunctive in	
the sense of purpose $1.138(f)$	a monosyllable
Me for "I" 210	used for "both" 408
= "for me," "by me" 220	-Ness, suffix 440
= "myself"	Never. "Never so"
"Of me" for "my" 225	No. "No more but"
Me for "1"	Nominative absolute . 176-381
iather had 230	210111111111111111111111111111111111111

PAR.	PAR.
	Our, antecedent of relative 218
Nominative, ellipsis of 399-402	"Companies of relative 210
implied from participial	"Come, our queen" 13, 222 = "of us" 219
phrases 413	Ourselves, derivation of 239
None. "I will none of it". 53	Ourselves, derivation of 20
	Out (preposition) 183
Not = "not only"	Out (preposition) 183 Over = "over again" 58a
"I not doubt" 305	Overwatched = fatigued 205
Nothing (adv.) 55	Overwatched = fatigued 295 Owe for "own" 290
(perhaps) 490	Owing (adjective) 372
	oming (adjective)
noun-compounds 430	P.
of French origin formed from	F.
verbs without change 451	70.1.7
Nour(i)sh 463	Pale (noun) 5 Paled (passive) 294 Parted, "Parted with" for parted from". 194
	Paled (passive) 294
	Parted. "Parted with" for
	"parted from" 194
Ο,	Participles
Ŭ.	Participles 372-381 -ed omitted after d and t . 342
Object, redundant 414	-en dropped 343
Object, redundant 414	
Objective following intransitive	irregular formations of 344
verbs 198–201 Ob'scure	prefix y 345
Ob scure 492	imply a condition 377
UI 105-79	prefix y
accented in "out of" 457a	Noun or Pronoun 378
= about 174	Passive with some verbs of mo-
= as a consequence of 168	tion 295
= as regards 173	Past for Present tense 347
"Blowing of his nails" 178	Path (verb) 290
= by 170	Pause, effect of an accent 453
= by	the pause-extra-syllable 454, 455
= 110m · · · · · · · 100	
= on	two pause-extra-syllables . 458
original meaning "from" . 169 "To admit of" 179	frequently prolongs a mono-
"To admit of" 179	syllable 481-486
with verbs of filling 171	in verses of four accents 506-509
Off 56	Peer = "cause to peer" 291
connected with "of" 165	Peers (verb transitive) 291
On	Pensived (passive) 294
= about 181	Perchance. "Perchance I will" 319
"I fall on weeping" 180	Perfect infinitive 360
= about	Perfect infinitive 360 Perish = "destroy" 291
"On sleep" 140	Perish en = they perish 332
Once = "above all;" "once	
for all" 57	Pers'ever 492 Pined (passive) 294
(()	Disiral "It would have disiral
	Pitied. "It would have pitied a man" 297
One, ellipse of, before "other" . 396	
= "above all"	Plain = "make plain" 290 Pleaseth. "Pleaseth it" 361
how pronounced 80	i leasetti. i tettsetti ti 301
(adjective) 130, 58, 420	Pleasure, has two accents 479
(adjective) 130, 58, 420 Only transposed 420 — "mere" 58 One for "open" (adj.) 343, 290 Or, "9707" 136	Possess = "inform" 295
- "mere" 58	Practised = "plotted against" 294
One for "open" (adj.) . 343, 200	Prefixes
Or. "or or"	dropped
= "before," "or ere," "or	"en-" 440
	66: 27 C 66 27 X
Other for "others"	"un-" for "in-" \ 442
Other for "others"	December 101 111-)
monosyllable 466 (singular pronoun) 12	Prepositional compounds 431
(singular pronoun) 12	Prepositions
Ought. "You ought not walk" 340	doubled 407

VERBAL INDEX.

PAR.	PAR.
Prepositions omitted before in-	Relish (verb transitive) 291
direct object 201	
omitted after verbs of motion,	1 33 1 1/1 1 11
	Remember = "remind" 291
worth, hearing, and other	Rememb(e)rance 477
verbs 198-200 omitted in adverbial phrases 202	Ketire (verb act.)
omitted in adverbial phrases 202	Rhyme, when used 513 Right used for "true"
transposed 203, 424	Right used for "true" 10
transposed 203, 424 accent of 457a	
local and metaphorical mean-	Round = "straightforwardly" 60
ing 138	Royal, why transposed 410
	Kun. "Is run" 295
transition of into conjunc-	
tions 287, 151	_
Present, Simple for Complete . 346	S.
Presently = "at once" 59	
Presently = "at once" 59 Private (noun) 5 Probable (adi) cotive	, C = 1
Probable (adj.), active 3	S, adverbial suffix 25
Pronoun, personal 205-243	-S final dropped after se, ce 471
redundant 242, 243	S misprinted in Folio 338
relative	Sanctuary pronounced "sanctiry" 4'
relative	Sat. "Being sat" 295 Save. "Save he" 118
omitted 244 anomalies of 205	Save. "Save he"
anomalies of 205	
between conjunction and in-	Sawn for seen 344
finitive 216	Say used for "call" 200
transposed 240	Say'd for "assayed" 460
Proper = "own" 16	Scaling = "weighing" 290
Prose when used	Se for shall 401
Drocody	Se'cure 492
finitive	Seldom (adjective)
Prowess, (quasi-monosynable) . 470	Self (adjective) 20
	omitted
	Samballance
	Semb(e)lance 477 Sense for "senses" 471
Q.	
	Several (noun)
Quail = "make to quail" 291 Quit (participle) 342	Severally = "separately" 61
()uit (participle)	Shaked for "shaken" 343
Quit (participie) 342	Shall 315-318
	"I shall, my lord" 315
	Shall
R	1/7 2 1
R	"Mark way his absolute
D. G	"Mark you his absolute shall"316
R softens or destroys a following	shall"316
or preceding vowel 463, 464 prolongs -er 478	She for "her" 211
prolongs -er 478	"woman" 224
when following a vowel pro-	Shine (verb act.) 291
longs a monosyllable 485	
	(verb transitive) 201
	She for "her"
-r and -re final dissyllabize	Should
-r and -re final dissyllabize	denotes contingent futurity 322
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324
r and -r final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "un-	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328
r and -r final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "un-	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to
r and -r final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "un-	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "unrecalled" 372 Relatival constructions 275-289 Relative 244-274	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "unrecalled" 372 Relatival constructions 275-289 Relative 244-274	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "unrecalled" 372 Relatival constructions	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present 326 Show = "appear" 293 Sightless (passive) 33
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel . 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for 'unrecalled" . 372 Relatival constructions . 275-280 Relative . 244-274 with plural antecedent and singular verb . 247	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 ("should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present 326 Show = "appear" 293 Sightless (passive) 3
monosyllables	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 ("should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present 326 Show = "appear" 293 Sightless (passive) 3
-r and -re final dissyllabize monosyllables . 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel . 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for 'unrecalled' . 372 Relatival constructions . 275-289 Relative . 244-274 with plural antecedent and singular verb . 247 omitted . 244 with supplementary propoun [248]	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 ("should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present 326 Show = "appear" 293 Sightless (passive) 3
monosyllables 480 after dentals introduces a quasi-vowel 477 Recall. "Unrecalling" for "un recalled" 372 Relatival constructions 275-289 Relative 244-274 with plural antecedent and singular verb 247 omitted 244	denotes contingent futurity 322 = "ought," "was to" 323, 324 "should have" 327 like German "sollen" 328 after past, corresponds to "shall" after present 326 Show = "appear" 293 Sightless (passive) 3 Since, difference of tenses with 132 347

PAR.	PAR.
Sir, a mark of anger 232	Suffix, "-y" 450
	Suffocate (participle) 342
	C (("CC . 12)
Smote for "smitten" 343	Superlative in <i>-est</i> for "very". 8
So inserted 63	after dentals and liquids . 9
omitted 64	after dentals and liquids . 9 confusion in
omitted 64 for "also" 65 for "then" 66	double
for "then"	inflection, ellipse of 398
for "then" 66 "So long time" 67	Swam for "swum" 344
"So long time" 67 = "provided that" 133 "So that" "so as "=" pro-	Sweaten
"So that," "so as"=" pro-	Sworder
vided that" 133	Sworder
"So defend thee heaven". 133	dropped or slurred in pro-
"So (as)" omitted 281	nunciation 467-473
" Sa 25" TOO 27"	nunciation 40, 4/3
"So as" 109, 275 "So that:" that omitted . 282	
" " " "	
	Т.
Some	Toint (participle)
Sometimes = "formerly" 68a	Taint (participle) 342 Tear (dissyllable) 480
	Tenses, irregularities of
C 1 C 44 1 22	246 248 260 250 250
	346, 348, 360, 370, 371 Terrible = "frightened" 3
	Than, with comparative, ex-
Splitted	Than, with comparative, ex-
Spoke (participle) 343	plained
Squint (verb act.) 291	101 111011 1 1 1 1
Stand. "It stands me upon". 204	l
State on tip-toe 24	That, demonstrative, "that as" \277
Stept. "Being deep stept" . 295	
Still for "constantly" 69	"that which"
Streaming = 'unfurling'' 290	difference between that,
Streaming = 'unfurling" 290 Strove for "striven" 343	who, and which 258-259
Strucken	"who," and "which" 258-259 relative 260-262 less definite than "which" . 268
Studied. "As one that had been	less definite than which . 200
studied" 295	"whatsoever that" 286
Subjunctive 361-70	a conjunctional affix 287
in a dependent sentence . 368	= "because," "when" . 284 in "after that," &c. like
of purpose	"quam" in "postquam" 288
used indefinitely after the	
relative 367	omitted and then inserted . 285
used optatively or impera-	omitted after "so" 282 "So that:" "so" omitted 283
tively	"So that:" "so" omitted. 283
with "an" or "and" 102	"Such that" 279 = that which 244
Such. "Such as" = "Such	= that which 244
that" 109 "Such that" 279 "Such where"	before a verbal 93 "The better" 94
"Such that" 279 "Such where" 279 "Such which" 278	"The better" 94
Such where" 279	omitted 89, 90 "The which" 270. 2
"Such which" 278	"The which" 270. 2 The omitted in archaic poetry . 82
Suffixes	
Suffixes	"the that" 257
"- <i>ole</i> " (active) 3, 445	apparently accented 457
"-ote" (active)	"Lifts the head"228
" (passive) 3, 445	"The Talbot;" "the death" 92
	Thee, dative
-27" 447	for "thou" 212
"-ment" 448	Their the genitive of "they" . 219
"-ness" 449	Them for "they" 214

PAR.	U.
	PAR.
for (?) "when"	Un-for "in-," prefix 442
"There is," ellipse of 403	Unaccented syllable of a tri-
They. "They in France" 245	syllable softened 468
Thinks (verb impersonal) 297	
6 3171 1 27 1 7 1 1 1 1	Under (adjective) 22
"Motheralite" "mothinh"	Undoubted = "undaunted" . 148
"Methoughts," "methink" 297	Unfair (verb)
"I think it be" 299	Unsisting for "unresisting" 460
This for "this is"	Until with subjunctive 302
"Mere it tilinks best 212 "Methoughts," methink" 297 "I think it be" 299 This for "this is" 461 Thorough for "through" 478 Thou	for "unto" 184
Thou	Upon
omitted 241	"It stands me upon" 204
between equals 231	Us for "we" 215
to servants 232	Utensils 492
as an insult 233	
rhetorical 234	
apparent exceptions 235 Though. "Though that" 287	
Though. "Though that" 287	V.
Thought. "Thought to have begged" 360 Thyself, derivation of 20	
begged" 360	Verbal preceded by "the" and
Thyself, derivation of 20	not followed by "of" . 93 preceded by "in" 164 followed by "of" and not
Till = to	preceded by "in" 164
To	followed by "of" and not
used after "see." "feel" . 340	preceded by "the" 178
= according to 187	Verb-compounds 432
Till = to	Verbs, auxiliary 298, 331
being abridged " 357 "To be" for "being" 357 "To size a siz	intransitive used transitively 291
"To be" for "being" 357	impersonal 297
"To give you" = "by giving you" ing you"	inflection of third for second
ing you"	person 340
"I would to God"	intransitive followed by the
"I would to God" 190 = "in addition to" 185	objective
= "in comparison with" . 187	of filling with "of"
inserted for connection 416	objective 198-200 of filling with "of" 171 passive, formation of 294
	singular inflection with plu-
inserted, omitted 349	singular inflection with pitt-
="like"187	ral subject 333-9 reflexive 296
prefix	formed from nounce and ad
= "with a view to" 186	formed from nouns and ad-
"With God to friend" 189	jectives 290
" To-fore"	transitive used intransitively 293
Toil (verb act.) 290	passive to express motion . 295
Toil'd (passive) 294 Tongue (verb) 290 "Tongue (verb) 190 "To-night" 190 Toe "very" 73 "Took (participle) 343	Indicative mood 346-348
Tongue (verb) 290	Infinitive 349-360 Subjunctive 361-369 Participles 372, 381
"To-night" 190	Subjunctive 361-369
Too = "very"	Participles 372, 381
"Too blame" 73	lenses . 340-348, 370, 301, 132
Took (participle) 343	Verses of five accents 452. 452
Towards, sometimes 492	of six accents apparently \$467-469
Traded (passive) 294 Transpositions 422–27	of six accents apparently \\\ \frac{467-469}{493-499}
Transpositions 422-27	of four accents apparently 504-510
of adjectives and participles 419	of three and two accents 511, 512
of indefinite article 422	the Amphibious verse 513
of adverbs 420	in four accents spoken by
of possessive adjectives 13	fairies, witches, &c 504
of prepositions 424	Versing (writing in verse) 290
Trifle (verb transitive) 136	Very = true
Trimeter Couplets	Vouchsafed

VER	BAL	INDEX.	13.0	511
			FERMANN	ani mari
Vowels, when unaccented in a	PAR.	Who for "whom	**	PAR.
polysyllable, slurred	468	more definite	than "which "	274 266
affected by r. 463, 464, 478,	480	Why. "Why the	at"	287
		"For why?" "Why and fo		75
		"Why and w	herefore".	75 75
W.		Wilful blame Will, ellipses after		432
Waft (participle)	240	Will, ellipses after	r "shall"	405
	342 290	"That he	ruill"	316
Wanteth (impersonal verb) :	297	"I will not"	" = " I shall	3
Warr(a)nt	463	in Shakespe	eare	319
What, exclamation of impatience	73a	difficult passa Wish. "The res gather" Witch (verb)	t I wish thee	321
semi-transition to relative,	.	gather" .		349
how checked	252	Witches szeak in	verses of four	290
	254	accents		504
= "why"	253	With	1	93-5
	252	= "like"		195
Whatsoever, "whatsoever that"	286	1 live with	(on) bread.	193
	166	Withal		196
exclamation of impatience	287 73α .	of"	ke outside	197
Where. "Sowhere"	279	of" Woe. "I am woe	"	230
"Suchwhere"	279	Wont, derivation	of	5
	134	Wont, derivation Would = "was w not used for "for "wich rec	'should"	330 331
Whether. "Or whether"	35	for "wish, red	quire" God"	329
	273	"I would to	God"	190
"which that"	278	in the consequence Wreathen (partici		322 344
difference between "which."		Wrest(e)ler		477
"who," and "that" a interchanged with "who"	58	Wrest(e)ler Writ (participle). Wrote for "writte		343
and "that"	65	WILLE		343
less definite than "who". 2	66		77	
more demine than that 2	68		Y.	
"The which"	70	Y-, (participial pre	efix)	344
"The which" 2 ""the which thing," parentherical		Y-ravished		344
thetheat	71	-Y, suffix Ye, differs from "Year'd (passive pa	V011;	45° 23 6
While, whiles	37	Year'd (passive pa	irticiple)	294
"While that"	87	Yearns. "It vea:	me not".	297
	37	Yet = "as yet" tive .		76
with subjunctive 3	02	You, differs from	"thou" . 231	
	74	a mark of ang "you, sir"	er to servants,	
Who, transition from relative to	42	"you, sir" differs from " Youngly (adverb)	ve "	232 2 36
interrogative	51	Youngly (adverb)		23
"As who should say". difference between "who," "which," and "that". = "and he," "for he". personifies irrational ante-	57	Your, antecedent	of relative .	218
"which," and "that". 2	58	colloquial use	of	219 221
= "and he," "for he" 2	62			480
personifies irrational ante-	64	Yours. "This of Yourselves, deriva	yours"	239
cedents 2	04	Tourscives, activa	LION OI	30

Y SANSATA OLG TO YORKE WIND AND AND D

RICHARD CLAY AND SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON AND BUNGAY.







